No. CS439.S2A

THE TRUSTEES OF THE
PUBLIC LIBRARY
OMNIVM
LVX
CIVIVM
OF THE CITY OF
BOSTON
1852 : 1873

Printed for Private Circulation and for Subscribers only.

GLOBETHELS

OF THE FAMILY OF

Scott, of Scot's-Hall,

IN THE COUNTY OF KENT.

WITH

An Appendix of Illustrative Documents.

BY

JAMES RENAT SCOTT, F.S.A.

London:

J. R. SCOTT, CLEVELANDS, WALTHAMSTOW, E.;

Or of the Printers,

SIMMONS & BOTTEN, SHOE LANE, E.C.

1876.

XXCS439
.S24

Mar. 23/VII/40.

To

Captain Henry Scott, Royal Navy,

THE

VENERABLE REPRESENTATIVE OF AN ANCIENT, HONOURABLE,

AND NOW UBIQUITOUS FAMILY,

MEMBERS OF WHICH, FOR NEARLY SIX CENTURIES,

HAVE VARIOUSLY SERVED THEIR COUNTRY WITH HONOUR AND REPUTE,

IN THE LEGISLATURE, IN THE PROFESSION OF ARMS,

AND IN THE

HIGHEST OFFICES IN CHURCH AND STATE,

These Memorials are Respectfully Dedicated

BY HIS KINSMAN,

The Author.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2011 with funding from
Boston Public Library

http://www.archive.org/details/memorialsoffamil00scot

PREFACE.

A SPANISH Proverb asserts that there are three things a man should accomplish in his lifetime—he should have a son, build a house, and write a book. The object of these responsibilities is obvious, but it is with the latter only that the public and ourselves are concerned.

During a visit, many years since, to East Kent, we were deeply impressed by the evanescent character of local memorials, records, and traditions of the past, many of which, once familiar, had succumbed to the hand of the great despoiler, or had passed away under the misdirected zeal and ignorant intervention of so-called "restorations" of ancient memorials of wood, brass, glass, or stone. Time plays his appointed part, but affords some picturesque compensation for the havoc he commits; but man is a ruthless destroyer, and his ravages are often without remedy, and are always without compensation.

These reflections resulted in the congenial occupation on our part, continued through many years, of collecting diligently and collating methodically the genealogies, records, and traditions of our family, which employment resulted eventually in a determination (rash or otherwise, as the critic may determine) to commit the results of these researches to the press, and to perpetuate, by the art of the graver, representations of some of the memorials of the family which time had spared.

It may be inquired, How does all this, interesting though it may be to the Scott

family, concern the public? We reply, that the memorials of a once ancient and honourable, and now ubiquitous, family, tracing an unbroken male descent through more than twenty generations, to the present day, are of themselves a justification for their preservation, and for that perpetuation which can alone be obtained by the aid of the press. It may not be generally known how infrequent are such survivals in family history, and how prone to decay and to extinction are families and races whose members have made any mark in history. Sir Bernard Burke, in his very interesting introductory preface to his third series of the *Vicissitudes of Families*, observes—"It is a fact no less strange than remarkable, that the more conspicuous a man is for his great mental powers, the more rarely does he leave a representative to perpetuate his name. Neither Shakespeare, nor Milton, nor Marlborough, nor Napoleon, nor Nelson, nor Walter Scott, nor Chatham, nor Burke, nor William Pitt, nor Fox, nor Canning, nor Macaulay, and, I may now add, nor Palmerston, has a descendant in the male line now living. After William of Normandy had won at Hastings the broad lands of England, he partitioned them among the chief commanders of his army, and conferred about twenty Earldoms; *not one of these now exist, nor one of the honours conferred by William Rufus, Henry I., Stephen, Henry II., Richard I., or John.* All the English Dukedoms created from the institution of the order, down to the commencement of the reign of Charles II., are gone, except only Norfolk, Somerset, and Cornwall enjoyed by the Prince of Wales. At one time in the reign of Elizabeth, Norfolk and Somerset having been attainted, *the whole order of Dukes became extinct, and remained so for about fifty years*, until James I. created George Villiers Duke of Buckingham. The present House of Lords cannot claim amongst its members a single male descendant of any one of the Barons who were chosen to enforce *Magna Charta*, or of any one of the Peers who are known to have fought at Agincourt, and the noble house of Wrottesley is the solitary existing family among the Lords which can boast of a male descent from a founder of the Order of the Garter."

But apart from the remarkable vitality which distinguishes the family of Scott of Scot's Hall, there are circumstances which render these memorials a contribution, a page only though it be, to that reconstruction of Domestic English History which, under the combined influence of extended education, archæological and antiquarian research, and the labours of the Records and Historical MSS. Commissions, have commenced, and will be carried to completion—a re-editing of a History which has been hitherto so distorted by partisan feeling or political bias as to be scarcely worthy of the name.

The historical value of family research will in this instance be better appreciated when it is pointed out that this ancient but unennobled family has furnished within historic times to its country's need, and in every service of the state, men of high standing and repute, of whom we may mention, with becoming pride, the following amongst others :—Sir William Scott, of Brabourne, Lord Chief Justice of England in the reigns of Edward II. and Edward III. ; Sir William Scot, of Scot's Hall, Knight of the Shire of Kent, and Swordbearer of Henry V. ; Sir Robert Scot, Lieutenant of the Tower of London 1424 ; Sir John Scotte, of Scot's Hall, Knight of the Shire, Comptroller of the Household of Edward IV., Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle, Chamberlain to Edward, Prince of Wales (Edward V., murdered in the Tower), and Ambassador to the Dukes of Burgundy and Bretagne ; Thomas Scotte (*alias* Rotherham), Cardinal Archbishop of York and Lord Chancellor ; Sir William Scotte, of Scot's Hall, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle *temp.* Henry VIII. ; Sir John Scotte, of Scot's Hall, Knight of the King's Body Guard, Henry VIII. ; Sir John Scott, a Judge of the Exchequer, 1530; Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall, Captain of Calais Castle, &c., *temp.* Henry VIII. ; Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, Knight of the Shire, Commander-in-Chief of the Kentish Forces at the approach of the Spanish Armada ; Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall and Nettlested, Knight of the Shire, implicated in Essex's plot, and confined in Tower of London *temp.* Queen Elizabeth ; Sir William Scott, Ambassador to Florence, Venice, and Turkey in the reign of James I. ; Sir Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, K.B., Knight of the Shire, and a member of the Committee of Safety for the county of Kent during the troubles of King and Parliament ; as well as others of less distinguished note, who witnessed the decay of their family and fortune in more recent but less troublous times, and thus apparently paid the penalty suggested in the ancient Kentish Proverb, that

> " Scot's Hall shall have a fall ;
> Ostenhangre was built in angre (pride) ;
> Somerfield will have to yielde ;
> And Mersham Hatch shall win the match." (See p. 100.)

In this ambitious attempt we could not but have failed, but for the willing encouragement and assistance promptly rendered by the heads of the sept, particularly by Captain Henry Scott, and Mrs. Fairfax Best and her family, who have unreservedly placed at our disposal a rich mine of folk lore, consisting of original

Charters, Records, MSS., and Correspondence, ranging over several centuries, and have given permission to engrave many of the extensive collection of portraits formerly at Scot's Hall. To them especially our most grateful thanks are tendered. To the Most Noble the Marquis of Salisbury, for access permitted to the private historical Records of the Cecils and Burleighs; to Sir George Gilbert Scott, R.A., D.C.L., and F.S.A., the judicious restorer of our ancient and national ecclesiastical fabrics and monuments; to Alfred Kingston, Esq., of the Public Record Office; to my brother, the Chamberlain of London; to Mr. H. C. Overall, of the Town Clerk's Office, Guildhall; to the Rev. Canon W. A. Scott-Robertson; and to the Rev. James Brothers, the late, and the Rev. G. B. Perry, the present, Rector of Brabourne, our acknowledgments are likewise due for information, assistance, and advice kindly tendered to our inexperienced endeavour, which we now commit to the criticism of an indulgent public.

J. R. S.

Clevelands, Walthamstow, Essex.

July, 1876.

Contents.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

ORIGIN AND ANTIQUITY OF THE NAME OF "SCOTT" 1

CHAPTER II.

ORIGIN OF THE FAMILY OF SCOTT OF SCOT'S HALL 11

CHAPTER III.

PARTICULARS CONNECTED WITH THE EARLIER HISTORY AND DESCENT OF THE SCOTT FAMILY . 24

CHAPTER IV.

DESCRIPTION AND MEMORIALS OF BRABOURNE CHURCH, KENT 32

CHAPTER V.

HISTORY OF THE ROYAL MANOR OF BRABOURNE, KENT 63

CHAPTER VI.

BIOGRAPHY OF THE KENTISH FAMILY OF SCOTT OF SCOT'S HALL 83

PEDIGREES:—Scotts of Scot's Hall, p. 254.—Scotts of Ballygannon (Hopton Scotts), p. 256.—Scotts of Tong Norton and Cossard (*Salop*), p. 257.—Scotts of Shrewsbury, p. 258.—Scotts of Betton, p. 260.—Scotts of Ballingarry (*Ireland*), p. 261.—Scotts of York, p. 262.—Scotts of Aldborough (*co. York*), p. 262.—Scotts of Halden and Conghurst (*Kent*), p. 263.—A Genealogical Notice of the Border and Lowland (*Scotland*) Families of Scott, p. 264.—The Family of Schotte of Zeeland, p. 265.

Appendix.

CORRESPONDENCE i

RECORDS, CHARTERS, AND DEEDS xlix

INDEX lxxvii

List of Illustrations.

PAGE

A Sceatta (*Saxon Coin*) 4
A Representation in Stained Glass of John le Scot, Earl of Chester 14
Sword of Chester 15
Seal of Devorgilda Baliol—Balliol College . . . 18
Arms of Baliol—Balliol College—Baliol le Scot . . 30
The Original Balliol College, Oxford 31
St. Mary's Church, Brabourne 32
Priest's Door 33
Norman Stained Glass Window 34
Norman Shaft 35
Interior of Chancel 36
Coffin-lid 37
Helmets and Stoup 38
Stained Glass Initial Letters Crowned . . . 39
Heart Shrine 40
Heraldic Altar Tomb 41
Brass, Sir William Scot (1433) 43
Brass, Isabel, Lady Clifton, ... 44
Brass, Sir William Scot, 1528 45
Brass, Lady Elizabeth Poynings, 1528 . . . 46
Abbey of Dulce Cor, Dumfriesshire 54
Heraldic Bosses, from Balliol College 54
Stained Glass Window in Ballieul Church, Normandy . 56
Effigy of Sir Robert Gower, Brabourne Church . . 58
South-east View of St. Mary's, Brabourne . . . 62
Tomb of Countess of Athol, in Canterbury Cathedral . 74
Brass of Countess of Athol, in Ashford Church . . 76
Heraldic Seal of Elizabeth de Clare 77
Brass of Philippa Halsham, 1395, in West Grinstead Church 78
Brass of Sir Hugh and Lady Halsham, in West Grinstead Church 79
Corbel from Door of Tower of Iden Church, Sussex—Scott and Lewknor Arms impaled 80
Site of Scot's Hall, 1875 81
Seal of Alexander Baliol, of Chilham Castle, Kent . . 89
The Second Scot's Hall, rebuilt *circa* 1491 . . . 94
The Third Scot's Hall, *circa* 1585 95
Ground Plan of Scot's Hall, *temp.* Charles I. . . . 96
First Floor of Ditto 97
Pulpit of Chapel in Scot's Hall, now in Smeeth Church . 98
Initial Letter in Letter of Licence, Edward I. (1284) . 119
Site of the Fortified Mansion of Mote in Iden, Sussex . 120
Enamelled Brass Representations of Thomas Hevenyngham and his Lady in Ketteringham Church, Norfolk, 1492 128
Corbel representing Arms of Lewknor, from West Door of Iden Church 139

PAGE

Facsimile of Notarial Instrument, Halsham Deed, 1468 . 143
Rosamund Clifford's Tower, in Westenhanger Castle, Kent 147
Oxburgh Hall, Norfolk, 1875 151
Archbishop Scott's (Rotherham) Tomb, York Minster . 158
Ancient Banqueting Hall in Nettlested Court, Kent . 160
Remains of Crypt at Nettlested Court 161
Manorial Barn at Nettlested Court (*temp.* Edward III.) . 162
Representation in Stained Glass of the Arms of Pashley, in Smeeth Church, Kent 164
Illustrated Heraldic Pedigree, suggesting Descent of the Manors of Evegate and Nettlested, Kent, to the Family of Scott 170
Portrait of Sir Reginald Scott, 1542 177
Tomb and Effigies of Sir Henry Crispe and Catherine Scott, in Birchington Church, Kent 192
Portrait of Sir Thomas Scott, 1585 194
Portrait of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested 214
Portrait of Lady Elizabeth Scott 219
Monument to Lady Elizabeth Scott, in Nettlested Church . 219
Portrait of Lady (Catherine) Scott 221
Monument to Lady (Catherine) Scott, in Nettlested Church 222
Monument to Robert Scott and Wives, Smeeth Church . 223
Portrait of the celebrated Mary Honywood . . . 224
Monument to Sir Richard Smythe, in Ashford Church . 226
Monument to Richard Knatchbull, in Mersham Church . 227
Portrait of Edward Scott, Esq., D.C.L. 230
Portrait of George Goring, Earl of Norwich, Commander of Royalist Forces, Kent (1642) 231
Portrait of the Countess of Norwich 232
Portrait of Colonel George Goring 233
Portrait of Sir Thomas Scott 236
Portrait of Lady (Caroline) Scott 238
Portrait of George Scott, Esq., of Scot's Hall . . . 239
Portrait of Anne Pemberton, 1st wife of George Scott, Esq. 240
Portrait of Cecilia Dering, 2nd wife of George Scott, Esq. 241
Portrait of Commodore Scott 242
Portrait of Margaret Sutherland, wife of Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall 244
Portrait of the Honble. Lady Mary Compton, wife of Captain Arthur Scott, R.N. 247
Portrait of Caroline, wife of Thomas Best, of Chilston Park, Kent 249
Portrait of Thomas Best, Esq., M.P., of Chilston Park . 250
Portrait (Medallion), Mrs. George Best, of Chilston Park . 252
Facsimile of Deed of Acknowledgment (Norman French), 1389 li
Fine Seal, with Quarterings, of Sir Thomas Scott, *temp.* Elizabeth lxix

MEMORIALS of the FAMILY of SCOTT of SCOTSHALL KENT

Chapter I.

ORIGIN AND ANTIQUITY OF THE NAME OF "SCOTT."

"Remember the days of old, consider the years of many generations; ask thy father and he will shew thee, and thy elders and they will tell thee."—DEUTERONOMY.

Derivation of "Scot."—Dr. Brewer's opinion.—Satchells' Work.—Statements of Early Historians.—Modern use of the word in its ancient sense.—"Scot-lands."—"Scot and Lot."—"Rome Scot."—"Church Scot."—Ireland originally called "Scotia."—Iber Scot.—Probable derivations of Proper Names.—True meaning of "Scotland."—The question of Homage.

THE origin of this distinguished surname must, doubtless, be sought in the ancient acceptation of the term "Scot." It is needful to divest the mind of the idea suggested by the use of the modern term, "a Scot,"—*i.e.*, a native of Scotland; for the term existed, and had a distinctive meaning (which is still preserved), centuries before the name of "Scotland" was given to the Northern portion of Britain. In reality, the word "Scotland," as well as the surname "Scott," have a common origin, being derived from the same root.

Dr. E. Cobham Brewer, in his learned work, *Phrase and Fable*, gives the following definition :—

"'Scot.' The same as 'Scythian' in etymology. The root of both is 'Sct.' The Greeks had no C, and would change T into Th, making the root Skth; and by

adding a phonetic vowel we get, 'Skuth-ai' (Scythian) and 'Skoth-ai' (Scoths). The Welsh disliked 's' at the beginning of a word, and would change it to 'ys.' They would also change 'c' or 'k' to 'g,' and 'th' to 'd;' whence the Welsh root would be 'Ysgd,' and 'Skuth' or 'Skoth' would become 'Ysgod.' Once more, the Saxons would cut off the Welsh 'y,' and change the 'g' back again to 'c,' and the 'd' to 't;' converting 'Ysgod' to 'Scot.'"[a]

This speculation of Dr. Brewer's, that the word is of Scythian origin, is somewhat confirmed by statements of ancient writers. About the year 1686, Satchells wrote *A History of the Name of Scott.* It is a volume of some two hundred pages, a large portion of which is doggerel poetry, but containing much quaint historical matter; from which Sir Walter Scott drew largely for his *Lay of the Last Minstrel.* He left, in his library at Abbotsford, a copy of Satchells' book, which is now extremely rare. The following is an extract, which well illustrates his quaint style:—

"Some late start-up bran-new gentlemen,
"That hardly knew from whence their fathers came,
"Except from red-nosed Robin,
"Or trail Wallet, country Tom,
"The sons of Cannongate Bess,
"That could play her game;
"Whose labouring heads as great as any house,
"These columnizing fellows can stagger, stare, and shame,
"And swear the name of *Scot* is but a new coined name.
"These new cornuted gentlemen, why should they lie?
"Mr. George Buchanan and Hector Boetius can let them see.
"A thousand years if I do not forget,
"By chronicles I'll prove the name of *Scot*,
"In King Achaius' time that worthy prince
"John[b] and Clement *Scoto* they went to France,
"In Paris they at first began,
"In Charles the Great his time,
"To instruct the Christian religion,
"And there a College they did frame,
"Which doth remain until this very time.

* * * * * * * *

"Here I speak nought but truth, all men may note,
"The very true antiquity of the name of *Scott*."

In a Paper on *The Antiquity of the Name of Scott*, by Mr. Martin B. Scott,

[a] Brewer's *Phrase and Fable*, pp. 796-7.

[b] This John Scot is mentioned by Roger de Wendover, in his *Flowers of History*.

of Cleveland, Ohio, and read before the *Western Reserve* Historical Society,[c] the following remarks occur :—

"Buchanan, in his history of Scotland, confirms the historical facts of Satchells. "He asserts that Charles the Great sent to Scotland for some learned and pious men "who read philosophy in Greek and Latin at Paris, 'among whom was Johannes surnamed "Scotus.' He was the preceptor of Charlemagne (?), and left many monuments of learning. "Clement, a Scot, was also a learned professor at the same time in Paris; which puts it "beyond doubt, that the surname of Scot is of great antiquity, even if we trace it back "no further than the days of Charlemagne and Achaius, who lived about the middle of the "eighth century.

"But Hector Boetius, and other historians (among whom are Vermundus, "Cornelius, and Scaliger), claim a still more remote antiquity for the name of Scot, than "is asserted by Satchells. Boetius avers that the name of Scot originated from Scota, the "daughter of that Pharaoh king of Egypt who was drowned in the Red Sea. Thus: "Gathelus, son of Cecrops, first king of Athens, and a native of Egypt, became so insolent "and troublesome at his father's court, that he was banished the kingdom; whereupon, with "a large band of fugitives, he left Greece, and went into Egypt, in the time of Moses, "at a period when Pharaoh was engaged in war with the neighbouring nations. Pharaoh "gave him his daughter Scota in marriage. In order to escape from the plagues of "Egypt, Gathelus and Scota his wife, with a large number of Greeks and Egyptians, "put to sea, and afterwards, landing in Spain, called that portion of the country Port- "Gathale, which is now known as Portugal. Here he named his people 'Scottis,' from "the affection he bore his wife Scota. After years of bloody wars with the barbarians of "Spain, Gathelus, with his colony, sailed for and landed in Ireland, and afterwards went "over to the northern part of Britain, which was called 'Scotland' (the land of the Scots) "from the Scots who planted themselves there.

"This account of the origin of the Scots, is treated by many English historians "as fabulous. Buchanan is of opinion that the Scots first came from Spain. Geoffrey "Keating, a learned Irish antiquary, avers that the posterity of Gathelus and Scota landed "in Ireland, A.M. 2736; after the flood, 1086; after Moses passing the Red Sea, 192; "before Christ's nativity, 1308 years. In the early history of the world a generation was "a hundred years or more, according to the remoteness of the period. Colganus observes, "in the Life of St. Cladroe, that the colony planted by Gathelus and Scota were Scythians; "that the true name of Scota was Scytha; and that that name was given her because "her husband came out of Scytha. King Alfred calls the Scots, 'Scythan;' the Germans, "both 'Scythians' and 'Scots Scutten;' and the old Britons, 'Y'Scot.' This is con- "firmed by Camden. According to Walsingham, Scythæ, Scythici, Scoti, Scotici, are all "of one meaning.

"The Abbé McGeoghegan published a history of Ireland, in 1758, in which he "asserts that the Scots were originally Scythians, or probably Kelto-Scythians of Spanish

[c] Boston, 1869.

> " extraction; while the ancient poets and bards aver that Ireland was first settled by a " colony from Spain who were descendants of a celebrated Breogan,[d] whose grandson " married an Egyptian heroine named Scota, from whom the Irish took the name Kinea- " Scuit or Scots. We have the testimony of Seneca that the name of Scot was known to " some Roman writers in the first century. William Elphanstone, Bishop of Aberdeen, " who searched all the monuments of antiquity in Scotland; and Fordun, who quotes " Grossum Caput, all concur that the name of Scot was derived from 'Scota,' the most " noble person in the colony."

Whatever may have been the origin and meaning of the word "Scot" in remote and almost pre-historic times, there can be no doubt whatever as to its signification at the period when the history of the British Islands commences. The etymon must be sought for in ancient British and Saxon connection. It simply meant "tribute," or the payment made by a tribe, nation, or individual.[e] Afterwards it came to be applied to the tribe or person paying the tribute, or rendering homage or service. Moreover, the term is still used in its original sense; abundant evidence of which exists. A few illustrations only need be given.

The early Saxon silver coins, for the classification of which very little has yet been done, were called "Sceattas," *i.e.*, "tribute money." The celebrated Sibertswold (Kent) specimen of this coin, as here engraved, represents on

SCEATTA.

the obverse a standing figure holding two sceptres or crosses, with the runes U. A. D. on the reverse, a female figure, probably intended to represent Victory winged, and holding a wreath. The runes are problematical.[f]

"Scot" was originally applied to the assessment or contribution levied for the drainage, embankment, watching, and guarding of low-lying lands; and in many places it still retains this meaning. In Romney Marsh, Kent (*Romen-ea, i.e.*, Roman Water; doubtless embanked by the Romans); on Pevensey Level, and in the levels of the Adur in Sussex, embankments were constructed and maintained by means of

---

[d] Hence the modern O'Brien.

[e] The name was used as a general term for money. "To pay your sceat," literally meant, "to pay your reckoning." This has been corrupted in process of time into the modern ale-house phrase, "Pay your shot."

[f] *Archæologia Cantiana*, viii. 264.

contributions levied upon neighbouring proprietors. Such contributions are to this day called "Scots."[g]

The farms or lands reclaimed, drained, and appropriated by embankment were, and still are, called by the name of "Scotland," *i.e.*, land the rent of which is "scotted." This latter phrase is also in general use in Kent and Sussex; and probably elsewhere.[h] The municipal phrase, "Scot and lot," which is still used in the City of London and elsewhere, suggests the same meaning.[i] Instances of the use of the term "Sceat" or "Scot" are numerous in Saxon, Norman, and Early English times. It was applied also to ecclesiastical contributions, such as "Rome Scot"[j] and "Church

---

[g] The following advertisement appeared in the *Kentish Gazette* while these pages were in preparation for the press :—

KENT AND SUSSEX ROTHER LEVELS.

SCOTS.

"NOTICE IS HEREBY GIVEN, That a *Scot* of two shillings and eightpence per acre for all lands lying within the Upper Levels, also a *Scot* of eightpence per acre for all lands lying in Wittersham Level, and a Wall *Scot* of sixpence per acre on all the land lying in the Wet Level (granted the 11th day of June, 1873), will be payable by the owners and occupiers of the lands so *scotted*, at the WOOLPACK INN, TENTERDEN, on FRIDAY, the 17th day of OCTOBER, 1873, and such owners and occupiers of the lands are hereby required to pay the same to me accordingly. And Notice is hereby also given, That in case any person or persons so taxed or *scotted* shall make default in payment of their said *scots*, or any part thereof, for the space of one month after the said day of payment, the person or persons making such default will incur the penalties imposed by the Act of Parliament passed in the first year of the reign of his late Majesty King William the Fourth, for the more effectually draining and preserving the said lands so rated and *scotted*; which said *scots* and penalties will be levied by distress and sale, in the manner authorized by the said Act.

EDWARD ELLIOTT,
Collector and Expenditor of the said Levels.

Scotsfloat, Rye, Sept. 17th, 1873."

[h] "Not far from Streatham, near Steyning in Sussex, is a farm called 'Scotland.' It is worthy of a passing note that there are several lands in various parts of Sussex so named, and that the origin of the appellation seems to be that they were subject to a certain 'Scot' (sceat) or payment; just as low lands drained and embanked at a public or common charge are still said to be 'scotted.'"—*Sussex Archæological Collections*, xvi. 253.

[i] "Scot" in ancient municipal use, was applied to the maintenance, watch, and ward of the city walls. To this hour the compurgator or sponsor to the sufficiency of a person presented for the freedom of the City of London, affirms that he is "a good man and true, and will pay his 'Scot' and bear his 'Lot.'"

[j] "Rome Scot" was a tribute of one penny paid annually to Rome by every family or household in this country. It was afterwards called "Peter's pence," from the circumstance of its being collected on the Feast of St. Peter ad Vincula. It is stated by some to have been first granted in England by Ina, King of the West Saxons, A.D. 725, upon the occasion of a pilgrimage to Rome. Asser and others fix its origin in the free gift of Ethelwulf. See *Sussex Archæological Collections*, xiii. 174. In Saxon times, land appropriated or tributed towards the support of the See of Rome was termed "Romeland"; as at St. Albans and elsewhere in connection with ancient religious edifices, to this day. Here we have a derivation similar in character to that of "Scotland."

Scot."[k] In an account of the issues of the town of Dunwich, Suffolk, *temp.* 16 Edward I., appear the following terms:—"Tolmenescot," "Rumescot" (Rome Scot), "Townsmenscot," and "Kingscot."[l] "Acreshot," or "Acrescot," was the original Saxon or Teutonic term for the modern Land-tax.

Mr. W. H. Black, F.S.A., the accomplished British and Saxon scholar, thus writes of the term "Scot." "Even the well-known but ill-explained municipal term, 'to pay scot and bear lot,' though asserted to be Anglo-Saxon, is not so, except by adoption. The etymology of these words is to be found in the British words YSGWAD—a guarding, and LLWYTH—a burden or load: meaning a payment for *watching the ward wall and gates*, and for the general burthens or aids chargeable on the City at large for its public expenditure or taxation." As confirming this, the statutory definition of the term 'Scot' is thus given by Mr. Black: "The statute 11 Geo. I., c. 18, sec. 9, 'An Act for regulating Elections within the City of London, etc.' contains the following: 'Provided also and for the better ascertainment what are the rates and taxes to which such householders ought to contribute and pay their Scot, the same are hereby declared and enacted to be a rate to the Church, to the Poor, to the Scavenger, to the Orphans, and for WATCH and WARD,' etc." (*Black's History and Antiquities of Leathersellers' Company*, page 7.)

From "Scot" is doubtless derived the word "Scotland," as applied to the northern part of Britain; meaning thereby "The Tributary Land;" Scotland being in fact a fief held by the kings of England, and in respect of which the kings of Scotland did homage for their crown. This root, however, as used in Saxon times, cannot be the origin of the term anciently applied to Ireland, viz., "Scotia," which is now, poetically though most inaccurately, often used to denote Scotland. The original "Scotia" was Ireland, and the Scoti or Scots, at their first appearance in authentic history, were the people of Ireland.[m] The Scots were a Celtic race, and their original seat in Northern Britain was in Argyle, which they acquired by colonization or conquest, before the end of the fifth century, and from whence they spread along the western coast from the Firth of Clyde to the modern Ross. The name of "Scotland" seems first to have been given about the ninth or tenth century to the united kingdom of the Picts and

---

[k] "Church Scot." By a law or canon of Canute it was enacted,—"If there be any Thane who has a church in his Bocland (*i.e.*, land held by book, or charter, which had not been made over to others, either by gift or sale), at which there is a burial place, let him give the third part of his own tithes to the church; and if any have a church to which there is no burial place, let him do for the priest what he will from the nine parts, and let every Church Scot go to the old minister according to every free hearth."

[l] Gardener's *History of Dunwich.*

[m] "The name 'Scotia' does not appear to have been applied to Ireland until about the end of the third century, from which time until about the beginning of the eleventh century it continued to indicate that country exclusively." —*Cyclopædia of the Society for Diffusion of Useful Knowledge.* Art. "Ireland."

Scots. This interchange of names was a fruitful source of dispute between Irish and Scottish writers in the sixteenth and following centuries; and the controversy can scarcely yet be said to be at an end.

"Scotia" originally came to be applied to Ireland from Scythia, through Spain. "Scotland" has a much later derivation, from the Saxon. Dr. Brewer, who, as has been already quoted, identifies the ancient "Scot" as "Scythian," and whose derivation is abundantly borne out (historically as well as philologically), remarks of "Scotia":—
"This term, now poetically applied to Scotland, was at one time applied to Ireland. Hence Claudian (Latin poet, *circa* A.D. 395) says:—

> "'When *Scots* came thundering from the Irish shores,
> 'And Ocean trembled, struck with hostile oars.'" [n]

Probably this application of the name to Ireland was derived from one of its earliest Scythian colonists, Heber, or Iber Scot; whose name undoubtedly implies that he was one of the Iberi described by Strabo [o] as inhabiting a plain south of the Caucasus drained by the Cyrus (the Kur) and its branches; *i.e.*, Iberia, a portion of ancient Scythia, and now part of Georgia. Ancient geography and history alike point to Scythia and Iberia as the source of the colonization of the Spanish Peninsula, and subsequently of Ireland. In that very ancient manuscript, the *Psalter of Cashel*, Heber or Iber Scot is mentioned and his genealogy is given:—

> "Heber Scot, son of Seru, son of Easru, son of Gadelas, son of Niul, son
> "of Feniusa-Farsa,[p] son of Beruth, son of Magog, son of Japhet."

Thus the origin of the name from which is derived "Scotia" (Ireland) is placed within seven generations of the Flood, and this is more historical and probable than that which has been referred to, as supported by Boetius, Vermundus, and others. The chronicler Harry the Minstrel, or "Blind Harry," who lived in the fifteenth century, thus refers to Iber Scot's traditionary connection with Ireland:—

> "Then Edward's self [q] was called, a Royfull ryte,
> "The crown he took upon the self-same stane [r]
> "That Gadales sent with his son from Spain,
> "When Iber Scot first into Ireland came." [s]

It may be interesting, in a philological point of view, to speculate on the possible

---

[n] *Phrase and Fable*, p. 796.
[o] Casaubon, 499.
[p] Hence the modern term "Fenian."
[q] Edward I. of England.
[r] The Coronation stone of Scone, now in Westminster Abbey.
[s] Book i., chap. 4.

and even probable, derivations of the following proper names, in connection with the inquiry into the application of "Scotia" to Ireland. Is not the name Iber as a prefix to Scot derivative of the Greek term for Spain, viz., Iberia, and may not this word in its turn be likewise traced to Iberia, a province in Scythia? Again, may not Portugal find its origin in Portus Gathelus, the founder of Gades (Cadiz) and colonist of the south-western part of Spain? May not Gathelus have transmitted his name to the Gathelen, or Irish Way, now corrupted into Watling Street, which was the old Roman road from Dover, through London, to Chester? May not Gathelus also have his name perpetuated in Argyle, on the western coast of Scotland, which was colonized by the Scoto-Irish, and was anciently written "Argathelus"? Nothing is here affirmed absolutely with regard to these conjectures, but they are at least plausible, and they are submitted for the judgment of those whose learning and experience in such matters may qualify them to pronounce an opinion.

The word "Scot" has now to be considered in connection with the name "Scotland," as applied to the whole of the Northern part of Great Britain. By some, the name has been derived from the Scoto-Irish colonists already referred to, but with all deference to this opinion, a very careful study of the whole subject has led to the conviction that such a mode of deriving the word cannot be sustained. The testimony of history is against it. "Scotland," as thus applied, suggested from the first "the Tributary Land." This is identical with the use of the word "Scotland" as denoting, in various parts of England, an embankment of land by means of a "Scot" or contribution. This, in all probability, had primary reference to the tribute paid to the Romans for the protection ("watch and ward") afforded by the walls raised by Severus and Antoninus; the first, a stone wall erected across the island between the Tyne and the Solway, and the latter an earthen embankment extending from the Forth to the Clyde, and probably in the first instance had exclusive reference to this tract of land over which the Saxon tongue prevailed, and as far as the civilizing influence of the plough extended. Tribute was paid in consideration of being protected from the incursions of the various Northern tribes, including the Scoto-Irish, and the Picts or painted men;[t] whose countries up to this time, and for some centuries later, were generally known as Albania[u] and Caledonia respectively; the latter being north of the

[t] Just as, in later times, "Danegelt" was levied to protect the land from the incursions of the Danes.

[u] "'Albion,' 'Albin,' 'Alpin,' known as such for a thousand years before the existence of Great Britain, is in Gaelic 'Albyne;' Latinized by the Romans into the more euphonic name of 'Albania;' meaning literally, 'the mountainous country,' from *al*, 'high,' and *byne* or *bine*, 'a mountain;' now, 'Ben,' as in 'Ben Nevis,' etc."—*Notes and Queries*, 4th Series, No. xi., p. 526. All records, whether chronicles of monasteries or of individuals, down to about A.D. 1050, speak of the Northern part of Britain as Albania. Even so late as the time of Henry III., after the Battle of Lewes, A.D. 1264, the contemporary historians, speaking of the Northern Barons, use the expression "*et certæri Barones Albaniæ*." "At the coronation of Alexander III. a Bard, in accordance with ancient custom, made his appearance robed in scarlet, and kneeling before the Throne recited in Gaelic the royal genealogy, from the ancient line of Albyn's kings."—*M. E. Cumming-Bruce's Lives of Bruces and Comyns.*

embankment of Antonine, Ireland being called "Scotia," as has been previously explained.

On the departure of the Romans, the country south of Antonine's wall became tributary to the southern kingdoms; and the term "Scotland," which, in the course of time, came into use, had reference to the homage or tribute exacted by Saxon kings from the Albanians, centuries before the reign of Edward I., who is commonly regarded as the first monarch who caused Scotland to submit to the King of England as Lord Paramount. These tributers would primarily be called "Scots," and their country "Scotland."[v] Edward I. did but reimpose what had been enforced and submitted to at an earlier period. The historians Roger de Hovenden, William of Malmesbury, and Henry of Huntingdon, all concur in the statement that on the occasion of the victory of Athelstan, A.D. 926, the Albanian prince Constantine swore fealty to the Saxon king. In the reign of Edred the Scots (*i.e.*, Albanians) were defeated, and their king took an oath of fealty. In A.D. 1091, Malcolm III., King of *united* Scotland, who had married the Princess Margaret, sister to Edgar Etheling, sole heir of the Saxon kingdom after Edward the Confessor, rendered homage to William Rufus. In like manner William the Lion, King of Scotland, rendered homage to Henry II. of England. When Edward I. was crowned at Westminster, his brother-in-law, Alexander of Scotland, rendered fealty to him.[w] Not long after his own coronation, he required Llewellyn, Prince of Wales, to repair to his court and perform homage. This was refused, and an invasion of Wales took place A.D. 1277, followed by a descent in greater force five years later, when Llewellyn was slain in battle, and his brother David was taken and executed. These submissions of the weaker nationality to the stronger were universal in early times, and were indispensable for mutual protection before the introduction of standing armies. Nor must it be forgotten that Edward II., the first English Prince of Wales, acknowledged fealty to his father in respect of that Principality, and signified such fealty by the Welsh motto which he adopted,—"EICH DYN," "YOUR MAN." Edward I. was called to swear fealty to Philip of France, in respect of his

---

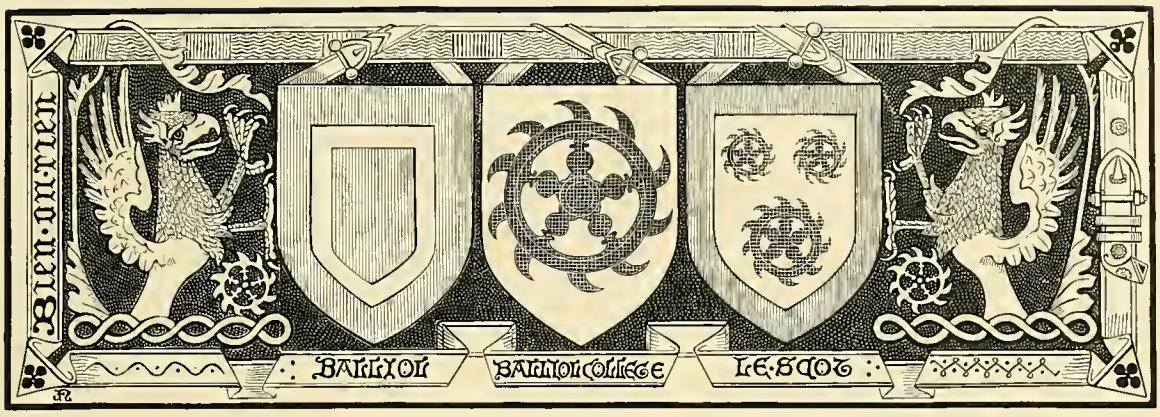
[v] "The Scots had got together by this time (A.D. 855) in considerable numbers, and they sent off commissioners to negotiate a peace. The Saxons and Britons were, by reason of their overthrow at Jedburgh, and their late shipwreck, easily induced to terms of accommodation, and these were, that the Scots should make over to them all those territories that *lye between Severus's Wall* (between Tyne and Solway) *and the Firths of Clyde and Forth.* Hence Dumbarton or *Britannodum* is said to be so called by reason that the Britons took possession of that place; and the adjacent country near Clyde, by-south the Forth, fell to the English share. And some say, I think falsely, that these last having repaired the Castle of Stirling, first coined in it that sort of money we call sterling to this day. Others add (for I design to conceal nothing that can contribute to illustrate the real glories of the English nation) that by this treaty the King (Scottish) was relieved upon condition that he should pay a certain sum of money for his ransom: and that this has been called a *tribute.*"—*Abercromby's Martial Atchievements of the Scots' Nation*, vol. i., p. 163.

[w] The locality now known as "Scotland Yard," at Whitehall, is the site of the residence of the earlier Kings of Scotland after the Conquest, who attended to perform homage to the Kings of England.

Continental possessions within that country, just as former English monarchs had done.

It is only fair to Scottish historians, as representing their national view of the homage rendered to the English kings, to state that while the latter regarded the homage as due in respect of the realm of Scotland, the people of that country maintain that it was only in respect of the Earldom of Huntingdon and other fiefs within the realm of England, held for several generations by the Kings of Scotland. Into this controverted point, however, it is not proposed to enter at greater length in this place; the immediate object being to show the origin of the name "Scotland," as derived from "Scot." All the facts and the probabilities of the case point to the tribute paid or to the homage exacted by the Roman, the Saxon, and the Norman powers in succession. The term is derived from the same root as that which first gave a name to the now widely-spread family of Scott.

That term existed before Scotland was so designated. It is therefore chronologically impossible that it could have first signified a native of Scotland.



Chapter II.

THE ORIGIN OF THE FAMILY OF SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL.

"The glory of children are their fathers."—PROV. XVII. 6.

Claim to be descended from the Norman family of Baliol.—How the two families merged.—Historical facts.—Dominant purpose of Edward I., King of England.—His claims as Lord Paramount.—The Principality of Wales annexed to England.—Motto and Arms of the Prince of Wales.—Earldom of Chester.—John le Scot, the last independent Earl.—Edward's design in respect of Scotland.—Fall of the Baliols.—Change of name from Baliol to le Scot.—Edward's tomb and inscription.—Connection of the Scotts, of Scot's Hall, with John le Scot.—Meaning of the name.—Ancient branches of the family.—Genealogical Note illustrative of this Chapter.

THE "ancient and knightly" [a] family of Scott, of Scot's Hall, at Brabourne, and subsequently at Smeeth, both in the county of Kent, claim to be lineal descendants and representatives of the ancient, but now, in name, extinct Norman family of Baliol, and through them of the Kings of Scotland of Malcolm's line. This is also asserted by Philipott and Hasted, the Kentish historians, whose statements will have to be quoted subsequently. In the present chapter it is intended to set forth and place upon record the grounds of the above claim.

The family of Baliol eventually merged in that of Scot, through William Baliol le Scot, youngest, and last surviving brother of John Baliol, King of Scotland, and of

[a] Burke's *Armoury*.

Alexander Baliol, Lord of the honour of Chilham Castle, Kent; and also the uncle of Edward Baliol, who for seven years was king of that distracted country.

The assumption of the name of "le Scot" by the later Baliol was owing to political causes, to which some reference will have to be made. The Scotts were also the eventual heirs of John le Scot, the last independent Earl of Chester, by descent from Margaret, his eldest sister and co-heir; from whom the Scotts, of Scot's Hall, eventually descended.[b] In deducing the grounds of this claim, it will be needful to refer briefly to some facts connected with the history of the period.

Edward I., King of England, has been aptly styled by a modern writer, "The Greatest of the Plantagenets."[c] He was a thoroughly English monarch, and possessed one predominant purpose, to the accomplishment of which he devoted all the energy of a resolute will, and all the activity of a long and eventful reign. He was constantly engaged in efforts to secure a complete English representation in the National Councils, and, to that end, a more decided submission of the nations and principalities that were tributary to the English crown. He was born at Westminster, A.D. 1239; and, unlike his predecessors, had been educated and brought up, not in Normandy, but in England. His sentiments and habits were thoroughly English. His predecessors on the throne had been foreign rulers; speaking a foreign tongue; alien in spirit and aim from the insular people over whom they ruled; passing most of their time on the Continent where their chief possessions lay, in Normandy, Anjou, Poitou, Gascony, etc. To the proprietors of these extensive and wealthy provinces, England had been regarded only as a fief. Edward I., on the contrary, as Lord Paramount, desired to give

---

[b] There can be little doubt that the several families bearing the same name—to wit, the Scotts of Buccleugh, of Ancrum, of Harden, of Balweary, and of Branxholm—had a common origin with the Kentish Scotts, derived like them from the Kings of Scotland of the Scoto-Saxon line. Their possessions in Galloway, Roxburgh, Berwickshire, etc., were, in almost every instance, originally possessed by the Royal line of Scotland or by the Baliols by descent from Margaret le Scot and Alan of Galloway. Few, if any, of the Border Scotts originally possessed territories north of the Clyde and Forth, such being mostly situate between the two Roman walls or embankments in the country now known as the Lowlands, anciently as the kingdom of Strathcluyd, which, as we have already stated, was land in respect of which a "Scot" or contribution was originally levied for the purpose of embanking the walls and protecting the lands, and which came in time to be termed the land of tribute, *i.e.*, Scotland. In this region the Anglo-Saxon language was exclusively spoken, as distinguished from the Gaelic north of the Roman walls. The Duke of Buccleugh, a descendant of one of the Lowland Scotts, is still proprietor of very extensive estates which were anciently in the possession of Matilda le Scot and Devorgilla Baliol, from whom, by descent through his ancestor, a Scot, it doubtless passed when he had sworn allegiance to Robert Bruce. The ancestors of the Dukes of Buccleugh and other northern Scots became thus exclusively Scottish in their nationality, whilst, on the other hand, the Kentish Scots, the ancestors of so many of the English families of that name, became English as it regards their nationality; both, however, claiming in common the same origin—that of descent from the family of "le Scot," of the Royal line of Scotland.

It is asserted by the Kentish historians, Philipott and Hasted (A.D. 1690 and 1770), that the Earls of Buccleugh and Barons of Burley in Scotland, the latter of whom derived their descent from the Baliols, were known by the name of Scot, and bore, with some inconsiderable difference, the arms of the family of Scott, of Scot's Hall. The Barons of Burley are extinct, whilst the arms of the Buccleughs are now wholly dissimilar.

[c] William Longman, *Life of Edward I.*, p. 328.

expression to the sentiment which, for the first time since the Conquest, found an exponent and an advocate in an English king. Hence his prevailing idea and his firm resolve to bring under one strong rule and subject to the same laws all the minor nations and principalities within his realm. This object he endeavoured to secure by diplomacy, by marriage, or, if needful, by force of arms. He curbed the pretensions and resisted the attempts at independence made by the native chiefs of the Principality of Wales, by the rulers of the Palatinate Counties of Chester and of Durham, as well as by the more important and powerful kingdom of Scotland.

It has been narrated in the preceding chapter how Llewellyn, the last independent Prince of Wales, waged war with the Earls of Chester and with the King of England. Having failed in his oath of homage to the latter, and having invaded an English border castle in time of peace, a pretext was afforded for reprisals upon himself and his territory. He was slain in battle, and his brother, David of Snowdon, being captured, was tried at Shrewsbury, and sentenced to be hanged as a traitor. The heads of the brothers were sent to London and fixed upon the Tower. The Principality of Wales was annexed to the English crown, in the person of Prince Edward, afterwards Edward II., who was born in Carnarvon, although not in the Eagle Tower of the castle of that town, as is commonly stated.[d]

From the year 1301, the eldest son of the blood royal of England has borne the title of PRINCE OF WALES, with the Welsh motto—

"EICH DYN," *i.e.*, "YOUR MAN;"

which has been since either changed or corrupted into the Teutonic

"ICH DIEN," *i.e.*, "I SERVE."

Both of these phrases, however, may be regarded as being expressive of the predominant idea and purpose of Edward I., that Wales should render homage to the King of England as Lord Paramount.

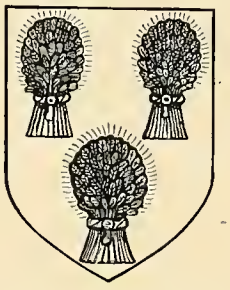
The Earldom of Chester, formerly held by John le Scot, was at the same time assumed by the Prince of Wales, who takes it as his third title to this day, and bears the same coat-of-arms, "Azure, three Garbes, Or," as Earl of Chester, as did John le Scot, the seventh and last Earl of that line.[e] These arms,

---

[d] The Rev. C. H. Hartshorne has shown (*Archæological Journal*, vii. 237) that the Eagle Tower was not then built, and was not completed at the close of Edward's reign.

[e] "EDWARD PLANTAGENET, surnamed 'of Carnarvon,' son and heir-apparent of King Edward I., had a grant of the Principality of Wales and county of Chester, by charter, 7th February, 1301; and in another charter, 10th May following, he is styled 'Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester,' by which title he was summoned to Parliament from 2nd June, 1302, to 3rd November, 1306."—Sir Harris Nicolas, *Peerage*.

differenced as to the field, were borne by the Comyns, Lords of Badenoch, and are assumed by their descendants to this day; they, with the Baliols, were heirs and



ARMS OF EARL OF CHESTER.

representatives of Margaret, sister of John le Scot, through the marriage of John Comyn, of Badenoch ("the Black Comyn"), with Mary Baliol, an heiress of the Earl of Chester.

Excepting only in the matter of homage, the Palatinate Earldom of Chester had been in Saxon times, and since the Norman Conquest, entirely distinct from any other Earldom in the kingdom. Its possessor held a separate Court, in almost regal splendour, being entitled to carry the sword of state called Curtana before the King of England at his coronation, he was attended by a nobility of his own creation, and dispensed laws which were sometimes at variance with those of the Lords Paramount, the Kings of England. But all allegiance to them was denied by the Earls of Chester, excepting in the matter of homage ("I am your man"), which implied only assistance in time of war.

JOHN LE SCOT.[g]

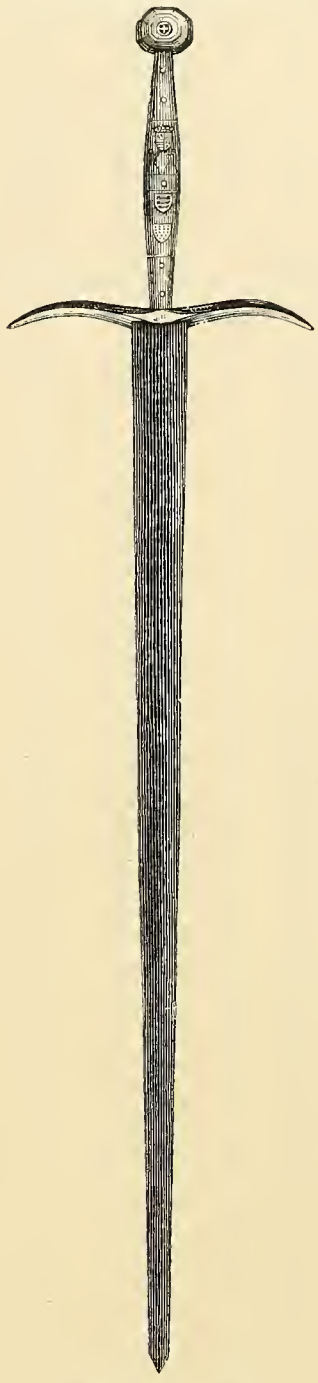
The last independent Earl of Chester, John le Scot, was one of the heirs of Llewellyn, the last native Prince of Wales, by marriage with his daughter, Helena; but Llewellyn's treason prevented an assertion of the heirship.[f] John le Scot contended, however, that as Palatine Earl of Chester, he was exempt from summons to the English Parliaments in respect of his English baronies. He did not, like his father-in-law, Llewellyn, renounce fealty to the Lord Paramount, but his

[f] John le Scot was likewise, in the event of failure of the line of Alexander, King of Scotland, heir to the crown of that tributary kingdom, through his father, David of Huntingdon, who was grandson of David, King of Scotland.

[g] The above, taken from an Elizabethan window in Brereton Hall, Cheshire, had been suggested by an earlier window in Chester Abbey.

death in 1244 furnished an occasion to King Henry III. to exchange the lands to which his sisters and co-heirs were entitled, so far as related to the Earldom of Chester, for other lands of equal value. The politic pretext raised by the King of England was "the undesirableness of so fair an inheritance being divided *inter colos*," *i.e.*, "among distaffs," or spinsters—they being unmarried at the time.

In this diplomatic and peaceable manner was the Palatine Earldom of Chester obtained in 1246 by the King of England, on the death of John le Scot, and finally annexed to the Crown of England for ever. It has been already explained how that Earldom was afterwards conferred upon the Prince of Wales, and how its arms were assumed by him and by succeeding holders of that title to this day.[h]



SWORD OF CHESTER.[h]

In accordance with his predominant idea, Edward I. was also anxious to merge, by pacific measures, the tributary kingdom of Scotland into that of England. To that end, he betrothed his son, Edward Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester, to Margaret, "the maid of Norway," grand-daughter of Alexander III., and next in succession to the Scottish throne.[i] She, however, died on her pas-

---

[h] The Sword of Chester, of which the adjoined is a representation, is inscribed—

"HVGO COMES CESTRIE,"

and is commonly attributed to Hugh le Keveliock, Earl of Chester, A.D. 1153 to 1180, grandfather on his mother's side of John le Scot, the last Earl of the Norman and Saxon line. This was the state sword of Edward Prince of Wales, afterwards Edward V., as Earl of Chester, A.D. 1475 to 1483. The present handle would appear to have been added about the end of the 15th century.

It is to be seen in the British Museum, but must not be confounded with the sword called "Curtana," carried as Premier Peer by the ancient Palatinate Earls of Chester before the Kings of England at their coronation—a tributary service rendered as independent Earls Palatine. The last sword "Curtana" was carried by John le Scot, Earl of Chester, before Henry III., at his coronation, in token of homage; it is not improbable that the "Sword of Chester" was so carried by the subsequent Earls, heirs of the royal line of England, in token of suit and service "The heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all." The sword "Curtana" is amongst the regalia in the Tower of London, and is still carried at coronations.

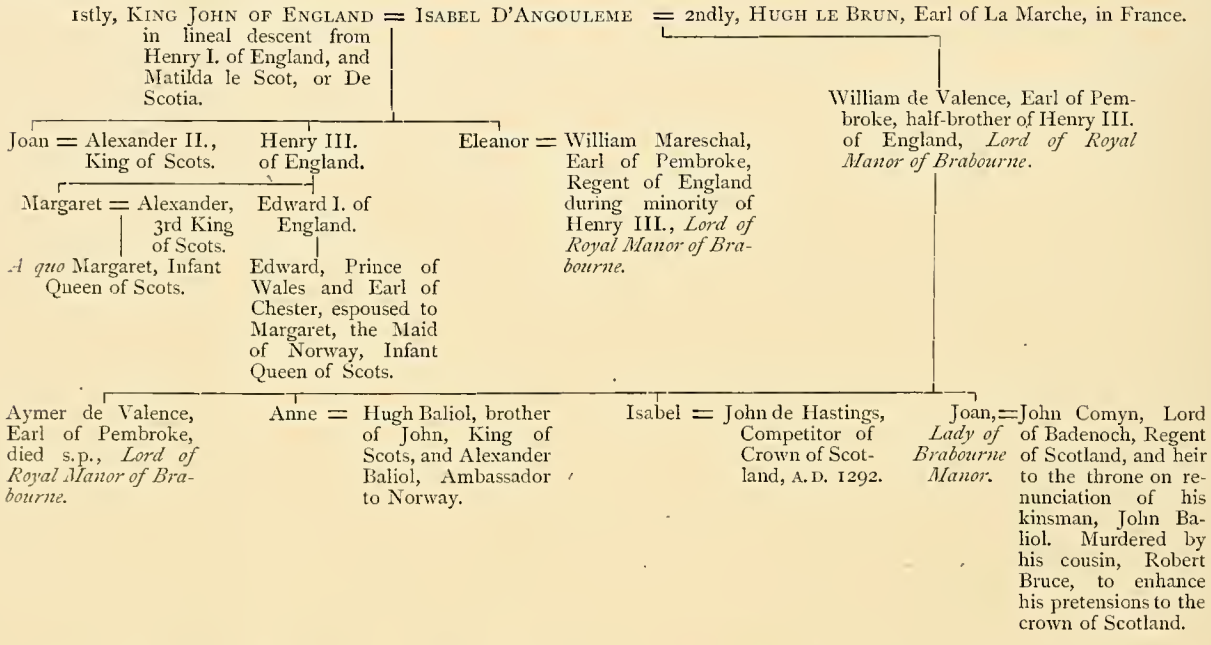
[i] Sir Alexander Baliol (brother to the king, and to William Baliol le Scot), together with Sir Michael Scot, Sir David Scot, and others of eminent degree, were despatched A.D. 1290 by Edward I., to bring from Norway, Margaret, daughter of Eric, King of Norway, and Margaret, his wife, daughter of Alexander, King of Scotland,

sage from Norway, A.D. 1290; or, as some assert, shortly after her arrival in Scotland. The crown then descended to the heirs of Margaret, sister of John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon and last Earl of Chester, of the Norman and Saxon line.(j)

Then arose the disputes between the Baliols, the Bruces, and the Comyns, which Edward I. was called upon to decide. He pronounced, as is well known, in favour of John Baliol, whose reign, however, was brief and inglorious, but by no means deserving of the reproach which Scottish historians have cast upon it. Whatever his deserts, he came into conflict with Edward I. in the matter of his fealty to England; and his consequent ruin was complete and final. It involved the extinction of his family; the confiscation of his estates; the excommunication, imprisonment, outlawry,

---

previous to her betrothal to Edward, Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester, the King's eldest son. The very close connection between the Kings of England and Scotland at this period is shown in the subjoined table; hence, probably, Edward I.'s anxiety to merge the crown of Scotland under that of England. The connection of both royal families with the then royal manor of Brabourne is also shown.


1stly, KING JOHN OF ENGLAND in lineal descent from Henry I. of England, and Matilda le Scot, or De Scotia.
= ISABEL D'ANGOULEME
= 2ndly, HUGH LE BRUN, Earl of La Marche, in France.
William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, half-brother of Henry III. of England, Lord of Royal Manor of Brabourne.
Joan = Alexander II., King of Scots.
Henry III. of England.
Eleanor = William Mareschal, Earl of Pembroke, Regent of England during minority of Henry III., Lord of Royal Manor of Brabourne.
Margaret = Alexander, 3rd King of Scots.
Edward I. of England.
A quo Margaret, Infant Queen of Scots.
Edward, Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester, espoused to Margaret, the Maid of Norway, Infant Queen of Scots.
Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, died s.p., Lord of Royal Manor of Brabourne.
Anne = Hugh Baliol, brother of John, King of Scots, and Alexander Baliol, Ambassador to Norway.
Isabel = John de Hastings, Competitor of Crown of Scotland, A.D. 1292.
Joan, Lady of Brabourne Manor. = John Comyn, Lord of Badenoch, Regent of Scotland, and heir to the throne on renunciation of his kinsman, John Baliol. Murdered by his cousin, Robert Bruce, to enhance his pretensions to the crown of Scotland.

(j) Well would it have been for Scotland if Edward's plan of merging the two crowns had not been defeated by the untimely death of the Maid of Norway. Scotland's independence was wrested, for a time, by Robert Bruce, the most powerful of her kings, from Edward II., one of the weakest and most vacillating of English monarchs. As a separate country, Scotland never throve, nor until united to England in 1603 by the accession of James VI. During the intervening period, of more than three centuries, party feuds continued to rage as they had done in the time of Baliol and Bruce. Few of the Scottish rulers died a natural death. Robert III. died of a broken heart. James I. was murdered. James II. was killed by an accident. James III. was murdered. James IV. fell on the fatal field of Flodden. James V. died of a broken heart. Mary Stuart was beheaded. James VI. had a most troubled reign, and his son, Charles I., died on the scaffold. The "idea" for which Scotland shed some of her best blood, and lavished enormous treasure, failed to be realized; and her distractions were not finally ended until, in 1707, the country was formally and legally merged with England, by the Act of Union, into the kingdom of Great Britain. King Robert Bruce is asserted to have stated, with reference to the indecision of character of Edward II., "that he feared the dead King Edward's bones rather than those of the living Edward."

and exile of the heads of the house of Baliol, and of his heirs and dependants (William Baliol le Scot alone excepted); and, at length, a change of name from *Baliol* to *le Scot* on the part of the survivors.[k] This was in accordance with an almost universal practice of those times when treason was the highest crime known to the law; the object being to avoid not only the penalties but also the civil and social disabilities which attached to any one bearing an outlawed or proscribed name.

Such is a brief review of the reign of Edward I., and of the successive endeavours on his part to bring into subjection to the English crown the Principality of Wales, the Earldom of Chester, and the Kingdom of Scotland.

On the stone which covers his remains was inscribed what had been the ruling sentiment of his life. The following terse inscription, said to have been dictated by himself, was placed on his tomb in Westminster Abbey, where it remained until effaced by the hand of Time:—

EDVARDVS PRIMVS : SCOTORVM MALLEVS :
HIC EST : MCCCVII :

Pactum Serva.

"*This is Edward the First, the Hammer of the Scottish Nation.* 1307.

Keep your Covenant."[l]

Like the motto of his son, the Prince of Wales, this epitaph expressed the con-

[k] It appears that the later Baliols, and John Comyn the Black (most probably as heirs of John le Scot, last Earl of Chester, grandson of David, King of Scotland) were known or addressed in writs under the name of *le Scot*. Thus John Comyn, known as of Badenoch (who had married Mary Baliol, sister of John Baliol, King of Scotland, of Alexander Baliol, Lord of Chilham in Kent, and of William Baliol le Scot) was addressed as "John Comyn *le Scot*," after the battle of Northampton, A.D. 1264, in which he had with the Baliols fought on the side of the English king.—*Knighton*, p. 2447. Again, John Baliol, after the renunciation by him of the Scottish Crown, was addressed in a writ, 27th Ed. I. (A.D. 1299) as follows: "Anno 27 Ed. I. Thesaurus Ballioli *Scoti* in Angliam transfretantis interceptus est; inter cetera inventa fuit corona. Regia Regni Scottorum, et Sigillum commune Scotiæ."—*Fœdera*, vol. 5. In like manner, Thomas Baliol (son or grandson of Alexander Baliol, Lord of Chilham in Kent, who was brother of William Baliol le Scot, the ancestor in Kent of the Scot's Hall family) was likewise addressed as *le Scot*. Thus, in a writ of safe conduct, 38th Ed. III. A.D. 1363-4, "Thomas Baliol *le Scot*, brother to the Earl of Mar, is permitted to travel in England with twelve horses in his train, on condition that he take no other horses out of the realm except such as he brings with him" Two earlier licenses, addressed to "Thomæ Baliolo *Scoto* venditori equorum," in 1360 and 1361, occur, "allowing him to sell any of the horses which he brought into England with him"—*Surtees' Durham*, Barnard Castle, p 63. It has been asserted by the Kentish historians, Philipott (A D. 1620) and Hasted, and is again emphatically asserted here, that after A.D. 1365, the name of Baliol is no longer found in any record or public document of England or Scotland.

[l] For an interesting account of the opening of Edward the First's tomb, in May, 1774, see *Archæologia*, vol. iii.

viction that it was his mission to exact from tributaries their fealty obligations, to the utmost of his power.

It is remarkable, as a fact of family history, that the several tributaries which Edward sought to bring into subjection, as above related, viz., WALES, CHESTER, and SCOTLAND, are alike connected with the subject of this chapter,—"The Origin of the Family of Scott of Scot's Hall." For—

(1) John le Scot married Helena, the daughter of Llewellyn, native Prince of North WALES, who was beheaded for treason, and his principality annexed to the Crown of England as an appanage of the Crown Prince, now known as the Prince of Wales.

(2) John le Scot, in right of his mother, obtained the Palatinate of CHESTER, of which he was the seventh and last independent Earl. From his sister and co-heir, Margaret le Scot, the Baliols, the Comyns of Badenoch, and the Scotts of Scot's Hall, obtain their descent. The family of the Baliols, as represented by William Baliol le Scot, were merged in the Scot's Hall family, who claim lineal descent from him, as subsequent pedigrees will show.

(3) John le Scot, Earl of Chester, was also, in right of his father, Earl of Huntingdon, Lord of Fotheringay and Scottisbury [m] in Northamptonshire, and of Strathbolgie and the Garioch in Scotland; and was connected with the kingdom of SCOTLAND by direct descent from his grandfather, Henry, Crown Prince of that country, son of David, King of Scotland; he was likewise at one time heir presumptive of the Scottish Crown.

SEAL OF DEVORGILDA. [n]

[m] Scottisburg. *i.e.*, the Burgh or residence of the Sept of Scot. It was an English fief, from before the Conquest attached to the Crown of Scotland and its heirs.

[n] The above is a representation of the interesting seal of Devorgilda, who, with her husband, John Baliol, were founders of Balliol College; it is a fac-simile of that attached to her charter of gift to that endowment, and

In reference to the surname of "le Scot," as borne by the Earl of Chester and Huntingdon, it is contended, as in the previous chapter, that this came, not from his Scottish descent—for he was, in fact, more Norman and Saxon than Scottish, and was lineally descended from the Saxon kings on his father's side. It seems more reasonable to assume, having regard to the antiquity of the surname—which was borne before the Conquest and gave the name to not fewer than three Scot's Halls connected with the family, in times long before the erection of Scot's Hall in Kent, in the fourteenth century—that it arose from an affix or surname by which the Earl and others of the family, descendants of Malcolm Canmore, King of Scots, of the Scoto-Saxon line of kings, were addressed as "le Scot"; meaning thereby, "the tributer" or "homager"; that being the ancient meaning of the word "Scot," as explained in the first chapter.[o]

Be this as it may, his titles were those of two English Earldoms; his estates being chiefly in England; and a connection existed between his family and the Scots of Scot's Hall at Potter Newton, in the Manor of Leeds; and probably with the more ancient Scot's Halls of Canewdon, in Essex, and of Dunwich, in Suffolk.

These ancient branches of the family, and their places of residence, will be treated of more in detail in the succeeding chapter.

---

now in possession of the College authorities. This heraldic seal represents on the obverse the effigy of Devorgilda holding in her right hand a shield with the arms of her husband John Baliol; in her left that of her father Alan McDougal, Lord of Galloway. Underneath on the right are the arms of her uncle, John le Scot, borne by him as Earl of Chester, and on the left the three piles, being the arms of John le Scot, as Earl of Huntingdon, *one of whose heiresses she became* on the death of her mother, Margaret le Scot. On the reverse, but in somewhat different order, are the same shields, representing the vast estates to which she became entitled as one of the representatives of the Baliols, of the Lords of Galloway, of the Palatinateship of Chester, of the Lords of Huntingdon, Fotheringay, Bedford, and elsewhere in England, and of Strathbolgie, Scotland. It was, however, through her descent from her grandfather, David, Earl of Huntingdon, that her son, John Baliol, King of Scotland, eventually claimed the Scottish sceptre.

[o] We would once again observe that the term Scotia or Scotland was first applied, before the Conquest of England, to that portion of territory inhabited by the Scoto-Saxons, now known as the Lowlands, and which lay between the Picts, or Northern Roman Wall dividing the Forth and Clyde, and the Græmes Dyke, or Southern Wall between Tyne or Solway. It was, as before explained, called Scotia from the Scot or Tribute paid in respect, 1stly, of the cost of the construction of the embankment or walls above mentioned; and, 2ndly, in respect of the charges or tribute paid for the protection afforded, if not by Roman protectors, at all events by their successors, the Saxon and Danish kings, against the incursions of Northern barbarians.

It is likewise by no means improbable that the Saxon coin of tribute called the Sceatta or Scot was so denominated from the purpose to which it was applied, viz., as a war tax to provide against the incursions of the Northern nations Afterwards, in Canute's time, or a little later, the kingdoms of Albania, Caledonia, Strathclyde, and the Cumbrian Britons *were united under one rule;* the whole kingdom was for the first time called "Scotland;" and the Anglo-Saxon, in lieu of the Gaelic tongue, was first spoken. This term, Scotland, at the time of the Conquest appears to have supplied the affix or surname of De Scotia or le Scot, to the kings of united Scotland, and others the descendants of the royal Scoto-Saxon line of Malcolm Canmore.

GENEALOGICAL

THE following Genealogical Table is inserted here, in order to show, at a glance, that which has been asserted and for many centuries, derived immediately their family name and descent from the Baliols, who adopted the name of le Scot,

It shows likewise the descent of the said family of Baliol, or le Scot, through Henry, Crown Prince of Scotland, from William I., King of England.

The Genealogy likewise illustrates, incidentally, the intimate connection of the family of Scott and its progenitors century. [The immediate connection of the Manor of Brabourne with certain of the claimants of the Scottish throne Manor.]

THE FOLLOWING PEDIGREE IS EDUCED FROM THE PUBLIC RECORDS, FROM HASTED,

MALCOLM CANMORE, King of Scotland, 1st King of Scots of the Scoto-Saxon line of kings; slain 1092. = MARGARET, sis. of Edgar Atheling, sole heiress of the Saxon kings.

a

Maud, da. of Waltheof, Earl of Northumberland, Lady of Honour of Northampton, Huntingdon, and Lady of Fotheringhay and Scottesbury in Northamptonshire. = David I., King of Scots, crowned 1124, did homage to King of England for his crown.*

* "Hæc ille: at de *David Scoto* Malcolmi pii et Margaretæ Sanctæ filio." Menteo in litteris Clementis Papæ tertii A.D. 1140. —Chartulary of Newbotel.

Matilda, known as De Scotia or le Scot. = Henry I., King of England.

Empress Maud, (John le Scot, of Scotty's Hall, in Potter Newton, was her steward, and doubtless her kinsman.)

Henry II. (Fitz-Empress.)

b

Richard I.

c

Alexander II., King of Scots. = Joan.

Henry III.

Alexander III., King of Scots. = Margaret.

Edward I.

Henry, Crown Prince of Scots, died *v.p.* Did homage to King Stephen, and received from him Lordship of Huntingdon. = Adeline, da. of William de Warreune, Earl of Warrenne and Surrey.

d

Hugh le Kevelioc, Earl of Chester, died 1181. = Bertra,

William the Lion, King of Scots 1165, whose line eventually failed in Margaret, the Maid of Norway.

David, Earl of Huntingdon, Lord of Fotheringhay and *Scottysbury* in Northamptonshire (*English fiefs of the Kings of Scotland*), Lord of Strathbolgie and the Garrioch in Scotland. = Maud, da. of Hugh le Kevelioc, and sis. of Ranulph de Blandeville, Palatine Earl of Chester, and sometime Earl of Leicester and Lincoln on the attaint of Simon de Montfort, surnamed the Bald.

Margaret. (This lady's dowered residence was probably Scotty's Hall, in Canewdon, Essex.) = Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, Lord of Raleigh, Rochford, and Canewdon.*

* These manors previously held by Henry de Essex, *circa* A.D. 1164, who was likewise *Lord of Brabourne Manor in Kent.*

e

Margaret "le Scot," eldest da. (*sister and coheir of John le Scot, Earl of Chester and Huntingdon*). = Alan McDougal, Lord of Galloway, Constable of Scotland.

Isabel, 3rd da. (*sister and coheir of John le Scot*). = Robert Bruce (ancestor to competitor for *Scottish throne* (1292), and to Robert Bruce, King of Scotland.

Devorgilda, Countess of Huntingdon, and Lady of Fotheringhay Castle, where she principally resided. She was buried in her Abbey of Dulce Cor, so called from the heart of her husband buried with her there. Died 1288. = John de Baliol, Lord of Barnard Castle, and, with his wife, founder of Balliol College, Oxford. Buried at Barnard Castle, his heart at Dulce Cor Abbey, Dumfriesshire. Died 1269.

Note.—John Baliol and John Comyn, of Badenoch, Regents of Scotland during minority of Alexander III., King of Scots, and his Queen, sister to King Edward I. of England.

William de Fortibus, Earl of Albemarle. = Christiana (niece of John le Scot). This lady in 1292 exchanged the Manor of Aynho, in Northamptonshire, for the Manor of Canewdon, in Essex (sometime possessed by Henry de Essex, *Lord of Brabourne Manor*). *In Canewdon Manor, the ancient sub-manor of Scotty's Hall now exists, as it did probably at this date* (1292), and was (*circa* A.D. 1250) the probable dowered residence of Margaret, da. of William the Lion, King of Scotland, widow of Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, whose residence was Hadleigh Castle, Essex, which he built, and which passed to his heir.

Note.—His mother's 3rd husband, viz., Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle, had the *Manor of Brabourne* by gift of King John of England.

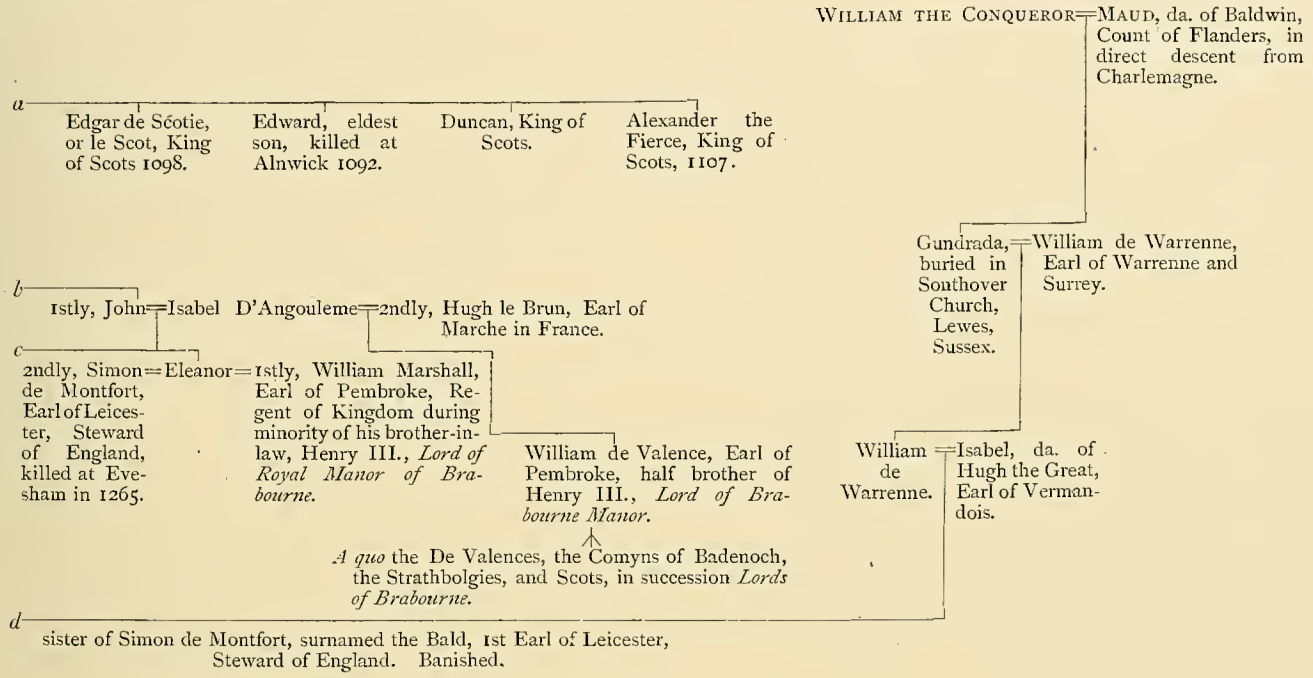
See descent of Brabourne Manor.

NOTE.

contended for in the foregoing chapters—viz., that the Scotts of Scot's Hall, Lords of the Manor of Brabourne, in Kent, they being descended from the sister and coheiress of John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon and Chester.
grandson of Malcolm Canmore, King of Scotland ; also through Adeline de Warrenne, wife of the said Crown Prince,

with the once *Royal Manor of Brabourne*, from the time of William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, down to the present (*temp.* Edward I.) and the Scott family will be shown more in detail in another Pedigree of the descent of that

PHILIPOTT, HARLEIAN MSS., AND SCOT'S HALL DOCUMENTS AND EVIDENCES :—


WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR=MAUD, da. of Baldwin, Count of Flanders, in direct descent from Charlemagne.
a
Edgar de Scotie, or le Scot, King of Scots 1098.
Edward, eldest son, killed at Alnwick 1092.
Duncan, King of Scots.
Alexander the Fierce, King of Scots, 1107.
Gundrada, buried in Southover Church, Lewes, Sussex.
=William de Warrenne, Earl of Warrenne and Surrey.
b
1stly, John=Isabel D'Angouleme=2ndly, Hugh le Brun, Earl of Marche in France.
c
2ndly, Simon de Montfort, Earl of Leicester, Steward of England, killed at Evesham in 1265.
=Eleanor=1stly, William Marshall, Earl of Pembroke, Regent of Kingdom during minority of his brother-in-law, Henry III., *Lord of Royal Manor of Brabourne.*
William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, half brother of Henry III., *Lord of Brabourne Manor.*
A quo the De Valences, the Comyns of Badenoch, the Strathbolgies, and Scots, in succession *Lords of Brabourne.*
William de Warrenne.
=Isabel, da. of Hugh the Great, Earl of Vermandois.
d
sister of Simon de Montfort, surnamed the Bald, 1st Earl of Leicester, Steward of England. Banished.

e

Ada, 4th da. = Henry de Hastings, grandfather of John de Hastings, *competitor for the Scottish Crown* (1292), *See descent of Brabourne Manor.* (*sister and co-heir of John le Scot*).

John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon, Lord of Fotheringhay Castle and Scottysbury in Northamptonshire, in right of his father, and last Palatine Earl of Chester, in right of his mother. Likewise Lord of Strathbolgie and the Garrioch, in the realm of Scotland, and *sometime heir presumptive to the Scottish throne.* = Helena, da. of Llewellyn, native Prince of North Wales. She was afterwards married to Robert de Quincy, son of Saher De Quincy, Earl of Winchester.

The Baliols, and through them the Scotts of Kent, doubtless assumed the name of this man as his representatives. He died, s.p., 1244.

Edward I. was the first Earl of Chester of the English line of kings, and the Prince of Wales to this day bears the arms of "John le Scot," viz., azure 3 garbs or, as Earl of Chester.

Edward II. was the first Prince of Wales of the English line of kings.

Alan, *s.p.*

Hugh, 28 years old at his father's death, died 1271.

= Anne or Agnes, da. of William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, and *Lord of Brabourne Manor.* (She was niece to Edward I.) (*See descent of Brabourne Manor.*)

Alexander, died 1278, *s.p.*

John, King of Scotland, "*propinquior hæres ejus,*" *on death of Devorgilda Baliol in* 1288. He was Baron Baliol in England, and Lord of the Isle of Man. Died 1315, exiled and excommunicated. (*See Note.*)

= Ada, da. of William de Warrenne, Earl of Warrenne and Surrey. *a*

NOTE.—*The Treasury of John Baliol was in a writ respecting money coined by him in Scotland, referred to as "Thesaurus Balioli Scoti."*

Edward, King of Scotland, for seven years. Sold his right to crown to English king, and died childless, 1363.

Henry, killed at Battle of Annan, *s.p.*

NOTE.—After the death of Edward Baliol, King of Scotland, and of Thomas Baliol, *circa* 1365—8, *the name of Baliol is never again mentioned in history, or in any public record of the time,* thus justifying the assertions of Philipott and Hasted (Kentish historians), that William Baliol, the youngest surviving brother of King John and Alexander Baliol of Chilham, did, in the latter part of his life, drop the name of Baliol, and assume that of "le Scot." This assertion was made by them from the perusal of documents at that time (A.D. 1670 and 1720) in possession of the family of Scott, but now either lost or dispersed.

Thomas Baliol (styled "brother to the Earl of Mar"). Sold Cavers (1360) to William Douglas, Lord of Galloway. Died 1365—8. Summoned as a landowner for East Kent at Coronation of Edward II. —Furley's *Weald of Kent.*

Addressed in writ of license as "*Thomæ Baliolo Scoto.*" *b*

c

William Scot, of *Brabourne.* = Marcella, da. of . . . . .

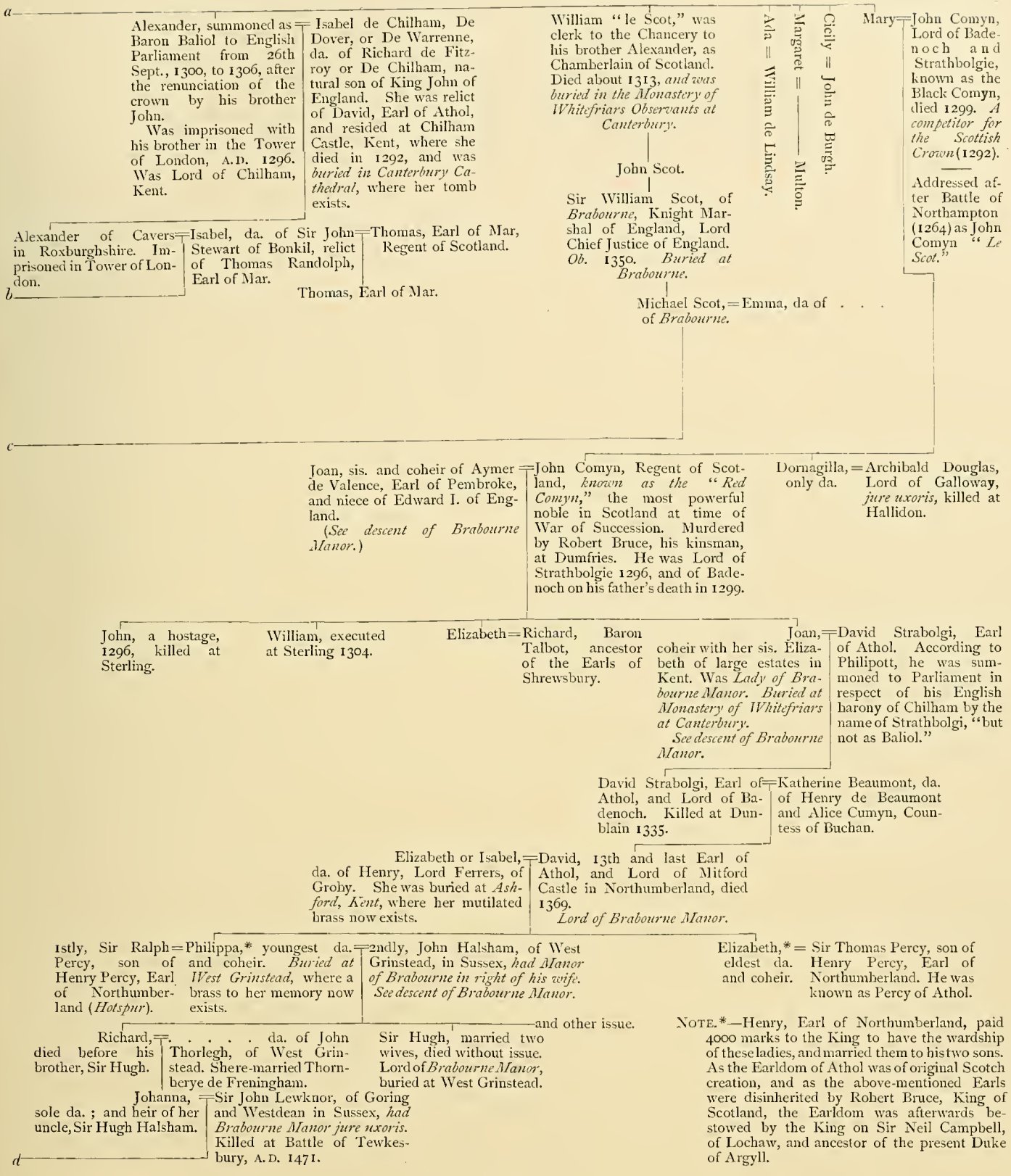
John Scot, of *Brabourne,* Lieut. of Dover Castle (*temp.* Henry IV.). = Heiress of Cumbe. (Cumbe, a Manor in Brabourne.)

Sir William Scot, of Scot's Hall, Knight of the Shire, buried at *Brabourne.* = Isabel, da. of Vincent Herbert or Ffinche, ancestor of the Earls of Winchelsea and Nottingham.

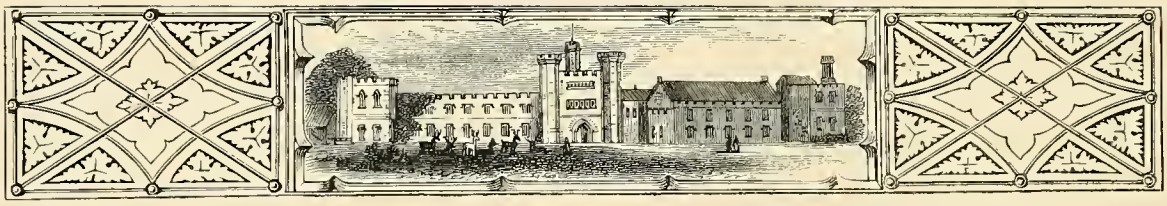
Sir John Scot, of Scot's Hall, Comptroller of Household of Edward IV., Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Lord of Chilham Castle and Manor. Buried at *Brabourne.* = Agnes Beaufitz, daughter of William Beaufitz, of the Grange, Gillingham, Kent.

Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall, K.B., Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Governor of Dover Castle, *Lord of Brabourne Manor jure uxoris.* = Sibella, da. and heir of of Sir John Lewknor. *d*

A quo the Family of Scott, of Scot's Hall, in Kent, Lords of *Brabourne* for several centuries. (See pedigree of Family of Scott.)


a
Alexander, summoned as Baron Baliol to English Parliament from 26th Sept., 1300, to 1306, after the renunciation of the crown by his brother John.
Was imprisoned with his brother in the Tower of London, A.D. 1296. Was Lord of Chilham, Kent.
Isabel de Chilham, De Dover, or De Warrenne, da. of Richard de Fitzroy or De Chilham, natural son of King John of England. She was relict of David, Earl of Athol, and resided at Chilham Castle, Kent, where she died in 1292, and was buried in Canterbury Cathedral, where her tomb exists.
William "le Scot," was clerk to the Chancery to his brother Alexander, as Chamberlain of Scotland. Died about 1313, and was buried in the Monastery of Whitefriars Observants at Canterbury.
John Scot.
Sir William Scot, of Brabourne, Knight Marshal of England, Lord Chief Justice of England. Ob. 1350. Buried at Brabourne.
Michael Scot, = Emma, da of . . . of Brabourne.
Aila = William de Lindsay.
Margaret = —— Multon.
Cicily = John de Burgh.
Mary = John Comyn, Lord of Badenoch and Strathbolgie, known as the Black Comyn, died 1299. A competitor for the Scottish Crown (1292).
Addressed after Battle of Northampton (1264) as John Comyn "Le Scot."
Alexander of Cavers in Roxburghshire. Imprisoned in Tower of London.
Isabel, da. of Sir John Stewart of Bonkil, relict of Thomas Randolph, Earl of Mar.
Thomas, Earl of Mar, Regent of Scotland.
Thomas, Earl of Mar.
b
c
Joan, sis. and coheir of Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, and niece of Edward I. of England. (See descent of Brabourne Manor.)
John Comyn, Regent of Scotland, known as the "Red Comyn," the most powerful noble in Scotland at time of War of Succession. Murdered by Robert Bruce, his kinsman, at Dumfries. He was Lord of Strathbolgie 1296, and of Badenoch on his father's death in 1299.
Dornagilla, only da. = Archibald Douglas, Lord of Galloway, jure uxoris, killed at Hallidon.
John, a hostage, 1296, killed at Sterling.
William, executed at Sterling 1304.
Elizabeth = Richard, Baron Talbot, ancestor of the Earls of Shrewsbury.
Joan, coheir with her sis. Elizabeth of large estates in Kent. Was Lady of Brabourne Manor. Buried at Monastery of Whitefriars at Canterbury. See descent of Brabourne Manor. = David Strabolgi, Earl of Athol. According to Philipott, he was summoned to Parliament in respect of his English barony of Chilham by the name of Strathbolgi, "but not as Baliol."
David Strabolgi, Earl of Athol, and Lord of Badenoch. Killed at Dunblain 1335. = Katherine Beaumont, da. of Henry de Beaumont and Alice Cumyn, Countess of Buchan.
Elizabeth or Isabel, da. of Henry, Lord Ferrers, of Groby. She was buried at Ashford, Kent, where her mutilated brass now exists. = David, 13th and last Earl of Athol, and Lord of Mitford Castle in Northumberland, died 1369. Lord of Brabourne Manor.
1stly, Sir Ralph Percy, son of Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland (Hotspur). = Philippa,* youngest da. and coheir. Buried at West Grinstead, where a brass to her memory now exists.
2ndly, John Halsham, of West Grinstead, in Sussex, had Manor of Brabourne in right of his wife. See descent of Brabourne Manor.
Elizabeth,* eldest da. and coheir. = Sir Thomas Percy, son of Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland. He was known as Percy of Athol.
and other issue.
Richard, died before his brother, Sir Hugh.
. . . . . da. of John Thorlegh, of West Grinstead. She re-married Thornberye de Freningham.
Sir Hugh, married two wives, died without issue. Lord of Brabourne Manor, buried at West Grinstead.
Johanna, sole da.; and heir of her uncle, Sir Hugh Halsham. = Sir John Lewknor, of Goring and Westdean in Sussex, had Brabourne Manor jure uxoris. Killed at Battle of Tewkesbury, A.D. 1471.
d

NOTE.*—Henry, Earl of Northumberland, paid 4000 marks to the King to have the wardship of these ladies, and married them to his two sons. As the Earldom of Athol was of original Scotch creation, and as the above-mentioned Earls were disinherited by Robert Bruce, King of Scotland, the Earldom was afterwards bestowed by the King on Sir Neil Campbell, of Lochaw, and ancestor of the present Duke of Argyll.



Chapter III.

PARTICULARS CONNECTED WITH THE EARLIER HISTORY AND DESCENT OF THE SCOTT FAMILY.

"Still on its march unnoticed and unfelt
Moves on our being. We do live and breathe
And we are gone. The Spoiler heeds us not:
We have our springtime and our rottenness;
And as we fall another race succeeds
To perish likewise."

No Register of Lands before Domesday.—Few Surnames, and Coat Armour rare before Norman Conquest.—William de Schoies, or le Scot, proprietor of lands previously to Domesday Survey.—Scotty's Hall, near Dunwich.—Scotty's Hall at Potter Newton, Yorkshire.—Scotty's Hall at Canewdon, Essex.—Their connection with the family of Scott of Scot's Hall, Kent.—The family resident in and connected with Kent, before the erection of Scot's Hall at Smeeth near Brabourne.—St. Katharine, patron saint of the Scotts.—Scope of the chapter.

WE propose now to supply some particulars, bearing upon the earlier history, descent, and places of residence, of members of this family;—details of which would have encumbered the statements of the preceding chapter.

It may be necessary to remind the general reader of two facts, which should be borne in mind in reference to researches into family and social history of the pre-Norman period.

Firstly. There exists no complete Register of lands and landed proprietors anterior to the compilation of Domesday Book (A.D. 1087) shortly after the Norman Conquest.

Secondly. Few family surnames are found in Domesday, for the use of surnames

and coat armour were most uncommon up to that period, and indeed did not come into general use until the 13th century. The arms, and indeed the patronymic or family surname, of William the Norman are matters of speculation to this day.

The Saxon, William de Schoies, de Scois, D'Eschoies, or le Scot,[a] is apparently the earliest person mentioned in the records of this country, as bearing that name; and we shall be able to adduce presumptive evidence that he was, in some way, connected with the family whose history we have under review.

Of him we have no actual knowledge beyond that which is furnished by the Domesday survey and record: of his *Caput baroniæ*, or residence-in-chief, we are left in doubt. He was, however, territorially possessed of very considerable tracts of land in England—notably in Essex, Suffolk, and Norfolk; of these lands he was seised in the reign of the Saxon King Edward the Confessor.[b]

It is probable that he ranked as a Saxon Thane, for in those times no person under that rank would be possessed of such an extensive estate as that of William le Scot. Nor is it probable that, if of lesser rank, he would have borne a surname. A Thane was a noble of great authority; at his *Aula* (modernized into Hall) he dispensed justice within his Hundred or Manor, according to the Saxon law; with powers of pillory and gallows, of life and death.[c] He owned no allegiance but to the king, of whom he held his lands *in capite*.

There were, also at a very early period, two other manorial residences besides that at Dunwich, mentioned in the previous foot-note, and also termed Scotty's Hall: one at Potter Newton in Yorkshire, and the other at Canewdon in Essex. There can be little doubt that the proprietors of these residences were also connected in ancestry or blood with the family which subsequently settled at Scot's Hall in Kent. We shall state the facts which favour this conclusion.

I.—Scotty's Hall, near Dunwich.

Dunwich was a Saxon city on the Suffolk coast, and seat of an Episcopal See

---

[a] To illustrate the uncertain nature of etymology in reference to proper names, it may be mentioned that the following, *inter alia*, are among the ancient modes of spelling the name of Scott:—Sceathe, L'Eschoies, D'Eschoies, Le Scois, Le Schoies, L'Escois, De Schottys, L'Escot, Le Scot, Escot, Schottys, Schottis, Scottys, Schotte, De Scoch de Calverley, Le Scoch de Kaverlea, Shotte, Scotre, Shottys, Skot, Scot, Scotte, and, lastly, Scott.

The places and families, Scotland, Scottow, Scotney, and Scottu, had for equivalents Escotland, Scotto, Scoten, Scoteney, and Scotter; originally derived from the same root as Scot. Blomfield, in his History of Norfolk, gives "le Scot" as the equivalent of the Saxon "de Schoies."

[b] It may here be mentioned that immediately succeeding the Norman Conquest, the land in England had been parcelled out to so few individuals, that the names of eleven proprietors only are mentioned in Domesday in the county of Kent.

[c] The *Aula* of this William le Scot was most probably at Scotty's Hall, near Dunwich in Suffolk, as will appear from the facts hereafter stated.

before Norwich was erected into a Bishopric. It is now submerged some three miles from the shore. Its name attaches, however, to a small fishing village at the present day. Near to this village, and about a mile and a half from the existing sea-coast, is the site of the ancient manorial residence called Scotty's Hall. Amongst other possessions in Suffolk, William le Scot was presumably connected with this residence, for he was at the time of the Domesday Survey found to be Lord of the Hundred of Blythborough, or Blyburg, in which this ancient Hall originally stood. The Scots who were resident here represented in the Council of the Nation the neighbouring city of Dunwich, and were summoned to the Parliaments held at Westminster, in the 6th, 15th, and 21st years of Edward I., and that held in the 7th year of the same king at York. They disappear from this locality after A.D. 1342, but the ancient site retains the name of Scot's Hall to this day.[d]

II.—Scotty's Hall at Potter Newton.

At Potter Newton, in the township of Leeds, in Yorkshire, existed in early Norman times a manorial residence termed Scotty's Hall. Here dwelt a family of the name of le Scot, the first of whom was John le Scot, steward of the Empress Maud, mother of King Henry II. of England. The empress was closely connected by ties of relationship with the Earls of Chester, one of whom, Ranulph de Blandeville (uncle of John le Scot, and, on his death, Earl of Chester), possessed this lordship, as will shortly be shown. She was likewise niece of David I., King of Scotland, John le Scot's great-grandfather.[e] Thus, there can be little doubt that this family at Potter Newton was also connected by ties of relationship with that of John le Scot, the Earl Palatine of Chester, through whom the Kentish family derive their surname. The Potter Newton family of le Scot were considerable benefactors to the neighbouring priories of Kirklees and Kirkstall, one of the earlier charters of the latter (*circa* A.D. 1142) being conferred by a member of this family. It is not improbable that William le Scot, of Potter Newton, and William de Schoies or le Scot, the pre-Domesday proprietor of lands in Suffolk, may have been of the same family, as both are stated to have been great benefactors of the Abbeys of St. Mary and St. Peter, in the city of York. Be this as it may, on the death of Ranulph de Blandeville, Earl of Chester, and on the division of his inheritance, the township of Leeds did not descend to John le Scot, the succeeding Earl of Chester, but to his other nephew, an Albini, ancestor of the Earls of Arundel.

---

[d] Gardiner's *History of Dunwich.*

[e] In A.D. 1149, Henry Fitz Empress (Henry II. of England) arrived at Carlisle, to receive the honour of knighthood from his near kinsman, Ranulph, Earl of Chester, the Earl also performing homage to the King of England, in respect of his fief of Lancaster, and with the promise that one of Prince Henry's daughters should be given in marriage to one of his sons. This vow was eventually renounced by Henry, and hence the war, and its results, the Treaty of Falaise, *circa* 1180.—(Cumming-Bruce's *Lives of Bruces and Comyns.*)

III.—Scotty's Hall, Canewdon, Essex.

There also existed in very early times a residence at Canewdon (Kanutetown), in the hundred of Rochford, in Essex, termed Scotty's Hall, the site of which still exists under that title, and, like that at Potter Newton, gives the name to a manor to this day. This manor is evidently of very remote origin, for it still presents to the "Lawless," or "Whispering Court of Cockcrowing," at Rayleigh, or Rochford, in Essex, a service so ancient and barbarous in its character, as to have suggested to that late distinguished Saxon and British scholar, Mr. W. H. Black, F.S.A., that it had a British, if not a Roman, origin.

The existing manor house is evidently many centuries old, but erected on a moated site on which a much more ancient hall formerly stood. Little information concerning this ancient residence can now be obtained, but that little evidently suggests a connection with the family whose early history we are tracing; for in Norman times (*circa* A.D. 1160) the manor of Scotty's Hall, at Canewdon, belonged to Henry of Essex (Baron of Raleigh), Hereditary Standard Bearer of England, and *who was likewise Lord of the Royal Manor of Brabourne in Kent*, which eventually descended through him to the family of Scot, whose residence at the adjoining manor of Smeeth was for centuries known as Scot's Hall.

The evident connection of Canewdon Manor with the le Scot family is shown by the following facts and pedigree:—Margaret de Scotia or le Scot, daughter of William the Lion, King of Scots, and first cousin to John le Scot, Earl of Chester, married Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, Chief Justiciar, and sometime Regent of England, who was Lord of the barony of Raleigh and of the hundred of Rochford and manor of Canewdon, in the latter of which the sub-manor of Scotty's Hall was situate. It is extremely probable that the hall derived its name from this lady, descended as she was immediately from the Kings of Scotland; and further, that she resided there during her widowhood, as it appears that Hadleigh Castle, then recently built by her husband but now in ruins, passed to his son and heir. The adjoining castle of Raleigh is the only castle in Essex mentioned in Domesday, and was probably in ruins at the period to which we refer, as not a stone of it now remains.

A pedigraic table is subjoined illustrative of the above:—

William the Lion, King of Scots.

Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, Regent of England, in conjunction with William Marshall, Earl of Pembroke (*Lord of Brabourne Manor*), during minority of Henry III., Lord of the Barony of Raleigh, the Hundred of Rochford, and Manor of Canewdon in Essex; in the latter of which the ancient manorial residence of Scotty's Hall was and is situate. = Margaret de Scotia, or le Scot.

John de Burgh, who married Cicely Baliol (sister of John Baliol, King of Scots), was grandson of Hubert de Burgh by one of his four wives.

David, Earl of Huntingdon (younger brother of William the Lion, King of Scots).

John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon and Chester (died A.D. 1244), nephew of William the Lion, and also of Ranulph de Blandeville, Earl of Chester, Lord of the fee of the Manor of Scotty's Hall, at Potter Newton, Yorkshire, the residence (*circa* A.D. 1142) of John le Scot, steward of the Empress Maud, niece of David I., King of Scots.

Alan, Lord of Galloway. = Margaret le Scot.

A quo the Baliols and the Scotts of Scot's Hall, Kent.

The intimate connection of the le Scot family with the residence termed Scotty's Hall at Canéwdon, is further suggested by the fact that Christiana, the wife of William de Fortibus, Earl of Albemarle, niece of the above-mentioned John le Scot, exchanged his and her manor of Aynho, in Northamptonshire, with the representatives of Henry de Essex, *Lord of the Manor of Brabourne*, for the manor of Canewdon. It may be incidentally stated that Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle, was likewise *Lord of the Manor of Brabourne* by gift of King John, after the forfeiture of the estates of Henry de Essex. As the whole of these vast estates (fifty-five lordships in Essex alone) were forfeited to the Crown (A.D. 1164), it is not improbable that the Crown effected the exchange above referred to of the manors of Aynho for Canewdon.[f]

It will be seen by the foregoing that both of the manorial residences termed Scotty's Hall—the one at Canewdon, and the other at Potter Newton—were connected with the family of le Scot, the former through Margaret de Scotia or le Scot, daughter of William the Lion, and the latter through the uncle of John le Scot, Earl of Chester. We have already pointed out that another manorial residence termed Scotty's Hall—that of Dunwich, in Suffolk—was in all probability a possession of the same family of le Scot.[g]

There exists abundant evidence that there were Scots resident in Kent before the family settled at Brabourne, at the commencement of the fourteenth century. Thus, in a legal agreement termed a Final Concord (8th Richard I., A.D. 1197), between Elias de Beauchamp and Constance de Bolbec, his wife, plaintiff on the one part; and Ruellinas de Abrincis, ancestor to the Earls of Chester, tenant, on the other part, concerning half a knight's fee and its appurtenances at Fleet (Ash), amongst certain dispositions of land and messuages, the following appears:—"Moreover, Alan de Berelinge remains to Ruelinas[h] de Averanches or Abrincis, with all his holding and service, and Albrea, wife of Godwyn, with all her holding and service, and William le Scot, with all his holding and service."—(Planché's *Corner of Kent.*)[i]

---

[f] See Baker's *Northamptonshire*—Aynho.

[g] The locality in Westminster known as Scotland Yard is the ancient site of the hall or palace of the Kings of Scots built by David "Scot," King of Scots. It was afterwards resorted to by his successors, Kings of Scotland, on the occasion of coronation or other royal ceremonials, in view to the rendering of their tributary homage, until the close of the War of Independence under Robert Bruce, when homage was no longer rendered to the Kings of England. The precise name of this palace is now a matter of speculation; only a portion of the walls now remain.

[h] Hence, doubtless, we arrive at the derivation of "Rouel" Road, in the parish of Bermondsey, of the present day. Ruelinas de Averanches, the le Scots, with their kinsfolk the Baliols, together with the Empress Maude, the Earls of Albemarle, and the De Mandevilles, Earls of Essex, were all in turn benefactors to the Abbey of St. Saviour in Bermondsey, the site of which had been given by King Stephen, together with the church of Writtel, in Essex. The manor of Writtel belonged to John le Scot, Earl of Chester, A.D. 1237, and thus identifies him, in all probability, with the John le Scot of Farningham, and the family of Schottys of Knockholt. This manor afterwards passed to the Bruces as heirs (*inter alia*) of the said Earl of Chester.

[i] Hugh de Averanches, otherwise known as Hugh Lupus, the ancestor of the Duke of Westminster, was the first Norman Earl of Chester, and ancestor of John le Scot, seventh and last Earl of the Norman line. The Averanches had large possessions at Folkestone and in East Kent at the Domesday Survey.

We find also that John le Scot (not improbably the Earl of Chester, who died in A.D. 1244) leased in A.D. 1224, of the monks of St. Saviour's in Bermondsey, for ever, the mill of Fernyngham (Farningham), Kent, at a yearly rent of 40s.[j] In the immediate vicinity of this mill at Farningham, the manors of Scotgrove and Scotbury (now Scadbury) formerly existed, as part of the larger manor of Swanscombe in Kent; and which passed by descents through the De Valences, Comyns, and Strathbolgies, until the reign of Edward II., precisely as the manor of Brabourne passed to the Scots of Scot's Hall.

In addition to which, the Royal Manor of Dartford, adjoining that of Swanscombe, was about the year 1264 in the possession of Christiana, Countess of Albemarle, wife of William de Fortibus and niece of John le Scot. This and some outlying manors descended from her to Mary, Countess de St. Paul,[k] wife of Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, *Lord of Brabourne Manor*, and sister of Margaret, wife of Alexander, Crown Prince of Scotland.

From the following extracts from Hussey's *Churches of Kent*,[l] it would appear that St. Katharine, the traditional saint of the family (whose arms are, to this day, three Catherine wheels), had been so from a period at least as early as the end of the thirteenth century.

Thus, "Ralph Scot, abiding in the parish of Chelsfield,[m] at a place or cross road called Scot's Crouch, left that place, and buying lands and sundry possessions, he constructed there a certain mansion called the Hall at Schottes, and as no church existing nearer than Chevening or elsewhere in all directions, from the parish church of Orpington, and because through the distance of the place from the said parish church many perils of souls befel there, ... the inhabitants and Ralph Scot, ... and a certain Her . . . . Goldsmythe, inspired by God, as is believed, in a green spot at Ocolte (now Knockholt), called Hareleap, whereon festivals took place, a common assembly of laity by those inhabiting the said place caused to be erected out of their own goods a certain chapel in honour of Saint Katharine, virgin, the first stone being laid by the said Ralph in the foundation of his own chapel."

The said Ralph Scot out of his land freely endowed not only the said chapel, but also a house for a chaplain, ... "and a building for the collection of tythes to be stored therein,[n] and which buildings were freely given in perpetual arms." This chapel was consecrated 9th May, 1281, in the time of Robert Kelwardeby, Archbishop

---

[j] Dugdale's *Monasticon*.

[k] From this lady, probably, the names of "St. Paul's" Cray and "St. Mary's" Cray, adjoining townships of Farningham and Dartford, were derived.

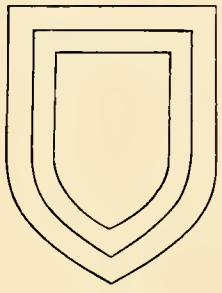
[l] Page 117.

[m] Near Farningham and Dartford.

[n] A "tythe barn," a few of which now remain in Kent, notably one at Nettlested.

of Canterbury, to the honour of St. Katharine.[o] The localities of Scot's Crouch or Cross, the hall, the chapel, and adjacent buildings are now undiscoverable. With reference to the above Radulphus Scottys, or Ralph Scot, Hasted asserts that his family eventually merged into the Shelleys of Michelgrove, Sussex, who shortly after this time wrote themselves as de Shellis or de Schottes of Okholt. Ralph Scot would, however, appear to be connected with the John le Scot above mentioned, who leased in perpetuity the neighbouring mill at Farningham about sixty years before the dedication of this chapel.

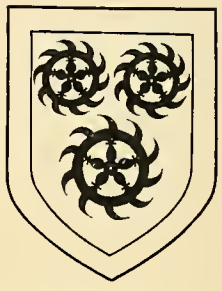
Referring to St. Catherine as the patron saint of the Scot family, it may not be out of place to suggest here that there can be little doubt that the arms of Scot were derived from those of Baliol, combined with the wheel of St. Catherine, which was the ancient badge or mark of Balliol College. Thus, the arms of the Baliol family were gules an orle, argent. The College mark was a Catherine wheel, sable.



BALIOL.

BALLIOL COLLEGE.

The ancient Scot arms were argent, a bordure gules, charged with three Catherine wheels sable. The bordure is engrailed in the modern coat. St. Catherine, the tutelary saint of the college and of the family, was anciently attributed the patron of piety and learning.[p]



SCOT, ANCIENT.

[o] Hussey's authority for this extract is an ancient MS. volume, consisting of chronicles, in Monkish Latin, compiled by Stephen de Birchington, a monk of Canterbury, *circa* 1350.

[p] It may be noticed that many distinguished men and patrons of learning were presumably of this family—descendants of the Kings of Scotland of Malcolm's line. Balliol College was founded and endowed by John Baliol, father of the King of Scotland. Sir Michael Scot, of Balwerie, whom Sir Walter Scott has immortalized as the "Wizard Michael Scot," was undoubtedly a man of extraordinary learning, for the period in which he lived—the thirteenth century. He travelled abroad, and was honoured at the court of Frederick II., King of Sicily. He translated into Latin the Arabian Avicenas's *History of Animals*, and wrote a *Mensa Philosophica* about the time when Bacon was working on his *Opus Majus*. He also composed a treatise upon Physiognomy. He was in 1290, together with Sir David Scot and Sir Alexander Baliol, all doubtless related to the royal house of Scotland, sent as ambassadors to bring over Margaret de Scotia, the Maid of Norway, espoused to the Prince of Wales, afterwards Edward II. He died in A.D. 1291, a year before Roger Bacon.

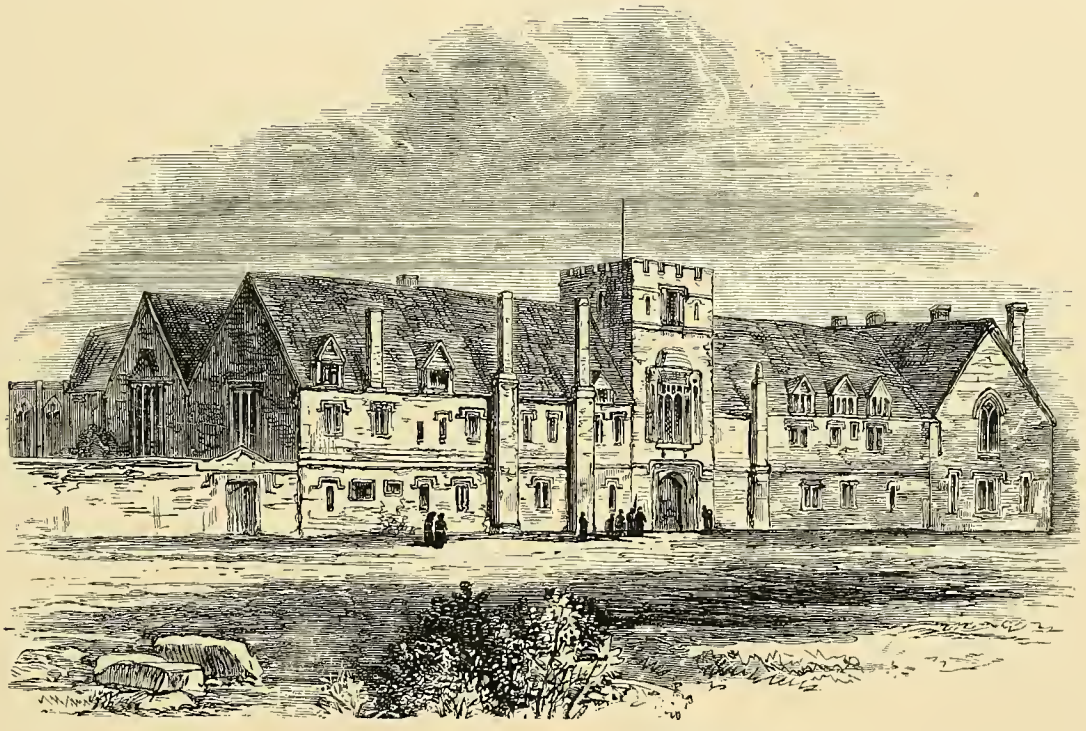
John Scot, of Dunse, near Berwick, called also Scot of Dunse, or Duns Scotus, was, in all probability, allied to this family. Dr. Brewer, in his *Phrase and Fable*, thus speaks of this learned man:—"Duns Scotus, the learned school-man and great supporter of the theory of the Immaculate Conception; his followers were called 'Dunsers.'" Tyndal says of them, "When they saw their hair-splitting divinity was giving way to modern theology, the old barking curs raged in every pulpit against the classics and new notions;" so that the name indicated an opponent to progress and learning—thence a "Dunce."

"He knew what's what, and that's as high
As metaphysics wit can fly;
A second Thomas (Aquinas), or at once,
To name them all, another dunse."—BUTLER'S *Hudibras*.

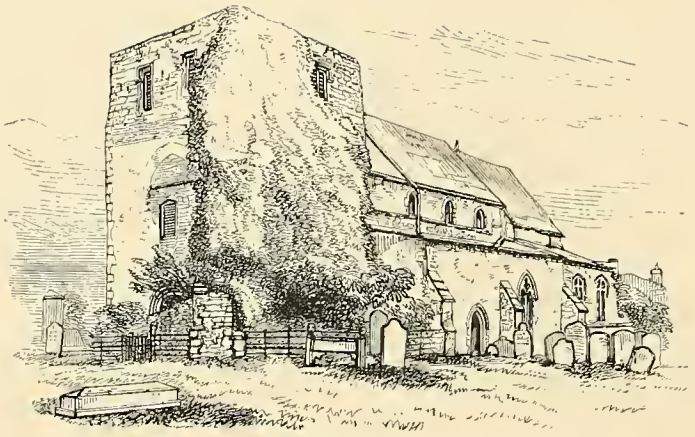
In the foregoing chapters, it was shown that the Scotts of Scot's Hall, in Kent, claim to derive their surname through the family of John le Scot, last Palatine Earl of Chester and Earl of Huntingdon ; and that they likewise claim an uninterrupted descent from William Baliol le Scot, brother of John Baliol, King of Scotland, and of Alexander Baliol, Lord of the Honour and Castle of Chilham, in Kent.

In this chapter we have pointed out that there existed a yet earlier history of this ancient family, its possessions, and its places of residence, but at a period so remote that much is left to speculation and conjecture based upon entries in our earliest national register of lands, upon detached fragments of ancient MSS. preserved to this day, or upon the traditional names of the sites of the manorial halls in which, in remote times, members of this ancient and now widely scattered family resided.

In the succeeding chapters we shall have occasion to emerge from the mists of antiquity into the clearer light and better defined pathways of recorded history.



THE ORIGINAL BALLIOL COLLEGE, OXFORD.

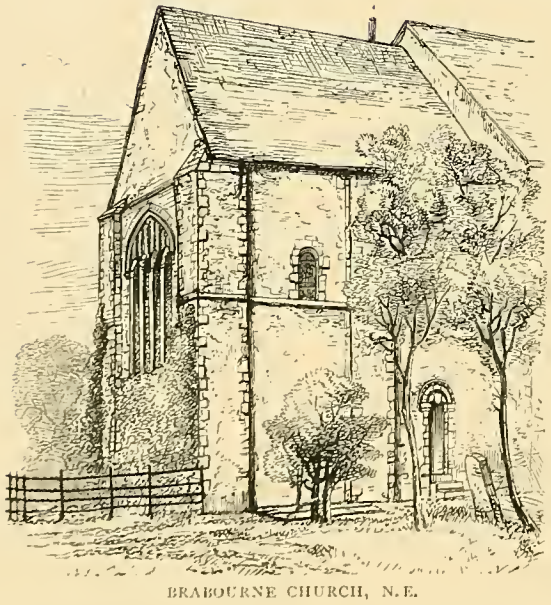


ST. MARY'S CHURCH, BRABOURNE.

Chapter IV.

DESCRIPTION AND MEMORIALS OF BRABOURNE CHURCH IN KENT.

"Two or three columns and many a stone,
Marble and granite with grass o'ergrown;
Out upon Time!-he will leave no more
Of the things to come than the things before!
Out upon Time, who for ever will leave
But enough of the past for the future to grieve
O'er that which hath been, and o'er that which must be;
What we have seen, our sons shall see;
Remnants of things that have passed away,
Fragments of stone reared by creatures of clay."



BRABOURNE CHURCH, N.E.

THE present structure, replacing a pre-Domesday church, consists of a nave and south aisle, a chancel, with a southern chapel, most probably added in the early part of the fifteenth century by Sir William Scott, the reputed founder of the Scott chapel, *circa* 1420 to 1430.[a]

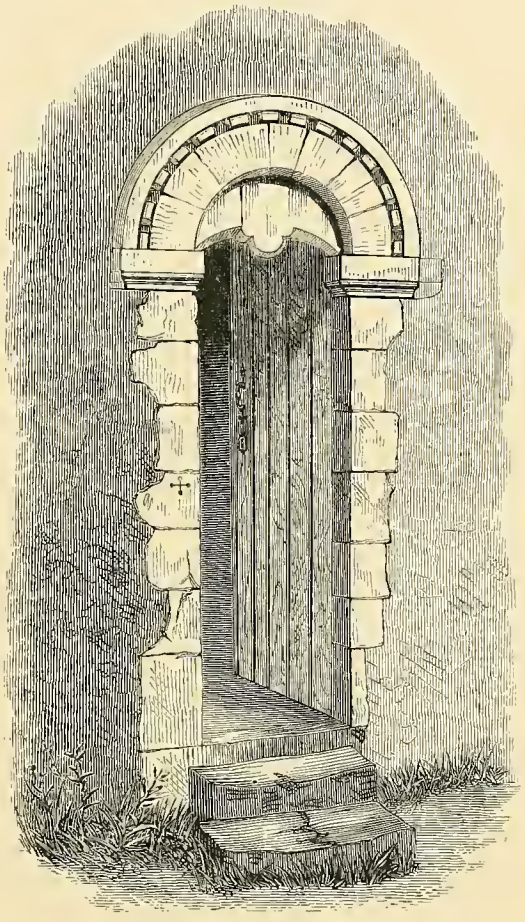
At the western end of the nave stands a tower, opening into the church by a plain Norman arch, with square jambs and soffit. No part of the present building can be ascribed to an earlier date than the reign of Henry I. or Stephen, say, *circa* A.D. 1100 to A.D. 1150. To this date we may attribute the shell of the present chancel, the whole of the north wall and the jambs of

[a] In the opinion of Sir George Gilbert Scott, the chapel stands upon the site of a more ancient Norman structure.

the present eastern window, together with the chancel arch, and likewise the north wall of the nave.

Perhaps the lower portions of the walls of the tower may be of the same period, but the western entrance is certainly fifty to seventy years later.

Externally, the north elevation of the chancel is very complete. It consists of two bays, flanked by flat Norman pilasters, and divided by a central pilaster.

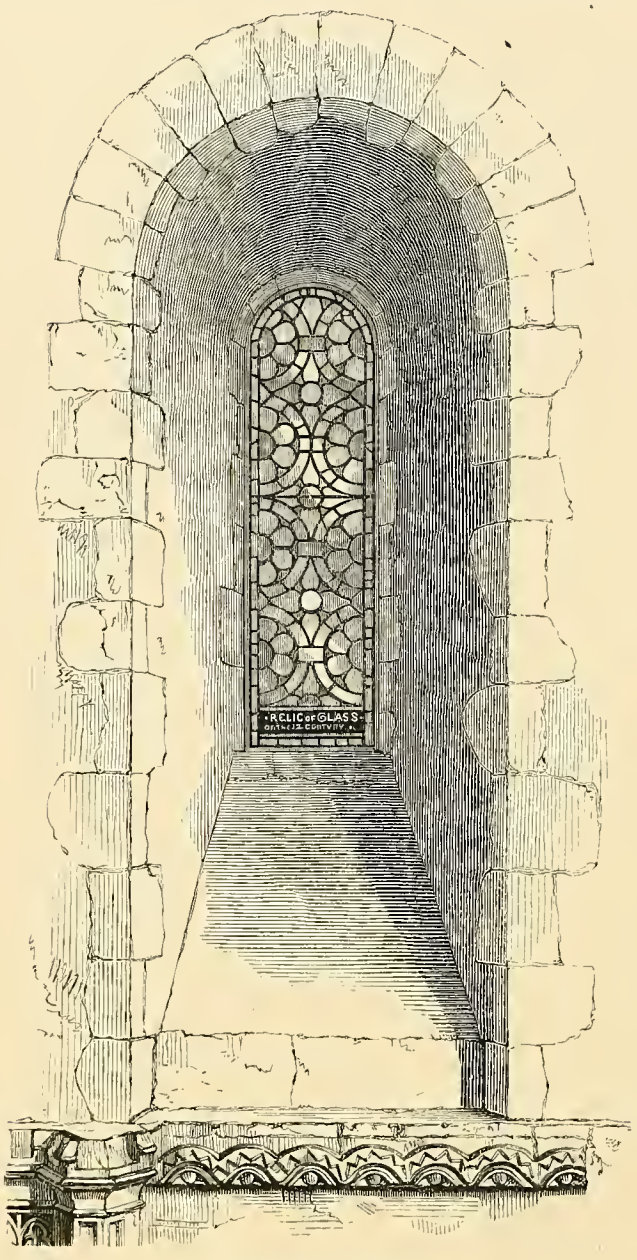


PRIEST'S DOOR.

In the most western bay is the priest's doorway, of very plain, but curious and effective, design, beneath the semicircular arch of which is a plain tympanum having a keystone, the lower end of which hangs slightly below the moulded imposts of the plain square jambs. The opening is tall, but of very narrow proportion, being only two feet in width.

In the upper part of each bay is an original semicircular window, with headed perfectly plain square external jambs, the openings being increased by splays externally.

The window in the easternmost bay is filled with coloured glass, the leadwork of which forms a geometric design corresponding in character with the surrounding Norman masonry. In all probability, this is the original glazing, and if so, is extremely



NORMAN STAINED GLASS.

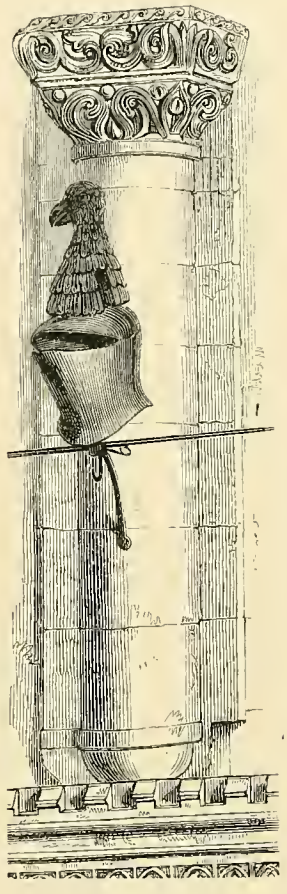
rare and interesting, as exhibiting probably the only instance of Norman stained glass at present known in this country in a perfect condition.[b]

[b] "The only example which we know of the twelfth century, in this country, is a geometrical pattern window, which has several particles of colour slightly painted and interspersed. It is in its original semi-Norman arch, with which, from the construction of its pattern, and the primitiveness of its material, it is evidently coeval. It is on the

On the north wall of the nave, one of the original Norman windows still exists, of equally plain character with those in the chancel before described.

The Norman walls of the fabric are built of coarse rubble, with dressed stone quoins of small size, the courses rising not more than eight or nine inches.

The original Norman windows at the eastern end of the church have been replaced by a large five-light window of sixteenth century work of ordinary design, but internally the jambs appear to be those of the original window.



SHAFT.

The semicircular-headed doorway at the western side of the tower has had an Early Pointed arch filled in beneath it, probably of late twelfth-century work.

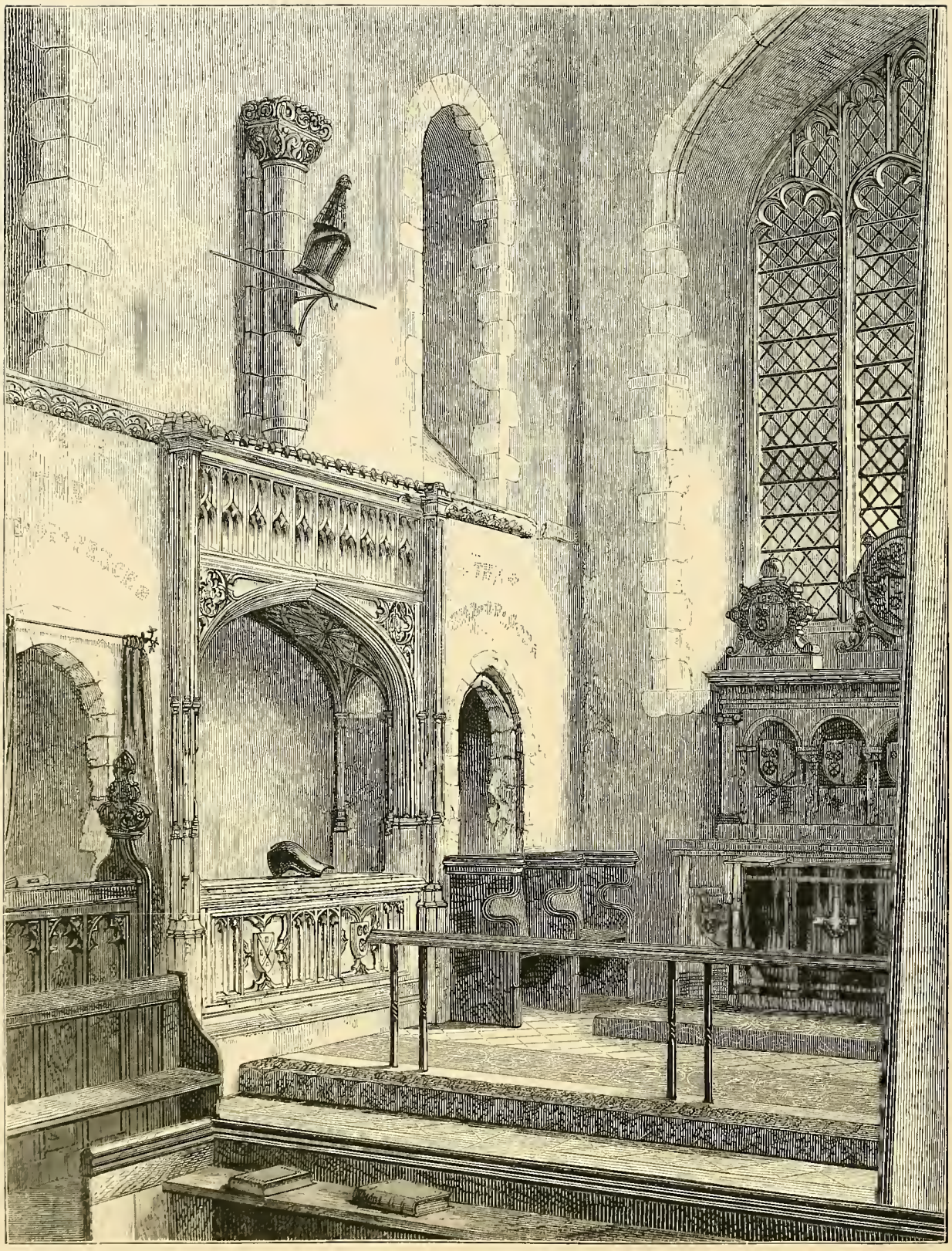
The chancel, internally, is in two bays, divided by an attached cylindrical shaft on either side, having carved capitals and square abaci. These shafts undoubtedly supported the original roof of the chancel, which some have asserted to have been groined, but the walls afford no evidence to support such a supposition. It is, however, the opinion of Mr. Charles Baily—to whom we are indebted for these remarks on the architecture of the fabric—that these columns supported an arched principal of stone or timber, which carried a flat wooden ceiling, as was usually the case in such churches.[c]

The south aisle of the nave is of late thirteenth-century work, and is separated from the nave by an arcade of three arches, supported by shafts with moulded bases and capitals of Bethersden marble, of slender and graceful proportion, the shafts being only fifteen inches in diameter.

The Scott chapel is a fifteenth-century building; the tracery of the square-headed windows is of a somewhat unusual character, having quatrefoils in it, and the windows in some respects correspond with those in the hall at Nettlested Court in Kent. The chapel is divided from the chancel by two arched openings of tombs, with a door-

north side of the chancel of Brabourne Church in Kent, but in a sadly dilapidated state. Nevertheless, it is still a valuable relic, as it establishes the fact which Malmsbury avers respecting the pre-existing glass of Canterbury Cathedral, and also the opinion of Sir William Dugdale, who afterwards asserts that 'he finds the art of painting on glasse came into England in King John's time.' This glass is, however, anterior to his reign by at least a quarter of a century." Warrington goes on to assert "that the windows of St. Denis, France, and that at Brabourne, are the only instances of twelfth-century work known to him."—Warrington's *Stained Glass*, p. 15, "Brabourne." This window was some years ago releaded and restored by Warrington, and is now in excellent condition.

[c] The eminent architect, Sir George Gilbert Scott, R.A., and LL.D., in his observations on the church of Brabourne, addressed to the members of the Kentish Archæological Society on the 8th August, 1874, expressed an opinion that the builder either vaulted, or intended to vault, this chancel over with stone, in two compartments, which would raise it at once to a work of the highest order of the period. Looking to the construction of the capitals of the columns or shafts above referred to, we incline to this opinion.

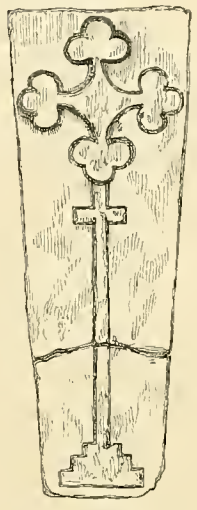


INTERIOR OF CHANCEL.

way between them communicating with the chancel, and are probably tombs of the earlier members of the Scott family; but as so many of them were buried at Brabourne that it is now difficult to individualize them, we would say:—

"The knights are dust;
Their good swords rust;
But their souls are with the saints, we trust."

On the floor of this chapel is a coffin-lid in Bethersden marble, in which is a cross fleury in three steps, in low relief, the date of which is probably the thirteenth century. Also a tomb under a low arch, the resting-place of the probable founder of the chapel, viz., Sir William Scot, the first of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, *circa* A.D. 1430. On the walls of this chauntry are numerous memorials to later members of the Scott family, the inscriptions and descriptions of which appear hereafter.



STONE COFFIN-LID.

In the east window of the chapel are small remains of painted and stained glass, which abounded doubtless in the other windows of the church, as we gather from a MS. in the possession of Captain Henry Scott, R.N., to the effect that about the commencement of the present century, the stained glass throughout the church was sold by the churchwardens to defray the cost of reglazing the windows. Of the fragments of painted glass now remaining, the only other portions possessing any features of interest are two letters, W and S crowned (Sir William Scott, knight), in the cusps of a window on the north side of the nave, and which we shall shortly refer to. (*Vide* page 39.)

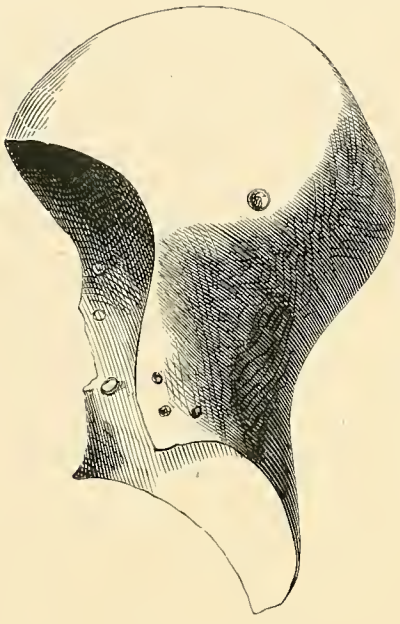
In the north wall of the chancel is the tomb of the Right Honourable Sir John Scot, a member of the Privy Council, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Governor of Dover Castle, Lord of the Honour and Castle of Chilham in Kent, Comptroller of Household of King Edward IV., and Knight Marshal of Calais. This tomb is represented in the engraving of interior of chancel.

The tomb, of Caen stone, is an arched canopy with moulded roof, embattled; and formerly contained either a recumbent effigy, or probably a brass or brasses. The lower portion is divided into panels, within which are the arms of Scot and those of Beaufitz; the latter representing Agnes Beaufitz, the wife of Sir John Scot. On the authority of Weever, the following inscription formerly existed in connection with this tomb:—

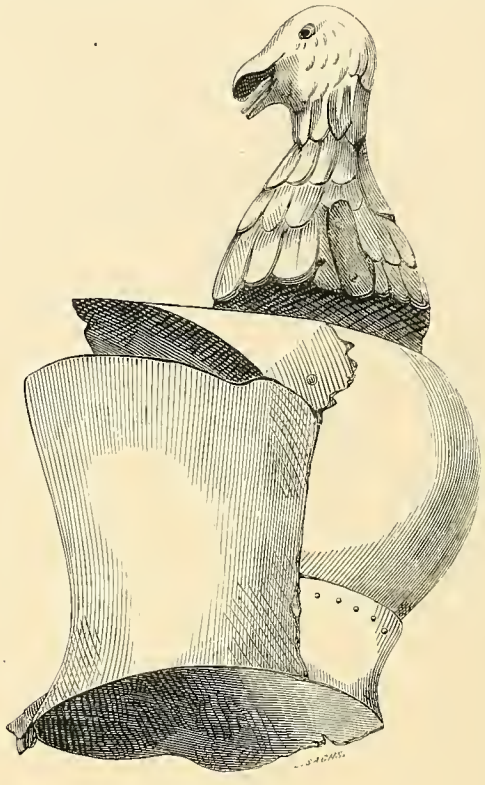
"Hic iacet magnificus ac insignis miles Johannes Scot
Quondam Regis domus invictissimi Principis Edwardi Quarti
Controll et nobilissima integerimaque Agnes uxor ejus
Qui Quidem Johannes, obiit ann. 1485, die mensis Oct. 17."

In the chapel, over the arched opening eastward of the entrance from the Scot chapel, hangs a tilting helmet without visor, agreeing exactly in form with that on the

brass effigy of a knight on the chancel floor, and which, according to Weever, represents Sir William Scot, Knight of the Shire for the county of Kent in A.D. 1431, who removed from Brabourne to Scot's Hall, in Smeeth, A.D. 1429, and died A.D. 1433.

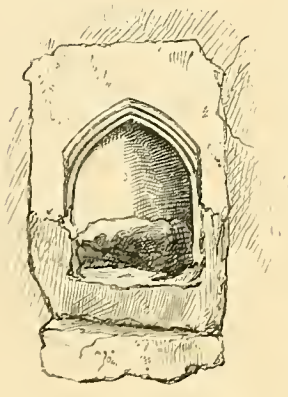


TILTING HELMET.



TROPHY HELMET.

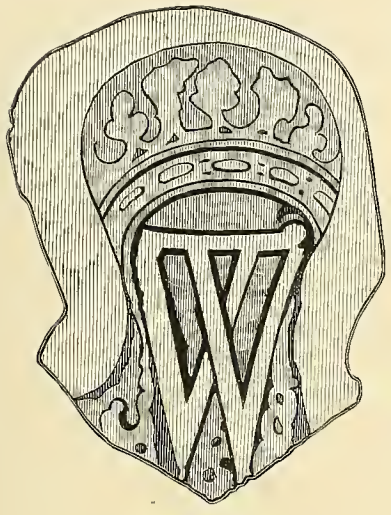
On the opposite wall, above the tomb of Sir John Scot, who married Agnes Beaufitz, hangs another helmet, upon which is a mutilated crest of the Scott family, in wood, viz., *a demi-griffin segreant, sable, beaked and clawed or.* From the thinness of the metal of which this helmet is formed, we are disposed to consider it as the trophy helmet, for the purposes of the funeral of some deceased knight. From its style and date of workmanship, we may fairly assign it to Sir Thomas Scot, Commander of the Kentish forces, *temp.* Queen Elizabeth. Attached to the iron bracket which supports this helmet, is a horizontal iron bar, to which, within our memory, was attached the sword and banner of this distinguished member of the family, now removed.



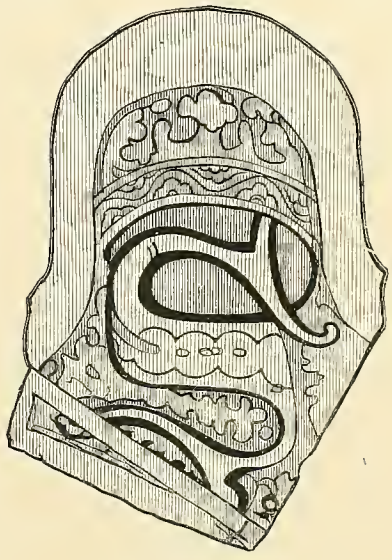
STOUP.

Of the more modern portions of the church, which are not without interest, are—(1st) the roof of the nave, which has tie-beams carrying king-posts supporting collar-beams, with the purlins and rafters of seventeenth-century work. (2nd) A wooden porch over the north door of the nave, which is of late fifteenth-century work, and has a stoup over its western jamb.

Looking to the fact that the date and style of the chapel—now known as the Scot chapel—would appear to correspond with the few fragments of stained glass now existing in the nave and chapel, it is not unreasonable to suggest that Sir William Scot (who, shortly before A.D. 1429, either built or re-edified the mansion known as Scot's Hall in Smeeth) not only rebuilt the chapel on its ancient Norman site, but likewise decorated with stained glass the windows of the church, the Norman stained-glass window in the chancel alone excepted.



STAINED GLASS, W.



STAINED GLASS, S.

This suggestion is the more probable, inasmuch as the tomb in the south wall of the Scot chapel, traditionally known as the Founder's tomb, has recently, through the kind research of the Rev. Canon W. A. Scott-Robertson, been identified as the burial place of this worthy, who, in his will, dated "Wednesday during the Feast of the Conversion of St. Paul," A.D. 1428, directs his body to be buried in the church of St. Mary, Brabourne, before the door of Trinity Chapel ("*Coram hostio capelle Sancte Trinitatis*"). It is, however, probable that the ancient chapel which previously existed on this site was dedicated to the Holy Trinity, otherwise the chapel re-edified by William Scot would most probably have been dedicated to St. Catherine, the traditional patron saint of the family.

We now come to a feature which, as we shall see, possesses unusual interest. Would that "the stone out of the wall could cry, and the beam out of the timber answer it," and we should be able to explain that which must remain involved in mystery: we refer to the HEART-SHRINE, a woodcut of which is furnished.

On the south side of the chancel, attached to the pier between the easternmost tomb and the entrance from the Scot chapel, is a square projection of small size, which appears to be intended for an altar.

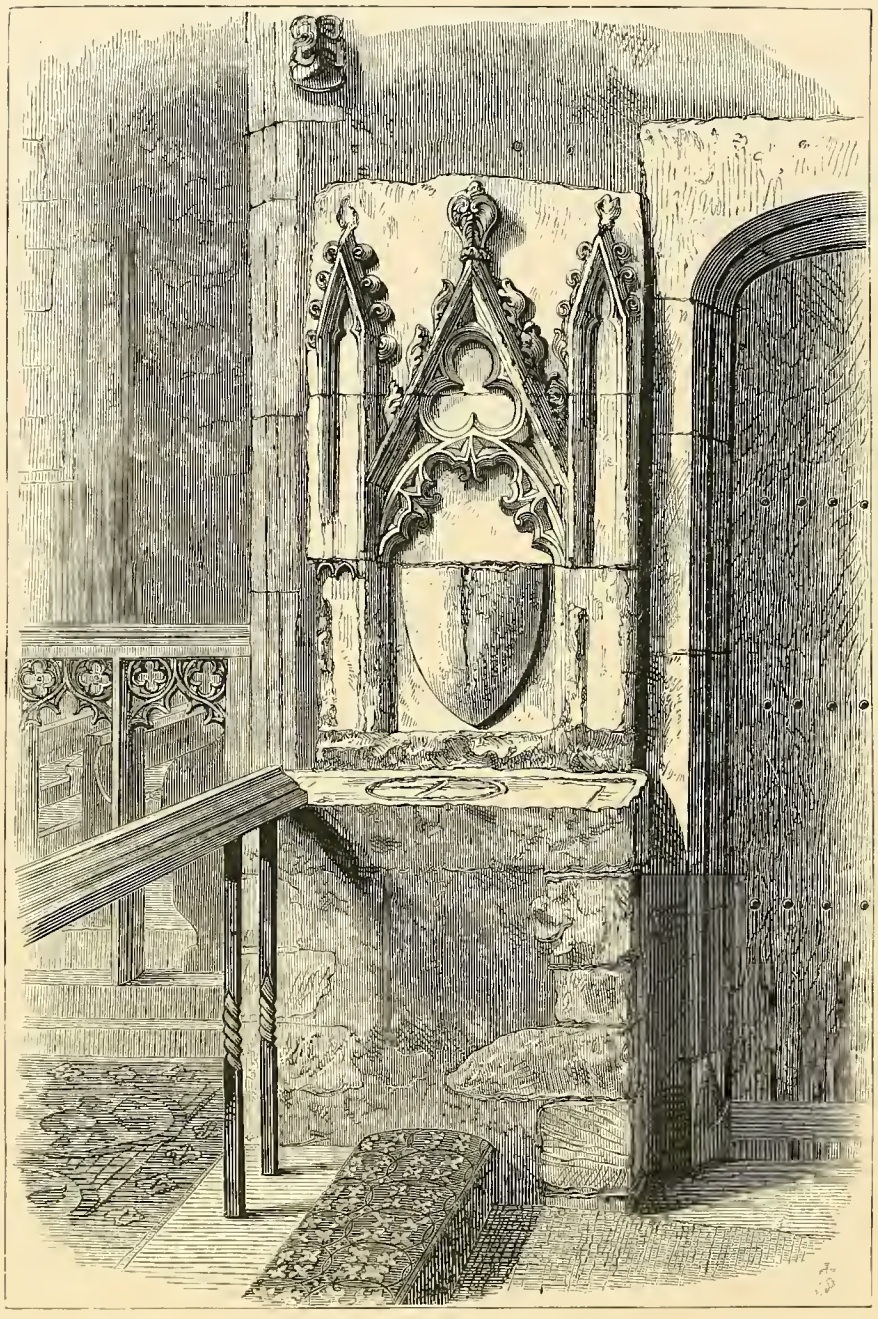
Upon the upper slab stands a reredos, with buttresses and tracery, having a pediment with crockets and finial. The surface of the altar stone is incised with a cross within a circle, which has the appearance of having been formerly filled with mosaic work.

The slab is of Bethersden marble, a local stone, and was most probably placed here after the upper portion had been placed *in situ*.

The reredos of this great curiosity is constructed apparently of Caen stone, and the style and date of workmanship is Early Decorated, and corresponds to the features of

Gothic architecture prevalent between the years A.D. 1280 and A.D. 1320, thus differing, both in date and style, from any other period of construction now existing in the church.

Sir Gilbert Scott is of opinion that the workmanship of the reredos is local, as the

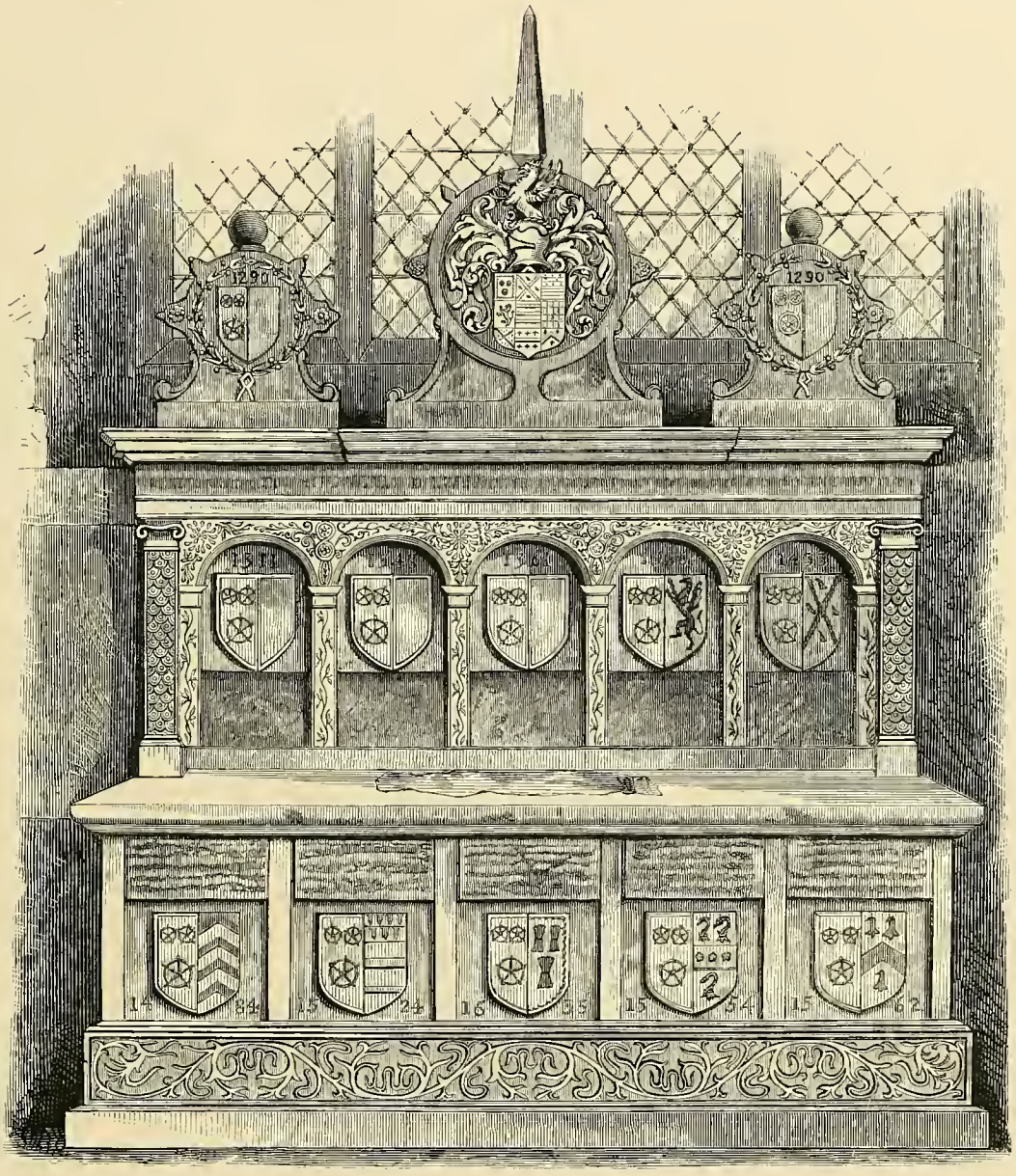


HEART-SHRINE, BRABOURNE CHURCH.

peculiar features of the tracery, according to his experience, exist only in Kent and the neighbouring county of Sussex. Tradition is altogether silent as to the intent and purpose of this structure. Our speculations upon it we append in the note subjoined.[d]

[d] *Vide* page 48.

On the north and south sides respectively of what was formerly the high altar, are an aumbry and piscina. The latter exhibits marks of molestation, traditionally asserted to have been effected in Parliamentarian times, when the tomb of Sir Thomas Scott, of Armada fame, was desecrated and destroyed.



ALTAR-TOMB AND HERALDIC ACHIEVEMENT IN CHANCEL.

Another very conspicuous feature in the church, especially interesting to the members of the Scott family, is a Bethersden marble tomb, placed immediately below the site of the great east window of the chancel, and in the position of the altar, for the purpose of which it was perhaps intended to serve; and as the latest armorial coat

incised thereon is that of Scot impaling Beer (*viz., argent, a Bear saliant sable, muzzled or—a canton gules*), referring to the marriage of Sir Thomas Scot with his third wife, Dorothy Beer or Bere, it was probably erected by his widow or son. This genealogical achievement has five panels above the altar tomb; the first of which, with the date A.D. 1290, is suggestive of the marriage of William Baliol le Scot with his wife, name unknown, and whose coat, impaled with the arms of Scot, appears blank.

Four other impalements, representing as many alliances of the earlier members of the Scot family, are likewise blank, as the arms assigned (with the exception of those of the heiress of De Cumbes, *viz., Sable,* 3 *Lions passant, guardant, gules*) were at the time of the erection of this altar tomb (probably the end of the sixteenth century), unknown, as indeed they remain unknown to the present time.

On the altar tomb's front and sides appear the arms of the later Scots, too numerous to mention here; but none later than the arms of Dorothy Beer, of Horsman's Place, Dartford, the third and surviving wife of Sir Thomas Scot, *temp.* Queen Elizabeth, and, as before observed, this tomb was probably erected by this lady, or by Sir Thomas Scot's son by his first wife, daughter of Sir John Baker, of Sissinghurst Castle, in Cranbrook. The dates on this altar tomb range from A.D. 1290 to A.D. 1562.

The finial of this altar tomb encloses a shield of the arms of Scott quartered with those of Beaufitz, De Pympe, De Pashley, Sergieux, Warren, Normanville, Gower, and Cogan, and surmounted with the crest, *a demi-griffin sable, segreant, beaked, langued and clawed, or*, being that of the Scott family.

The ornamental frieze or cornice of this altar tomb formerly bore the following inscription, now illegible :—

"The memorial of the just shall be blessed, but the name of the wicked shall rot."—PROV. x. 7.

In other parts of this altar tomb, especially underneath the various impalements of arms, were legends or mottoes, mostly from the Books of Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, etc., etc.; but as these, or rather such as can be deciphered, are in the quaint language customary in the old version of the Bible, it may fairly be assumed that this achievement of arms or altar-tomb was erected previous to A.D. 1611, in which year the new version of the Bible was authorized and used in public worship.

BRASSES AND OTHER MEMORIALS OF THE FAMILY OF SCOTT AT BRABOURNE.

"Son of man, can these dry bones live?"—EZEKIEL xxxvii. 3.

In the chancel, on slabs of polished black marble, are four beautiful brasses, of which two are representations of knights in armour, and the other two of females. These brasses were discovered by the father of the late incumbent, the Rev. James Brothers, M.A., in the roof of the vicarage, were repaired by him, and afterwards placed on the chancel floor. They had probably been removed to the vicarage in order to their preservation in troublous times. Referring to the largest of these brasses, a record, transcribed from *Weever's Ancient Funeral Monuments*, describes it as having in A.D. 1631 a small fillet remaining, on which were legible the words—

"Dc Brabourne Armiger . . . . . ."

and on another portion of a fillet the name—

"Wilhelmus Scot."[e]

The knight is in full armour, standing on a greyhound; over his head is a portion of an exquisitely graved canopy.

The spurs are such known as "guarded," suggestive of the bearer having held some appointment direct from the monarch: probably as sword-bearer of Henry V.

The following inscription, in Weever's time (1631), existed on this brass:—

BRASS, SIR WILLIAM SCOT.

[e] This William Scot is supposed to have been the founder of the Scott chapel; he lies buried, as his will directs, opposite the door leading to the chapel of the Holy Trinity in Brabourne Church.

"Hic iacet Wilhelmus Scot de Braborne ar qui: obit Feb. 1433. cuias animæ," etc.

"Sis testis Christe quod in iacet hic lapis iste
Corpus ut ornetur sed spiritus ut memoretur
Quisquis eris qui transieris sta perlege plora
Sumquod eris fueramque quodes pro me precor ora."

BRASS, LADY CLIFTON.

Near to this brass is a second, without inscription of any kind; but as the date of this workmanship corresponds exactly with that last referred to, there can be little doubt as to its being a memorial of Isabel, Lady Clifton, widow of the above-mentioned William Scot.

Weever supplies the inscription as follows: —

"Hac recis in cella iacet hic pudens Isabella
Qui nulli nocuit sed Domino placuit
Sponsa fuit fata venerabilis et peremata
Clifton Gervasii militis egregii
Ante fuit dicta Wilhelme Scot relicta
Harbord vocata vel Finche certe scies
Dicitur hic alias . . mille quartuor centum
Petit Leum septem . . . . monumentum
Novembris decabis hiis numerando dabis."

A third brass is that of a knight in full armour, having an inscription at the foot as follows :—

"Of your charite, pray for the sowle of Sr William Scot, knight, which departed out of this world the 24th day of August, the yere of oure Lord 1524, on whose sowle of your charite saye a Pater Noster and an Ave."(f)

Of your charite pray for the Soule of Sr William Scott knyght which
departed owt of this worlde the day of augult the yere of our lord
god mvcxxiiij on whose soule of your charite saye a pater noster and

(f) This Sir William Scot was a Knight of the Bath, Sheriff of Kent, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Constable of Dover Castle. His predecessor as Lord Warden was Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick ; his successor in that office was Henry, Duke of York, afterwards Henry VIII. He rebuilt Scot's Hall in Smeeth, and died in A.D. 1524.

A fourth brass bears the inscription :—

" Of your charite, pray for the soule of Dame Elizabeth Pownynges, late wife of Edward Pownynges, the which Dame Elizabeth deceased the 15th day of August, the yere of our Lord God 1528, on whose soule Jesus have mercy. Amen." [9]

Of yo charite pray for the Soule of Dame Elyzabeth Pownynges late wyf to Edward Pownynges the which Dame Elyzabeth deceased the xv day of August yere of o lord god mvcxxviii on whose Soule Jhu have mercy amen

[9] Sir Edward, Baron Poynings, was Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle, 1509; he was likewise Viceroy of Ireland. His wife was the daughter of Sir John Scot, Comptroller of the Household of Edward IV.

On a large slab of black marble, also on the chancel floor, is an inscription to the memory of Elizabeth Scot :—

"Here lyeth the body of Elizabeth Scot, the wife of Thomas Scot, of Scot's Hall, Esq., sole heir and daughter of Thomas Honywood, of Sene, Esq. She survived her husband and dyed without issue 9th May, in the 60th yere of her age, and in the yere of our Lord 1627."

In the Scott chapel is a tablet as follows :—

"Here liest the body of Sir John Scott,[h] son of Sir Thomas Scott,
Justice of the Peace, and
Captain of a Company . . . . Troop of Lancers.
A.D. 24 Sept., 1616.

This Monument was placed here by appointment of his brother,
Sir Ed. Scott, Knight of the Order of the Bath."

Sir John Scott married, firstly, Elizabeth, the widow of Sir William Drury, Knight, Governor of Berwick. She was the daughter of Sir William Stafford of Blatherwick, in Northamptonshire, and Dame Dorothy Stafford, daughter of Henry Lord Stafford, son, by Eleanor Percy, daughter of the Earl of Northumberland, of the last Duke of Buckingham of that family. He married, secondly, Catherine, daughter of Sir Thomas Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle, and relict of Sir Rowland Hayward.

We come now to enumerate memorials of a later date, but not the less interesting as connecting the surviving branches of the family with their illustrious ancestors.

As we have before noticed, on the south side of the chancel was erected, about the year A.D. 1430, probably by Sir William Scot, a very handsome chantry, having three large windows of the Perpendicular style, and a piscina.

This chantry, dedicated to the Holy Trinity, is connected with the chancel by two

---

[h] It is stated in the Scot's Hall MSS. that a tomb and monumental inscription formerly existed in the church to this knight, but as he was a somewhat bigoted Papist, and being implicated in the alleged plot of the Earl of Essex, he was, to save his neck, compelled to quit the kingdom. It is not improbable that this tomb was destroyed in Parliamentary times, when the tomb of his father, Sir Thomas Scott, was desecrated.

large hagioscopes and a door. The chapel appears to have been the burial place of various members of the family from the period of its foundation, an aisle or chapel having previously existed on its site, and this, without doubt, in its time serving as a burial place, if not a chapel, for the earlier members of the Scott family, whose tombs or memorials are now indiscoverable; if we may except a small sepulchral slab upon the floor, no inscription of an earlier date than the year A.D. 1759 now remains.

The following are copies of the epitaphs, all of which are on white or coloured marble, and in good preservation. On the south side is the earliest :—

"NEAR THIS PLACE LIE THE REMAINS OF

ARTHUR SCOTT,

THIRD SON OF GEORGE SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL, BY CECILIA HIS SECOND WIFE, DAUGHTER OF SIR EDWARD DERING, BART., OF SURRENDEN, IN THIS COUNTY.

HE MARRIED MARY, ELDEST DAUGHTER OF THE HONBLE CHARLES COMPTON, AND SISTER TO THE PRESENT EARL OF NORTHAMPTON, BUT LEFT NO ISSUE.

"He was appointed Commander of one of His Majesty's Ships of War, 1743, and Commissioner, 1754. He died the 27th day of February, 1756, aged 37 years and 9 months, greatly lamented by his family and friends. In this life respected by his superiors, beloved by all, an ornament to his profession, an honour to his country, a friend to mankind.

"Erected A.D. 1759, at the desire of William Scott, brother to the deceased."

His residence was at Blendon Hall, Bexley, Kent.

On the north wall are the following :—

"CHOLMELEY SCOTT, ESQ.,

YOUNGEST SON OF GEORGE SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL, BY CECILIA HIS WIFE.

BORN OCT. 20, 1723, DIED MAY 3, 1771, AND BURIED NEAR THIS PLACE.

"He was many years Lieut.-Colonel of the 11th Regiment of Foot, and Gentleman Usher of His Majesty's Most Honble Privy Chamber.

"Without ostentation, valiant, humane, and generous."

"IN MEMORY OF

EDWARD SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL, ESQ.,

WHO DIED 25 MAY, 1765, AGED 65;

AND MARGARET HIS WIFE,

WHO DIED 29 DEC., 1818, AGED 93.

"She was daughter of John Sutherland by Christina his Wife, daughter of Robert Cunningham, of Gilberfield near Glasgow, and Brae Head in Kintyre.

"'Verily there is a reward for the righteous, doubtless there is a God that judgeth the earth.'

"To their beloved and respected Parents this Monument was erected by Edward and Catherine, two of their surviving Sons and Daughters."

This monument is surmounted by a shield, with the arms of Scott impaling Sutherland, with a helmet and crest, and is the only memorial in the church with a motto :—

"Bien ou Rien."

Mrs. Scott was foster-mother of the Prince of Wales, afterwards George IV.

"IN MEMORY OF

FRANCIS TALBOT SCOTT,

OF SCOT'S HALL, ESQ.,

WHO DIED 22 JUNE, 1789, AGED 44."

"IN MEMORY OF CATHERINE,

SECOND DAUGHTER OF EDWARD SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL, AND MARGARET HIS WIFE.

BORN AT SCOT'S HALL 11 OCT., 1749; DIED IN LONDON 29 JULY, 1837, UNMARRIED.

"Her life was God's mercy in joy and comfort to many; her death deep grief to the survivors of her family. Her brother Edward here places this Memorial of his severe affliction, in which of ten brothers and sisters, one alone, Charlotte (Mrs. Saxton), is left to participate.

"'But now is Christ risen from the dead, the first fruit of them that sleep.'"

On the pavement beneath an arch in the south wall of the Scott chapel, and supposed to be the Founder's tomb, is a stone, with the later inscription :—

"EDWARD SCOTT, ESQ.

1765."

The only other inscription in the church relating to this family is on a small slab of black marble, in the wall of the chantry. On it are three small shields in brass, and beneath them the words—"BALIOL."—"COLLEGE MARK."—"BALIOL LE SCOT" respectively. The obvious intention of the tablet being to suggest the derivation of the arms of SCOTT from those of BALIOL and the ST. CATHERINE'S WHEEL, the ancient badge of Balliol College (see p. 30).

Two lines also are added from a Welsh poet in the original :—

BH · RYW · HAEL · BUR · WEHELYTH ·
BA · RAI · BEILCH · A · BERY · BYTH ·

JOR FYNGHYD.

of which the Rev. James Brothers, M.A., the late vicar, has furnished an almost literal translation :—

"What generous race of lineage pure,
What proud ones, shall for aye endure?"

We have disposed of the memorials that, in some form or other, still exist in the church. It therefore simply remains to deal with those of which there is now no trace.

Many of these, imperfect in their description as they may be, are referred to in the Scot's Hall manuscripts as formerly existing in the church.

The first of these lost memorials is referred to by the indefatigable Weever as existing in 1631, and of which only the following words were then legible :—

"Hic jacet Wilhelmus Scot, miles ob. 1350."

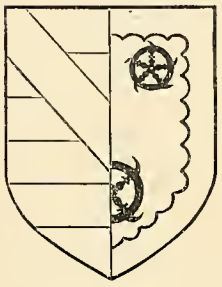
This Sir William Scot was, with others of eminent degree, knighted by Edward III., on the creation of Edward, his son, Earl of Chester and Duke of Cornwall. He was likewise Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench and Knight Marshal of England.

Weever also gives us the following, referring to Joanna, daughter to Sir Gervase Clifton, who married John Digge, ancestor of the Digges of Chilham Castle.

"Gervasium Clifton istam genuisse Johannem
Sta lege cui John Digge sociatus erat
Morte . . . cadit corpus sequitur cito mater
Filia prevenit hanc cui solet esse sequax
Christe tuas formulas fac post te scandire celos
Et post coniugia regna tenere tua."

Also a monumental inscription to Dionesia Finche, of the family of Fitz Herbert or Finch, of Netherfield in the county of Sussex, and supposed of same date as the previous :—

"Subiacet hac Petra Dionisia nunc caro tetra
Que fuerat nata Finche aut Harbord vocitata
Vincent armigeri cui parce Jesu mulieri
Dormit non moritur licet hic terra sepelctur
Qui bene penseter qui credit non morietur
Anno milleo C quater . . . cape pleno
Bis quater appone . . . celi iunge coronæ
. . . . . .
Cui sit salvamen Deus omnipotens precor. Amen."



POYNINGS AND SCOTT.

Amongst other memorials that formerly existed in the church were (according to the Scot's Hall MSS.) the arms, in stained glass, of Poynings, dimidiated with those of Scot, and referring, doubtless, to the marriage of Sir Edward Poynings, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, with Isabel Scot, to whose memory a brass now lies in the church. This and other armorial cognizances were probably emblazoned in the large chancel window, which would appear to have been at one time glazed with stained glass of an heraldic character.

NOTE A.

SPECULATIONS ON THE ORIGIN OF THE HEART-SHRINE.

(*Vide* p. 40.)

All that can be said with any certainty respecting this interesting memorial has been embodied in the foregoing chapter. We append here a few remarks by way of speculation as to its original use and dedication. They point, as will be seen, to a probability of considerable interest, as connecting the Heart-Shrine with an ancient, renowned, and historical family—that of the Baliols.

We have already indicated that there is neither name, date, or armorial device on this structure; history and local tradition are alike silent as to its origin. In point of architectural style, it corresponds with no portion of the existing church.

There is one fact, however, which materially aids us, and limits very considerably the range of the inquiry. Sir George Gilbert Scott, a most competent authority, has fixed the date of the erection of the reredos of the shrine at between A.D. 1280 and 1320, a period of forty years.

These dates enable us to dismiss from our consideration the probability that here was deposited the heart of Isabella, daughter of William Mareschal, Earl of Pembroke, who was a Lord of Brabourne Manor. She was wife of Richard, King

of the Romans, brother of Henry III., and died in 1239, a date too early, by at least half a century, to connect it with the Brabourne shrine, which is in the Early decorated style, known as the Edwardian. Besides, she died at Berkhampstead, and directed her heart to be sent in a silver cup to her brother, the Abbot of Tewkesbury, to be buried there before the high altar. She was herself buried at Beaulieu, Hants, and there are no circumstances connected with her history which suggest the probability of the removal of her heart to a nameless shrine at Brabourne.

That it was designed for a heart-shrine there can be no reasonable doubt. The usages of the period and the form of the structure alike point to this conclusion. At the back of the shrine is a recess or feretrum, 18 by 24 inches, and 12 inches in depth, just such a repository as would be formed to contain a heart encased in silver or ivory, as well as the sacred vessels in use on the shrine-altar set apart for the services in relation to the soul enshrined.

The interesting question to be decided is, WHOSE HEART WAS HERE ENSHRINED?

The whole of the facts point, as we have already intimated, to the probability that the shrine was constructed for the heart of John Baliol, founder of Balliol College, Oxford, father of John Baliol, King of Scotland, and brother of Alexander Baliol, of Chilham Castle, Kent.

We shall see that the chronology of the erection, the locality of the church in which it was placed, the fact of its being nameless and without heraldic indications, as well as the history of the family of Baliol, all point to the probability that it contained the heart of the founder of that seat of learning.

History informs us of certain incidents and events connected with the heart of this notability when deceased. On his death, in 1269, before the completion of the building and endowment of the College, his wife, Devorgilda, who carried out his intentions, caused his heart to be embalmed and encased in a casket of silver and ivory, which, it is said, she placed around her neck, and carried day and night about her person. On her decease, in 1289, she directed the heart to be deposited on her bosom in her own tomb, adjacent to the high altar of the abbey she had erected about seven miles from the town of Dumfries, which was called DULCE COR (sweetheart), after her husband.[a]

Dulce Cor Abbey was probably desecrated during the War of the Scottish Succession, and was in ruins within forty years of its foundation;[b] only a portion of

---

[a] Afterwards changed to "New Abbey," by which name the ruins are now generally known. She erected also the bridge over the Nith, and the Monastery of Greyfriars, of historical interest as the scene of the murder of her descendant, the Red Comyn, by his kinsman, Robert Bruce.

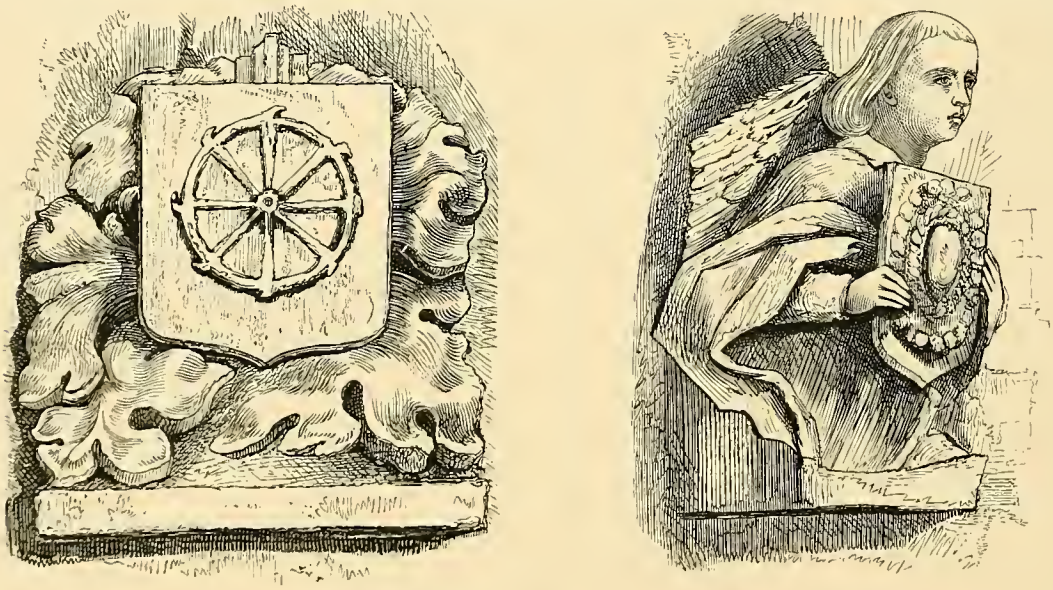
[b] Dumfries was taken and re-taken by contending factions eight times in twenty years, A.D. 1295 to 1315.—*Vide* McDowall's *History of Dumfries*.

the slab of the tomb of Devorgilda now remains. Nothing is more probable, therefore, than that a relic to which she was so devotedly and affectionately attached during

DULCE COR ABBEY, DUMFRIES.

her lifetime, should be carefully removed and secretly conveyed by one of her children to a place of security and repose, far distant from the troubles which afflicted Scotland.[e]

[e] It is a singular fact in connection with the statements respecting Baliol's heart, that the only relics now existing of the first Balliol College are three bosses, said to have formed part of the groined roof of the entrance.



BOSSES FROM THE FIRST BALLIOL COLLEGE.

These bosses represent respectively—(1), the arms of Baliol; (2), the Catherine wheel, the badge of the College; and (3), an angel holding a shield with a heart enclosed in a circlet of leaves. They are inserted in the garden wall of the present building.

And if so, where is it so likely that the heart would be carried as to Brabourne in Kent? It was, by reason of its retired and rural situation, removed from public observation, and thus suited to the purpose of concealment, which was probably an object with the erectors of the shrine, and naturally so with the family of the Baliols, who at that period were more or less under the ban of excommunication. Many members and connections of that family also possessed property at that time in East Kent, in the immediate neighbourhood.

For (1), John Baliol's son, Hugh, married Agnes, daughter of William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, *Lord of Brabourne Manor;* while another daughter, Joan, in her issue *Lady of the Manor*, married the Red John Comyn, murdered by his kinsman.

(2), Then Alexander Baliol, whose wife, Isabel de Chilham, Countess of Athol, lies buried in the adjacent Cathedral of Canterbury, was resident at Chilham, near Brabourne, as was also, in all probability, her son Thomas Baliol, "le Scot," as he was summoned as a landowner in East Kent to the coronation of Edward II.[d]

(3), Again, William Baliol le Scot was buried at the Whitefriars in Canterbury, which suggests his residence near to that city, and his son John le Scot is described as of *Brabourne.* We may assume, therefore, that William Baliol, when ordered by Edward I. to take up his residence south of the Tweed, selected Brabourne or Chilham as the place of his residence, the manors being adjacent, and Chilham being his brother's barony.

(4), Lastly, David Strathbolgie, Earl of Athol, asserted by some writers to have been son of Alexander Baliol, Lord of the Honour and Castle of Chilham, and Isabel of Chilham, his wife, was *Lord of the Manor of Brabourne* by marriage with Joan, daughter of John Comyn of Badenoch, lineal descendant and one of the heirs of John Baliol, the founder of the College. The wife of this Earl of Athol was buried at the Whitefriars in Canterbury, and her grand-daughter, also Countess of Athol, was buried at Ashford, in the immediate vicinity of Brabourne.

Another circumstance is suggestive of the conjecture that the shrine at Brabourne contained the heart of John Baliol, father of the unfortunate King of Scotland. Within a few years of the erection of Dulce Cor Abbey by Devorgilda Baliol, the War of the Scottish Succession broke out between her heirs, the Baliols, the Comyns, and the Bruces; the two former, and mostly the Strathbolgies, Earls of Athol, were on the Baliols' side. The futile endeavours of the Scottish King to oppose the well-organized forces of Edward, his renunciation of the crown as well as his oath on the abandonment of Scottish soil, are matters of history; but it is important to notice that after his release from the Tower, and in the interim before his departure from the kingdom, he was, by the courtesy of Edward I., allowed to reside in one of the *royal* manors. Tytler, on whose authority we mention this circumstance, does not state the

[d] *Vide* Furley's *History of the Weald of Kent*, Vol. II., p. 268.

name of the manor selected as his residence, but it is more than probable that it was *Brabourné*, then held by his and King Edward's near kinsmen, as before stated. Moreover, he took shipping at Sandwich in Kent, for France, to which, on his exile, he finally retired. What, then, can be more probable than that one of the sons of John Baliol the elder should make provision, according to the faith of those days, for the safe keeping of his father's heart and the spiritual interests of his soul? Every one of the circumstances narrated heightens the probability that the shrine contained originally the embalmed heart of John Baliol, founder of Balliol College, and father of the King of Scotland.

It may not be uninteresting to record here as a matter of history, that John Baliol, the King, finally departed, a banished and excommunicated man, to France, where he died, *circa* 1314, at Castle Gaillard, according to some authorities, or at his Castle of Mons, according to others. At all events, he was buried in the choir of the church of Ballieul, on the Eaulne, Canton de Londinieres, Normandy. The following inscription, or such parts as were in 1822 legible, was incised on a slab on which were faint traces of two persons in mantles, that of the male figure, bearing the arms of a Knight of the Holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem—

> "Ci gist Monseingneur Johan jadis seingneur de Balleul . . . qui . . . et trespassa l'an de grace MCCC . . . le Samiedi X jour d'abril. Pries pour l'ame de lui."

This slab, the tomb being quite destroyed, was obliterated eventually by the tread of the choristers; but was, in 1858, removed from the choir and placed in the wall of the nave of the church, where it now remains.

WINDOW IN CHURCH AT BALLIEUL.

Two figures are represented in the stained glass of the choir, which are locally said to represent John Baliol and his wife. This tradition receives corroboration from the date and style of the glass, and from the fact that the mantle which envelops the male figure is charged with the arms of the Holy Sepulchre—viz. *gules, a cross pattée argent, quartered with four small crosses*, apparently identical with the portion of the slab not obliterated. The head-dress of the female figure is also identical with that on the slab. The two figures appear to be worshipping at a shrine of Gothic detail.

These representations would suggest that King John Baliol had, in accordance with the custom of that age, gone in his latter days on a pilgrimage to the Holy Sepulchre, in order to entitle him, as an excommunicated person, to burial in a sacred edifice. No reference appears to be made to his having wielded a sceptre. This may have arisen from his vow of renunciation of the Scottish nation and soil for ever.

From another and more mutilated inscription on a sepulchral slab in the same church, appears the following inscription, which refers, doubtless, to a sister of Edward Baliol, for seven years King of Scotland.

"Ci gist Madame Johanne de . . . eul . . . Seur
du Roi Edeuar . . . jadis fame (?) Monseingneur Johan
seingneur de Balleul qui trespassa l'an de Grace MilCCCetjjj
le jj^{e} jour deuant la Chandeleur (Candlemas).

Pries pour lui" (*sic.*)

Before concluding our remarks as to the probability that the shrine originally contained the heart of John Baliol, the founder of Balliol College, it may be mentioned that John, his son, the unfortunate king (and most probably his brothers, Alexander and William), was by religious profession a Cluniac, and that the church of Brabourne was one of the few churches in England at that time appropriated to Cluniac cells or monasteries, Brabourne being attached to the Cluniac monastery of Monk's Horton, adjacent.

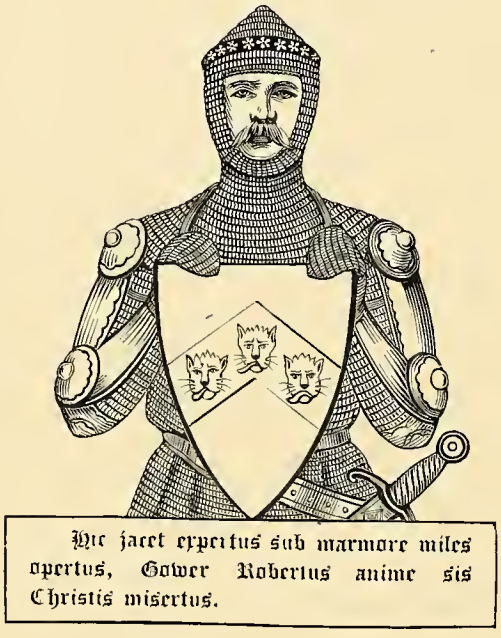
[NOTE B.

NOTE B.

THE GOWER MEMORIAL.

Of the memorials formerly existing in Brabourne Church, but now lost, that which possessed most interest for the general reader was probably the mural brass tablet commemorative of Sir Robert Gower (*vide* wood-cut, representative in character, but not facsimile). It was formerly placed over the tomb of Sir John Scót on the north wall of the choir.[a]

Weever, in his *Lost Memorials*, describes this tablet, existing in his day, but without date, as bearing the arms of Gower, viz., *Azure, three leopards' faces erased on a*



SIR ROBERT GOWER.

chevron or,[b] which are identical with those of the poet Gower, the father of English poetry, as he has been termed. Weever also states, respecting the said Sir Robert Gower, "Of this familie was John Gower ye poet descended." Hence the *general* interest which attaches to this lost memorial; it has, further, a *particular* interest as connected with the genealogy of the Scott family, as they claim a descent from the Gowers, and quarter their arms, which differ, however, from those of the poet Gower and the ancestor, Sir Robert Gower, of Brabourne, as explained in the Pedigree.

---

[a] *Philipott's Notes, Harleian MSS.* 3917.

[b] See Burke's *Armoury*.

The statement of Weever, who wrote in 1631, is corroborated by modern research. Sir Harris Nicolas, quoted in a paper read before the Kentish Archæological Society, and printed in their proceedings, affirms that the poet Gower, in his will, described himself as "of Kent, Esquire."[c] The Manor, also, of Kentwell, in Suffolk, as we learn from the *Inquisitiones Post-mortem*, passed, A.D. 1333, from David Strabolgie, Earl of Athol, *Lord of Brabourne Manor*, to a Sir Robert Gower, most probably the knight buried at Brabourne.

Other testimony comes to hand of the supposed connection or kinship between the poet's family and the Gower from whom the Scotts claim a descent thus. In a letter amongst the Scott papers, from Dr. J. Hunter, F.S.A., keeper of the Records, bearing date in 1828, and addressed to Edward Scott, Esq., in which he refers to the ancestry of the Gowers, and also their connection with the Pashleys and Pympes, who by marriage became ancestors of the Scotts of Scot's Hall, after referring to the Rolls of Parliament, *Anno* 1485, 1st Henry VII., and the reversal of the attainder of John Gower, beheaded at Tewkesbury A.D. 1471, in favour of Anne Pympe, Dr. Hunter states :—"There is an interest belonging to that, arising out of the circumstance of the probable connection of these Gowers (of Clapham, Surrey), and John Gower, the poet, who has a monument in the church of St. Saviour (St. Mary Overies), Southwark." This observation of Dr. Hunter was certainly made in ignorance that two centuries earlier there had existed a memorial in Brabourne Church which bore the name of Gower, with the same arms as appear on the tomb in St. Mary Overies ; otherwise he would have mentioned this fact in corroboration of his statement.[d]

There is evidence of the connection of the Gowers of Clapham, Surrey, with the Scot's Hall family, inasmuch as the Manors of Evegate and Halle, adjoining to Brabourne, were in the possession of the Pashleys, one of whom married a daughter of a Thomas Gower, and eventually these manors passed to the Scots by blood descent and marriage.

The following Pedigree will render intelligible this connection of the families of the Gowers of Kent and of Surrey with the Scotts of Scot's Hall.

---

[c] Vide *Archæologia Kantiana*, vol. vi.

[d] The Duke of Sutherland, it has been held, derives his Barony of Gower from this family, and is considered as connected by descent with the family of the poet. The late Marquis of Stafford gracefully caused to be restored the tomb in Southwark which has been referred to, but recent researches render it very doubtful whether there was any connection between the Gowers of Kent, the poet's family, and those of Stittenham in Yorkshire, who bore different arms, and through whom the Duke of Sutherland claims the Barony of Gower. The Peerages of the present day erroneously assert for the Duke a descent from the John Gower above alluded to by Dr. Hunter. He was Standard-bearer of Edward, Prince of Wales, son of Henry VI. ; was at the Battle of Palmsunfield, *i.e.*, Towton, and was afterwards taken and beheaded at Tewkesbury, A.D. 1471. Anne Pympe, in her petition to Parliament for the reversal of the attainder of her great uncle, "John Gower, of Clapham, Esquire," sets out her proof that she was his heir in right of her descent from his sister Lowys. Parliament granted her petition (*Rolls, Anno* 1485, 1st Henry VII.), thus affording conclusive evidence of the failure of male heirs of the said John Gower. Anne subsequently married Sir John Scott of Scot's Hall ; her descendants are consequently of that family.

GOWER.

Sir ROBERT GOWER, buried in Brabourne Church, Kent, and probably connected with Manor of Evegate, adjoining Brabourne, and which passed to the Scotts through Anne Pympe.
Sir Robert Gower's arms same as the poet Gower.

- Joan, daughter of Sir Robert Gower, who granted Manor of Kentwell, Suffolk, to John Gower, her next heir. = Thomas Syward, Citizen and Pewterer of London. Appears to have died without issue.
- "Katherine, daughter of Robert Gower."

"*Radwater quatuor librat reddit pert^m^ ad Maner de Kentewell Halle.*"

Kentwell Maner 'mediet.'

(Calendar *Inq.* P. M. Ed. III., p. 274.)

John Gower.

Aldington Maner 'mediet' ut de Castro Roffens, Kanc.

Calendar *Inq. post-mortem.* Edward III., p. 273.

John Gower, Kentewell Manor, Suffolk. C. I. P. M.,

Ed. III., p. 290.

Apparently heir of Joan above.

PASHLEY, PYMPE, AND GOWER.

Sir ROBERT PASHLEY, son of Sir Edmund Pashley. = Anne, daughter of Sir John Howard, knight.
(*Arms, Gu. a bend argent, between 6 cross crosslets fitchée.*—Arms of Howard, afterwards Duke of Norfolk.)

Robert, son of Robert. = Philippa, daughter and one of the heirs of Sir Richard Sergieux Knight.

Sir John Pashley = Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Richard Woodville, of the Mote, Maidstone, grandfather of Elizabeth Woodville, Queen of Edward IV.

John Pashley = Lowys, the daughter and heir of Thomas Gower, and sister of John Gower, of Clapham, Surrey, attainted of high treason, and after the Battle of Tewkesbury, 1471, beheaded.

NOTE.—Arms of Gower appear to be same as Howard above, *except a fess in lieu of the bend* in the Howard coat. These arms, however, may not be correct; they are quoted on authority of Scot's Hall pedigree.

Elizabeth, daughter and heir of John Pashley. = Reginald Pympe, of Nettlested, Kent, son and heir of John Pympe.

Anne Pympe, daughter of Elizabeth, daughter of the said Lowys, sister of John Gower, attainted. = Sir John Scot, of Scot's Hall, Kent.

She petitioned, in 1485, 1 Henry VII., as heir of John Gower, for reversal of attainder (granted).

Thomas Gower, of the Pashley pedigree, assumed to be brother of John Gower, the poet, who died *circa* 1408, and probably childless, as he married late in life.

- Lowys = John Pashley.
  - Elizabeth = Reginald Pympe.
    - Anne Pympe = Sir John Scot, of Scot's Hall; died after 1528.
- John, of Clapham, Surrey. Attainted of high treason, 3 and 4 Edw. IV., afterwards taken and beheaded at Tewkesbury, 1471, in attendance, as standard bearer, on Edward, Prince of Wales, son of Henry VI.

NOTE.—Looking to the great resemblance between the Gower (Thomas) arms and the Howards, suggestive of the former being derivative in some way of the latter, it may not be inappropriate here to suggest that a connection by marriage may have existed between the Gowers and Howards of Norfolk. At all events, in "Calendarium Genealogicum," page 601, under date of Edward I., a Robert Gower is mentioned as having married Cecilia, a daughter and heir of John de Blaby, *qui tenuit de herede Rogeri de Mowbray infra ætatem existente Inq. P. Mortem.* This Roger de Mowbray being of the Norfolk family which eventually merged in the Howards, Dukes of Norfolk. Can this Robert Gower be the man buried at Brabourne? Again, Roger Mowbray's descendant, John, Earl Marshal, Duke of Norfolk, in 1415 thus describes himself: "*Seigneur de Mowbray de Segrave et de Gower.*"

In concluding our notices of memorials no longer existing, we may state, on the authority of Scot's Hall MSS., that one of the Pashleys, Lord of Halle in Smeeth, and of the Mansion of Mote in Iden, was sometime before the sixteenth century buried in Brabourne Church, and that a portion of an inscription recording the burial of

"Johanna Pashley, filia de
Sole secunda uxor Edmundi Pashlie,"

formerly existed there.

From the same authority, we learn that the arms of Finche of Netherfield in Sussex (ancestors of the Earls of Winchelsea and Nottingham, as well as of the Scott family), quartered with the arms of Pepplesham and Crall, were formerly in stained glass in the east window of the chancel. In the same window, which was probably entirely devoted to glass of an heraldic character, were the arms of Digges impaling Clifton, also those of Clifton with three quarterings unknown.

Since the above remarks on the lost memorials at Brabourne were in type, we have received from the Rev. Canon W. A. Scott-Robertson, to whom we express our obligations, memoranda of notes taken by him from the *Harleian MSS.* 3917 (*Philipott's Notes*), which inform us of the position of the brass, before referred to, commemorative of Sir Robert Gower. Also, that the grave of Sir William Scot, who died in 1433, was in the south aisle; that the inscription to "Dionesia *nata* Fynche *alias* Harbord," was in the south chancel, *i.e.*, the Scot chapel; that Sir William Scot, whose brass still exists, and who died in 1524, had a monument in the chancel—in our opinion, under one of the hagioscopes or openings into the Scot chapel.

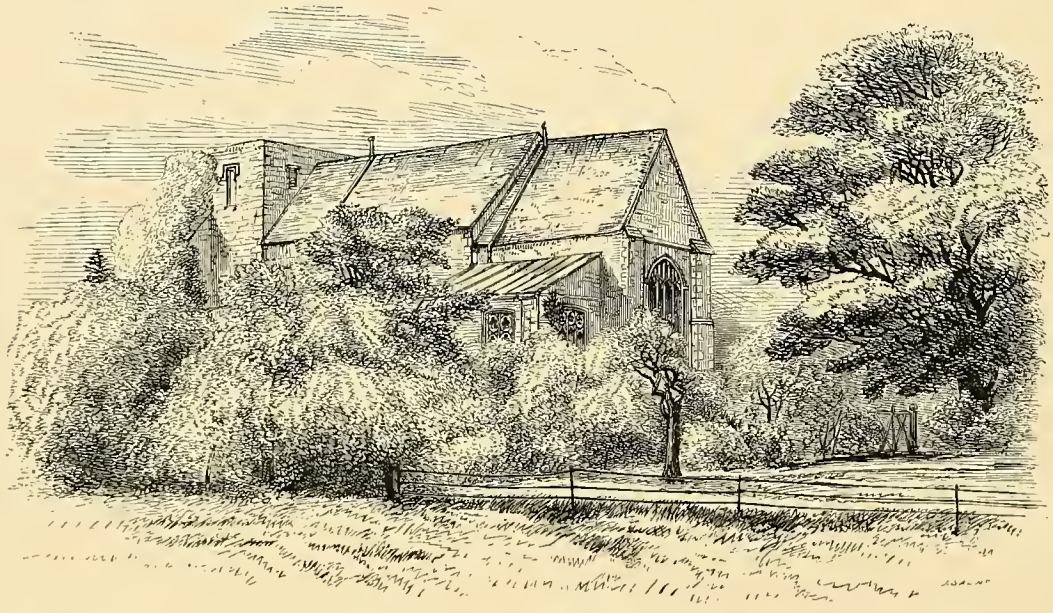
Philipott also states in the Notes referred to that the heraldic monument or altar tomb immediately under the east window of the chancel was the place of interment of Reginald Scot, nephew of Sir Reginald and cousin of Sir Thomas Scott. He was the author of the *Discoverie of Witchcraft*, and other works. This information induces us to qualify our previous speculation, that the tomb in question had been probably erected by the widow or son of Sir Thomas Scott. If, however, Philipott is right—and we see no reason to dispute his assertion—it would appear probable that the matrices of the two brasses which are seen on the altar tomb belonged to Reginald Scot and his wife, a daughter of William Cobb, of Cobb's Place, in Aldington. It is singular, that amongst the arms on the monument, suggestive of the Scot alliances, no impalement of the arms of the Cobbs appears, although they were an armigerous family of old standing at Aldington, Bonnington, and Lymne, in Kent. The probable solution of the difficulty is, that the lost brasses suggested heraldically the alliance referred to.

It may not be out of place to conclude with a few notices of the churchyard, or site of the church.

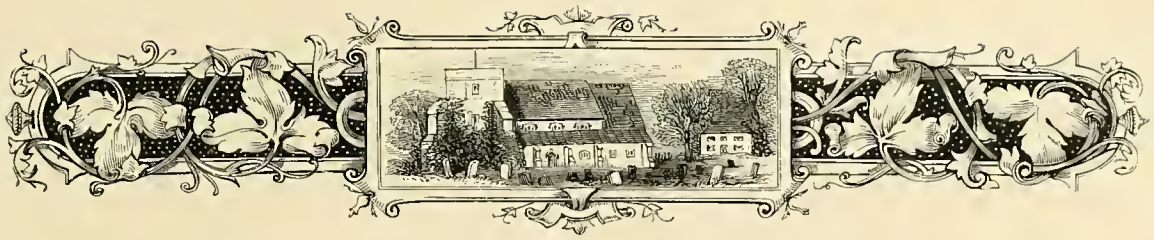
That the site had been in remote ages a spot dedicated to heathen religious rites

and burial cannot be doubted. Evelyn, in his *Sylva, or Discourse on Forest Trees*, mentions, in 1664, that a superannuated yew-tree then existed in the churchyard, of gigantic proportions, being 58 feet 11 inches in circumference, at 20 feet from the ground, and it has been estimated that it must have been then upwards of 2000 years old. This tree has now entirely disappeared; but the fact of its existence in that spot nearly adjacent to the "bourne" or stream from which the name "Brabourne" is derived, suggests the existence of Druidical worship there before the introduction of Christianity, and perhaps before the Roman occupation of Britain. That it was used as a British burial-place is certain, as the Rev. James Brothers, the late rector, discovered immediately adjoining the churchyard cinerary urns and other indications of ancient British burial. It has been already stated that an earlier church existed on this site previously to the Norman Conquest, but of its age, architectural appearance, and condition, we know nothing.

We shall have occasion to refer to the traditions of Brabourne in a subsequent chapter on its Manor and ancient Lords.



S.E. VIEW OF THE CHURCH OF ST. MARY THE VIRGIN, BRABOURNE, FROM THE RECTORY GARDEN.



Chapter V.

HISTORY OF THE ROYAL MANOR OF BRABOURNE, KENT.

"If Fortune dark ecclipse cloud glories light,
Then what avails that pomp which pride doth claim?
A mere illusion made to mock the sight,
Whose best was but the shadow of a dreame
Of glassie scepters, let frail greatnesse vaunt
Her scepters, no, but reeds which (raised up) break
And let eye-flatt'ring shows our wits enchaunt,
All perish'd are, ere of their pomp men speak;
Those golden palaces those gorgeous halls,
With furniture superflously faire,
Those stately courts, those sky encount'ring walls
Do vanish all like vapours in the aire."—DARIUS.

Its Pre-Norman History.—Its Noble and Royal Proprietors.—Salburga the Saxon Domina de Breburne.—Hugh de Montfort, Domesday Owner.—Robert de Montfort.—Robert de Vere and Adeliza de Montfort, Founders of Monk's Horton Priory, and Rebuilders of the Norman Church of Brabourne.—Henry de Essex, surnamed Suene or Guimarc, his Disgrace and Fall.—Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle.—Willia Mareschal, Earl of Pembroke, Regent of the Kingdom.—Eleanor Plantagenet, Sister of King Henry III.—Simon de Montfort, Earl of Leicester, Leader in the Barons' War against his Brother-in-law, Henry III. of England.—His Attaint.—Warrene de Monchensie, and the Attaint of his Son.—Royal Manor passed to William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, Half-Brother of Henry III.—Aymer de Valence.—The intimate Connection by Marriage of his three Sisters and Co-heirs with certain Claimants to the Scottish Throne, A.D. 1292, *viz., Hugh Baliol, John de Hastings, and John Comyn of Badenoch (the Red Comyn).—The Strabolgies, Earls of Athol and Lords of Chitham.—The Halshams of West Grinstead, in Sussex.—The Lewknors of Goring and West Dean, Sussex.—Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall, Lord Warden.—His Marriage with the Daughter of Sir John Lewknor.—His Descendants Lords of Brabourne Manor for many centuries.—Pedigree of Descent of Brabourne Manor.*

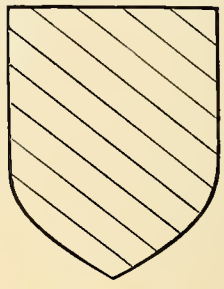
THE Manor of Brabourne, intimately identified with the Scott family and their progenitors, is situated in the parish of Brabourne, of which it forms a part; that parish being in the Barony or Hundred of Bircholt,[a] in the Lathe of Shepway, in the County of Kent.

The manor, and also a church, existed before the Norman Conquest. It was held soon after the dissolution of the Saxon Heptarchy by a lady styled

[a] Bircholt is styled in ancient records "the neutral Barony of Bircholt," from its exemption from the jurisdiction of any lathe, and on account of a portion of its lands being held by barony of Dover Castle.

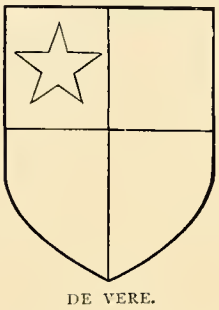
Salburga Domina de Brebùrne, who by her last will in A.D. 864, as quoted by Philipott, ordained that the future owners should yearly give to the monks of the Abbey of St. Augustine in Canterbury certain provisions set forth in her said will. The Kentish historian, who doubtless had access to this rare document, thus describes the bequest :— "*Provœda matrona nomine Salburga, Domina de Breburne testamentum condidit ut qui tenerent Breburne darent annuatim Sancto Augustino* 40 *ambras brasii,* 4 *boves,* 15 *arietes,* 20 *panes,* 1 *pis butyri,* 1 *pis casei,* 4 *carucatas lignorum,* 20 *gallinas ea lege, ut monachi singulis diebus cantarent pro anima ejus, etc.*"

It does not appear who held the manor after the death of Salburga until the time of the Conquest, when we find, by the Domesday survey, that it was held by Hugh de Montfort, the proprietor of thirty other manors in Kent; a portion of it, however, held by Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, was on his disgrace confiscated, and the whole manor would then appear to have passed to the De Montforts.



DE MONTFORT.

Robert de Montfort, grandson of Hugh, the Domesday proprietor, held the manor until his voluntary exile, when it passed into the hands of King Henry I.[b]



DE VERE.

That king, on the death abroad in pilgrimage of Robert de Montfort, and the confiscation of his property, granted the manor to Robert, son of Bernard de Vere *Constabularius regis,* who had married Adeliza or Alicia, daughter of Hugh, the Domesday owner.

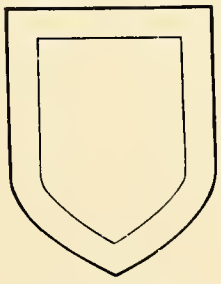
A daughter, Alice, was the result of this union, and she married Henry, son of Robert Fitz Suene, and grandson of Suene of Essex, who at the Domesday survey was proprietor of fifty-five Lordships in Essex, probably confirmed to him by the Conqueror, in descent from Robert Fitz Wimarc or Guimarc, their pre-Domesday owner.[c]

---

[b] On the death of Hugh de Montfort's grandsons, without issue, his daughter, Adeliza, and her children became his representatives, and thus Hugh de Gant, her son by her first husband, succeeded to his Norman possessions, including the castle of Montfort, and thereupon assumed the name of De Montfort. He was the ancestor to the De Montforts, who for many generations held land in Kenilworth and elsewhere in Warwickshire. Hugh de Montfort's other vast estates in England passed to Adeliza, married, secondly, to Robert, son of Bernard de Vere, and descended to her daughter Alice, married to Henry, known as "De Essex," Constable, and hereditary Standard Bearer of England.

[c] Adeliza, wife of Robert de Vere, founded the Priory of Monk's Horton, adjoining the manor of Brabourne, a confirmation charter of which was afterwards granted by Henry de Essex. It is probable that the church of Brabourne was re-edified by her about this time, and appropriated to the use of the Priory, as it would appear to have been built by the same architect, and is mentioned in the charter of foundation of the Priory.

Henry de Essex was "Constabularius Regis," in right of his wife; he was likewise Standard Bearer of the King, an hereditary office in his family, held, not improbably, by his pre-Domesday ancestor, Suene of Essex.[d]

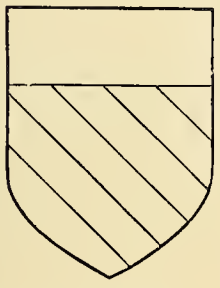


HENRY DE ESSEX.

The "Caput Baroniæ" of Henry of Essex was at Raleigh in Essex, the only castle in that county mentioned in Domesday, not a stone of which is now to be found; it was evidently vacated for Hadleigh Castle, built by Hubert de Burgh, Lord of Raleigh, about A.D. 1230-40, and was not improbably a ruin, or nearly so, at the Conquest. De Essex's residence in Kent was Saltwood Castle, only a few miles from Brabourne, the magnificent ruins of which still remain.

This noble, it may be stated, whilst attending Henry II. in Wales during a conflict with the Welsh, A.D. 1164, was convicted as guilty of cowardice in deserting the Royal Standard. The fortunes of the day being lost, he was adjudged to wager of battle with his kinsman, Robert de Montfort, and, being vanquished by him, accepted the clemency of the king, who, whilst sparing his life, compelled him to retire, a shorn monk, into the Abbey of Reading.

By Alice de Vere, Henry of Essex had three sons, Henry, Hugh, and Robert; but as the whole of his vast estates had been confiscated on his being adjudged guilty of cowardice, these retired into private life, and (according to Miss Fry, in her interesting pamphlet on the family of Suene of Essex) appear thenceforth as knights and gentlemen commoners.



BALDWIN DE BETUN.
(*Earl of Albemarle.*)

On the attainder of Henry of Essex, the manor of Brabourne passed, by grant of King John in the fifth year of his reign (A.D. 1204), to Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle. It is more than probable that this noble was found to be, *jure uxoris*,

---

[d] It is conjectured that Suene, the ancestor of Henry of Essex, by rendering suit and service to the Conqueror at the Battle of Hastings, or before that event, may have received from that monarch a re-grant of the vast possessions (fifty-five lordships in Essex alone), and a continuance of the office he may have held in Saxon times, as a signal reward for such services. It is only in this manner one is enabled to account for the possession by this man, at the Domesday survey, of the vast estates of his ancestors in Saxon times. That he was of Saxon or Danish blood there can be little doubt, and looking at the geographical position of his estates, it is not unfair to assume that he was a Dane, not improbably allied to Suene or Sweyn of Denmark, father of Canute, sometime King of England. This suggestion is somewhat borne out by the eventual possession of Suenescamp (now Swanscombe in Kent) by Henry of Essex, Swanscombe being traditionally the Camp of Sweyn, King of Denmark, on his sailing up the River Thames; although it may as truly have derived its name from the family of Suene of Essex (probably kinsman of the king), to whom it belonged.

the nearest heir to Alice de Vere, wife of Henry of Essex, as the accompanying pedigree suggests :[e] —

Alice de Vere, daughter of Robert de Vere, Lady of Brabourne Manor. = Henry of Essex, Lord of Raleigh and Rochford in Essex, etc.

Estates confiscated.

Roesia de Vere (sister of Alice de Vere). = Geoffry de Mandeville, Earl of Essex.

1stly, William de Mandeville, Earl of Essex and Earl of Albemarle, *jure uxoris*, died at Rouen 1189. = Hawise, daughter and heiress of William le Gros, Earl of Albemarle, living in 1211.

2ndly, William de Fortibus, Earl of Albemarle. His daughter-in-law was niece to John le Scot. Earl of Huntingdon and Chester. = 3rdly, Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle in right of his wife. *Had Manor of Brabourne by grant of King John.*

WILLIAM MARESCHAL. (*Earl of Pembroke.*)

On the death of Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle, the manor of Brabourne passed to William Mareschal, Earl of Pembroke, in frank marriage with Alice, the only daughter and heir of the said Baldwin. The Earl of Pembroke married, secondly, Eleanor Plantagenet (sister of Henry III.), to whom on his death, in A.D. 1231, having deceased without issue by either of his wives, this manor passed for her lifetime. William Mareschal was likewise brother-in-law of Joan, wife of Alexander II., King of Scots.

At this point of our remarks on the descent of the Manor of Brabourne, it is interesting to observe the origin of *Surnames*, as derived from offices or territories. Thus, William le Mareschal above-mentioned is supposed by Mr. S. W. Ellis—no mean authority (*Sussex Archæological Transactions*)—to have been a descendant of the Le Mareschal family who owned Venoix in Normandy in the eleventh century, and whose arms the Mareschals in the first instance assumed, probably by marriage of an heiress. Gilbert le Mareschal is likewise presumed to have been identical with Gilbert Norman, Sheriff of Surrey and Sussex, and brother of William Fitz Norman, the Domesday proprietor of the Manor of Cumbes, near Steyning, in Sussex. William Mareschal, Earl of Pembroke, grandson of Gilbert le Norman or le Mareschal, was Sheriff of Sussex in the thirteenth century, and owned lands in Kent, Norfolk, and elsewhere. He was also Lord of Brabourne Manor, as above shown. This assertion of Mr. Ellis is the more probable, inasmuch as a distinct connection between the ancient Saxon family of De Cumbe of Cumbe in Brabourne, and that of the family of De Cumbe of Coombe and Applesham in Sussex, is proved to have existed, the family either giving

[e] In feudal times, when estates were confiscated or escheated to the Crown, it was customary for the nearest of kin not included in an attaint, by the payment of a substantial fine, to obtain from the Crown a re-grant of manorial territory. It is assumed that in this way Baldwin de Betun, who died in A.D. 1212, obtained from King John a grant of the Manor of Brabourne, as heir of Roesia de Vere, sister of Alice, late wife of Henry of Essex, whose estates (Brabourne, *inter alia*) had been forfeited to the king.

or receiving their name from their manorial possessions, probably the latter. As in Kent, so in Sussex, the pre-Domesday proprietors of the Manors of Cumbe were so named. In Kent, the family eventually merged, by marriage of the heiress, into that of Scot of Brabourne. The Sussex family, shortly after the Conquest, assumed the name of Norman, and eventually Marshall, the latter being probably assumed in virtue of their holding the Manor of Marshals in Banham, in Norfolk, in grand sergeanty, as of the office of Marshal to the King, and thus the ancient coat of the Venoix family was renounced, and that appertaining to the office of Marshal, as above represented, assumed in its stead. Be this as it may, the Manor of Cumbe in Brabourne eventually passed to the Scots of Brabourne by the marriage, *temp.* Edward III., of the heiress of Cumbe, one of the Kentish family of that name ; whilst, curiously enough, the family of De Cumbe in Sussex eventually merged into that of Halsham by marriage, the Halshams, as we shall have occasion to show shortly, being the direct ancestors of the Scotts of Scot's Hall.

Before dismissing our remarks on the Saxon family of De Cumbe, it may incidentally be mentioned that the arms of De Cumbe of Brabourne are asserted by Hasted to have been "*sable three lions passant guardant in pale gules.*" It is a singular and suggestive fact, that the arms of the ancient Priory of Sele (the history of which our learned friend, Dr. Bloxam, Vicar of Beeding, Sussex, has done so much to reveal), which was within a mile or so of the Manors of Applesham and Cumbes, in the parish of Cumbes, were likewise *three lions passant guardant in pale;* and inasmuch as the Sussex De Cumbes, powerful neighbouring proprietors, had built the pre-Norman church of Applesham (in Coombes parish), and were likewise witnesses after the Conquest to grants of land to the ancient Saxon priory of Sele, adjacent to their own lands, it is not improbable that they were benefactors before as well as after the Conquest to that monastery, and may have conferred upon it their own coat-of-arms, as above described, in accordance with the custom of benefactors and founders in those early times.

To resume our biography of William Mareschal, Earl of Pembroke, Earl Marshal of England and Lord of the Royal Manor of Brabourne, and as showing how intimately the acquisition and possession of the manor at this time was connected with the royal houses both of England and Scotland, it should be mentioned that he was Regent of the kingdom of England during the minority of his brother-in-law, Henry III. of England, whilst his sister-in-law, Joan, was, as before stated, Queen of Alexander II., King of Scots. (*Vide* Pedigree, p. 16, *ante.*)

But as further exemplifying his family connection with the royal line of Scotland, this nobleman obtained a grant of the lands of David, Earl of Huntingdon, brother of William the Lion, King of Scots, and father to John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon and Chester, and likewise of the lands of Sayer de Quincey, Earl of Winchester, whose son, Roger de Quincey, Earl of Winchester, was Constable of Scotland in right of his

wife, Helen, daughter of Alan McDougal, Lord of Galloway and Constable of Scotland, niece to the aforesaid John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon (sometime heir presumptive to the Scottish throne), and sister to Devorgilda Baliol, wife of John, the founder of Balliol College, father of the unfortunate king.[f]

PLANTAGENET.

William Mareschal, the Earl of Pembroke, after the decease of his first wife, had, as has been already stated, married Eleanor Plantagenet, sister of Henry III., but had no issue by her, and the Manor of Brabourne (which he had held *jure uxoris* of his first wife, Alice, daughter of Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle) passed to her for her life. She married, secondly, Simon de Montfort, Earl of Leicester, the celebrated leader in the second Baron's war, who, being taken and slain after the battle of Evesham, A.D. 1265, was afterwards attainted of high treason, and the whole of his vast possessions became forfeit to the Crown. Simon de Montfort was, on the death of John le Scot, in 1244, without issue, created Earl of Chester, a dignity taken into the king's hands on Simon's attaint, and conferred eventually on the king's grandson, Edward of Carnarvon, Prince of Wales.[g]

SIMON DE MONTFORT.
(*Earl of Leicester.*)

On the death of Simon de Montfort, Earl of Leicester, Eleanor, his widow, forsook the kingdom, and died, A.D. 1274, in great poverty, in the Abbey of Montargis in France. She is said to have had by Simon de Montfort five sons, of whom Simon was killed at Evesham, and three went with her into exile and died abroad; such, in these stormy times, being the not unusual conclusion of a life spent in the ambitious and unsuccessful pursuit of arms.

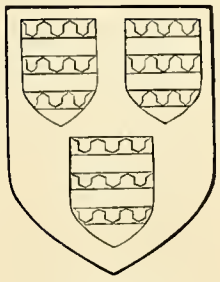
---

[f] It is likewise interesting to observe that the Manor of Marshals, in the township of Banham in Norfolk, was held at Domesday by William le Schoies, or le Scot, who held at that period and before the Conquest such large possessions in East Anglia, if not elsewhere and whose residence, as before stated, was probably at Scotty's Hall, in the Hundred of Blythburgh, in Suffolk, which belonged to him.

From this man (a presumed connection of the Scoto-Saxon family of Scot of the royal line of Scotland), this manor eventually passed to Anselm le Mareschal, brother to William le Mareschal above mentioned, as did the Manor of Wilby in the same county, in a similarity of descent through the Mareschals, Earls of Pembroke, to the Strathbolgies, Earls of Athol, and Halshams, Lords of Brabourne Manor, the ancestors of the Scots of Brabourne and Scot's Hall.

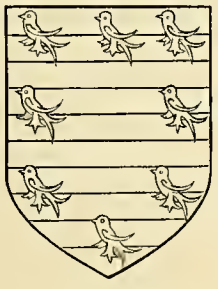
[g] As illustrating the vicissitudes attending fortune, favour, and honours in the feudal times of which we are writing, it may be mentioned that the descendants of Simon de Montfort who were not exiled assumed the name of Wellesbourne, and located themselves in the Manor of Hichenden in Buckinghamshire, the church of which formerly, if not now, contained many tombs of the later De Montforts, with their arms. This change of name on the part of those immediately connected with the family of an excommunicated and exiled person, attainted of high treason, was an almost invariable practice in those days.

The Manor of Brabourne having been assigned before her exile to Eleanor de Montfort, then became with the other lands of William Mareschal divisible between his five sisters, his four brothers, each in succession Earl of Pembroke, having died without issue. On division, the royal manor was allotted to Joan Mareschal, his sister, who had married Warrenne de Monchensie (De Monte Canisio), a Norfolk Baron, *temp.* Henry III.[h]



WARRENNE DE MONCHENSIE.

Warrenne de Monchensie being dead, the Manor of Brabourne passed to his son, William de Monchensie, but was confiscated by Henry III. for the part taken by the latter in the War of the Barons, he being, at the battle of Lewes 1264, in arms against his sovereign. It was afterwards restored to his brother-in-law, William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, half-brother to the king, who had married Joan, daughter of Warrenne de Monchensie, the previous lord. Of William de Valence little need be said. He was, with his son, Aymer de Valence, a great supporter of King Edward I. in his Scotch war; and being so closely allied (*see* page 16, *ante*) with the royal families of both England and Scotland, his name and history belong to the nation at large.



WILLIAM DE VALENCE.
(*Earl of Pembroke.*)

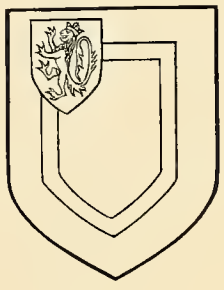
The tombs of this noble and that of his son, Aymer de Valence, are in Westminster Abbey, the latter especially being perhaps one of the finest specimens of early decorated monumental work in this or perhaps any country.

On the death of William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, in A.D. 1296, the Manor of Brabourne was left in dower to his widow, upon whose decease it passed to his surviving son, Aymer or Ademar de Valence, who in the sixth year of Edward II. obtained for it a charter of privileges of fair and free warren. In the same year he was created Earl of Pembroke, and as a kinsman of the king (with the exception of Henry of Lancaster, of the blood royal) took precedence of all Barons of

---

[h] As suggestive of this family's connection with that of Scot, it may be mentioned, firstly, that Hubert de Monchensie, the ancestor of Warrenne, was in ward to the Bishop of Ely, in relation to land, part of the Honour of Henry of Essex (*sometime Lord of Brabourne Manor*) at Stratford-le-Bow in Essex, over the river Lea, at which place his probable kinswoman, Matilda le Scot, *surnamed the Good*, wife of Henry I. of England, had built about that time the beautiful bridge, from its construction called "Bow," whilst her daughter, the Empress Matilda or Maûd, had, as the steward of her household, John le Scot, of Potter Newton in Yorkshire, her undoubted kinsman. Secondly, as further connecting the family of Monchensie with that of Scot, the Domesday proprietor in Norfolk, Suffolk, and Essex, and probably elsewhere—a supposed connection of the Scoto-Saxon family, the founders of the Septs of the Border Scotts and the Scotts of Kent—it may be mentioned that the Manor of Eschoies, or Scot's Manor, held by the De Monchensies at this time in the hundred of Guilcross in Norfolk, had descended to them from William le Schoies or le Scot, the Domesday proprietor above mentioned.

the Realm, being styled by the monarch, "Dilectum consanguinæum et fidelum nostrum." He was present, in June, A.D. 1300, at the siege of Caerlaverock, and subsequently in the wars of Scotland, to the Marches of which he was appointed Guardian, when in command of the English forces levied against Robert Bruce. In the third year of Edward II. (*Esch. 3rd Edw. II.*), Aymer de Valence was found heir to his sister Anneys or Agnes, who had been married to Hugh Baliol, the brother of John, King of Scotland, and of Alexander and William Baliol, of Kent.



HUGH DE BALIOL.

In the seventh, and again in the thirteenth year of Edward II. he was appointed Guardian of the kingdom of Scotland during the king's absence, and was present at the battle of Bannockburn, cherished by Scotsmen as the turning-point of their so-called independence, but fatal to the arms of the weak-minded Edward.

In A.D. 1323, Aymer de Valence accompanied the Queen of England to France, and is said there to have lost his life at a tournament given to celebrate his nuptials with his third wife, Mary, daughter of Guy de Chastillon, Count de St. Paul.

> "Sad Chastillon, on her bridal morn,
> That wept her bleeding love."

It has before been stated that Aymer de Valence was buried near his father and his royal kinsman, Henry III., in the Abbey of Westminster. Of his widow it may be said that she survived him fifty years, and died in A.D. 1376, and that amongst other pious deeds in connection with religion and learning, she founded a college, called, after her husband, Pembroke Hall. This lady is traditionally asserted to have resided at Brabourne, at the mansion which at that time existed just outside the parish churchyard, towards the south, and which was for some short time the traditional residence of the Scots of Brabourne before they removed to Scot's Hall, built *circa* A.D. 1420. Traces of the foundation of this residence are to be observed in dry seasons, when parched by the summer sun; a field still called the Lake (and anciently dedicated to St. Syriack) hard by, suggests the fish-pond; and towards the village, westward, a ramp and fosse suggest the moat by which a portion of the mansion may have been surrounded. [i]

---

[i] The Scott records reveal the fact that a pond immediately adjoining the churchyard of Brabourne, and on the site of which a perennial spring flows to this day, was anciently dedicated to St. Syriack, who would appear to have been the brother of St. Stephen, and to have assisted St. Helena (mother of Constantine, born at York) in finding the Holy Rood. St. Syriack was martyred under the Emperor Julian. This pond formerly (A.D. 1520) maintained a "cucking-stole" (a ducking-stool for scolds) as appurtenant to manorial rights and customs. The existence formerly, in the neighbourhood of Brabourne church, of this ancient pool, as well as the very ancient yew-tree of immense age that flourished here in Evelyn's time (A.D. 1660), and likewise the vicinity of the Romano-British burial-ground, are facts which concur in suggesting the extreme antiquity of the site of the church and churchyard.

The Countess of Pembroke was also, as well as her husband, akin to Edward I. of England, thus :—

JOHN DE BRETAGNE, Earl of Richmond,
(*nephew of Edward I.*)

Mary = Guy de Chastillon, Count de St. Paul in France.

Margaret, wife of Alexander, son of Alexander III., King of Scots, and brother of Margaret, the infant Queen of Scots, betrothed to Edward II. of England, but died before marriage.*

Mary de St. Paul, died *s. p.* = Aymer de Valence, *Lord of Brabourne Manor.* (*Cousin of Edward I.*)

* NOTE.—William de Valence (father of Aymer), half brother of Henry III., was an adviser and witness to the Treaty known as of Salisbury, which stipulated for the marriage of the young son of his nephew (Edward I.) with Margaret, the infant Queen of Scots, and in respect of which, in A.D. 1289, was issued by Pope Nicholas IV., a Bull, authorizing the said marriage, and granting a dispensation, as being within the prohibited degrees of affinity.—*Pat. Rolls*, Nov. 16, 1289. See pedigree, p. 16.

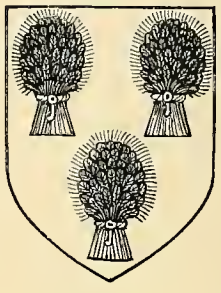
Although not immediately connected with the descent of the Manor of Brabourne, except in their issue, it would detract from the value of these notes to omit all mention of such historic personages as John Comyn of Badenoch, the "*Black*," and his no less celebrated son, John, the "*Red Comyn.*" John the "*Black*," was at the battle of Lewes on the side of Henry III. of England in 1264, and Regent of Scotland in connection with John Baliol the elder in 1286. He was chief of his name in 1291, a competitor for the crown of Scotland in 1292, by reason of his descent from Donald Bane and Banquo. He married Mary, sister of John Baliol, and left issue one son and one daughter, the former known as the *Red Comyn*, of whom presently. *John the Black* is asserted by the most modern, and probably the most authentic, authority on the ancestry of the Comyns (*the Rev. M. E. Cumming-Bruce, in his "History of the Lives of Bruces and Comyns"*), to have been the son of *John*, married to *Marian, a younger sister of Margaret le Scot, a daughter of Alan of Galloway.* At all events, and as suggestive of this marriage, it is a singular coincidence that the three sons of this noble by this union, viz., William, John, and Alexander, were all known by the affix of the name of "*le Scot*," doubtless as heirs of John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon, or in respect of their descent from the Scoto-Saxon stock of Malcolm Canmore, King of united Scotland, the surname of whose descendants, it has been asserted in these pages, would appear to have been *le Scot* or *De Scotia.* John Comyn, after the battle of Northampton, 1264, was addressed as "John Comyn *le Scot*;" his brothers, William and Alexander, in *Calendarium Geneologicum*, and in the *Inquisitiones Post-mortem*, have likewise this affix, a name found only in the thirteenth and previous centuries *as exclusively* in connection with *known descendants* of the royal family of Scotland of the *Scoto-Saxon line*, the Baliols, as before stated, having at times been so addressed.

John the *Red Comyn* (married to Joan, sister and coheir of Aymer de Valence, *Lord of Brabourne*) was Lord of Strathbolgie (the latter a name transmitted to his

son-in-law, known as David de Strathbolgi) in 1296, and of Badenoch in 1299. As a near kinsman of the Baliols and of the King of England, he was one of the three Regents of Scotland during the interregnum and before the settlement of the claims of the competitors for the throne of Scotland in favour of Baliol. Claiming a double descent from the Kings of Scotland, especially by the marriage of his father with Mary, sister of John Baliol, competitor and king; the Red Comyn became, on the renunciation by Baliol, in 1296, of the crown of Scotland for himself and his heirs for ever, a claimant for the vacant throne, nearer in one degree than his kinsman, Robert Bruce, by whom his murder was planned, thereby to enhance his claim to the sceptre of a kingdom to which Bruce eventually succeeded by his valour and force of character alone, but at the sacrifice of his oath and allegiance to the English monarch, and of the ninety-five Lordships which he possessed in England.[j]

On the death of Aymer de Valence, *s.p.*, in A.D. 1324, the issue of his sisters became his heirs. Isabel, the eldest, had been married to John de Hastings, Lord of Abergavenny, who, in right of his descent from Ada, daughter of David of Huntingdon, brother to William the Lion, King of Scots, and sister of John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon and Chester, became a competitor for the Scottish throne, A.D. 1292. On the division of the inheritance of Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, the royal Manor of Brabourne passed to Joan, wife of David Strabolgi, Earl of Athol, in right of her mother, Joan de Valence, the youngest sister, who had been married to John Comyn of Badenoch (the "*Red Comyn*"), son of John the "*Black*" and Mary Baliol, sister of John, the King of Scotland, as before stated.

JOHN DE HASTINGS.
(*Lord of Abergavenny.*)



JOHN COMYN OF BADENOCH.
(*Same arms as John le Scot, 1st Earl of Chester, and as the Prince of Wales as Earl of Chester.*)

[j] The murder of John Comyn, the Red, induced his kinsman, the English monarch, personally to prosecute the war in Scotland against Robert Bruce, and there can be little question that had not the death of Edward, "the greatest of the Plantagenets," at Burgh on the Sands, whilst leading a well-organized and numerous army to the overthrow of Bruce, intervened at this juncture, such was the condition of extremity and despair to which Bruce was at this time reduced, that his subjection would have been final and complete, and Scotland then annexed (as Wales and the Palatinateship of Chester had recently been) to the English crown for ever. But fortune befriended the Bruce, and on England's throne, by death, in succession to the most powerful, was seated the weakest and most vacillating of her monarchs, who contended in vain against the most valiant and persevering soldier of those troublous times. Patriotism amongst the nobility had been dead in Scotland since the palmy days of Alexander III., and hence the failure of the Baliols to secure that independence which was afterwards wrought by Robert Bruce alone; but, as the subsequent history of that country evinced, the idea was never compensated by the bloody sacrifices by which that independence had been attained.

Joan de Strabolgi and her sister Elizabeth (married to Richard Talbot, the ancestor of the present Earls of Shrewsbury), as co-heirs of Aymer de Valence, were possessed of large estates in Kent, in which county the Countess of Athol, after the confiscation of her husband's estates in Scotland, doubtless resided, and where, according to Weever, she would appear to have been interred, viz., in the monastery of Whitefriars in Canterbury,[k] where her kinsman, William Baliol le Scot, was likewise buried.

David Strabolgi,[l] or D'Ascelles (aged nineteen in 1307), was Lord of Brabourne Manor in right of his wife, as before observed. He had been brought up in England, probably at Chilham Castle, Kent, the Caput Baroniæ of his family. In 1311, to secure his influence, he was made Constable of Scotland by Robert Bruce, and was known as the Earl of Athol, a title that shortly afterwards became simply one of courtesy. His sister was married to Edward Bruce, whilst his wife was cousin to Edward I. of England. Shortly after this period he deserted the Scottish cause, and his Scottish titles and estates became forfeited by Robert Bruce, he being included, in a contemporaneous deed, amongst the "Desenherité." The manor of Strathbolgi (whence his name) had descended to him from the Comyns of Badenoch in right of his marriage with the daughter of John Comyn the

STRATHBOLGI, EARL OF ATHOL.

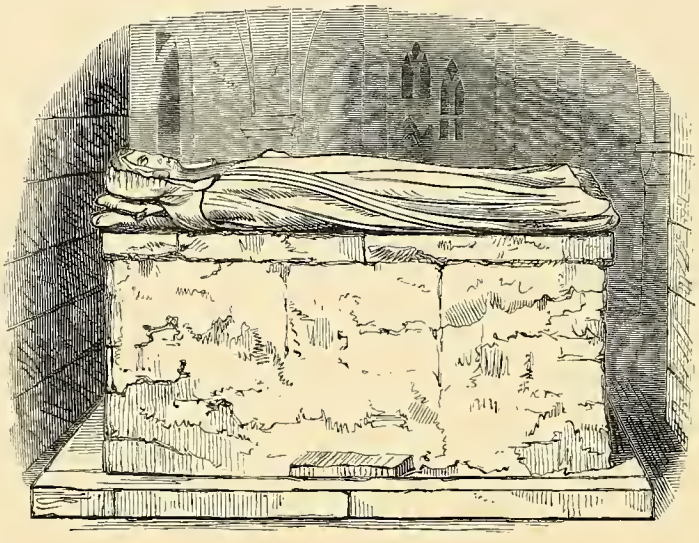
[k] Of this monastery very little is known beyond that it is said to have been founded late in the thirteenth century by an ancestor of the Dygges family, afterwards Lords of the Manor of Chilham. It is, as connected with these historical notes, curious and suggestive to remark that shortly previous to, and after the settlement by Robert Bruce of the independence of the kingdom of Scotland, and when the Kings of England (Edwards I. and II.) had in consequence required all subjects bearing allegiance to them to reside in England (mostly south of the Trent) and renounce their Scottish possessions, many apparently of Scottish blood did so abandon their Scottish estates, and came to reside in East Kent, as suggested by the places of their burial, and as indicated in these notes on the descent of the Manor of Brabourne. Thus the descendants of William Baliol "le Scot," the Comyns of Badenoch, and the Strathbolgies, Earls of Athol, became English in their nationality, preferring their allegiance to the English king, and the retention of their English estates, to the more precarious submission to the King of Scots.

[l] As the Strathbolgis (known by their Scottish title of Earls of Athol) were, in right of descent through the Comyns, Lords of Badenoch, and the De Valences, Earls of Pembroke, proprietors of large estates in Kent (Brabourne *inter alia*), it may be desirable to throw a light on their history and their connection with that county. The family of De Assels, D'Ascelles, or De Strabolgi, had, with one notorious exception, thrown the weight of their influence on the side of their kinsmen, the Baliols, during the contention known as the War of Succession, or of Independence, in Scotland. John D'Ascelles, or D'Athels, the kinsman of David Strabolgi, for treason against King Edward I. in 1305, in attempting to escape from the Castle of Kildrummie (he being at that time one of the Guardians of Scotland on the part of that monarch), was taken prisoner, brought to London, and at Canterbury hanged on a gibbet fifty feet high, a privilege accorded to him in respect of his royal descent and near kinsmanship to the King, and as a warning to his Kentish tenantry. After his execution his head was placed on the Tower of London, above that of the so-called patriot Wallace.

With this exception, the family of Athol appear to have thrown in their lot with the Baliol or English party, and to have preferred thereby to retain their English to their Scottish estates, those in England being as rich and fertile as any in the south of Britain.

Red, but he did not long enjoy it, as, being obliged to elect between his allegiance to the English or Scottish king, he renounced the latter, and with it his Scottish titles and estates. In consequence of services rendered to Edward II., King of England, he was very popular with that monarch, who restored to him the barony of Chilham, Kent, forfeited by John d'Ascelles, attainted and hanged.

He was summoned to Parliament in respect of this barony, but, as Philipott the Kentish historian observes, *not as "Baliol,"* that name being offensive to the king, but as "*Strathbolgi,*" his Scottish name; his mother, Isabel de Chilham (buried at Canter-



TOMB OF COUNTESS OF ATHOL, OF CHILHAM CASTLE, IN CANTERBURY CATHEDRAL, A.D. 1292.

bury Cathedral, A.D. 1292), having married Alexander Baliol (brother of William Baliol le Scot) for her second husband, and David Strabolgi being, by some historians, reputed as her son by this marriage.[m]

Be this as it may, David Strabolgi (Earl of Athol in courtesy) would appear to have died about A.D. 1327, leaving a son named David, who had livery of his estates in England, *but was never Lord of Brabourne Manor.* This noble took part with his kinsman, Edward Baliol, King of Scots, son of John Baliol, the unfortunate king, and for a time regained the possessions in Scotland that had belonged to his father, and had

---

[m] In Hasted's time, A.D. 1780, three coats-of-arms were visible on the now mutilated tomb of the Countess of Athol, of which two alone were decipherable, these being respectively the well-known coat of the Lords of Man (the Athols and Baliols being sometime Lords of that kingdom and isle) and that of the family of Bardolph, viz., 3 *cinquefoils,* 2 *and* 1. The connection of the Bardolphs with Isabel de Chilham is unknown; her own coat being 3 *lucies* (*fishes*), derived from her descent from the ancient Norman family of De Luci.

been forfeited by the Treaty of Northampton, which stipulated that an Englishman should not possess lands in Scotland unless residing there, and doing fealty and homage. However, on the flight and the renunciation of the crown of Scotland by Edward Baliol (for seven years king but in name of that distracted country), and on the resumption of the crown by Robert Bruce, David, Earl of Athol, came to the peace of that monarch, until in A.D. 1335, when, Edward II. invading Scotland, he once more appeared on the English side, and his estates in Kent were restored to him. His wife, Catherine, Countess of Athol, was, with her ladies and her young son, the succeeding Earl of Athol, blockaded in the castle of Lochandorb from November, A.D. 1335, till August, A.D. 1336, when Edward III. of England came in person to raise the siege (M. E. Cumyn-Bruce's *Lives of Bruces and Comyns*). David Strathbolgi is said to have been killed at the battle of Dunblain in A.D. 1335, his son David succeeding him in his large estates in Kent.

David, the fourth of that name as connected with Kent, son of the last earl, and grandson of David Strabolgi, Lord of Brabourne in right of his wife, Joan Comyn, was the *thirteenth and last* of the very ancient Earls of Athol of the Picto-Scottish line. By way of remark, it may be stated that this earldom is reputed as the most ancient of titles of Picto-Scottish, or probably of Anglo-Saxon, creation, its origin being lost in the mist of Pictish antiquity. David Strabolgi, last Earl of Athol, was aged three on the death of his father. He was with Edward the Black Prince during the French wars. He was summoned to Parliament, probably in respect of the barony of Chilham, until A.D. 1369, about which time he died, leaving no male issue. His wife was Elizabeth, Countess of Athol, daughter of Henry Ferrers, Lord of Groby, who survived him about five years, and was buried in Ashford Church, in Kent, where her mutilated brass now reposes on the floor of the nave.[n]

As the manor of the honour and castle of Chilham, in Kent, came into the possession of the Earls of Athol by the marriage of David D'Ascelles or D'Athels with

---

[n] The monumental brass at Ashford at this date is so mutilated as but partially to reveal its history, its inscription, etc., being imperfect and illegible. The brass of A D. 1628, of which our representation is a rough facsimile, was in that year copied by Mr. Dering, the originator of the extensive collection of MSS. known as the Surrenden Dering Collection (now, alas! dispersed), and referred to by him as being at that period on the floor of the "parson's" chancel, and with the following circumscription :—"Icy gist Elizabeth iadis Comtesse D'Athels La fielle le Seignr de Ferrers q Deiu assoill qe morust Le 22 Jour d'Octobre, L'an de gre, 1375."

The arms (*Paly of six or, and sable*) on the dexter hand of the figure, and in the form of a banner, are those of the Countess's husband, viz., David Strabolgi or D'Ashels ; underneath these are the arms of De Burgh impaling De Clare, her grandmother ; John de Burgh, son and heir of Richard de Burgh, Earl of Ulster, having been Elizabeth de Clare's first husband, and she being the daughter of Joan of Acre, daughter of Edward I. by Eleanor of Castile.

Elizabeth de Clare married secondly Theobald de Verdun, whose daughter, Elizabeth, married Henry Ferrers,

Isabel de Chilham or De Dover, daughter of Richard de Chileham, a natural son of King John, and adjoining, as it does, the manor of Brabourne, and held for a few generations by its lords, it may not be considered out of place here to draw attention to the brass referred to above, as it existed in A.D. 1628, respecting which a notice (not in all respects correct) appears in the *Archæologia Kantiana*, vol. i., p. 182, etc.,

COUNTESS OF ATHOL'S TOMB, ASHFORD CHURCH, A.D. 1375.

Lord Ferrers of Groby, and were the parents of the Countess of Athol. The royal arms at the top are those of England, suggestive of her near relationship to the reigning monarch at the time of her death, in right of her descent from Joan of Acre. The arms on the banner in her left hand are those of her father, Henry, Lord Ferrers, of Groby (*gules*, 6 *mascles*, *or*).

The matrices (vacant in 1628) probably represented respectively the arms of the Countess's maternal grandfather, Theobald de Verdun, of her grandmother's third husband, Roger D'Amori, and of her own second husband, a De Valoins or a Malmains, both of which families held land in the neighbourhood of Ashford, and one of whom she is said to have married in the interval (viz., five years) between the death of David Strabolgi, her husband, and her own death in 1375. We also append the very beautiful seal of Elizabeth de Clare, Countess of Athol's grandmother, suggestive of her descent from the royal family of Castile, and her alliances with the De Burgh, De Verdun, and D'Amori families. A perusal of Elizabeth de Clare's will (to be found in Sir Harris Nicolas's *Testamenta Vetusta*) will make this theory clear. It may also be as well to observe, that Dering, A.D. 1628, remarks that the head-dress on the brass of the Countess of Athol is suggestive of the arms of Valoins (*or*, *three pales nebulée*, *gules*); but this is an absurdity, the head-dress, or mode of dressing the hair, as represented above, being common, or comparatively so, in the time of Edward III., as a reference to Boutell's or Stothard's "*Brasses*" will at once demonstrate. The very interesting seal of Elizabeth de Clare, suggestive of her alliances and descent, enables us, in some measure, to decipher that of her granddaughter, the Countess of Athol referred to in Elizabeth de Clare's will as "ma fille," a term which, in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, indicated granddaughter as well as daughter.

Elizabeth de Clare's seal (*see* Boutell's *Heraldry*) is circular in form, and contains at the four angles outside the cross, inscribed upon it, the cognizance

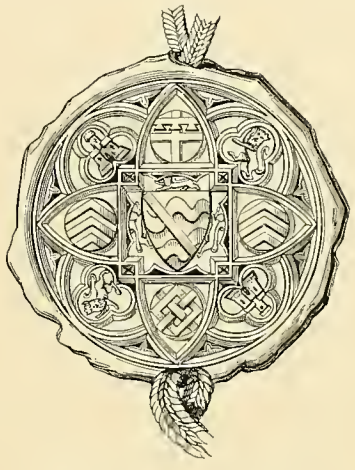
and to append (in form of a note, see p. 75) such remarks on its then condition as our research may warrant. The dotted lines in the subjoined representation suggest the condition of the brass in 1628, but the portions thus indicated no longer exist.

We now, as next in order in descent of the Manor of Brabourne, proceed to offer a few remarks on the family of Halsham, respecting which, in relation to its pedigree, both Hasted and Philipott are somewhat in error. On the death of the Countess of Athol, who probably held the Manor of Brabourne in dower on her husband's decease, her two

---

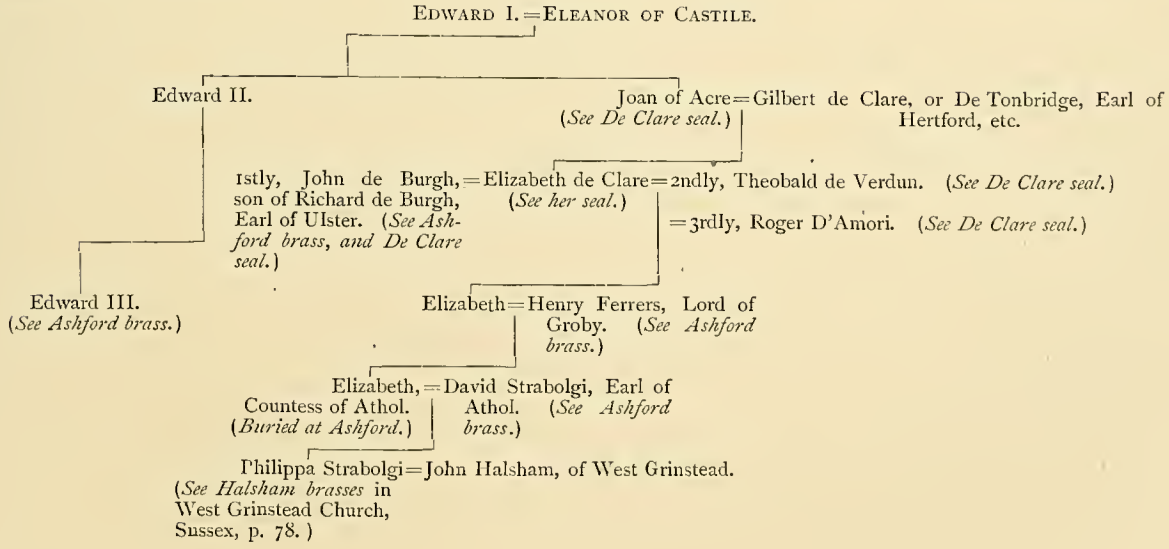
(viz., *the Lion and Castle*) of her mother, Joan of Acre, daughter of Edward I. of England by Eleanor of Castile. At the top of the cross in the first compartment are the arms of Elizabeth's first husband, viz., *a cross labelled with* 3 *points*, being those of John de Burgh, son of Richard de Burgh, Earl of Ulster, *and which appear on the Ashford brass impaling her own arms*, viz., 3 *chevrons*. The centre coat at the intersection of the cross is that of Roger D'Amori, her third husband, who survived her. The arms at foot of cross belong to De Verdun, her second husband, "*Fretty or and gules*," and *are assumed to have occupied a vacant matrix in the Ashford brass*, as suggestive of the Countess of Athol's descent from Elizabeth de Clare and Theobald de Verdun.

The coat inscribed on each arm of the cross is that of De Clare, viz., *the* 3 *chevrons, the same as that impaled with the De Burgh arms on the Ashford brass, as it existed in* 1628, *and suggesting Elizabeth de Clare's alliance with her first husband*, John de Burgh.

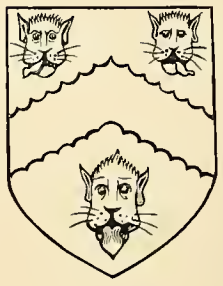


SEAL OF ELIZABETH DE CLARE.

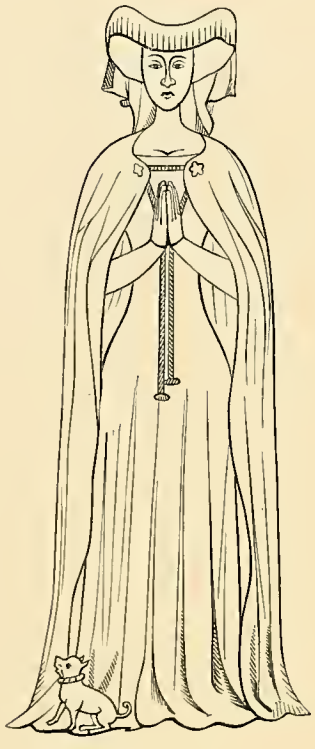
Thus it would appear that the Ashford brass relating to the Countess of Athol had a somewhat similar arrangement to the very beautiful seal of Elizabeth de Clare, her ancestress. The following short Pedigree will explain the genealogical connection referred to on seal and brass :—


Edward I. = Eleanor of Castile.
Edward II.
Joan of Acre (See De Clare seal.) = Gilbert de Clare, or De Tonbridge, Earl of Hertford, etc.
1stly, John de Burgh, son of Richard de Burgh, Earl of Ulster. (See Ashford brass, and De Clare seal.)
Elizabeth de Clare (See her seal.) = 2ndly, Theobald de Verdun. (See De Clare seal.)
= 3rdly, Roger D'Amori. (See De Clare seal.)
Edward III. (See Ashford brass.)
Elizabeth = Henry Ferrers, Lord of Groby. (See Ashford brass.)
Elizabeth, Countess of Athol. (Buried at Ashford.) = David Strabolgi, Earl of Athol. (See Ashford brass.)
Philippa Strabolgi = John Halsham, of West Grinstead.
(See Halsham brasses in West Grinstead Church, Sussex, p. 78.)

daughters by David Strabolgi were found to be his heirs, and thus became entitled to large estates in many counties in England, and of the barony of Mitford Castle in Northumberland, and, *inter alia*, the manor of Brabourne in Kent, as the Scot's Hall records and deeds amply testify. These ladies, Elizabeth and Philippa Strathbolgi, were sufficiently affluent as to attract the notice of "Hotspur," the celebrated Earl of Northumberland, who paid, it is said, four thousand marks to the King to have their wardship, and, according to the practice of the times, married them to his two sons, Sir Thomas Percy (known as "Percy of Athol") being married to Elizabeth, and Sir Ralph to Philippa, the youngest daughter, whose history belongs to the manor of Brabourne.



HALSHAM.



PHILIPPA HALSHAM.

Sir Ralph Percy died without issue, and his widow, in pursuance of a stipulation in the deed of wardship, which provided that in the event of her outliving her first husband, she should marry the man of her choice, made selection for her second husband of John Halsham, son and heir of Robert Halsham (or Aylsham), "Seneschal of the Lord of Norfolk," and Lord of Applesham and West Grinstead in Sussex.[o]

On the division of the large inheritance to which the daughters of the Earl of Athol were entitled, Brabourne passed, with other possessions in Norfolk and elsewhere, to Philippa, who carried them in marriage to John Halsham, her second husband, who survived her, and married secondly Matilda Mauley. A brass (a portion of which now remains in the parish church of West Grinstead, Sussex) formerly recorded in an inscription that she died in the year 1395.[p] She left issue by John Halsham a daughter, Philippa, married to Thomas Falconer, sometime Lord Mayor of London, and two sons, Sir Hugh and Richard.

---

[o] The name of this family was probably derived from Aylesham in Norfolk, in the immediate vicinity of which the Halshams held lands, as appears in the extracts of their wills, leaving property to the sustentation of London Bridge, etc., enrolled in the ancient Court of Hustings in the Guildhall, London.

[p] The brass of Philippa Halsham, or what remains of it, lies in the chapel of St. Mary, in West Grinstead Church. The inscription is nearly gone; but Sir William Burrell's MS. supplies the deficiency:—"Hic jacet Philippa quondam uxor Johannis Halsham Armigeri et una filiarum et heredis Davidis Strathbolgi, comitis de Athell; qui obiit primo die Novembris anno D'ni Milmo CCC° LXXXXV. cuj aïe propicietur Deus."

On Philippa Halsham's death the inheritance of the Manor of Brabourne passed to her son, Sir Hugh Halsham, who was twice married, but who died without issue by either of his wives, leaving Johanna, only daughter of his brother, Richard Halsham, who had pre-deceased him, as his heir.[q]

Sir Hugh Halsham being dead without issue (will dated 7th Feb., 1441), the Manor of Brabourne passed to his niece (the only daughter of his brother Richard), who had married Sir John Lewknor, of Goring and West Dean in Sussex.[r] This lady would

[q] Richard Halsham is erroneously stated by Blomfield, in his *History of Norfolk*, and by the Rev. Edward Turner, of Maresfield, in the *Sussex Archæological Transactions*, to have been a priest. This statement is, however, refuted in a notarial instrument among the Scott records, which expressly avers that Richard Halsham "*nunquam fuit vir religionis*," meaning that he "*never was under vows.*" He may, in early life, have been, as stated by Blomfield, a Celestine novitiate in Paris, but the notarial document above referred to (*see* Index) not only assigns to him as wife a daughter of John Thorlegh, of West Grinstead, but re-marries her, after his death, to a certain Thornbery of Ffreningham (*query*, Farningham, Kent), and is thus conclusive as to the point of Richard Halsham's marriage and issue.

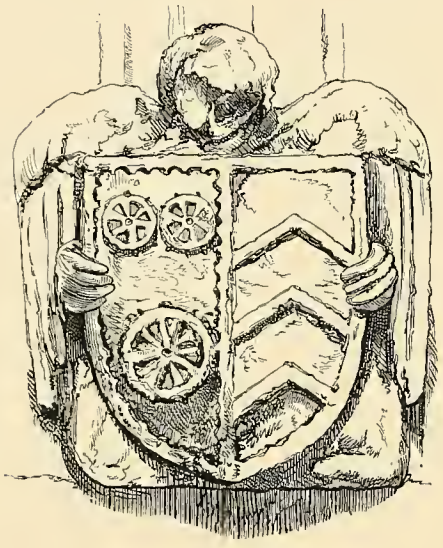
[r] Sir John Lewknor, the subject of our memoir, was a distinguished member of the "ubiquitous" family of Lewknor, who held large possessions in Sussex and Kent from the twelfth to the seventeenth centuries, when their adhesion to Charles I. brought about their ruin and extinction. Indeed, this once celebrated name in the county of Sussex may now be said to be extinct.

Their family mansions in that county were numerous, and included, amongst others, Bodiam Castle, a moated and castellated fortress, now in picturesque ruin, reduced and dismantled (in A.D. 1483) during the War of the Roses; Brambletye House, Goring Place, Dedisham, Frotton, West Dean, Preston in Binderton, and Stansted House in Houghton in Sussex.

As a family, the Lewknors suffered frequently during the Wars of the Roses. The Brambletye Lewknors were Yorkists, whilst Sir Thomas Lewknor, of Bodiam Castle, was Lancastrian. Stansted House, in Houghton, a castel-

SIR HUGH AND LADY HALSHAM, IN WEST GRINSTEAD CHURCH.

appear to have held the manor for a short time after the death of her husband (killed at the Battle of Tewkesbury in 1471), when it passed to her daughter and heir, Sybilla, who carried it in marriage to Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall, K.B., Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Governor of Dover Castle, the ancestor of the family for so many centuries settled at Smeeth and Brabourne, and whose biography will be found in these pages.



SCOTT AND LEWKNOR IMPALED.
(*From tower doorway, Iden Church, Sussex.*)

We now come to a conclusion in our remarks on the once Royal Manor of Brabourne. Its history, since it passed by marriage into the family of Scott, will be found, bit by bit, in succeeding chapters. Its tenure by that family was long and uneventful. It escaped the perils of confiscation during the Wars of the Roses, and in the later, but not less eventful, Civil war during the usurpation of Oliver Cromwell and the Parliament. Questions, it is true, arose at times, as the Scot's Hall deeds and correspondence suggest, on matters relating to free warren, jurisdiction, and manorial rights, as between the lords of the manor on the one hand, and the Prior of the adjoining monastery at Monks Horton, until it was suppressed, on the other. But these incidents will be found in future pages.

It may simply be observed, with reference to the descent of this somewhat distinguished manor, that the Scotts of Scot's Hall, the descendants of Sir William Scott above mentioned, are entitled to quarter the arms, as in blood descent, of its distinguished lords, in right of their derivation from Joan, niece of Aymer de Valence, and daughter of John Comyn of Badenoch (the Red Comyn), in direct descent from many previous lords of Brabourne. The Talbots, Earls of Shrewsbury, to this day being similarly privileged in respect of their inheritance and derivation from Elizabeth, co-heir and sister of Joan, above mentioned.

The Manor of Brabourne was alienated at the latter end of the last century, and in A.D. 1808, the mansion of Scot's Hall, which had previously fallen into decay

---

lated mansion, was demolished by Sir Richard Waller for the Parliament, A D. 1644, with a large force of two thousand men. Christopher Lewknor, a member of this family, Recorder of Chichester, was, after the siege of that city, expelled from the House of Commons, and impeached on account of his Royalist tendencies; and the mansion in which his father resided at West Dean, near Chichester, was plundered and destroyed by the Parliamentarian soldiers, and his lands sold by Parliament in 1651, he himself being confined in Windsor Castle, then in the hands of the Parliament.

(suggestive of the fallen fortunes of the family of Scott, its proprietors), was taken down, the site alone, with the vaults underneath the soil, being now left forcibly to remind those whom it may concern, that with the alienation of their estates their mansion of "Scot's Hall has fallen." "The wind hath passed over it, and it hath gone, and the place thereof shall know it no more." The Right Honourable E. Knatchbull-Hugessen, M.P., a member of the Knatchbull family, of Mersham, now claims proprietorship; and thus the Kentish prophecy, our speculations on the origin of which we may refer to hereafter, has been fulfilled in every line.

The Pedigree on the following page is suggestive of the descent of the Manor of Brabourne, as held in succession by its noble, royal, and distinguished lords :—

SITE OF SCOT'S HALL, 1875.

PEDEGRAIC DESCENT OF THE MANOR OF BRABOURNE.

EDUCED FROM PHILIPOTT, HASTED, HARLEIAN MSS., AND FROM SCOT'S HALL RECORDS AND MSS.

DUNCAN, King of Scots.

Wm. Fitz Duncan = Alicia de Romeli. (Buried at Fountains Abbey, York.)

Cecilia, Lady of Skipton, York. = William le Gros, Earl of Albemarle.

1stly, William de Fortibus, Earl of Albemarle. = Hawise.
2ndly, William de Mandeville, Earl of Essex and of Albemarle (*jure uxoris*). =

HUGH DE MONTFORT, *Domesday owner of Manor.*

Robert de Montfort, Grandson of Hugh. Went into voluntary exile and *Manor resigned into King's hands.*

Adeliza, daughter of Hugh de Montfort, *had Manor of Brabourne by grant of the King.* = Robert (son of Bernard) de Vere, Constable of England. Founder of Monks Horton Priory (Cluniac).

Henry de Essex, Constable of England and Hereditary Standard Bearer, Lord of Raleigh and Rochford in Essex. = Alice.

Manor of Brabourne forfeited to the King.

3rdly, Baldwin de Betun, Earl of Albemarle on the attaint of Henry of Essex, *had the Manor granted to him (probably in right of his wife) by King John.* =

Simon de Montfort, Earl of Leicester, and for a short time Earl of Chester, on death, in A.D. 1244, of John le Scot, Earl of Chester, etc. = 2ndly, Eleanor, *sister of Henry III., and of Joan, Queen of Alexander II., King of Scots, and aunt of Alexander III., King of Scots.*

Killed at Evesham, A.D. 1265; attainted.

Had Manor for her life on death of her first husband, Wm. Mareschal.

William Mareschal, Earl of Pembroke. = Alice (1st wife), only daughter and heir, died A.D. 1212.

Had grant of lands of David, Earl of Huntingdon, father of John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon and Chester.

Died s.p.

Carried Manor of Brabourne in frank marriage to her husband.

On the death or exile of Eleanor, widow of Simon de Montfort, William Mareschal, as well as his four brothers, in succession Earls of Pembroke, having all died without issue, their inheritance became divisible between the five sisters, and on division this Manor was allotted to their sister,

Joan Mareschal, *Lady of Brabourne Manor.* = Warrenne de Monchensie.

William de Monchensie, attainted and *manor forfeited.*

Joan, on attaint of her brother, had Manor granted by Edward I., and was held in capite by knight's service as of the King's Marshalsey. = William de Valence, half brother of Henry III. of England.

Aymer de Valence, died, *s.p.*, A.D. 1323. = 3rdly, Mary de St. Paul had Manor of Fotheringay in Northants, in descent from the Kings of Scotland and from John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon.

First cousin of Edward I. of England; *Lord of Brabourne Manor.*

Anne, *sister and co-heir of Aymer de Valence.* = Hugh Baliol, brother of John the King of Scots, and of Alexander, of Chilham Castle, and William Baliol le Scot.

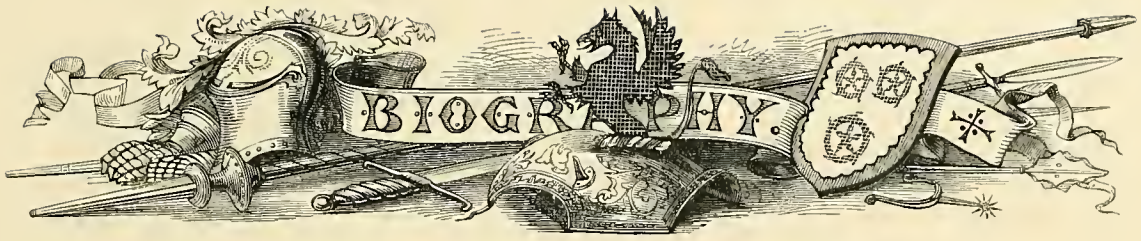
Isabel, *sister and co-heir of Aymer de Valence.* = John de Hastings, Lord of Abergavenny, a claimant in 1292 for the Scottish crown, in right of his descent from Margaret, sister of John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon.

Joan, *sister and co-heir of Aymer de Valence.* = John Comyn of Badenoch and Strathbolgie (*the Red Comyn*), son of John Comyn *the Black* and Mary Baliol.

Regent of Scotland during the interregnum.

Joan. = David Strabolgi, Earl of Athol, Constable of Scotland. *Had Manor of Brabourne in right of his wife.*

For succeeding descents of the Manor of Brabourne, see p. 23.



Chapter VI.

BIOGRAPHY OF THE KENTISH FAMILY OF SCOTT OF SCOT'S HALL.

"And oblivion will steal silently the remnant of their fame."

The Pedigree and Biography of the Scott family.—Introductory Notice.—Remarks on the Baliols resident in Kent.—Scott Biography.—William Baliol le Scot.—Sir William Scot, Lord Chief Justice of England.—Sir Robert Scot, Lieutenant of Tower of London.—Sir John Scot, Comptroller of Household of Edward IV, Lord of Chilham Castle.—Sir William Scotte, of Scot's Hall, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Constable of Dover Castle; the Manor of Brabourne descends by marriage to him.—Scot's Hall.—Sir Edward Lord Poynings, Lord Deputy of Ireland, K.G., Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Constable of Dover Castle.—Sir Edmund Bedingfield, Oxborough Hall, Norfolk, K.B.—Thomas Scott, alias Rotherham, Archbishop of York, accompanies Queen Elizabeth Woodville, in seeking sanctuary at Westminster from the fury of the mob.—Sir John Scott, in the service of the Prince of Castile against the Duke of Gueldres.—Manors of Evegate in Smeeth and Nettlested passed to him by marriage of Anne Pympe.—Families of Pympe-Pashley, Woodville, Gower; Pedigree of Descent of Manor of Evegate.—The Scotts of the Manor and Mansion of Mote in Iden.—The licence of Edward I. to build and fortify the mansion of Mote.—Sir Reginald Scott, Captain of Calais Castle.—Sir William Kempe, of Olantigh, Kent.—Thomas Fogge, Sergeant Porter of Calais, the ancient family of Fogges of Repton, Ashford.—Sir Henry Crispe, of Quex Court, in Thanet.—Reginald Scott, author of the "Discoverie of Witchcraft."—Charles Scott, of Egerton.—His descendants.—Sir Thomas Scott, of Armada fame, Commander of the Kentish Forces.—Sir Edward Scott, K.B.—Sir John Scott.—Implicated with Earl of Essex, and confined in the Tower of London.—Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle.—Anty. St. Leger, of Ulcombe, Kent.—Edward Scott, Esq.—Lord Goring, Commander of Royalist Forces.—His family.—Sir Thomas Scott.—Sir George Carteret, Treasurer of the Household of Charles II.—George Scott.—Edward Scott, and remaining members of the family.

THE previous chapter having brought us down to the period of the possession of the manor of Brabourne in royal and noble descent to the family of Scott, we now proceed to illustrate the history of that sept, so far as relates to their residence in the county of Kent. There can be little doubt that other important families bearing the same name, and, in some form, the same cognizance—viz., the Catherine wheel—as the family of Scott, in Kent, as well as others of that

name, but with different arms, derive their descent from the ancient Kentish stock. These families will be referred to hereafter in due course.

Such as bear the Catherine wheel are of the family of Scott, now of Great Barr, in Staffordshire. Baronets; the Shrewsbury and Betton Scotts, offshoots of the time of Queen Elizabeth from the Kentish stock; the Scotts of Beverley and of Rokeby, Yorkshire, and of Lincolnshire, of whom Sir George Gilbert Scott, Royal Academician, LL.D. and F.S.A., is a descendant; of Dublin and Limerick; and the Scotts of Cleveland, Ohio, in America, descended from the Scotts of Glemsford, Suffolk. Such as bear different arms, but of a similarity of tincture, and alike claim their common origin in the Kentish stock, are the Scotts originally of Stapleford, Tawny, East Tilbury, Chigwell, and elsewhere in Essex, the progenitors of the Scotts Baronets, now of Lytchett Minster in Dorset, and elsewhere. There is ground for believing that the Scotts known as of Congherst, in Hawkhurst, Kent (A.D. 1533), and of Halden, in Kent, their progenitors, were likewise offshoots (time of Henry VI.), from the Scotts of Scot's Hall; the Scotts of Hayes, in Kent, and formerly of Chelsham in Surrey, being originally offshoots of the ancient family of Scotts of Halden. The family of Scott, formerly of Chidingly in Sussex, and now extinct, so far as that county is concerned, were descendants of the *ancient* family of Scott of Scotty's Hall, in Potter Newton, in Yorkshire, which family many centuries ago merged into that of Calverley, now a well-known name and family in Yorkshire. The Scotts of Barnes Hall at Ecclesfield, in Yorkshire, *temp.* Henry VIII. and Elizabeth, were likewise offshoots of the Scot's Hall family, and participated in the division of the inheritance of Thomas Scott or Rotherham, Archbishop of York. This family of Scott of Ecclesfield eventually merged into the families of Watts of Barnes Hall and Horton, Baronets, of Chadderton, Lancashire, the last of whom, Sir Watts Horton, of Chadderton, died A.D. 1811, having married the Lady Harriet Stanley, sister of the then Earl of Derby.

The arms of Richard Scott, of Barnes Hall, viz., *vert, three roebucks trippant argent attired, or,* are almost the same as those of the Rotherhams of Bedfordshire and Essex, viz., *three bucks or roebucks passant, or courant,* and there can be little doubt that on the division of Archbishop Rotherham's possessions amongst his *consanguinei* or kinsmen (the Scotts of Scot's Hall), Richard Scott, of Barnes Hall, Ecclesfield, near Rotherham, Yorkshire, whilst maintaining his own patronymic, assumed arms differing from his family (and which have been ascribed to Archbishop Rotherham or Scott), whilst John Scott, abandoning his name and likewise his family coat, assumed a similarity of arms to his kinsman, Richard Scott, of Barnes Hall—viz., *the three bucks or roebucks*—and took the name of Rotherham, and becoming possessed of the manor of Luton, Bedfordshire, founded a family there, branches of which are still seated at Farley and other localities in Bedfordshire, in Essex, and probably elsewhere. As confirming this view, it may be stated that the manor of Luton passed (*temp.* Edward IV.) from a Scott to John, Lord Wenlock (whose wife

was of the Scot's Hall family) to Thomas Scott, Archbishop of York, and thence to his kinsman, a Scott, who assumed the name of Rotherham, from the place of the Archbishop's preferment, viz., Rotherham in Yorkshire. Proofs or evidences of the foregoing assertions will be referred to under their proper heads as our biography proceeds. The family of Scott, of Aldborough Manor, in Yorkshire, bore the same arms, and evidently derived their descent from Richard Scott, of Barnes Hall, Ecclesfield, of the time of Queen Elizabeth. The pedigrees of such of the name of Scott as bear in any form the Catherine wheel as a charge in their family coat, will be given in the course of this work, whilst the pedigrees of others of that name, but with different arms, claiming a common origin with the Kentish Scotts, will either be given, or reference made to publications in which they are set forth.

Before dismissing our preliminary remarks on the origin in Kent of the family of Scott, we may state that, in common with many families in early English times of Anglo-Saxon origin and descent, they appear never to have exhibited an ambition to be ennobled, or to rise beyond the position of gentlemen commoners ; whilst their status in their native county, and their large possessions there (holding for many generations lands in thirty manors in that county alone), would appear to have justified such an ambition.

It is true of this remark, that in the fourteenth, fifteenth, and sixteenth centuries, which more particularly concern us here, men rose with such marvellous rapidity to the highest positions in the state and amongst their peers, that, whilst fostering their excessive ambition, they gave rise to kingly jealousies fatal to their exalted honours and the retention of their estates. We think it may likewise be stated, that whilst many a gentleman commoner of good estate is now living, a lineal descendant, possessed of the same name and patrimony as his direct ancestor in the perilous times of the Wars of the Roses, there was not in those earlier days a family of royal or noble birth and position but suffered confiscation of its estates or forfeiture of its titles, by reason of attaints fulminated against them by the House of York or Lancaster. We may even go farther, and assert that of all our roll of nobility of this day, there are not above two or three peers whose titles date beyond the fifteenth century without attaint, forfeiture, or change of name, and in direct male descent.

The perils that beset the attainment of exalted honours, and the possession of large estates acquired by attaint, were so fraught with danger to life and reputation in the days of which we are writing, that it is not remarkable to find a family preferring the retention of an ample patrimony free from the perils of the partisan—for such a nobleman was of necessity during the Wars of York and Lancaster—to seeking an exalted and ennobled station, binding it by links of gratitude, interest, or family connection to a king who, in the turn of fortune's wheel, might to-morrow be an exile, or

buried with his crown on the field of battle. Such, in short, was the painful history of the rise and fall of many an ennobled family in early and late feudal times. Such was the fate (*inter alia*) of the Staffords, Earls and Dukes of Buckingham, who, for six successive generations, were either beheaded or perished as partisans on the field of battle; but such was not the fate of the family of Scott, who served their country and county for so many centuries, and who at all times appear to have aspired to be "first in the village rather than second in the state." As giving point to this remark, it may be stated here, as a matter of family tradition, that when Thomas Sackville, first Earl of Dorset, suggested to Queen Elizabeth that his brother-in-law, Sir Thomas Scott, for services rendered to his country as Commander of the Kentish forces on the approach of the Spanish Armada, should be ennobled, the monarch, whilst declining the suggestion, remarked, with characteristic vehemence, that "Sir Thomas Scott already possessed more influence in Kent than majesty itself." This jealous rejoinder was probably induced by the fact that at that time Sir Thomas was the largest landowner in Kent, being possessed of upwards of thirty, or parts of thirty, manors in that county alone, besides other lands in Sussex and Essex, whilst his influence in the county was so great it is recorded that, on the receipt of the orders of the Lords of the Council on the approach of the Spanish Armada on the Wednesday, he the next day assembled four thousand men fully equipped and armed on Northbourne Downs. Amongst the Scott letters and correspondence will be found a letter under date A.D. 1572, from Robert Dudley, the celebrated Earl of Leicester (a kinsman and connection of Sir Thomas Scott), offering his good services with the Queen in the way of any request he, Sir Thomas Scott, might at any time make—an offer of which, it would appear, he never took advantage.

Recurring finally to the status of the family of the Kentish Scotts (whose biography we shortly proceed to consider more in detail), and in connection with the statement just made, that they never appear to have shown any ambition to be ennobled, we would observe that, nevertheless, during a period of two centuries, and notably so during the Wars of the Roses and the dynasty of the Tudors, they appear to have possessed the confidence of many sovereigns at home and abroad, and to have held some of the highest offices in the state and in their native county, which they frequently represented in Parliament. In the Church, on the Bench, and in Arms, the family is represented by an Archbishop, a Lord Chief Justice of England, two Lord Wardens of the Cinque Ports and Governors of Dover Castle, and by a Commander of the Kentish forces in Armada times; whilst other and not less distinguished members have served, generation after generation, offices of high trust, as ambassadors, or about the person of the monarch, until, in later and more recent times, we find them, when "oblivion" had well nigh "stolen silently the remnant of their fame," their broad acres reduced by alienation, and their mansion in decay, as equerries or in other capacities in attendance on their sovereign. The family of Scott were during the Wars of the Roses (probably by family connection with Elizabeth Woodville, Queen of Edward IV.,

by their descent from Sir Richard Woodville, of the Mote in Maidstone, her grandfather) eminently Yorkists, and appear to have avoided, with one exception, the confiscations and attainders of that troubled period. They were likewise, in later times (also with one exception), royalist in their tendencies, and would seem, as a family, to have suffered in purse, if not in person, in consequence. Scot's Hall was twice searched, by orders of Parliament, for arms, but otherwise appears to have escaped molestation, if the fine collection of family portraits, dating from the time of Henry VII., at that time at Scot's Hall, a portion of which have been preserved to this day, may be considered as evidence of that fact.

We now proceed to the personal biography of the members of the family, who, as Hasted remarks, lived at Scot's Hall "in honour and repute" for so many centuries, and refer our readers to the end of this chapter for their pedigree.

(No. 1 in Pedigree.) **William Baliol,** surnamed LE SCOT.

LE SCOT.

(Youngest surviving brother of John Baliol, sometime King of Scotland, and of Alexander Baliol, of Chilham Castle, Kent.)

ARMS.—*Argent, three Catherine wheels, sable, a bordure gules* (Hasted).

A.D. 1296-7. Quitted Berwick-on-Tweed when that town was taken by assault by Edward I. of England.

A.D. 1303. William Baliol, William de Lamberton, Bishop of St. Andrews, and James, the Lord Steward of Scotland, were sent as Ambassadors to France on behalf of John Baliol, with plenipotentiary powers to treat of peace with Edward I. The truce with John Baliol was in consequence prolonged for a short period, but was afterwards broken, and the English forces routed by John Comyn of Badenoch (*the Red Comyn*) and Sir Simon Fraser. (Abercrombie's *Martial Achievements of the Scottish Nation.*)

Circa 1304. William Baliol and John Comyn of Badenoch (*the Red Comyn*), formerly Guardian of the kingdom of Scotland, having surrendered to the peace of the kingdom of England, on the faith of the covenants granted to them, were appointed to pay four years' value of their lands and rents, but were pardoned as regards their exile. (Abercrombie.)

Sir William Baliol "le Scot" Chivaler was the younger brother of Alexander Baliol, sometime Chamberlain of Scotland, and Lord of Chilham Castle, Kent, who was imprisoned with his brother

John, the unfortunate King of Scotland, in the Tower of London, A.D. 1297-8, in which fortress tradition asserts that William Baliol "le Scot" was likewise confined.[a]

In the Scottish Records lately published by the Rev. Joseph Stevenson, William Baliol appears to have acted as Clerk to the Chancery to Alexander, Chamberlain of Scotland, styled "his brother." He does not appear to have been a soldier, and this may account for his freedom from exile and the restitution by Edward I. of his estates, on his coming to the peace of that king and residing south of the Trent, probably in Brabourne, the manor of which, about A.D. 1330, passed to his grand-niece, Joan Comyn, daughter of John Comyn *the Red*, and grand-daughter of Mary Baliol (William Baliol's sister) and John Comyn, known as the *Black Comyn*. Or he may have resided at Chilham Castle, Kent (a large and extensive lordship possessing at that time eighteen sub-manors, and then in possession of his brother Alexander),[b] within a few miles of Brabourne, afterwards the residential patrimony of the posterity of William Baliol le Scot.

---

[a] The following extract taken from a Baronetage published upwards of sixty years ago would appear to confirm the tradition in the family of the Kentish Scotts, relating to the imprisonment of William Baliol "le Scot" in the Tower of London :—"*The ancient family of Scott* (*Great Barr, Staffordshire*) *has been seated at Great Barr in Stafford ever since the reign of Edward I. In* 1296 *the ancestor of the present Baronet—who was in the suite of John Baliol, the King of Scotland when that monarch was detained a prisoner in London, and forbidden, with the rest of his kinsmen, from passing to the north of the river Trent under pain of death—fixed himself as near the stream as the thick forest of Cannock would then allow. From that time to the present the family have lived in a substantial and honourable independence.*"

SCOTT OF GREAT BARR, BARTS.

The arms, as at present borne by the family of Scott of Great Barr, were granted to Thomas Scott in 1663, and are—"*Argent on a fess, gules cotized azure, three lambs between three Catherine wheels, sable,*"—evidently derived from the arms assigned to William Baliol le Scot, the founder of the Kentish family of Scot's Hall.

[b] The connection of William Baliol le Scot with his brother Alexander, Baron Baliol, of Chilham Castle, Kent, is so intimate that it becomes a necessity to make a few observations on the disputed points as to their parentage. Doubt has been thrown on the parentage of Alexander Baliol, of Cavers and of Chilham, Kent, principally because it would thus appear that two brothers of the same parents of the same name were co-existent; but if such an hypothesis was the only objection to this difficulty, it would disappear when it is stated that such an occurrence was by no means uncommon at the period of which we are writing, as an instance we would quote the case of Sayer de Quincy, Earl of Winchester, who had two sons of the name of Robert living at the same time, and other examples could be quoted as not unusual in feudal times. Alexander of Chilham, Kent, was, early in life, known as Alexander Baliol of Cavers, doubtless to distinguish him from his brother, Alexander Baliol, who died in 1279, and is said to have married Eleanor de Genivre, or Genever, or Geneville, a daughter of Peter de Geneville, a blood relation of Queen Eleanor of Provence. The name of "Alexander" in the Baliol family would appear to have been adopted in remembrance and *as the direct heirs, on the failure of issue of Margaret le Scot, the Maid of Norway, of Alexander III., King of Scots*, the patrimony of the Isle of Man and the Lordship of the Isles descending to the Baliols and the Athols direct from this king. As suggestive of this statement, it may be said that on the tomb of the Countess of Athol, wife of Alexander Baliol, of Chilham, Kent, in the crypt of Canterbury Cathedral, the peculiar arms of the Isle of Man formerly existed on the side panels.

It may also be said that the name of "William" was probably in remembrance of the heirship of the Baliols from William the Lion, King of Scots, brother of Alexander III. above mentioned, two monarchs always held in affectionate remembrance by the Scotch people before the breaking out of the War of Independence, just in the same manner as the name of Robert was afterwards popular with that superstitious people, who, in A.D. 1390, when a Bruce had been christened by the (to them) unfortunate name of John (considered unlucky from King John of England, the unfortunate King of that name of France, and John Baliol of Scotland), insisted that he should be designated by

The authority adduced (*inter alia*) for making Sir William Baliol "le Scot" the younger brother of the King of Scotland is the *Add. MSS. Brit. Museum*, 5520, *fol.* 188, *which purports to be "The true descent and lineage of the ancient and knightly family of Scot, descended from the noble family of Baliol, alias le Scot, of the kingdom of Scotland."*

---

the name of Robert, after their so-called hero, Robert Bruce, and John was crowned as Robert accordingly.—(Buchanan, *Hist. Scotland.*)

However, be the derivation and circumstances attending the duplicate names of Alexander as brothers in one family what they may, it is clear that by far the greater majority of genealogists have given an unhesitating opinion that Alexander, Baron Baliol, of Chilham, Kent, was brother of John Baliol, the unfortunate King of Scotland, before his excommunication and exile, Baron Baliol in the English peerage. Dugdale, Burke, Glover, Boys (in *Patrician*), Weever, Morant, Chauncy, Hasted, and Philipott, and many others, support this view; and, lastly, Sir Harris Nicolas, in his "*Roll of Carlaverock*," a comparatively recent publication, in a long and exhaustive biography strongly asserts that there were two Alexanders—the *elder* of whom he describes from authority as "Alexander filius Johannes de Balliol," in contradistinction to Alexander de Cavers, afterwards known as of Chilham, "*sons*" of John Baliol of Barnard Castle, founder of Balliol College, and Devorgilda, niece and one of the heiresses of John le Scot, Earl of Huntingdon and Chester, by Margaret "le Scot," daughter and co-heiress of David of Huntingdon, brother of William the Lion and of Alexander III., King of Scots.

The biography of Alexander Baliol, of Chilham, Kent, is so exhaustively set out in Nicolas' "*Roll of Carlaverock*," that it will not be necessary to go further into particulars here, except briefly to state his close connection in Kent, locally and traditionally, with Hugh de Baliol (his brother), son-in-law of William de Valence, Lord of Brabourne Manor, and with Mary Baliol (wife of John Comyn of Badenoch), his sister, whose granddaughter, Joan, was in her own right Lady of Brabourne Manor; and, lastly, that the settlement at that time (commencement of the fourteenth century) in Brabourne of the early members of the family of le Scot (descendants of William Baliol "le Scot," his undoubted brother), all point conclusively to his being the immediate kinsman of John Baliol, the King of Scotland, the brother of Hugh and Mary Baliol. On no other theory can one account for the connection of Alexander Baliol, and William Baliol's descendants, with the Manor of Brabourne, except their close relationship to Hugh and Mary Baliol and their connection with the De Valences, lords of that manor. Alexander Baliol is said to have died about A.D. 1309, and to have been buried in the Priory of Binham in Essex; he was likewise a benefactor to the Clugniac Priory of Castle Acre in Norfolk.

SEAL OF ALEXANDER BALIOL,
(*of Chilham Castle, Kent*).

Referring to the family of Scott in connection with the Baliols, Philipott, Kentish historian A.D. 1600, states as follows:—"Smeeth, in the Hundred of Bircholt, hath in the limits of it Scot's Hall, which is now, and hath been for divers descents, the inheritance of eminent gentlemen of that surname, whom I dare aver upon probable grounds were originally called Baliol. William Baliol, second brother to Alexander Baliol (of Chilham Castle), frequently writ his name William de Baliol le Scot, and it is probable that upon the tragedy of John, Earl of Athol, who was made prisoner by Edward I. and barbarously executed in 1307 (whilst he endeavoured, more nobly than successfully, to defend the gasping liberty of Scotland against the eruptions of that prince), this family, to decline the fury of that monarch, who was a man of violent passions, altered the name of Baliol to that of their extraction and country [?], and assumed for the future the name of *Scot*. That the surname of this family was originally *Baliol*, I further on these reasons assert: First, the ancient arms of Balliol College, in Oxford, which was founded by John Baliol and dedicated to St. Katharine, was a Catherine wheel, being still part of the paternal coat of this family. Secondly, David de Strabolgie, who was son and heir to the unfortunate Earl abovesaid, astonished with an example of so much terror, altered his name from Baliol to Strabolgie, which was a signory which accrued to him in right of his wife, who was daughter and heir of John Comin, Earl of Badenoch and Strabolgie, and by this name King Edward II., omitting that of Baliol, restored Chilham Castle to

Weever (A.D. 1631) states that "Sir William Balioyle," knight, was buried in the monastery of Whitefriars Observants in the City of Canterbury. He is supposed to have died *circa* A.D. 1313. He held lands in the Rape of Hastings of the Earl of Eu, on the service of finding for him one robe yearly.

(No. 2 in Ped.) **John le Scot** (son and heir). Died *circa* 1348. (Boys, in *Patrician.*)

(No. 3 in Ped.) **Sir William Scot** (son of John).[e]

Knighted 10th Edward III., A.D. 1337 (*Holinshed*) on the creation of the King's son Earl of Chester and Duke of Cornwall.

Serjeant-at-law A.D. 1335. Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, 8th January, 1341. Lord Chief Justice Common Pleas, 27th April, 1342, to 9th May, 1343. (*Beatson*, vol. ii., p. 287.)

Lord Chief Justice and Knight Marshal of England, before 26th Nov., 1347. (Authorities,—*Hasted*; *Foss's Judges*; *Dugdale's Judiciales Origines, etc.*)

He resided at Brabourne, and was buried in the church there, in which, in 1631, according to *Weever*, a memorial of him, under date of A.D 1350, then existed. (*See Brabourne Church*, ch. v. p. 51.)

---

him for life in the fifteenth year of his reign. Thirdly, the Earls of Buccleuch and the Barons of Burley in Scotland, who derive themselves originally from Baliol, are known at this instant by no other surname but Scott, and bear, with some inconsiderable difference, those very arms which are the present coat of the family of Scot's Hall"—*Philipott's Villare Cantianum*, p. 313.

Hasted, the more recent historian of Kent, A.D. 1780 (vol. viii., p. 5), thus refers to the connection of William Baliol le Scot with the Scot's Hall family:—"The manor of Hall in Smeeth, with the mansion of it, from its having been for so many descents the inheritance and residence of the eminent and knightly family of Scott, has for a great length of time obtained the name of Scot's Hall. Indeed, there are no earlier owners of it mentioned in any of our ancient records. The original name of this family, whose possessions afterwards extended widely over the county, appears by papers in possession of the family to have been *Baliol*. William Baliol, younger brother of Alexander Baliol, and brother of John Baliol, King of Scotland, frequently wrote his name William Baliol *le Scot*; and it is further probable after the contest between Edward I. and his brother John for the sovereignty of that kingdom, which ended in the latter's overthrow, that William Baliol above mentioned, to avoid the future anger of that prince, so highly incensed against his family, altered his name and retained that of Scot only. . . . . The family of Scot, now spelt Scott, was originally seated at Brabourne, the church of which has continued the place of their burials to the present time," etc., etc.

[e] "Richard Dering, brother of Sir Robert Dering (of Surrenden Dering, Kent), who was one of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, about the eighth year of Edward II. passed the manor of Heyton, in Smeeth and Stanford, to William Scot, of Smeeth, from whom by an uninterrupted and unbroken line of many generations was the possession carried down to those Scots who were proprietors of it in that age wherein our grandfathers flourished, and then it was demised by sale to Smyth, which family it still confesses for possessors."—*Philipott's Villare Cantianum*, p. 303.

[f] According to Morant, in his *History of Essex*, the family of Scott, late of Woolstan Hall in Chigwell, and formerly of Stapleford Tawney in that county (now represented by the Scotts, Baronets of Lytchet Minster in Dor-

(No. 4 in Ped.) **Michael Scot** (son and heir). Died *circa* 1361. (Boys, in *Patrician.*)

A.D. 1332. It was most probably this Michael Scot, who (together with his kinsman, David de Strabolgie, Earl of Athol, Governor of Scotland on behalf of Edward III.) was, in A.D. 1332, at the battle of Dupplyn, when Edward Baliol (his cousin), King of Scotland, and Henry de Beaumont, with their Scotch and English adherents, defeated Randal Earl of Murray, Murdoch Earl of Menteith, and Robert Bruce and others. Michael Scot,[e] with David de Græme[f] and other noblemen of Scotland, came, in 1332, to the peace at Berwick of Edward Baliol, who was shortly afterwards crowned at Scone. Michael was afterwards taken prisoner at the battle of Dursene with others, including Edward Baliol; and probably on the flight of that king came southwards to England, all chance of recovering the lost possessions of his ancestors in Scotland being at an end; Robert Bruce, the open enemy of the Baliols, the Comyns, and the Strathbolgies, being then securely seated on the throne of Scotland.

(No. 5 in Ped.) **Emma**, daughter of . . . . . wife to Michael Scot.

(No. 6 in Ped.) **William Scot**, son and heir of Michael Scot.

Buried at Brabourne. (*Hasted.*)

(No. 7 in Ped.) **Matilda**, or **Mascella**, daughter of . . . . . wife to William Scot, of Brabourne.

---

setshire), claim to be descended from Sir William Scott (the subject of our memoir), and to be in the possession of his silver drinking-cup. Be this as it may, it nevertheless appears, from the perusal of the *Scot's Hall Records*, that their claim is well founded, inasmuch as the Manors of East Tilbury, of Stanford-le-Hope, and Corringham, lands in Essex which in early times were in the possession of the members of the Scot's Hall family, passed in the fifteenth or sixteenth centuries to the Scotts of Woolstan, Chigwell, and Stapleford, or some member of that family. In addition to which the manor of Chigwell in Essex passed to the heirs of Richard Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel, by his first wife, a daughter of Hugh le Despencer the younger, precisely as the manor of Evegate in Smeeth passed by blood descent to the Scotts of Scot's Hall through the De Warrens and Fitzalans. The Scotts of Smeeth, and of Chigwell, respectively being eventually the representatives of Richard Fitzalan above mentioned.

SCOTT OF CHIGWELL AND STAPLEFORD, ESSEX.

[e] Michael Scot of Balwearie (Sir Walter Scott's "Wizard") was at this time (A.D. 1332) dead, as was likewise Sir Michael Scot, who, according to Rymer, was sent, together with Alexander Baliol, as an ambassador, in 1290, on behalf of Edward I. of England, to bring from Norway Margaret, the infant Queen of Scots, betrothed to Edward of Carnarvon, Prince of Wales.

[f] The Grahams are frequently, at the commencement of the fourteenth century, found associated with Alexander and William Baliol: thus, Alexander and William Baliol appear as witnesses to a deed of grant (without date, but probably 1307-8) by John de Graham, knt., son and heir of Sir Nicholas Graham, of lands in Eskdale to the monks of Melrose.—*Records of Montrose Charter Chest; Appendix to Second Report of Historical Documents Commission.* We likewise find William de Baliol and William de Graham witnesses of a charter of a grant of land in Beeth, Roxburghshire, by Adam de Polesworth. The David Graham above mentioned was probably a kinsman of these of his name associated with the two Baliols, and not improbably a kinsman of Edward Baliol.

(No. 8 in Ped.) **Alice,** daughter of Michael Scot.

(No. 9 in Ped.) **John Scot,** of Brabourne, son and heir of William Scot.

A.D. 1384. Anno 7 Richard II., Member of Parliament for Hythe, Kent.
A.D. 1399 to 1413, Lieutenant of Dover Castle, *temp.* Henry IV. (*Hasted.*)

Buried at Brabourne about A.D. 1413. (Boys, in *Patrician.*)

(No. 10 in Ped.)

. . . . . **De Cumbe,** heiress of Manor of Cumbe in Brabourne,[g] wife to John Scot of Brabourne.

ARMS.—*Sable, three lions passant, guardant in pale gules* (Hasted).

This lady is stated by Philipott to have been the daughter of William de Cumbe, who died in the reign of Richard II., without male issue.

(No. 11 in Ped.) **William Scotte,** eldest son and heir of John Scot.

Described as of Brabourne, A.D. 1413, and as of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, A.D. 1429, where he held his shrievalty.

---

[g] The manor of Cumbe lies within and to the north-east of the parish of Brabourne, but is not, like the manor of Brabourne, within the Barony or Hundred of Bircholt (styled a neutral Barony, from its exemption from the jurisdiction of any Lathe), but is a part of the ancient royal manor of Wye, given by William the Conqueror to the Abbey of Battle in Sussex, in gratitude for the victory gained over the Saxons at the battle of Hastings.

"The manor of Brabourne Combe about the year A.D. 990 belonged to Edward de Cumbe, who by his last will bequeathed the land of Cumbe to St. Augustine's Monastery, Canterbury, his son Leofric being a monk there. At the Domesday survey it was part of the possessions of Odo, Bishop of Baieux, brother to William the Conqueror; and on his disgrace and forfeiture of his estates we again find this manor in the possession of the family of De Cumbe, of whom Richard de Cumbe and Simon his son served the office of Sheriff of Kent, as assistants of John de Northwood, in the 20th year of Edward I., A.D. 1292. At length this manor descended to a female heir of this family, who carried it in marriage to John Scot of Brabourne about the year A.D. 1380, and in whose descendants it continued until George Scott, of Scot's Hall, procured an Act of Parliament, 10th & 11th William and Mary, to vest this manor and other estates in the hands of trustees, for the payment of his debts, in pursuance of which the manor of Combe was sometime afterwards sold to Sir Brook Brydges, of Goodnestone, Bart."—*Hasted,* vol. iii., p. 301.

Cal. Inq. Post Mortem, vol. i., p. 9.

Anno 36 Henry III. (A.D. 1252). Jo^hes fil Roberti de Cumbe, Cumbe ter, etc. Kanc . . .

Isabella and Christiana de Cumbe de Brabourne are mentioned in the Leger Book of Davington Priory as benefactors to it.

"The last of this name was William de Cumbe, who dying without issue male in the reign of Richard II., his sole inheritrix carried the manor of Cumbe in marriage to John Scot of Scot's Hall."—*Philipott*, p. 70.

This family of De Cumbe in Kent is supposed to be identical with the family of that name holding lands in Cumbes, Appelsham, Sussex, and in a manor of that name in Norfolk.

Sheriff of Kent 1st Henry V., A.D. 1413, and 7th Henry VI., A.D. 1429. Knight of the Shire, A.D. 1431. (*9th Parliament of Henry VI. at Westminster.*)

Sword-bearer to King Henry V., and probably at Agincourt. (*The Guide*, published 1794.)

Buried in Brabourne Church in the south chancel of the Scott Chapel (dedicated to the Holy Trinity), of which he may be considered as the founder.

The traditional founder's tomb is in the south wall of the chapel, and a memorial brass is now extant, a description of which is given in a previous chapter on the church at Brabourne. (*See* p. 43.)

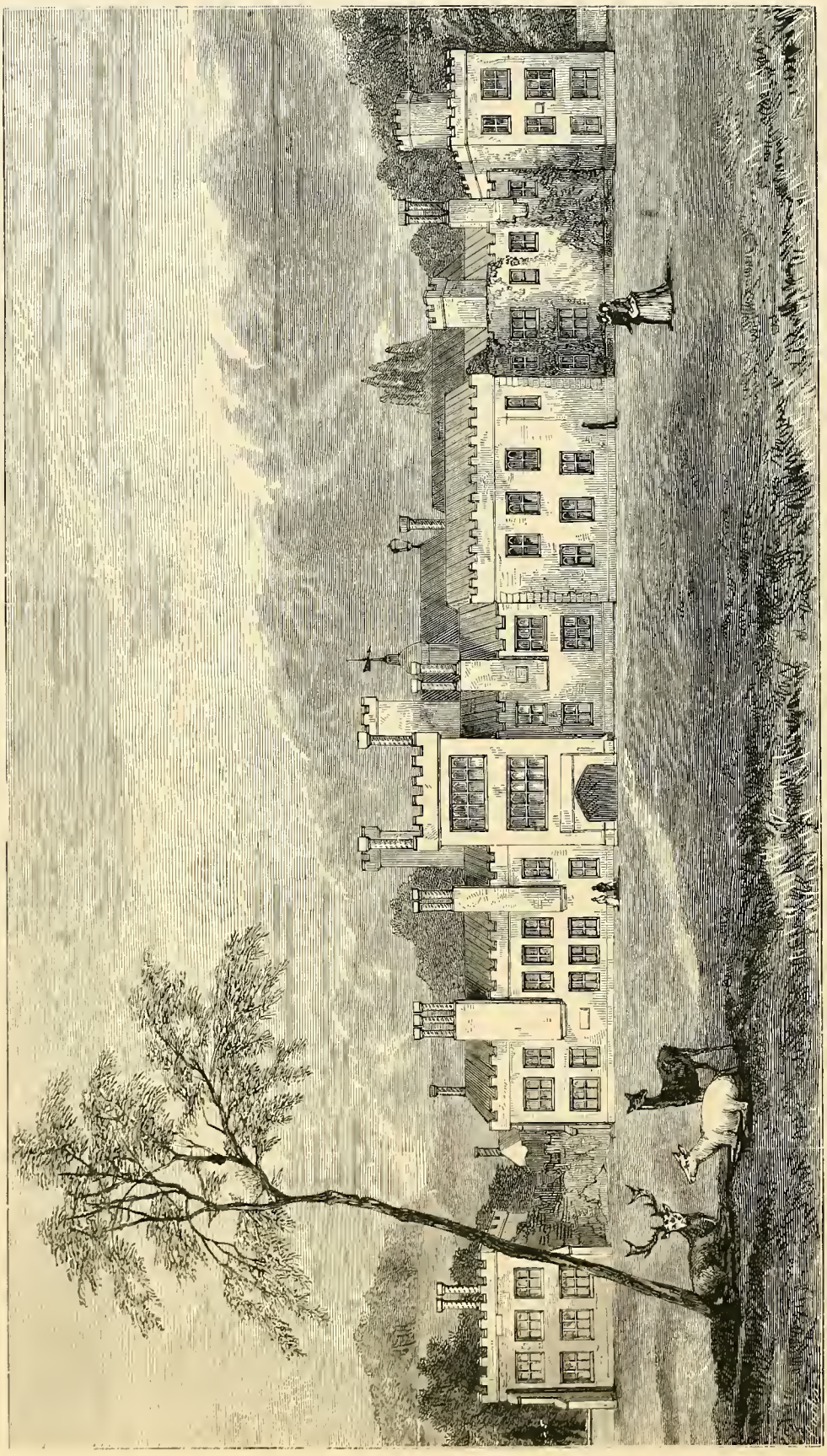
Scot's Hall.

The previous members of the Scott family mentioned in our Biography are traditionally asserted to have resided at the mansion (the site of which only now is known) just outside the churchyard of Brabourne southwards, and which the Countess of Pembroke (Mary de St. Paul, wife of Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke) is said likewise to have occasionally made her residence. On this spot formerly existed the Park of Brabourne, enclosed as such, two centuries or more before the Norman Conquest, and about the middle of the ninth century in the possession of the Saxon Lady Salburga, "*Domina de Breburne.*" The mansion was apparently moated,[h] evidences of which still remain; but the mansion was probably, about the year A.D. 1420, in a ruinous condition, as no tradition exists of its having been inhabited since the removal from it of the family of Scot about that time to their new-built mansion of Scot's Hall in Smeeth, their adjacent manor. The ancient site of the mansion at Brabourne, by whatever name known, may be traced during the continuance of dry weather in summer, and the foundation of buildings in the immediate neighbourhood exhibit the large ashlar and incised stone of which in all probability it was constructed Extensive as the view from this site is in every direction (embracing a radius of about twelve miles north and south, and about

---

[h] Amongst the *Scot Records* printed in this work will be found a fragment of an interesting character, purporting to be a claim made, *circa* A.D. 1520, by the then Prior of Horton concerning certain rights or proprietorship to a pond near the church of Brabourne, dedicated to St. Syriack (an early Romano-Christian saint who assisted St. Helena, the mother of Constantine, to find the Holy Rood, and suffered martyrdom under the Emperor Julian), which claim was denied by Sir William Scot, the Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, who asserted that the pond in question had from time immemorial been considered as within the bounds of his manor, and as such had been in the possession of his family from the time of Peter de Cumbe, his ancestor; and he further stated that in the pond in question was, and always had been, maintained a "cucking-stole" (or ducking-stole for scolds) as a part of the droits or customs appurtenant to the manor.

This circumstance is mentioned here as identifying a field known as the "Lake," adjacent to the residence that formerly existed close to the church at Brabourne. We may likewise dilate on the probable antiquity of site both of church and park, by reason of the existence in the immediate neighbourhood of Brabourne Church in former times,—*firstly*, of the yew tree, described by Evelyn in his *Diary*, and his *Silva*, *circa* A.D. 1650, as in that day being, twenty feet from the ground, of a circumference of fifty-eight feet, and supposed to be of the age of three thousand years or more, and probably the oldest tree in Britain; *secondly*, of the existence in early times, as recently discovered, of a Romano-British, or pre-Roman burial ground, just outside the churchyard northwards; and, *lastly*, the fact which the *Scot Records* reveal of the existence of a pond—probably in connection with the broad-bourne (Brabourne) which skirts the churchyard eastward—dedicated to a Romano-Christian saint. As regards the park of Brabourne and the mansion in connection with it, in a state of ruin when Scot's Hall was built or rebuilt in A.D. 1429, it may further be stated that the existence of the park is mentioned in the very early Saxon will of date of 864, of "Salburga Domina de Breburne," mentioned by Philipott in A.D. 1680. Few wills, if any, relating to land out of the county of Kent being now in existence of so very early a date.



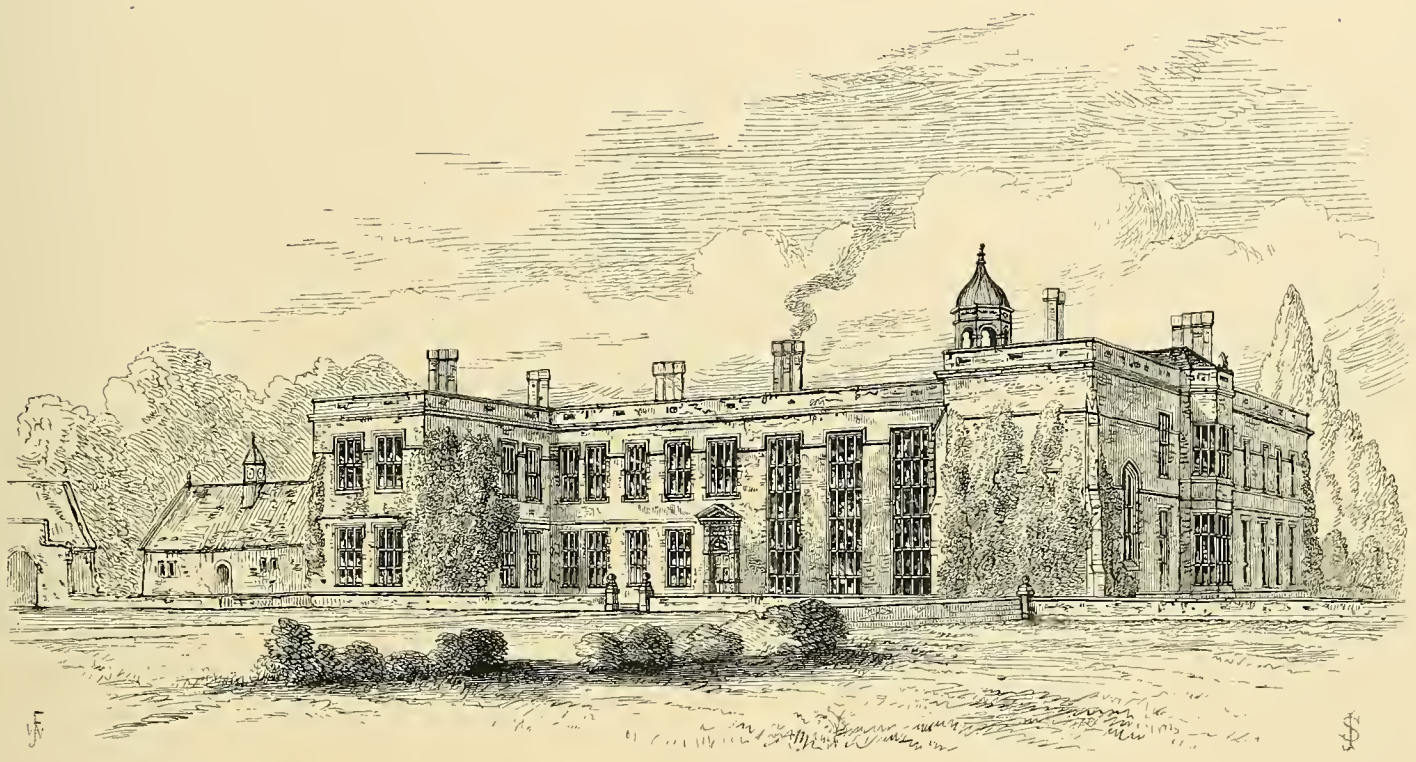
SECOND SCOT'S HALL,

AS REBUILT CIRCA A.D. 1491, FROM AN OLD DRAWING IN THE POSSESSION OF MRS. THOMAS FAIRFAX BEST.

eight miles east and west), yet it is traditionally asserted that in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries the possessions of the family of Scot extended to the horizon in all directions, the limited possessions of the monks of Horton to their Priory adjacent alone excepted.

The Mansion of Scot's Hall,

formerly situate in the Manor of Hall or Halle appendant to it in Smeeth (East Kent), was so named from the family of Scot, the first known occupants of the original Hall, which probably existed



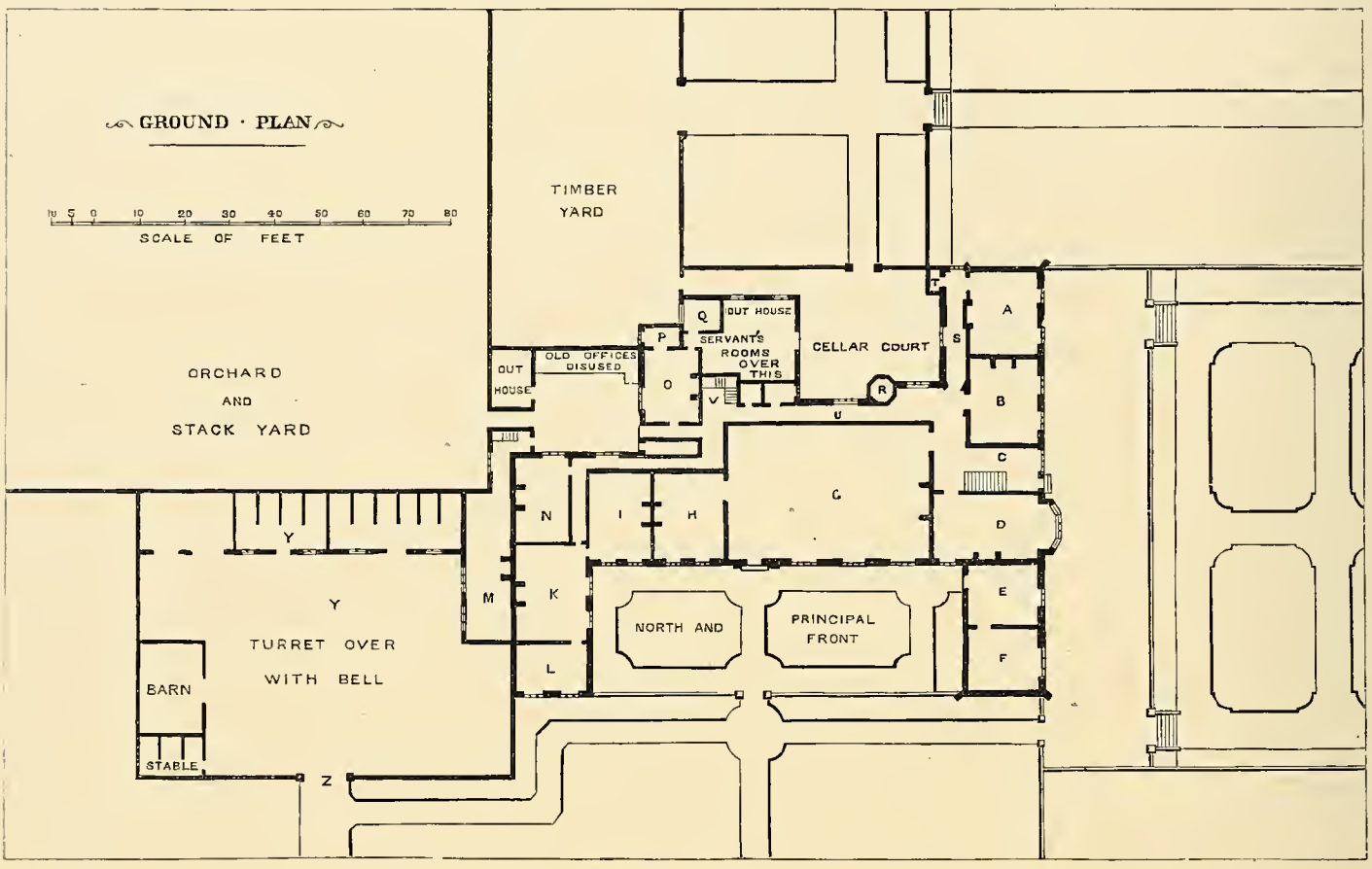
THIRD SCOT'S HALL,

AS REBUILT, NEW FRONT, CIRCA A.D. 1634, FROM A DRAWING IN POSSESSION OF CAPT. HENRY SCOTT, R.N.

here at this date—A.D. 1429. Indeed, no earlier occupiers are mentioned by the Kentish historians Hasted, Kilburne, or Philipott, or in the *Scott Records.* No tradition exists as to the style of building which William Scott (the subject of our memoir) occupied whilst serving the office of Sheriff (7th Henry VI., A.D. 1429). It was probably an ancient mansion, as about the year 1491 it was rebuilt, or very much enlarged, by Sir William Scott (his grandson), the old Hall then being considered as ruinous.

The *second* Scot's Hall (A.D. 1491), supposed to have faced the south-east, of which we give an illustration, was very similar in character to Penshurst, built about the same period. At this time it must have been one of the most magnificent manorial residences in the county, but by no means

disproportioned to the social position of a man who was then (though a commoner) serving the highly important office of Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports [i] and Governor of Dover Castle, a fortress at that time more important than the Tower of London.

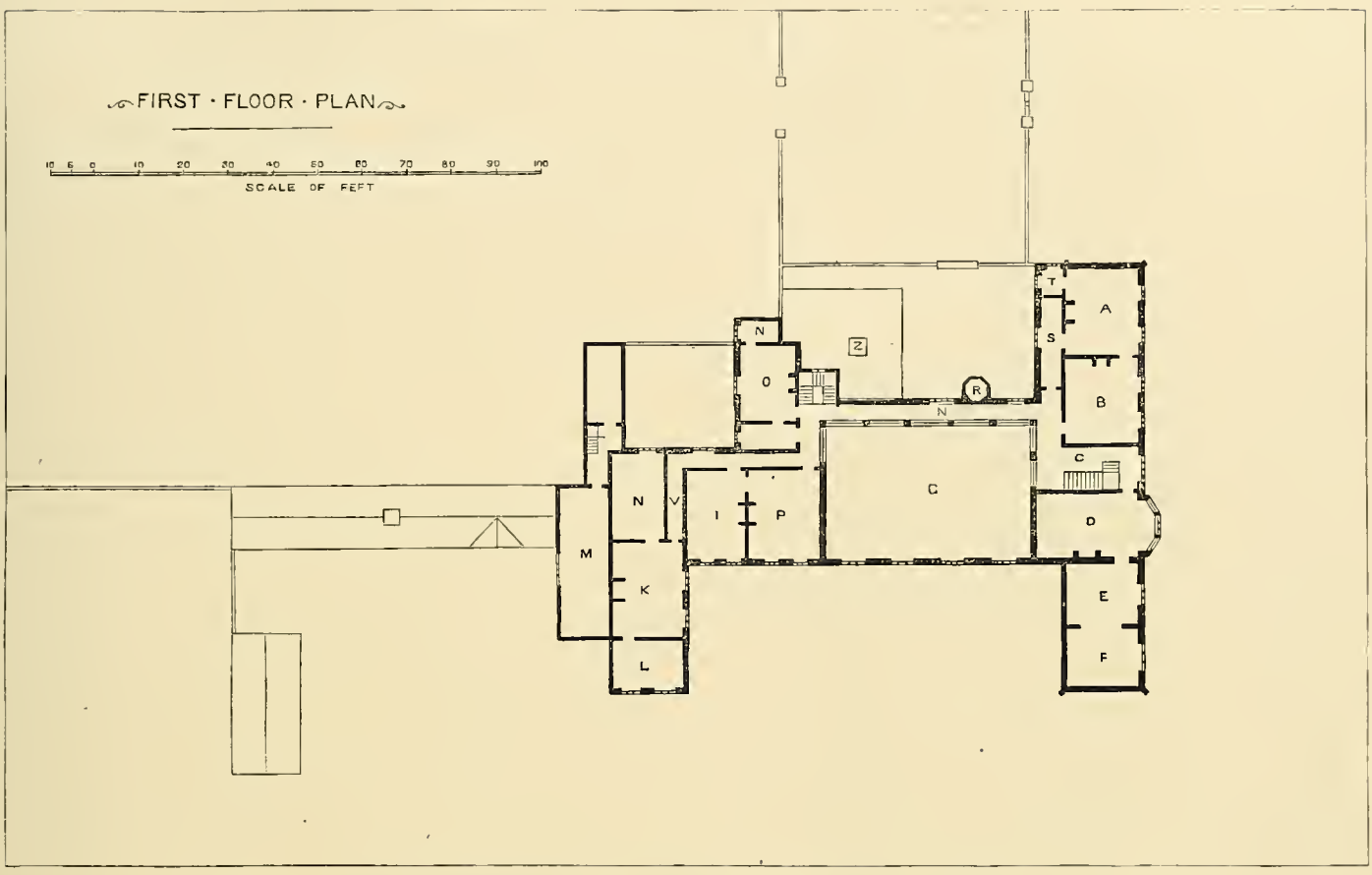


GROUND PLAN OF THE THIRD SCOT'S HALL, TEMP. CHARLES I.

A—*Library.*
B—*Drawing-room.*
C—*Great Staircase.*
D—*Garden Parlour.*
E—*Chapel Room.*
F—*Chapel.*
G—*Hall (forty-eight feet by thirty.)*
H—*Little Drawing-room.*
I—*Little Parlour.*
K—*Store Room.*
L—*Closet.*
M—*Washhouse.*
N—*Servants' Hall.*
O—*Kitchen.*
P—*Back Kitchen.*
Q—*Store Room.*
R—*Tower.*
S—*Servants' Passage.*
T—*Closet.*
U—*Passages.*
V—*Cellar Stairs.*
W—*Disused Room.*
X—*Disused Room.*
Y—*Turret, with Clock, over Stable.*
Z—*Arched Gateway to Stable Yards.*

[i] As evidence of the importance of these offices at this time, it may be stated that Sir William Scott's predecessor as Lord Warden, etc., was Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick (the King Maker); and his successor, Henry, Duke of York, afterwards Henry VIII.

Of the dimensions and plan of the *second* Scot's Hall we know nothing beyond what its elevation (south-east front) reveals. Substantially, however, as it would appear to have been built, it nevertheless made way in its turn to a *third* erection of smaller dimensions, and Jacobean in

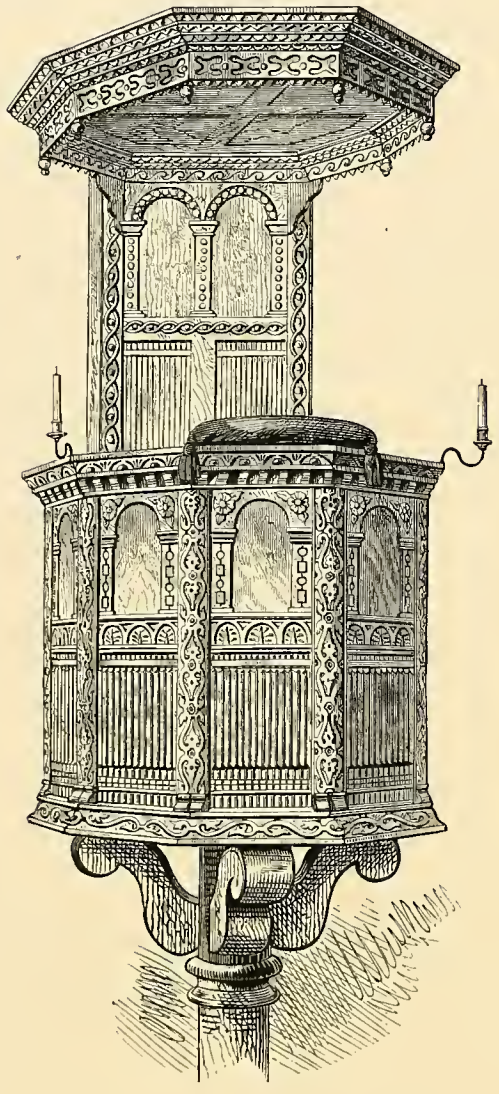


PLAN OF FIRST FLOOR OF THE THIRD SCOT'S HALL, TEMP. CHARLES I.

A—*Gallery Room, formerly Bed-room.*
B—*Still-room, formerly Bed-room.*
C—*Staircase and Landing.*
D—*Large Drawing-room.*
E—*Ante-chapel, opening in Chapel, and used as a gallery for the family.*
F—*Chapel.*
G—*Hall, with Picture Gallery round.*
H—*Dressing-room.*
I—*Bed-room.*
K—*Yellow Room.*
L—*Closet.*
M—*Laundry.*
N—*Dressing-room.*
O—*Formerly Nursery.*
P—*Servants' Room.*
Q—*Servants' Rooms.*
R—*Tower and Staircase, disused (on the outside and upper part, in different-coloured brick, "God save Sir Thomas Scott and the good lady his wife").*
S, T, U, V, W—*Closets, Passages, etc.*
Z—*Turret, with Clock at top.*

character, unless, which is not improbable, a portion of the *second* Hall was refronted towards the north-east, *circa* A.D. 1634, in the prevailing style of architecture of that period. This suggestion is the more likely, inasmuch as at the time of the demolition (A.D. 1808) of this third

mansion, that portion of it in the rear, (the remains of the building of A.D. 1491,) had for some time previously been in a ruinous condition, and uninhabitable except by labouring men and their families. The northern front was built early in the reign of Charles I., as the panelling of the chapel and other rooms bearing the date 1634, (and now to be found either in the houses adjoining the site of Scot's Hall at Smeeth, at the Church Farm, or as serving as a screen in Aldington Church to this day,) attest.



SCOT'S HALL PULPIT IN SMEETH CHURCH.

The Pulpit at present in Smeeth Church originally graced the beautiful chapel of Scot's Hall, and is of this period. The Chapel (the pointed Gothic window of which is observable in the engraving of the *third* Scot's Hall) is thus referred to by *Evelyn, in his Diary*, under date August 2, 1663:—

"*This evening accompanied Mr. Treasurer and Vice Chamberlain Carteret (Sir George Carteret, Bart., also Governor of Jersey,) to his lately-married son-in-law, Sir Thomas Scott, to Scot's Hall. We took barge as far as Gravesend, thence by post to Rochester, whence in a coach and six horses to Scot's Hall, a right noble seat, unformly built, with a handsome gallery. It stands in a park well stored, the land fat and good. We were exceedingly feasted by the young knight, and in his pretty chapel heard an excellent sermon by his chaplain.*"

Hasted likewise refers to it:—

"*Scot's Hall stands about a mile south-east, some way down the hill (Smeeth). It is a very large mansion of brick, but the north* [?] *front, built in the time of Henry VII., is very grand and has a fine effect. It is situated pleasantly, having a grand prospect from it.*"

However, in Hasted's time, A.D. 1780, a great portion of the old Hall of A.D. 1491 was dilapidated and disused, as if in sympathy with the decayed fortunes of the family. The later Jacobean erection was in a little better condition, and was not finally pulled down till A.D. 1808; the crypt, cellars, and underground works being all that now remain; the site of these, extending over a large range of surface, may be observed by the stunted character of the herbage growing upon them. A tradition, however, to this day exists amongst the neighbouring poor of the wealth that even now, it is asserted, lies buried in these vaults: a tradition and condition of things which the comparatively necessitous circumstances of the last of the Scotts residing here, renders highly improbable. The rookery remains; the gardens, fish-ponds, and the "Ladies' Walk" have succumbed to the plough, whilst the park has mostly disappeared. The banqueting hall of the third mansion, A.D. 1634, was

large and open to the roof of the building, its dimensions being forty-eight feet by thirty. In this hall and the gallery adjoining, the ancient ancestral portraits of the Scott family and their immediate connections, in Evelyn's time, were placed. Many of these, by the kind permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, we hope to perpetuate in these pages; but many from this noble collection have been dispersed, to exist unrecognized in the collections of the Kentish gentry.

In the rear of the building which existed at the commencement of the present century, and in the most ancient and ruinous portion of the mansion, there was an hexagonal tower or turret, covered by a cupola, encircling which were the words in red brickwork—

"God save Sir Thomas Scott, and the Good Lady his Wife."

And in the chapel was a mural slab, on which, in relation to this same distinguished Kentish worthy, was inscribed—

"Here lies all that is mortal of Sir Thomas Scott."

It would thus appear that Sir Thomas was buried in the Scot's Hall chapel, his monument which formerly existed in Brabourne church having been destroyed in Parliamentarian times, when the church to some extent suffered molestation.

Scot's Hall was frequently the temporary abode of foreign potentates visiting this country, *en route* from the coast (Hythe, Folkestone, or Sandgate) to the city of Canterbury, either on pilgrimage to the famous shrine, or on ceremonial visits to royalty; Canterbury, until within the last two hundred years, being the city to which, in preference to London, royal and political visits of ceremony were made.

Thus, the Princess Cecilia slept at Scot's Hall in 1523, on her way from Hythe to Canterbury, on a visit to Henry VIII.; and it is traditionally asserted that Queen Elizabeth, during her "Progress" in A.D. 1573, declined to visit Sir Thomas Scott at Scot's Hall,[k] the park gates of which she passed on 21st August of that year, alleging as an excuse her desire to proceed "to her own house," viz., Ostenhanger Castle, then in the possession (as her keeper) of Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, afterwards created by her first Earl of Dorset, of Knowle House, which she presented to him. Ostenhanger (now Westenhanger) Castle was at that time a castellated and moated mansion, in the possession of the Crown as an escheat from Sir Edward, Lord Poynings, who had rebuilt it magnificently, and dying without legal issue, passed to King Henry VIII., who in his boyhood was frequently there. The castle was about four miles from Scot's Hall.

In concluding our remarks on the mansion for so many centuries the principal residence of the heads of the family of Scott, we may state that it was twice, in Parliamentarian times, searched for arms, possibly from the suspicion that as Edward Scott, Esq., then of Scot's Hall, had married

---

[k] The Queen had, on the 17th of August, 1773 (three days previously to her passing Scot's Hall) been entertained by Sir John Baker, of Sissinghurst Castle, her judicial Chancellor of the Exchequer. Two of Sir John Baker's daughters, viz., Cicely and Elizabeth, had married respectively Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, of Westenhanger Castle, and Sir Thomas Scott. The royal slight is the more observable from the honour and compliment paid by the Queen to Sir Thomas Scott's father-in law and brother-in-law, and from the fact that the royal cortège must have passed the gates of Scot's Hall *en route* to Westenhanger Castle.

Catherine, the daughter of George Goring, Earl of Norwich and leader in Kent of the Royalist forces, the sympathies of the then proprietor of the mansion were with his father-in-law and the unfortunate king.

Be this as it may, Edward Scott was nevertheless (probably as a Deputy Lieutenant of the county), one of the "Committee of Safety for the County of Kent," appointed by the Long Parliament, and supposed to be favourable to Parliamentarian views; but he does not appear to have attended its meetings, or to have been warmly interested in the Committee's affairs.

The deer from the park were purchased and removed to France by Marshal Tallard (Commander of the French contingent engaged against the Duke of Marlborough at the battle of Blenheim), on his release from a long and honourable detention in this country as a prisoner under his parole.

A number of fine young trees in the park and neighbourhood of the Hall, were cut down and used as fuel by the soldiers sent to search for arms during the Cromwellian usurpation, when it was supposed that George Goring, the Earl of Norwich, the Royalist leader in Kent, might be secreted there.

Of Scot's Hall nothing now remains but its site and name. A Knatchbull, as if in verification of the ancient Kentish proverb, is now its lord, and "*Mersham Hatch has won the match.*"[1] It is never-

---

[1] "*Scot's Hall shall have a fall,*
Ostenhangre was built in angre (pride),
Somerfield will have to yield,
And Mersham Hatch shall win the match."

OLD KENTISH PROVERB.

The Right Hon. E. W. Knatchbull Hugessen, M.P., is now Lord of the Manor of Scot's Hall and Evegate in Smeeth, a worthy descendant of the ancient family of Knatchbull of Mersham Hatch.

We are not aware that any serious attempt has been made to speculate as to the origin of the quaint Kentish proverb above quoted. It is true that in the Faussett MS. on the family of Fogg of Repton and Tilmanston, in the fifth volume of the *Archæologia Cantiana*, it is suggested that the crenelation of Ostenhanger Castle (*temp.* Edward III., who had granted a licence to build and fortify "*more castelli*") by Sir Thomas de Criol (beheaded after the battle of St. Albans), may have given rise to it; but, in our opinion, circumstances at that time would scarcely warrant such a conclusion when tested by the examination of every line (each a distinct prophecy), and especially the last, viz., "*Mersham Hatch shall win the match*," the family of Knatchbull in Edward III.'s reign not being armigerous, their grant of arms being dated 1574, and their mansion of Mersham not then in existence.

We do not consider it out of place here to theorize on the origin of these rhymes, or to endeavour to fix a date and furnish evidence in favour of the conclusions to which we have arrived.

It is matter of history that the circumstances that contributed to the Reformation and the overthrow of the Papal authority in England during Henry VIII.'s reign, were greatly opposed by many in high authority in Church and State, and by the priestly party attached to the Romish Church. It was during this period (A.D. 1525 to 1535) of political and religious change that advantage was taken by those in opposition to the King, to put into the mouths of reputed witches, such as Mothers Shipton, Red Cap, and others, prophecies too dangerous to be fathered by their better-educated instructors. These utterances were regarded by the populace, and even by high dignitaries of the Church, as semi-prophetic; and shortly after this period so greatly was the Protestant rage excited against these deluded women, then styled witches, that the most frightful cruelties were practised against them. Reynold Scot, of the Scot's Hall family, was induced thereby to write his *Discoverie of Witchcraft*, a work now extant, and largely quoted by Sir Walter Scott in his *Demonology and Witchcraft*, and written with the view of mitigating the rigours of the times and the suppression of cruelties practised upon reputed witches. This work, published in 1574, was far in advance of the times, and eventually roused the anger of King James I., who published

theless the earnest desire of many of the name of Scott, who still cherish the recollections and traditions of their family, which for five hundred years and more, in unbroken male succession, lived

---

a pamphlet in opposition to the merciful tenets of the man whom his Majesty was pleased to style that "damnable heretic Scot."

A little later, during the Commonwealth, no mercy was shown to these wretched women, whose prophecies one would assume, from the persecution they met with at Parliamentarian hands, to have been in favour of King Charles and the Royalists. Be this as it may, Butler, in his *Hudibras*, thus refers to them :—

"Has not the present Parliament
A ledger to the devil sent,
Fully empower'd to treat about
Finding revolted witches out?
And has not he,* within one year,
Hang'd threescore of them in a shire?"

Of this crazy class of enthusiasts was Elizabeth Barton, by the Roman Catholics of the time styled the Holy Maid of Kent, to whom we attribute, as the mouthpiece of the Papish priests Bocking, Masters (*Vicar of Aldington*), and Dering, a Canon of Christchurch, Canterbury, the prophetical proverb in question.

Elizabeth Barton was in 1524 a servant to Mr. Thomas Cobb, of Cobb's Place, Aldington, Steward to the Archbishop of Canterbury, who at that time had a palace at Aldington in East Kent. The niece of Thomas Cobb afterwards married Reynold Scot, author of the *Discoverie of Witchcraft* above quoted; and it is therefore fair to assume that he and the Scot's Hall family were well acquainted with the circumstance of Barton's imposture, and her unfortunate fate.

Elizabeth Barton at this time was subject to hysterical fits and to acts of somnambulism, and during her paroxysms she uttered strange delusions, probably inspired, but certainly taken advantage of by these priests, to declaim against the "New doctrine," and afterwards against the proposed divorce of the Romanist Katherine, in favour of the Protestant Anne Boleyn. It was not until this crazy woman went so far as to prophesy that if Anne Boleyn should be married to the King, his throne would be vacant within a twelvemonth, that steps were taken against the priests, and they, with their tool Elizabeth Barton, were tried for treason, condemned, and hanged, in 1534.

Thus bearing upon our assumption that this proverb owes its origin to this woman, we may well imagine that the magistrates residing and having jurisdiction in the immediate neighbourhood of Aldington (the principal scene of these proceedings), would not be in ignorance of their occurrence or altogether disinterested in them. The localities of the prophecy are in that neighbourhood, and powerful proprietors were located there. These, with the exception of the proprietor of Mersham Hatch (then probably just built), would from personal interest, as holding office under King Henry VIII., be most likely attached to the principles of the Reformation, then in its dawn, and in favour of the contemplated divorce; and hence the denunciations in the first three lines, all of which as matters of fact have had their fulfilment. Thus, "Scot's Hall has had its fall;" "Ostenhangre," as we shall proceed to show, "was built in anger," another term for pride; "Somerfield has had to yield;" and Mersham Hatch alone at this day retains a proprietor a lineal descendant of the first owner of that mansion.

Our next inquiry is, Who were the proprietors at or about this period (1525 to 1534) of the respective mansions signified? The answer is not difficult, and the facts ascertained greatly favour our conclusions that during this period, and not improbably by the mouth of Elizabeth Barton, the Kentish proverb obtained publicity, and, amongst the ignorant, belief.

"*Scot's Hall shall have a fall.*"

In 1528 died Sir William Scott, who was, with his brother-in-law, Edward Lord Poynings, high in favour with Henry VIII. He had served the offices of Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Governor of Dover Castle, and,

* Matthew Hopkins, witchfinder general under the Parliament.

in the neighbourhood in "honour and repute," that the name of Scot's Hall as a locality may never perish; although existing, it may still remind those whom it may interest of the evanescent character of all human hopes.

---

together with Sir Edward Poynings, held high command, and was in personal attendance on the King at the Field of the Cloth of Gold.

Sir William was succeeded by his son, Sir John Scott, also a brave soldier in the service of the King, and knighted for his distinguished services against the Duke of Gueldres. At this time the mansion of Scot's Hall, recently rebuilt, was one of the most magnificent in Kent, and the possessions of the family of Scott extended widely over the county, giving rise to the saying, common in Queen Elizabeth's reign, that the Scotts could proceed from their family mansion at Scot's Hall to London on their own property; the meaning being that they possessed so many manors in Kent that they could break their tedious journeys at one or another of their numerous manorial residences. At no period during their residence in Kent had the family arrived at a higher social position than the time of which we are writing; Scot's Hall beginning its fall shortly after the reign of Queen Elizabeth, the troubles of the Commonwealth greatly contributing thereto.

"*Ostenhangre was built in angre.*"

In 1525 to 1534, the Castle of Ostenhanger had passed as an escheat to King Henry VIII., on the death and failure of legal issue of its proprietor in 1523. Sir Edward, Baron Poynings of Poynings, Sussex, had married Isabel Scott, sister of Sir William Scott above mentioned. and had, just before his death in 1523, in his pride, magnificently rebuilt the castle of Ostenhanger, with its 126 rooms and 365 windows, in the vain hope that his only legitimate son Thomas might hereafter inherit it. His son died, however, in his father's lifetime, and that magnificent pile passed as an escheat to the crown; and thus Ostenhanger was built in anger. The remainder of the vast possessions of Sir Edward Poynings passed to his niece, Eleanor Percy, wife to the Earl of Northumberland, whose family for some generations were known as Barons Poynings.

Sir Edward Poynings, as the *State Paper Records* attest, was high in favour with Henry VIII., and was a partizan of Anne Boleyn many years before the divorce of Katherine of Aragon or the marriage of Anne. He was by appointment of the King Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle, and Deputy Lord Keeper of Ireland. The letters between Poynings and the King in the State Paper Office, on social, domestic, and foreign affairs, are numerous and interesting. We think the building or rebuilding of Ostenhanger in anger or pride had reference to this man.

"*Somerfield will have to yield.*"

The exact site of this mansion is unknown; but is supposed to have been in the vicinity of the present house known by its name. It was originally located at Sellinge, about two miles from Aldington. At the period of which we are writing it was occupied by the eminent and knightly family of Heyman, known as of Somerfield, which was closely connected by marriage with the Scot's Hall family about this time, and received advancement from Henry VII. and Henry VIII.; and from this cause might, as neighbouring magnates and in favour of the measures of the King, incur the displeasure of Elizabeth Barton and her priestly advisers. Little is known, however, of the family of Heyman of Somerfield, which about this time rose high amongst the aristocratic commoners of Kent, and yielded its pretensions and its lands a few generations later; after which its name, as connected with that county, is rarely met with.

"*Mersham Hatch shall win the match.*"

About this period (1524 to 1534) the Knatchbulls had emerged from the comparatively restricted but honourable independence as small landowners in which the progenitors of the present family of Baronets then lived.

They had recently (in 1487) purchased Mersham Hatch, which has been their seat ever since. They do not appear at the time of which we are now writing to have held any office in connection with the State, or in any way to have been tied by obligation to the monarch in such a manner as to render them partizans to his policy, of religion or divorce, and the owner of Mersham may thus have been free to express his views and entertain the belief attaching to the Papal supremacy in matters of religion. Be this as it may, "*Mersham Hatch has won the match,*" and one of that family is at this day a large proprietor of lands formerly held by the Scotts, Poynings, and Heyman families.

Abstract of Will of WILLIAM SCOTTE. (From *Archbishop Chichele's Register*, fol. 443 *b*.)

Dated 1428, *Wednesday, during Feast of Conversion of St. Paul.*

Body to be buried *in* the church of ST. MARY OF BRABOURNE, before the door of Trinity Chapel. (*Coram hostio capello Sancte Trinitas.*)

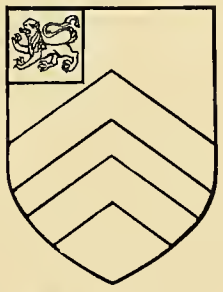
LEGACIES. To the High Altar in BRABOURNE church, for tithes forgotten, 20*s*.
To the sustentation of the SAID church, £10.
To each of his "filioli," 20*s*.
To each of the houses of MENDICANT FRIARS within CANTERBURY, 20*s*.
To the house of CARMELITE FRIARS in SANDWICH, 20*s*.
To the church of LEYMENE, 20*s*. (*Lymne.*)
To „ SMETHE, 20*s*. (*Smeeth.*)
To „ EASTBRIGG, 20*s*. (*Eastbridge.*)
To the Master of the "DOMUS DEI" at *Dover*, 20*s*.
To each of the Brethren of that house, 13*s*. 4*d*.
To my Servants, all my wearing apparel, except such as is furred, which I desire to be kept for my sons.
To Roger Baronn, for his life an annual pension of 20*s*. if he will remain with my wife.
To John Bokham, similar pension on like condition.
To the POOR, on the day of my *burial* and *trental*, £10.
To my wife one moiety, and to my sons the other moiety, of all my goods in my Chamber, Hall, Buttery, Pantry, Larder, and Kitchen.
To each of my servants, male and female (except Baronn and Bokham), 6*s*. 8*d*.
To my daughter MARGARET, £100.
To „ JOHANNA, £133 13*s*. 4*d*. (200 marks) at her marriage.

Residue.—To ISABELLA, my wife.

Executors.—My Wife, and Thomas Chapman, of Wynelysbergh.

William Scotte died February 5, A.D. 1433, and was buried in the Scott Chapel, Brabourne. His tilting helmet, or rather that supposed to have belonged to him, still hangs in the chancel of the church, his monumental Brass being likewise in the chancel. (See pp. 38 and 43 *ante*.)

(No. 12 in Ped.) **Joane,** sister and co-heir of Sir Richard de Orlestone, daughter of Sir John de Orlestone; first wife of William Scotte.



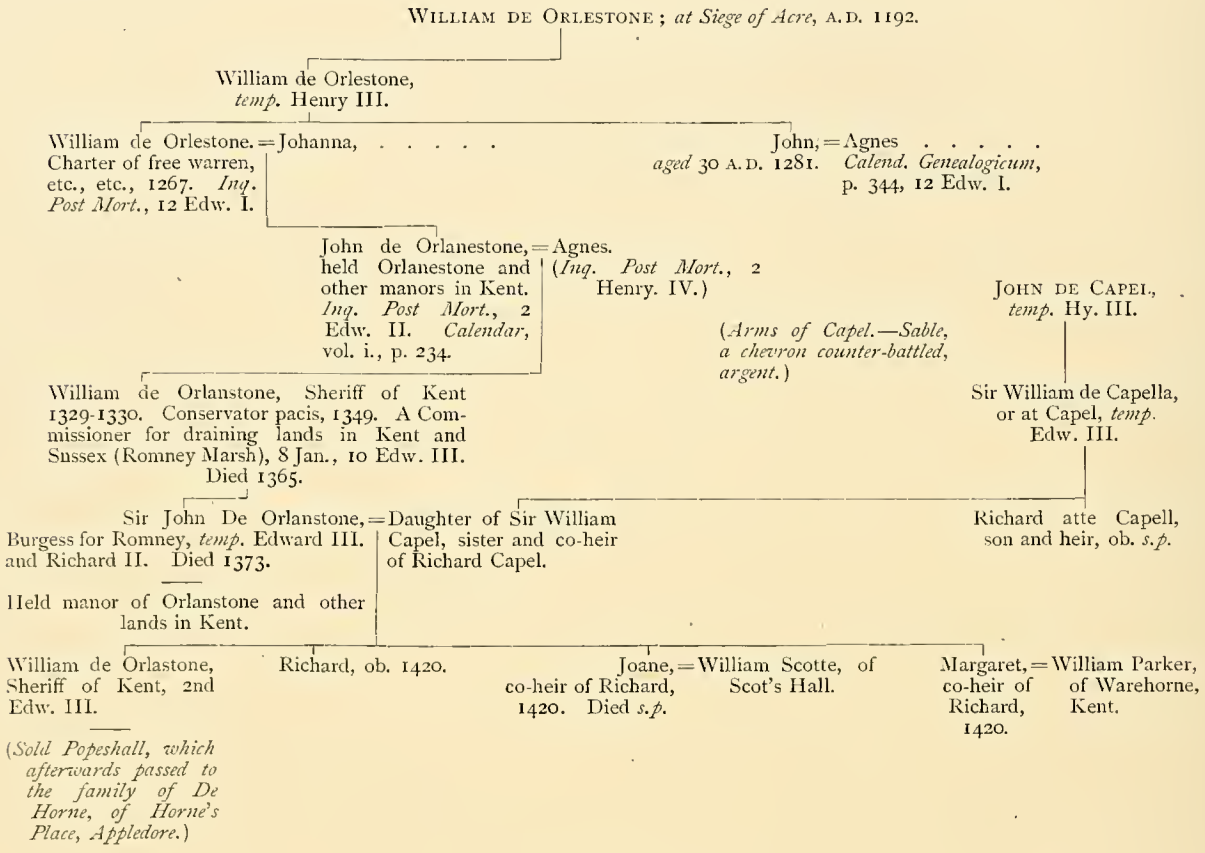
DE ORLESTONE.

ARMS.—*Or, two chevrons, gules, on a canton of the last a lion, passant argent.*

The manor of Orleston, in the Hundred of Hamme, passed to William Scotte and his heirs by his marriage with Joan de Orlestone; he had no issue by her. The manor remained in the Scott family until the year A.D. 1700, when it was sold by George Scott, Esq., of Scot's Hall, to Sir Philip Boteler, of Teston, Baronet.

Biography and Pedigree of Orlestone of Orlestone and Popeshall in Coldred, Kent.

William de Orlestone, or Orlanstone, is registered as in the list of the Kentish gentry who were with Richard I. at the siege of Acon (Acre, A.D. 1192), and held Orlestone Manor, on the border of Romney Marsh. William de Orlestone, his grandson, held this manor, and had from Henry III. (51 Henry III., A.D. 1267) a charter of fair and free warren and franchise of a market.


William de Orlestone; at Siege of Acre, A.D. 1192.
William de Orlestone, temp. Henry III.
William de Orlestone. = Johanna, ...
Charter of free warren, etc., etc., 1267. Inq. Post Mort., 12 Edw. I.
John, = Agnes . . . . .
aged 30 A.D. 1281. Calend. Genealogicum, p. 344, 12 Edw. I.
John de Orlanestone, = Agnes.
held Orlanestone and other manors in Kent. Inq. Post Mort., 2 Edw. II. Calendar, vol. i., p. 234.
(Inq. Post Mort., 2 Henry. IV.)
(Arms of Capel.—Sable, a chevron counter-battled, argent.)
John de Capel, temp. Hy. III.
William de Orlanstone, Sheriff of Kent 1329-1330. Conservator pacis, 1349. A Commissioner for draining lands in Kent and Sussex (Romney Marsh), 8 Jan., 10 Edw. III. Died 1365.
Sir William de Capella, or at Capel, temp. Edw. III.
Sir John De Orlanstone, = Daughter of Sir William Capel, sister and co-heir of Richard Capel.
Burgess for Romney, temp. Edward III. and Richard II. Died 1373.
Held manor of Orlanstone and other lands in Kent.
Richard atte Capell, son and heir, ob. s.p.
William de Orlastone, Sheriff of Kent, 2nd Edw. III.
(Sold Popeshall, which afterwards passed to the family of De Horne, of Horne's Place, Appledore.)
Richard, ob. 1420.
Joane, = William Scotte, of Scot's Hall.
co-heir of Richard, 1420. Died s.p.
Margaret, = William Parker, of Warehorne, Kent.
co-heir of Richard, 1420.

(No. 13 in Ped.) **Isabella**, daughter of Vincent Herbert, *alias* Finche, by Isabel, daughter and heir of Robert Cralle and Maria Pepelsham, or Pittlesden; second wife to William Scotte, of Scot's Hall.

FINCHE.

Arms of Finche.—*Argent, between three griffins passant, a chevron sable.*

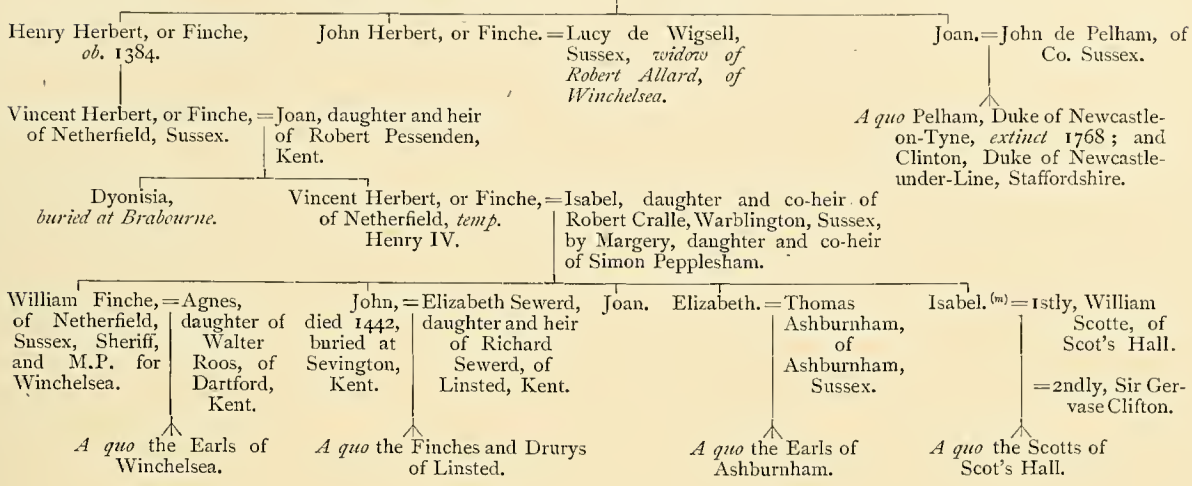
Arms of Cralle.—*Argent, six fusils, azure.*

Arms of Pepelsham, or Pittlesden.—*Sable, a fesse or between three pelicans, vulning their breasts, or.*

Abstract of Pedigree of the Family of Fitz Herbert, or Finche, of Sussex and Kent.

Matthew Fitz Herbert, of Warblington, Sussex, *temp.* Henry III.

From whom, in lineal descent, Vincent Herbert, or Finche, of Netherfield, Sussex, *temp.* Edw. II. & III.


Henry Herbert, or Finche, ob. 1384.
John Herbert, or Finche.
Lucy de Wigsell, Sussex, widow of Robert Allard, of Winchelsea.
Joan.
John de Pelham, of Co. Sussex.
Vincent Herbert, or Finche, of Netherfield, Sussex.
Joan, daughter and heir of Robert Pessenden, Kent.
A quo Pelham, Duke of Newcastle-on-Tyne, extinct 1768; and Clinton, Duke of Newcastle-under-Line, Staffordshire.
Dyonisia, buried at Brabourne.
Vincent Herbert, or Finche, of Netherfield, temp. Henry IV.
Isabel, daughter and co-heir of Robert Cralle, Warblington, Sussex, by Margery, daughter and co-heir of Simon Pepplesham.
William Finche, of Netherfield, Sussex, Sheriff, and M.P. for Winchelsea.
Agnes, daughter of Walter Roos, of Dartford, Kent.
John, died 1442, buried at Sevington, Kent.
Elizabeth Sewerd, daughter and heir of Richard Sewerd, of Linsted, Kent.
Joan.
Elizabeth.
Thomas Ashburnham, of Ashburnham, Sussex.
Isabel.[m]
1stly, William Scotte, of Scot's Hall.
2ndly, Sir Gervase Clifton.
A quo the Earls of Winchelsea.
A quo the Finches and Drurys of Linsted.
A quo the Earls of Ashburnham.
A quo the Scotts of Scot's Hall.

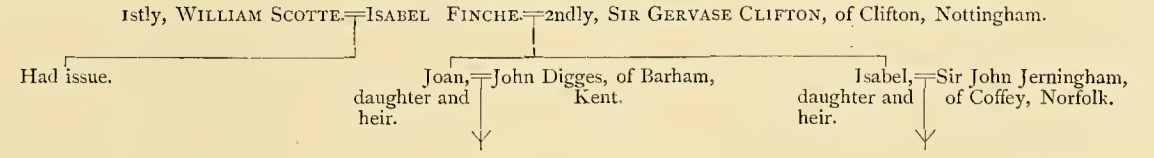
Isabella, the second wife and relict of William Scotte (re-married to Sir Gervase Clifton, Lieut. to Humphery, Duke of Gloucester, Constable of Dover Castle), died 20th Nov., A.D. 1457, and was buried in Brabourne Church. (*See chapter on Brabourne Church*, p. 44.)

(No. 14 in Ped.) **Sir Robert Scotte,** Knight, second son of John Scotte, of Brabourne.

A.D. 1424, Lieutenant of the Tower of London.—*Philipott and Hasted.*

---

[m] There appears to be in the minds of many biographers a confusion as to the precedence in marriage of Isabella Finche. Looking closely to dates, however, there can be little doubt that she married firstly William Scotte, who died in A.D. 1433, leaving her Scot's Hall in dower for her life. She afterwards married Sir Gervase Clifton, of the family of Clifton in Nottinghamshire, who lived with her at Scot's Hall, and there served the office of Sheriff of Kent in the years 1440 and 1451. Sir Gervase was a most distinguished man, and greatly trusted by Henry VI., to whom he was Treasurer of the Household. He had likewise the custody of the temporalities of the Archbishop of Canterbury, was Treasurer of Calais, and Captain of Pontoise. He was, with many other distinguished men, beheaded in the market-place of Tewkesbury the morning after the battle, A.D. 1471, having outlived his second wife, the relict of William Scotte.

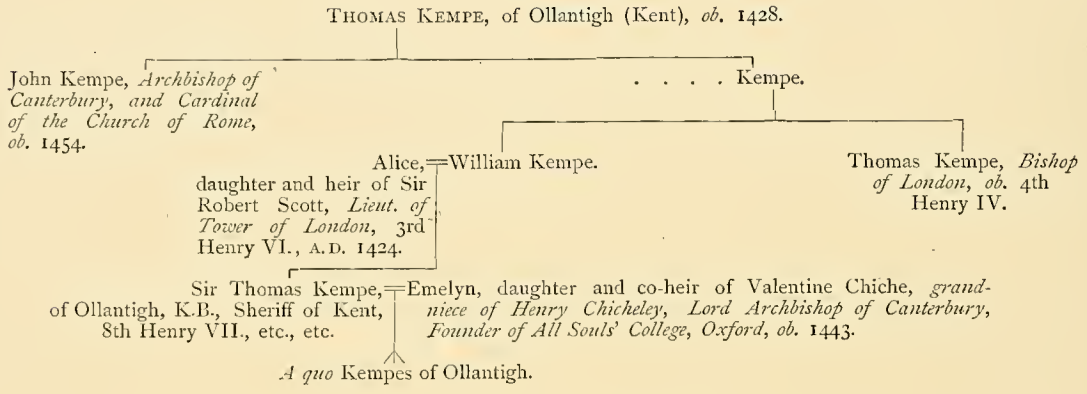

1stly, William Scotte.
Isabel Finche.
2ndly, Sir Gervase Clifton, of Clifton, Nottingham.
Had issue.
Joan, daughter and heir.
John Digges, of Barham, Kent.
Isabel, daughter and heir.
Sir John Jerningham, of Coffey, Norfolk.

Alice Scotte, only daughter and heir, married to William Kempe (nephew to Cardinal Archbishop Kempe), carried the manor of Hinxhill in Kent to him; but it was alienated by his grandson, Sir William Kempe, about the end of the reign of Henry VIII.[n]

Philipott, in his *Villare Cantianum*, p. 186, of the manor of Hinxhill, observes:—

"Hinxhill, in the Hundreds of Chart and Longbridge, was part of that estate which belonged to the family of Strathbolgie, Earls of Athol; but whether or not it devolved to Alexander Baliol, Earl of Athol, by Isabel, his wife, one of the co-heirs of Richard de Dovor, Lord of Chilham, is altogether uncertain, because no record that I ever saw reaches beyond the above-mentioned Alexander. This man's son was John, Earl of Strathbolgie and Athol, who, having forfeited it in the reign of Edward I., whilst he endeavoured to buoy up the liberty of his country of Scotland, which then seemed to be sunk in its own ruins, being trampled upon by the successful attempts of that prince, it for some years increased the royal revenue, until David de Strabolgie, Earl of Athol, the first that altered his name from Baliol to Strabolgie, having expiated his father's differences by being constant to the party and interest of Edward II. against the irruptions of the nobility, which then banded in combinations against him, had this, with much other land, restored to him in the fifteenth year of that prince; from whom it descended to David de Strabolgie, his grandchild, who dying in the 49th year of Edward III., left it to Philippa, his daughter and co-heir, married to John Halsham, of Sussex, by whom she had issue Hugh, who about the beginning of Henry VI. passed it to Sir Robert Scott, Lieutenant of the Tower of London, A.D. 1424," etc., etc.

Pedigree of Kempe.


Thomas Kempe, of Ollantigh (Kent), ob. 1428.
John Kempe, Archbishop of Canterbury, and Cardinal of the Church of Rome, ob. 1454.
. . . . Kempe.
Alice, daughter and heir of Sir Robert Scott, Lieut. of Tower of London, 3rd Henry VI., A.D. 1424.
William Kempe.
Thomas Kempe, Bishop of London, ob. 4th Henry IV.
Sir Thomas Kempe, of Ollantigh, K.B., Sheriff of Kent, 8th Henry VII., etc., etc.
Emelyn, daughter and co-heir of Valentine Chiche, grand-niece of Henry Chicheley, Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, Founder of All Souls' College, Oxford, ob. 1443.
A quo Kempes of Ollantigh.

No. 15 in Ped.) **Sir John Scotte,** of Scot's Hall, only surviving son and heir of William Scotte, of Scot's Hall.

High Sheriff of Kent, 39th Henry VI. and 7th Edward IV.
Knight of the Shire (Kent) at Parliament, Westminster, 7th Edward IV.
Comptroller of the Household of King Edward IV.

[n] Sir Hugh Halsham, of West Grinstead, Sussex, grandson of the Countess of Athol, passed, at the commencement of the reign of Henry VI. (*circa* 1422-3), the manor of Hinxhill, in Chart and Longbridge, to Sir Robert Scott, Lieutenant of the Tower of London. The manor of Hinxhill had descended from Hugh de Montfort, the Domesday owner, to the Earls of Athol, Alexander Baliol, the Earls of Strathbolgie, and the Halshams, to Sir Robert Scott, in a somewhat similar manner to the descent of the more important manor of Brabourne, to the elder branch of the family of Scott of Scot's Hall.

Privy Councillor to the King.

Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle (as *locum tenens* for the King—Edward IV.)

Marshal of Calais.

Ambassador to the Duke of Burgundy and Bretagne, 12 Edward IV., A.D. 1473.

Buried at Brabourne 17th October, 1485. (For monumental inscription and tomb, see p. 37.)

EXTRACTS FROM ANCIENT RECORDS.

CALENDARIUM ROTULORUM PATENTUM, p. 302.

Quarta patent de anno 1° *Regis Edwardi Quarti* (1461).

Rex concessit Johi Scott milite Controrotulatori hospitii sui in feodo Castr et maner de Wilderton et Molashe in Com Kancie nuper Johis Domini de Roos attinct per service debit.

Secunda patent de A° 2 *Edw. IV.* (1462). *No.* 12 (*p.* 305).

Rex concessit Johni Scott milite Controrotulatori hospitii sui in feodo maneria sive domina de Old Swinford et Snodelbury in Comitatu Wigorn nuper Jacobi Com Wiltes attincti per servic debit.

Tertia patent de A° 5 *R. Edw. IV.* (1465). *No.* 26 (*p.* 311.)

Perampla exemplificatio quarundam petitionum responsionum replicationum et decret in Cancellaria Regis fact, pro Johni Scott milite de manerio de Brabourne in Com Kanciæ quod fuit Johnis Lewkenor et Johanna uxoris ejus ; in qua rotandum quod cum dictus Johnes tenuet manerium de Combe in dicto manerio de Brabourne per cert reddit et al servic feoffati dicti manerii de Brabourne remisere dictum redditum et servicium dicti Johnis Scott in feodo tenend per minorem redditum et servic.

Prima Patent de A° 10 *R. Edw. IV.* (1471). *No.* 12 (*p.* 315).

Johnes Scott miles locum tenens Regis Castri de Dover et Custos quinque Portuum ad plitu Regis.

Secunda Patent de A° 16 *R. Edw. IV.* (1477). *No.* 21 (*p.* 322).

Rex concessit Johni Scott milite in specialo tallio, viz. hœredibus masculis maneria de Old Swinforde et Snowdesbury cum advocasione ecclesia de Old Swinforde in comitatu Wigorn, nuper Jacobi Comitus Wiltes, et qua et concess fuerunt in feodo per 2 pat Edw. IV. necnon mercatum feriam et warreniam in manerio suo de Chileham in Com Kanciæ.

Secunda pat de A° 21 *Edw. IV.* (1482). No. 7 (*p.* 326).

Rex concessit Johni Scott militi in specialo tallio viz. hæredibus masculis Castr et maner de Chillham ac diversa alia hæriditamenta in Com Kanciæ qua nuper fuerunt Thome Domini Roos maneria de Gannowe et old Swinsford in Com Wigorn nuper Jacobi Comitis Wiltes.

Sir John Scotte was highly trusted by King Edward IV., and was, as well as his son and successors, during the Wars of the Roses, eminently Yorkist. He served the office of High Sheriff of

his county in the reign of Henry VI.; but his most important services were rendered to the successor to that monarch, by whom he was rewarded with the manor of the Honour and Castle of Chilham for life, the manor of Old Swinsford and Snodesbury in Worcestershire on the attaint of James, Earl of Wiltshire, and of the Castle and manor of Wilderton and Molash in Kent, by the attaint of John Lord de Roos. Besides holding the high office of Comptroller to the King's Household, and being of his Privy Council, he held the important military office of Knight Marshal of Calais, and his name in that capacity is frequently mentioned in the Paston Letters. The office of Marshal or Deputy of Calais was, in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, frequently held by the Constables of Dover Castle, between which fortress and the important frontier town of Calais (the key to the kingdom of France), a constant communication of a military character was maintained, such being probably the origin of the system of passports which obtain to this day. Sir John was likewise Constable of Dover Castle, and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, as *locum tenens* for the King. As his patent bears date A.D. 1471, it would appear as if he held these offices on the death, at the battle of Barnet, April 14, 1471, of Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick (the King Maker), who previously had held the offices of Constable and Warden, but was found in opposition to the monarch at that battle, a period when the allegiance of the principal nobility wavered between the contending interests of York and Lancaster, and the office of Warden and Governor of Dover Castle would have been unsafe in ennobled hands. Thus the keys of the two kingdoms of England and France were at this time held by this distinguished Kentish man.

Sir John Scotte was afterwards, in 1473, sent, as Ambassador of the King, to the Duke of Burgundy, whose assistance in 1475 Edward IV. hoped to obtain in his project of the invasion of France, fortunately abandoned, and concluded by a truce with the politic Louis, king of that country.

Whilst not engaged in warlike enterprises he served as one of the special justices appointed (with his kinsmen, Sir John Fogge, of Repton, Treasurer of the Household of Edward IV., and William Haute, of Hautsbourne, Kent, married to Joan Woodville, aunt to Elizabeth Woodville, Queen to Edward IV.), to revise the laws relating to the drainage and embankment of Romney Marsh. The laws and regulations so laid down by them as Commissioners, and afterwards embodied in Acts of Parliament, serve as the text book to the administrators of the Levels of Romney Marsh, and other embanked low lands in Kent, Sussex, and elsewhere, to this day.

For the following extracts from the Corporation Records of the Cinque Port towns, or members of the same, we are indebted to Henry Thomas Riley, Esq., Barrister-at-Law, and record our obligations to him accordingly.

From the Chamberlain's Books of Rye, Sussex. Translated from the Latin. Vol. I., fol. 88*b.*
39, 40 *Henry VI.* (1461).

"Paid for a seam (*horse-load*) of fish given to John Scot with the consent of the town; for that the same John, as Controller, expedited our bill for the King's grant of all lands and tenements of James Hyde being within the liberties and franchises of Rye, 9*s.*"

From Book of Corporation Accounts, Lydd, in Romney Marsh, A.D. 1426 *to* 1490.

A.D. 1463-4, 2 & 3 Edw. IV. "In expensis of John Searlis (and others named), rydyng to Friston *Sussex),* to speke with Syr John Scotte for the sowdiours to Caleis the 2 day of September, 2*s.* 8*d.*"

3 & 4 Edw. IV. (1465-6). "Payed for a porpays (porpoise) sent to Mayster Scotte, 9*s.*"

6 & 7 Edw. IV. (1467-8). "Payed for a Porpays sent to London for Mayster Fogge and Scotte, 6*s.*" *Sir*

John Fogge, of Repton, in Ashford, was Treasurer of the Household of Edward IV., and a personal friend of that monarch.

7 & 8 Edw. IV. (1468-9). "A cade of sprot"—barrel of sprats—is sent as a present to Mayster Skot among others.

"Payd for fyche brought at Nesse (*Dungeness*), gyven to Syr John Fogge and Syr John Skot, to be friendly unto our mater, be twyxt the Abbot (*of Battle*) and us, at all tymys of nede, 3*s*. 8*d*."

"Payd for the expencys of Syr John Skot and Mayster Hawth comyng downe to the sayde towne of Lyde on Saint Georges Eve last vas, for the mater be twyxt us and the abbot."

"Payd to Thomas Gros for half bunne (*a large measure*) of bere i drank in the Nesse Syr John Skot and Sir John (*query, William*) Hawth at that tyme beyng ther with Jurats of Lyde, 20*d*."

---

9 & 10 Edw. IV (1470-1). "Paid to Thomas Gros for expences whenne a manne came from Maister Skot, to have menne to labour with the King. (*Edward IV. on Warwick's invasion; Sir John Scotte then being Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, as locum tenens for the King, vice Richard Neville the King Maker, a rebel*), 10*d*."

"Payde to a manne of Sir John Scotte bryngyng tydynges fromme Lynkkolle, 8*d*." (Lincoln). *Sir John Scott's son, Thomas Rotherham, afterwards Archbishop of York, was at this time Bishop of Lincoln.*

---

10 & 11 Edw. IV. (1471-2). "For one horse and a childe (page) to Syr John Scotte when the sowders went to Sandwich, 6*d*."

From the Chamberlain's Accounts (trans.) of New Romney, Vol. 2.

23 Edw. IV. (1483). "Paid Patrick Gill for one capon which the Jurats gave to Master William Scott, against the Feast of All Saints, in the 22nd year, 20*d*." (?) *William, afterwards Sir William Scott, was son of Sir John Scott, and succeeded him in the office of Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Constable of Dover Castle.*

22 & 23 Edw. IV. (1482-3). "Paid for some mullets given as a present to John Scott, knight, 11*d*."

13 & 14 Henry VII. (1498-9). "Paid Thomas Gregori for wine given to the wife of William Scot in the house of Vincent Finche, 8*d*."

3 & 4 Henry VIII. (1512-3). "Paid the expenses of Richard Humphrey riding to Master Scott, to shew him the words used by Michel Bonevassell, 8*d*."

Mr. Riley, in his report to the Historical Documents Commission, observes that many of the entries in the Cinque Ports Records are in the handwriting of Caxton, the originator of the art of printing in this country; and, with reference to these extracts, further observes:—"Presents of 'cades of sprot' are mentioned as being sent to Mayster Skot, Syr John Fogge, Sir John Gylford (ancestor of Lord Guildford Dudley, who married Lady Jane Grey), Mayster Gilford and Maister Foggys followed by these items: 'Payd for a capone to William Wenstell gevyn to Maister Markham and Maister Greenford, 6*d*.' 'Payd for a galune of rede wine gevyn unto them in the townys name at that tyme, 8*d*.' 'Payd for there sopere at that sopere beyng John Serlys, Thomas Caxtune, and Robert Lucas, to pray the sayd jentylmen to be friendly in our mater be twyxt the Abbot of Batayl and us, 7*s*. 5*d*.'"

The following letter, dated 7 August, ... from King Edward IV. to the Prior of Christchurch in Canterbury, is extracted from the Family Records of Fogge, formerly of Dane Court in Tilmanstone (Kent), printed in the *Archæologia Cantiana*, p. 123, vol. v.:—

"To our trusty and well beloved in God the Prior of our Monastery of Christ Church in our City of Canterbury.

"Right trusty and well beloved in God, we grete you well: And in cause our trusty and well beloved Knight and Counsellor, Sir John Scott, be not come from the town of Calais, we will that unto our trusty and right well beloved Knight, Sir John Fogge, also our Counsellor, and to our

trusty servant, Thomas Ash, one of the Yeomen of our Chamber and Customer at our Port of Sandwich, you deliver forthwith upon the sight hereof, the sum of a thousand marks that you have of ours in keeping, to the intent that they according to our pleasure may furnish out in all haste a thousand archers forthwith to depart to the town of Calais: Assuring you that a Bill credent between you signed with their hands and with the hands of two of them, and these presents shall be unto you a sufficient discharge in that behalf. Given under our signet at our Palace of Westminster the 7th day of August."

"I have wrote a thousand archers, but it may be but 200 in the old written hand.

[*Seal and signature gone.*]

A COPY OF A BOOK OF ACCOUNT OF SIR JOHN SCOTTE, THIRD YEAR OF EDWARD IV. (From the Scot's Hall Records and MSS.)

Expenses of John Scotte fro the xviij. daye of Avrell the iij. yere of ye Kyng (Edward IV., 1464.)[o]

fyrst.	Brovght to London in A Bagge of Gold . . .	iijxx *li.*
It.	Brovght in an odr Bagge	iij *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of Thoas Kenne fermor of Sencleris be ouyngton . . . . . Mense Junii.	liiis. iiijd.
It.	in my purse	xlvjs. viijd.
It.	y Resseyuid of the Coferrer be Thoas Blakham . .	x *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of Sturgun	viij *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of ye fermor of Sentcleris be Robt. Moffet .	xls.
It.	Resseyuid of my lady of Shrevysbery . . .	liijs. iiijd.
It.	Resseyuid of Harry Hūton for my fee of Siregrofye, for Esꝑme	xxxiij in clere.
It.	Resseyuid of the Bayle of Chilehām be ye hands of the Stvard wt my lord Chañceller .	xvj *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of John Rokke Bayle of Garnnewe And old Svynford at london.	iij *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of the Coferrer be the XI. daye of June .	xx *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of my lade Shrevysbury	v mar.
It.	Resseyuid of A monke of Westmynsꝑ . . .	vj *li.* xiijs. iiijd.
	of the wich paid to John Copildyke at Sidyngborne . .	xs. vjd.
It.	for a payre of hosyñ and ij payre of sokks . . .	iijs. iiijd.
It.	paid to Couppuldyk at london	xs.
It.	paid to the Sadellare	xls.

[o] This account has probably reference to the expenses of Sir John Scotte as Comptroller of the Household of King Edward IV., an office to which he was appointed in the first year of that king's reign.

It.	paid to ye Sadellars man of Gyft	xij*d.*
It.	paid to the Armorere	iij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	paid to Nicholas Gaynsford of dette . . .	x mar.
It.	to John Hyllis be Sturgun at Wynsore . . .	xx*s.*
It.	paid to my corveser in ffull paymt be Coupuldyk	xviij*s.*
	Smyth be coupuldyk . . .	vij*s.* ij*d.*
It.	lent to my lord Chambrleyne at povlis (Pauls) . .	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	delivved to my Wife at london	xxvj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	paid to ye eschetos of Worsettshire fore ye inquesionn of my land	xiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	delivid to John Cobbis for to labor the same inquesiconn . . .	xiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	delivid to my Wife at london	xiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	to the eschetor man of Worsettshire . . .	iij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	paid be John Rokke to ye eschetos of Worsettshire for expenss at ye inquesion . .	xx*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	paid for John Rokke costs to London . . .	iij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	delivid to my wife att london wich was Resseyuid of the Bayle of Chelham . .	xvi *li.*
It.	delivid to my wife ovte of my prse	xx*s.*
	of the wich sche payd to ye Taylor . . .	v *li* vj*s.* xj*d.*
	in ffull paid to ye last daye of June.	
It.	sche paid to Thoas Colt	v marke.
It.	delivid to my wife wich was Brovgtz (brought) fro the Coferrer	xx *li.*
It.	Geve to Richard fflemyng dougt (daughter) at here mariage at loudon	xx*s.*
It.	delivid to Thoas Ouyngton for John Sovthflete . .	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	paid to my Corueser at london the last daye of June in ffull paymēt except Gere (gear) wich he Brovgtz yn the said daye	xs.
It.	paid to The Armurere in ffull paymēt . . .	xs.
It.	paid to Kendall at london	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	paid to Thoas Couppaldyke at london the last day of June	vij*s.* j*d.*
It.	lent to Robt Stretford be my wife vpon pleggs (pledge) wich be wt my modr Beavfitz[p] .	xvj*s.*
It.	paid for Gere Bovgtze for Edward Mosley . . .	iij *li.* vij*s.* vj*d.*
It.	paid to Sr Wat Blovnt for ye oblig of Sr John Cheyne[q] to make a debte to me of iiij xx *li.* for yn A tte . . .	xiiij*s.*

[p] Sir John Scotte's mother-in-law, Elizabeth Beaufitz.

[q] Sir John Cheyne, of Shurland, Sheppey.

md that I Empīgton hath A surplesage iiij*s*. iiij*d*. ob̄.
the iiij daye of Jule for expenss at london.

It. to Morise Clemēt for oñ of Rog̃ lañder dovg̃tis (daughters) . . . . xl*s*.

It. paid to ye mayre of the Stapill for Hūgerford esquier of ye Kynggs . . . xl*s*.

It. to John Hyllys be my wife at london . . . vi*s*. viij*d*.

It. to John Hillis be my wife at london . . . iij*s*.

It. to my lauendr at Westmynst̃ . . . . ij*s*.

It. paid be my wife to Thoas Aldwas Skynnare in ffull paymēt to ye last daye of June . . . . . lv*s*.

It. lent to Thoas Booth of ye pantry Grome . . . vj*s*. viij*d*.

It. to Rob̄t ffosset when he went to Elthām . . . iij*s*. iiij*d*.

And so ther Remeynid in my purse when y was come in to Kent xxv *li*. vj*s*. viij*d*. and in Sylur . . . liij*s*. iiij*d*. *It.* Resseyuid of John Mayne[r] vj *li*. vj*s*. viij*d*. of wich y paid to John Hillis when he Rode to london to my lord Tresorer . . . . iij*s*. iiij*d*.

It. for myn Expenss and Costs at Sandw[ic]h and to and fro and vnladyng of ye Shippe and ladyng agayne . . . . . vij *li*. xiij*s*. iiij*d*.

It. paid to John Sovthflete for a Blak ambelyng Gyldyng . . . . . xl*s*.

It. paid to Thoas Ememet be John Coppuldyk in Maii . vj*s*. viij*d*.

It. of xl*s*. wich Rob̄t Moffet Resseyuid of Thoas Keme he paid to John Sovthflete . . xx*s*.

It. to my Corueser . . . . . vj*s*. viij*d*.

It. to John Hellis . . . . . iij*s*. iiij*d*.

It. ther Remaynyth in his hand . . . . xs.

---

md that y carird to london in my purse the xvi. daye of Julii the iij. yere of Kyng Edward . . . iij *li*. vj*s*. viij*d*.

It. in Gold in tow Baggs . . . . . xxvj *li*.

It. Resseyuid of Thoas Gryme for money lent for the kynggs offerryng at povlis (Pauls) . . vij*s*.

It. Resseyuid of John Ellerton . . . . liij*s*. iiij*d*.

It. Resseyuid of Harry Sonds of old dette . . . ls.

It. Borowid of John Aldaye be John Coppuldyke . . xiij*s*. iiij*d*.

It. Reseyuid of the Coferrer be John Coppuldyke the V. daye of Jule . . . . . xl*s*.

---

[r] John Mayne, probably of Staplehurst, or Biddenden, Kent.

It.	he Resseyuid of Thoᵃs Goldwell [a] ye xviij. daye of Jule	vj*s.* viij*d.*
	of the wich y paid to Thoᵃs Ememet	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	lent to Willᵃm Smyth yoman porter at Northampto	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	y toke to John Covpuldyke at london the month of August for Haverdyng	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	for hyryng of iij. Hakenneyys (Hackneys)	x*s.*
It.	paid to my doblet maker in full paymēt	xij*s.*
It.	paid to Kendall to Ride fro Cañtbery to London to Bere lettis to the kyng for yntaylyng (? vytaylyng) of the Shippis	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	paid to John Hillis be John Coppuldyke the xvj. daye of June	vj*s.* viiij*d.*
It.	paid to The Brygantyne maker in ffull paymēt for Thoᵃs Coppuldyke Brygantynys (?) be John Coppuldyke	xiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	paid to Thoᵃs fferros be John Coppuldyke in the month of Jule	x*s.*
It.	to Thoᵃs fferros to london in Avgust be John Coppuldyk	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	paid be John Coppuldyke to the Corueser in Avgust when y departid last fro london	xiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	paid to John Sovthflete when he Rode to Clepton foremyn assinnemēt of my lord of Worcett.	vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	y Bare to London the xiiij. daye of Octob the thirde yere of ye kyng.	
	fyrst in A Bagge in Gold	v *li.* And
	Sylur (silver)	xij *li.*
It.	in my prse	xviij*s.* v*d.*
It.	to peers Beavpys[b] for the portage of cc *li.* fro london to povmfrete (Pontefract)	xl*s.*
It.	Resseyuid of the lady Cyryell (Criol) mañ at povfret of wich he Borowid of John Covppuldyke	xxvj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	Resseyuid of Richard Stase the vij. daye of Nouemb at Tylbery for Rent of Sencleris (a manor in East Tilbury, Essex)	xxiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	Resseyuid of Thoᵃs Renne the same daye of wich he ys alowid in his accovnt.	vs. vij*d.*
It.	Resseyuid of Harry Hūton the viij. daye of Noueb. be John Covpuldyke	iij *li.* vj*s.*
It.	Ressevuid of Thoᵃs Renne the xxiij. daye of Noueb be John Covpuldyke	iij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	Resseyuid of Harry Hūton the xxix. daye of Nueb be John Covpuldyke	xxij*s.* viij*d.*

[a] Thomas Goldwell (of Great Chart, Kent), Prior of Canterbury, Secretary to King Edward IV., and afterwards Bishop of Norwich. (See Letter Edward IV., p. 109.)

[b] Piers or Peter Beaufitz, probably Sir John Scotte's brother-in-law.

of the wich y paid to Will[a]m Brent for a Sergant to plete fore my Sessamēt . . . . ij*s.* iiij*d.*

It. paid to Rendall at london . . . . . xx*s.*

It. paid to Roƀt moffet ther . . . . . xiij*s.* vij*d.*

It. paid to Harry Sotyll for his [coun] ꝯseyle in Will[a]m Darell maꝯ for the Capell . . . . . } vj*s.* viij.

It. paid to John Hyllis at london . . . . vs.

It. paid to myn hosuare for hosyñ in to the xxiiij. daye of Octoƀ . . . . . } xvj*s.*

It. paid to my Sadeler the xxij. day of Octobr̃ in ꝑte of payment of liij*s.* iiij*d.* . . xx*s.*

A declaracōn made wt Will[a]m Wales seruant to the Abbet of Seynt Austeyn the vij. daye of Nouemƀ the v. yere of the kyng E. fyrst the said Abbot ovyth to Sr John Scot for his yerly pensiñ of v. yere passid . . . . } ccl mark.

Sm[a] ccl marke.

of ye Which paid to John Hyllys ye first yer of K. E. after ye fest of Alhalowon . . . . . } vj *li.* xiij*s.* iiij*d.*

It. paid to Sr John Scotte the ij. daye of August . . xl *li.* xiij*s.* iiij*d.*

It. paid be ye handꝯ Will[a]m Manston the xx. daye of October . . . . . } xiij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.*

It. paid to Thomas Ovyngton be ye handdꝯ of Will[a]m Manston in Genefer next folowyng . . } xx *li.*

It. paid to be handdꝯ of Nicholas faunt . . . xx *li.*

It. paid to Dame Annes Scotte . . . . xx marke.

It. paid be ye handdꝯ of John Bullyng[(w)] ye xviij. daye of October ye iiijte yer of K. E. . . } xxv marke.

It. paid be the handꝯ of John Bollyng to John Hellis at Westmynsꝯ. . . . . } xxv marke.

md that Rekened wt the Abbot of Seynt Austyne at Cañtꝯbery the xvj daye of Decemƀ the vte yere of [k]yng Edward the said Abbot Remaynyth in dette to me . . . . . xxxiij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.*

(w) Probably one of the Boleyn family.

Ad huc Recepc̄ones Johi & expensas Jōhis Scotte post ftm natal dn̄i An° Regę quīto.

	Resseyuide of John Seyntbarbe.	xj *li.* iij*s.* ij*d.*
It.	of John Rokke . . . . . vj *li.*	*It.* x *li.* R. Hellis
It.	of the Coferrer	iij *li.* x*s.* vj*d.*
It.	of masꝑ Tresorere (Sir John Fogg, of Repton, Kent) .	x *li.*
It.	of John Belle in ꝑt of paymēt of presstę of the kynggs hovshovld wich ye hadde lent . .	xx*s.*
It.	of masꝑ Tresorere	xl *li.*
It.	of masꝑ Tresorere the x. daye of feuer be the hands of Hewe Bryse at the Tovre (Tower) .	c *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of John Seyntbarbe in ffull paymēt . .	iiij *li.*
It.	Resseyuid be John Boteller of Michel and Thoᵃs Denne in part of paymēt the xiij daye of feuer the v yere of Kyng Edward . .	xxxvij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.*
It.	of Michell and Thoᵃs Denne be a Bocher of london .	liij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	of John Barne in ffull paymēt of ferme land wich he bovgtz of me . .	iij *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of Harry Hūton fore Michelmas ꝑme anno qu to	xxxiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	Resseyuid of Harry Hūton fore Hillary ꝑme eodꝫ Anno	xxxij*s.*
It.	Resseyuid de C. p.	v *li.*
It.	Borrowid of John Aldy at london the xxvjᵗ day of Marche	xx *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of Isabele Gernyngh[a]m[(v)] in ꝑte of paymēt fore lyard Glovcetꝑ. of xj. marke . .	x mᵃr.
It.	Borowid of John Aldy	v *li.*
It.	Resseyuid of ye Coferrer for John Cheyne . .	xiij*s.* j*d.* ob̄.
It.	Resseyuid of the Coferrer fore my wages wᵗ yn covrt afore an to the first daye of Aprell An° vjᵗᵒ . .	iij *li.* xvj*s.* iii*d.*
It.	Borowid of John Croke at london	xx *li.*
It.	of ye Collectore of Kent fore John Simond . .	xiij*s.* iiij*d.*
It.	of the same fore ye fyrste meyte	xxx*s.*
	of the wich y paid to Hewe Bryse fore A Chayne of Gold	x *li.*
It.	to Thoᵃs Aldwas	xxx*s.*
It.	to Kendall	x*s.*
It.	to Ponynggs Wydow[(w)] in full paymēt of xx *li.*	x *li.*

[(v)] Isabella Jerningham, daughter of Sir Gervase Clifton, by Alice Scotte, relict of Sir John Scotte's father (William Scotte). Isabella Clifton married Sir John Jerningham, of Coffey, Norfolk, and had issue.

[(w)] Probably widow of Robert Lord Poynings, father of Sir Edward Poynings, K.G., Deputy Governor of Ireland, and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, whose marriage (with Isabel Scotte) is referred to in this MS.

to John Cletēn wife . . . . . xs.
to Gorge Brovne wife . . . . . xxs.
to Whatnell for ponynggs maȳ. . . . . vs.
to Umfrey Starkey be Vincent fynche[x] for ponynggs maȳ At ye Kynggs Hede afore the Tempill . . } vjs. viijd.
It. lent to frere Rympyngale the secūde daye of feuer . . . . . } xvs.
It. paid to my Cosyn John levkenore[y] the x. daye of feuer in full paymēt for An oblig ȳ paieble At Candelmas wher yn y was Bovnd wt Sr John foggs Sr John Cheyne and odr . . . cc marke.
It. to Vyncent ffynche to Geue to lernid men fore Ponynggs mater the xii. daye of feuer . . } xxxs.
It. paid to vyncent fynch fore my wife . . . xls.
It. paid to Willam Roos[z] be my Cosyn vynsent fynch . xxxiij *li.*
It. to Kendall fore Brynnge of lent shiffe . . . iiij *li.*
It. paid to Thos Aldwas iñ ffull paymēt for the furre and furryngs of my wife's govne . . } lvs.
It. to Robt Jaye . . . . . xs.
It. for v. payre of Bedis . . . . . xxd.
It. paid to the vicary of Sellyng in pt of paymēt fore the Vicary of Aldyngton . . . } xxvis. viijd.
It. to Mungeham of Rochesȳ for my lent stuffe of Saltfyssh the last yere passid . . . . } xiijs. iiijd.
It. paid Willam montuae for the Castelward of Estwell be his man the fyrst sondaye of lent . . } xxs.
It. paid to my wife fore the Sadellare of Assheford . . xls.
It. paid to Harry Hūton fore the Stverd schip of Welhalle (qy. Twidall) wich he was behynde in my fad Beavfytz (Beaufitz) tyme . . . . } xxvjs. viijd.
It. to Richard Inne Sergant of the Caȳe for a Govne . . . . . } xxs.
It. fore expenses oū the Arbitroris fore Ponynggs maȳ And Rewards of the Same the fyrst daye of marche Anno Regę quīto . . . . } ixs.

---

[x] Vincent Finche, of Netherfield, Sussex, a near kinsman of Sir John Scotte, and direct ancestor of the present Earl of Winchelsea.

[y] "My Cosyn John Lewknore." Sir John Scotte's son, Sir William Scotte, married Joanna, daughter of Sir John Lewknor, of Goring and West Dean, Sussex. Sir John Lewknor was beheaded 1471, after the battle of Tewksbury, and his body exposed at St. Paul's, to convince citizens of London that he was dead. (*City of London Records.*)

[z] William Roos, probably of the noble family of Roos of Dartford and Chilham, a kinsman of Sir John Scott and of Vincent Finche.

It.	paid to a man of Elth^{a}m my wode maker at Chilh^{a}m[a] in ꝑte of paymēt	vs.
It.	to John Passhele[b] at Westmynsꝑ the v. daye of Marche .	vjs. viijd.
It.	lent to John Passhele at Westmynsꝑ in the Chirche of the Abbey ther the viij. daye of Marche .	xxxiijs. iiijd.
It.	to Vincent fynche the x. daye of marche for lernid men in ponynggs maꝑ	
It.	y Gaue to Johne lybbe to here mariage . . .	xs.
It.	to Kendall at Rochesꝑ	xs.
It.	to Kendall at the fayre of Wye	xs.
It.	fore myn expenss at Gravisend	iijs.
It.	to Joñne of the Cokke in full paymēt fore Wasshyng in to ye xxvij. daye of marche . .	iijs.
It.	paid to John Aley at Canꝑbery in ffosꝑ hovs fore serteyn plate And odꝰ Stuffe bovgtz of Tho^{a}s Wymarke in ꝑte of paymēt . . .	xviij *li.*
It.	Geue to the Surgūn fore helyng of my legge . .	iijs. iiijd.
It.	to Roꝺt Jaye the xxix. daye of marche . . .	vjs. viijd.
It.	paid to Gorge Brovne for the mariage of Edward Ponnyggs[c] the last daye of marche be Tho^{a}s Blakh^{a}m in ꝑte of paymēt. . . .	xx *li.*
It.	paid to John Sanddy	xxijs. ijd.
It.	paid to Tho^{a}s Ememet	xls.
It.	paid to Roꝺt Jaye oꝰ the menes besidelymyng (Lyminge) park	ijs.
It.	paid to John Sovthflete fore Schippe at Canꝑbery . .	xs.
It.	lent to Richard ffox of Ste . . . yng (Steynyng, Sussex) be Richard and W. Knygtz	vjs. viijd.
It.	to frere Rympinggale	xls.
It.	to John Kendall	xs.
	est in vltio libro	
It.	to Vincent fynch when he Rode in to Kent . .	xxxs.
It.	to Roꝺt when he Rode in to Kent . .	xxs.
It.	to my wife the xij. daye of Maii	xs.
It.	to frere Rympynggale the xiij. daye of Maii . .	xijs. vjd.
It.	to Cotyngh^{a}m fore A mantell fore the fo Schereve (Sheriff) of Kent	vs. viijd.

---

[a] Sir John Scotte had the Honour and Lordship of the Castle of Chilham conferred upon him for life by Edward IV., as well as the Castle and Manor of Wilderton and Molash in Kent.

[b] "John Passhele" had married Elizabeth Woodville, aunt of Elizabeth Woodville, queen of Edward IV. The family of Pashley were of the Mote in Iden, Sussex, and were ancestors of the Scotts afterwards known as the Scotts of Mote. (See p. 119, *Letter of Licence Edw. I.*)

[c] The marriage here referred to is that of Sir Edward Poynings, of Ostenhanger Castle, Kent, with Isabel Scotte, daughter of Sir John Scotte.

It. to my lady Roos upon A quitans fore Chilh^{a}m fore Es^{r} ^{r}me above viij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.* fore ferme of Blakneh^{a}m . . . } xj *li.* xiij*s.* iiij*d.*

It. to Tho^{a}s Crosse to paye w^{h} men of lawe for discharge in y^{e} esscheker of ponynggs ma^{r}. } xx*s.*

It. paid to Rob̄t Walflete be John Hillis at the fare of Wye . . . . . } xl*s.*

It. paid be the John Hillis to Rob̄t Moffet fore a q^{a}r^{r} Otis (a quarter of oats) . . . . . iij*s.*

WILL OF SIR JOHN SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL.

Dated 18 *Oct.*, 1485.

Logge fo. 15. *Proved* 18 *Jan.*, 1486.

In dei noīe Amen.—I, John Scott, knight, beyng of good memory and of stedfast mynde, in the fest of Saint luke the Eūngelist, in the yer of our lord god MCCCCLXXXV., and in the yer of the reigne of King Henre the VIIth, the ffirst yer make and ordeyn this my last Will and testament in mān and forme that followith.

FFIRST, I bequeth my soule to Almighty God, our Lady Saint Mary, Saint John the Eūngelist, Saint Dionise, Saint Erasmus, Saint Xp̄ofer Egede, George, Saynt Antonye, Saint blase, Saint Katyn, Mary Magdalene, Margarete, Martha, Wenefride, barbara, and Saynt Susanne, w^{t} all the holy saints in the company of hevyn, *my body to be buried in the church of Braborn by the sepulturs of my ffader and of my moder.*

ITM. I bequeth to the *High Auter of Braborn* aforseid, and to the *High Auter* of the Chirch of *Smeth*, and to the *High Auter* of the Chirch of *Iden*, to enrich of these place for my forgoten tithis I will that eūy Auter shall have vj*s.* viij*d.*

ITM. I bequeth to the high Auters of *Orlaston*, *Wherhorn*, and *Rokinge* for my tithes forgoten to eūy of thes places I beqth xx*s.* Itm. I bequeth to the body of the *Chirch of Braborn* aforeseid xx^{ti} mark yt to be spent and bestowed therofe about such nedefull works as shalbe thought most behouefull ther at tyme at nede and to be don by the handis and discreaon of Agnes my Wiff, and by her assignes for my soule, the soules of my ffader and moder, for the soule of *Denise ffinche, my aunte*, and for the soule of Willm langhm. Itm. I bequeth to the seid *Chirch of Braborn* a *legend complete.* Itm. in like wise I bequeth to the Chirch of *Smeth* another *legende complete.* Itm. I bequeth my old legend to the *chapell of the mote in Sussex*,[d] hit to be complete. Itm. *I bequeth to the same chapell of the mote aforeseid a chalice westment with all other ornaments longing to a pste*, ther to remayn and abide as long as it may endur *w^{t} xij. acris of land ioyning to the old*

---

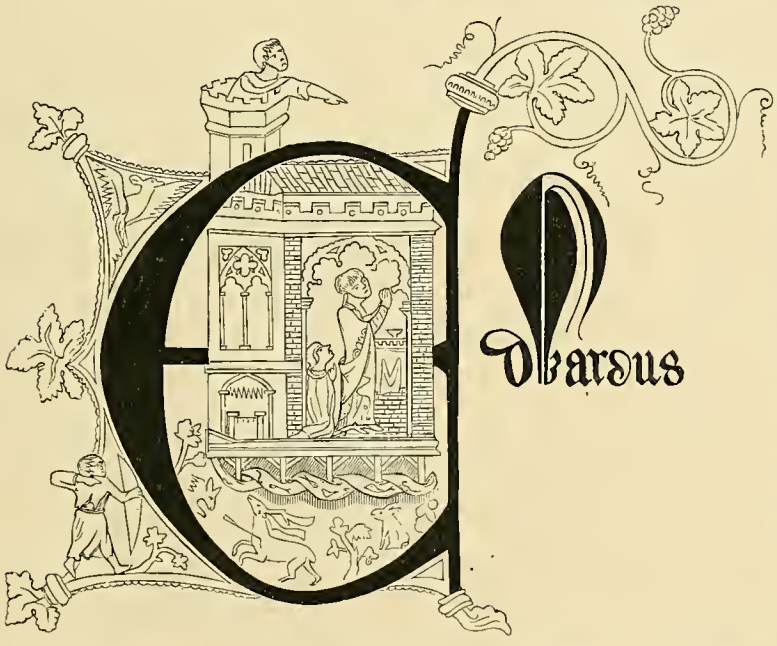
[d] The embattled and moated mansion of "Mote" in Iden (the site of which now alone remains), appears to have passed about this time, say A.D. 1440, to the family of Scott, who succeeded the Pashleys in their occupation of the castellated mansion. It is not very clear in what manner the manors of "Mote, River, and flote," together with many another manor on the borders of Romney Marsh, came into the hands of the Scotts. The manor of Evegate in

chauntry called chauntry landes lying to Hacchis Warde in the msh, and *on* that iij. acris of land be yt more or lesse lying unto the corner to Haechis land, Ware in a litell pece both msh land and upland *longing to* the *Chauntry of Rye,* as yt hath ben told me by old Watell.

Smeeth passed to that family about seventy years later by the marriage of Anne Pympe, the heiress of the Pympe and Pashley families. It is not improbable that the heiress of Orlanstone, the first wife of William Scotte, Sir John Scotte's father, may have brought many of the manors bordering on the Marsh into that family, or through his second marriage with Isabella Finche, daughter of Vincent Ffinche of Netherfield. Be this as it may, the mansion of Mote in Iden was for 150 or 200 years from this time the manorial residence of an offshoot of the direct line of the Scot's Hall family. The tower, if not the church of Iden itself, as it now stands, would appear to have been built by Sir William Scotte (son of Sir John Scotte), as his arms, impaled with those of Sybilla Lewknor, his wife, on the stone-work corbelling of the door of the tower (west front) suggest. The chapel adjoining the chancel, and known as the Pashley or Scott chapel, was likewise built, or re-built, by Sir William Scotte, and a priest maintained by him and his successors there out of certain lands called "chauntry lands," described in his father's will. There can be little doubt that in this chapel, for 150 years or more, the Scotts of the Mote in Iden were buried; but of these or any other memorial of the proprietors of the mansion, not a trace remains. Indeed, it is matter for remark and comment that the whole of the churches on the ridge or cliff overlooking Romney Marsh, are entirely bare of any memorial of an ancient character, such having, no doubt, in the course of centuries, disappeared under the hand of ignorant and injudicious restorers.

The following is a translation from the Latin of the original licence by King Edward I. to Edmund de Passeleye to build, fortify, and embattle the mansion of Mote in Iden, for so many generations the residence of the Scotts of Mote. The original is a deed, beautifully written, with seal about four inches in diameter, and now in the possession of a gentleman of the name of Pyx, the present proprietor of the Mote lands. The initial letter is facsimile and characteristic. The Pashleys were direct ancestors of the Scott family.

Letter of Licence by Edward I. to Edmunde de Passeleye to Build and Fortify the Mansion of the Mote in Iden.



EDWARDUS BY THE GRACE OF GOD, KING OF ENGLAND, LORD OF IRELAND, AND LORD OF AQUITAINE. To all bailiffs, and to his faithful subjects, to whom these present letters may come greeting. Know ye that by our special grace, we have granted and given licence for ourselves and our heirs, to our beloved and faithful EDMUNDE DE PASSELEYS, that he may strengthen his mansion of Mote, in the County of Sussex, with a wall of stone and mortar; and fortify it with battlements; and having so strengthened and embattled that mansion, to hold it to himself and his heirs for ever, without let or impediment of us or our heirs, our justiciaries, sheriffs, or other bailiffs, or of any of our officers whomsoever. In testimony of which grant we have caused these letters to be made patent. Witness ourself at York this tenth day of December, in the twelfth year of our reign (A.D. 1284).

"SIBTHORP.

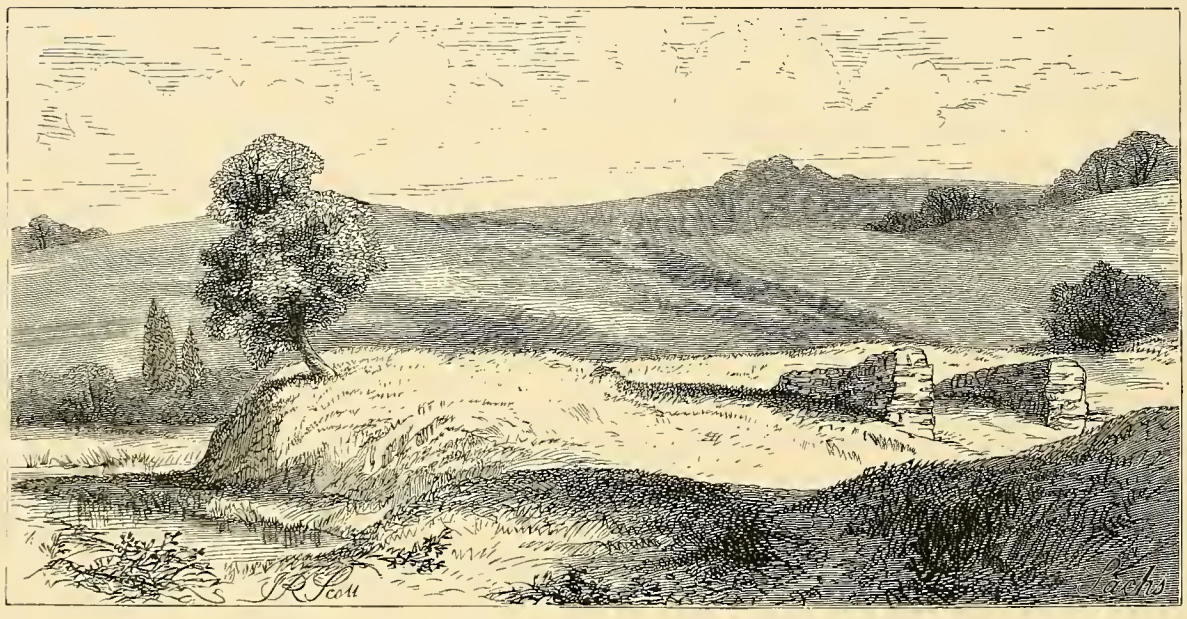
"By the King himself."

ALSO I WILL by this my last Will and Testament that *S. John Boubassall*, my p̄est, sing for my soule and for the soules aforeseid, *in the Church of Braborn* aforsed, or whersoēn my seid Wiff be or will assigne hym at her pleasur and comaundement during the space of *x. yer*, the seid S. John to have for his salary yerly of my seid Wiff, v. mark, his mete and drink, and ōn I will the seid S. John *shal have to write, make, and to complete my bokis called legendis*, bequethyn as is aforeseid. Wherfor I will the seid S. John shall have yerly the seid iij. yeris ēuy yer, xl*s*. Itm. beqeth to the *Church* of *Smeth* a gown of crymsyn veluett yt to made according to the Sute ther, and to be made after the discrecion of my seid Wiff, and all the remeunt of my gownes of silk to be made to the Worship of god, and to be occupied in the Chirehes of *Braborn* and *Orlaston* aforeseid forēn after the discrecion of my seid Wiff. Itm. I will that whēr I have in the *Secuuage of Caleis*,[e] and in

---

According to Mr. Holloway, in his "History of Romsey Marsh," the walls of the castle on the north and south were respectively 150 feet in length, and east and west, 140 feet. Between the walls and the inner edge of the mote was a space of ground all round 120 feet in width.

The mote was 360 feet square and 45 feet in width. A few years ago small remnants of stonework, probably the foundations of the tower flanking the entrance gate of the drawbridge, alone remained to mark the site. Thus "The moat remains, the mansion is no more."



SITE OF MANSION OF MOTE, IDEN, 1875.

It is asserted by Holloway that Alexander Iden, Sheriff of Kent (who slew the historically traduced and miscalled "rebel," Jack Cade, in 1450, either at Hothfield in Kent or Heathfield in Sussex), resided at that time at the Mote at Iden. This assertion is incorrect, as Alexander Iden, Sheriff of Kent, resided in the Weald of Kent, and had no connection, except by a similarity of name, with the parish of Iden in Sussex.

[e] Sir John Scotte was Marshal of Calais. Mark and Oye were lordships outside the walls of Calais, but within the marches of that town. The bequest to the House of Dovor, otherwise the Maison Dieu or Domus Dei, was probably in memory of the fact that he had served the office of Lord Warden and Governor of Dover Castle for the King (Edward IV.) Sir John Scott's shield (*modern*), with arms of his family emblazoned, are at this day in the Hall of the Maison Dieu at Dover (now the town-hall), together with those of other royal, noble, and illustrious Governors of Dover Castle and Wardens of the Cinque Ports.

Sir John Scott. *lordship of Mark and Oye,* cteyn londes as shewyth by patent to me, myn exeeutors and assign, graunted by King Edward the iiijth for the tme of LX. yer or mor, as shall apper by my seid patent at this day, be takyn by yer as farmers ther well can shew which landes with other fee simple landes that *I have of myn owen w^{t} in the seid Scunage of Caleis,* which I will and ordeyn by this my Will and testament that *the p^{r}or and covent of the House of Dovor* [the Domus Dei, or Maison Dieu] shall have yt after my deceese all such landis as is aferseid forth with my fee simple landes as is aforseid to the seid p^{r}or, covent, and ther successo^{r}s, *yerly to pay unto the King the charge of my seid patent.* And on that the seid p^{r}or, covent, and ther successo^{r}s to pay unto my Wiff and to her assignes yerly, xx^{ti} mark during the seid tme of the seid patent, *and the residue of the* pfits *of the same londes I clerly geve and bequeth to the seid hous p'or, covent, and successo^{r}s,* they yerly to have yt and peeyve yt during the seid tme of the seid patent.

ITM. *that my fee simple londes remayn to myn heires.* And I will that the *p^{r}or, covent,* and *successo^{r}s* shall yerly have the pfts of theis londes aferseid *to the re-edification and bilding of their place during the seid tme of the patent aferseid.* The seid p^{r}or, couent, and their successo^{r}s to pray for my ffader and moder, the soules of *Wilm Beufize,* squier, and *Elizabeth* his Wiff, and for the soules of *Denyse ffynch* and *Wilm Langhm,* and for all my ffrendis soules, in man and forme that followith, that is to say, the said p^{r}or, covent, and successo^{r}s shall yerly during the tme of the seid patent aferseid do for me and all the soules aferseid yerly an *obite, saying, placebo, and dirige,* and a hundred of masses in the hole yer, to be seid after the discrecion of the p^{r}or, covent, and successo^{r}s.

ITM. I will by this my testament that Agnes, my Wiff, shall haue and enioy all heir liff woute pechment of wast my *mans* called *Hall, Mede, Haiton, Orlanston, Capell,* with all other londes, rents, possessions, inheritaments, in the pishes of *Smeth, Aldington, Mshm, Stanford, Ostrynghangre, Selling, Horton the Monken, Weschirch, Newchirch, Ivechirch, Midlee, Snave, Estbrigge, Bonyngton, Herste, Borowmsh, Rokinge, Orlanston, Werhorn, Wodechirch, Shadokhst,* and *Lyminge,* my seid Wiff enioy yt tme of heir liff. Also I will that my Wiff shall make yerly wodesale at *Orlanston,* and to use yt as I have don, pviding all wey that ther be no wast of shetts or of tymber. And I will my seid Wiff shall sell no tymber of ne from none of the seid mans. Also I will by this my will and testament that my seid Wiff shall have in fee simple *all my londes in Essex in the* pish *of Est-tilberye, West tilbery,* with all such londes, rents, and tent^{s} as longith to the mans on *Senclers* as well as in demayn as in reusian to have to hir and to hir, heiris, in fee simple to geve and to sell.

ALSO I WILL by this my will and testament that *Willm Scott, my son,* shall have to hym and to his heiris all the rement of my mans, rents, londes, and tents *leying w^{t} in the sheris of Kent, Sussex, and Essex, to have to hym and to his heiris for eu.*

ALSO I WILL that my seid son Willm Scott shall have the mans of *Tatenhm* to hym and to his heiris forth w^{t} all such londes as lieth in the pishes of *Selling next to Horton-Monkyn, Orgareswike,* and *Demechirch* for eu. AND FURTHER-mor I will by this my pnt will and testament that after the decese of Agnes my seid wiff that than I will all such mans, rents, londes, inheritaments to remayn to my seid son Willm Scott and to the heiris of his body lawfully begotten, for eu, except such londes as I have befer beqthin to my seid Wiff in the shir of *Essex,* in the pishes *of Estbilbery and West Tilberye as is aforeseid by me to my seid Wiff geven to heir in fee simple to geve and to sell.*

ITM. I will that such fee simple londes as I haue geuyn to my seid Wiff in *Essex* in the pishes aferseid, for that seid londes I will that my seid Wiff shall bere the charge of the contentacion of heir moder during heir liff, and the charge of my pest during his salarye of x. yeris aforeseid.

Sir John Scott.

ITM. I will and ordeyn that Willm (William Langham), my chapelyn, take his iorney to Rome by the space of a quarter of a yer after my deeesse, and ther at Rome aferseid to sey for me *a xald celi iij. masses and to worship with prayer and offerings the cheynis of Saint Peter* ther after the disereeion of the seid Syr Willm for the most help of my soule wt other pilgremags and prayers of the seid S. Willm said and don by his discrecion, for the whieh labor the seid S. Willm shall haue to do yt my seid Wiff, x *li.* Also I will that at the eomyng home of S. Willm, my chapeleyn, *from Rome,* the seid S. Willm plesing my son Willm Scott, *he to be at the Mote* (Iden) *byding on the chauntry ther for* so long season as unto the tyme yth shall happ the seid S. Willm to be better beneficed, I will the seid S. Willm shall have yerly, xl*s.* for his ther synging and a biding, and to be paid by the handes of my seid Wiff, or by heir assignes for so long season. Itm. *I bequeth to my son Willm Scott a potell pott of Silver and on gilt.* Itm. *I bequeth to my son Edmunde Beddingfeld*[f] *a potell pott of silver and on gilt to have me in his remembrance.*

ITM. I bequeth to my son *Edward Ponyngs, knight,*[g] *a pair of gilt salts that goth aborde on my table euy day, and a potell pott of silver and on gilt.*

ITM. I bequeth to my nese *Elizabeth Gernynghm*[h] to her marriage, xx^ti^ marke, whieh shal be content heir by my seid Wiff.

ITM. I bequeth to *Joise Barry* to heir mariage, v marke.

ITM. I bequeth to *Emme Shellford,* for heir good suiee, v mark.

ITM. I bequeth to *Richard Saynt Nicholas, Giles Love, Robt Clerk, Thomas Hokys,* and *Thomas Bellyng,* myn old sunts, euieh of them to have x mark, and to be paid to by my Wiff, and I will that my seid Wiff kepe them at my coost and charge unto the tyme that they be content and paid.

ITM. I bequeth to *Thos Coleman,* my sunt, to be paid hym for his good suice, v. mark.

ITM. I bequeth to *John Eddenden,* my *Bayly,* for his good suice, vj*s.* viij*d.*

ITM. I will by this my testament that *Henry Turnor,* myn old suunt, shall have yerly during his liff, xl*s.*, to be paid hym oute of my *londes in Sussex called the* flote,[i] and the seid Henry to be content yerly by the handes of Willm Scott, my son.

---

[f] Sir Edmund Beddingfield, K.G., married Margaret, daughter of Sir John Scotte, of Scot's Hall. He built Oxburgh Hall, Norfolk, and was visited there by Henry VII. The room in which the King slept is known as the King's Room to this day.

[g] Sir Edward, last Baron Poynings, K.G., Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Governor of Dover Castle, and Lord Deputy of Ireland, married Isabel, daughter of Sir John Scotte, of Scot's Hall. He rebuilt Ostenhanger Castle.

[h] Elizabeth Gernyngham, or Jernyngham, a daughter of Sir John Jerningham, of Cossey, Norfolk, by Isabel, daughter and heiress of Sir Gervase Clifton, of Brabourne, by Isabella Finche, relict of William Scotte, of Scot's Hall. (See p. 105)

In the Paston Letters the names of Sir John Scotte, Sir Edmund Bedingfield, Sir Edward Poynings, and the Jernyngham and De Hevenyngham families frequently occur in connection with the town of Calais. Indeed, looking to the Paston pedigree, it would appear that the whole of them were connected, more or less, by marriage with that family.

[i] The manor of "flotte," a manor adjoining Romney Marsh near Rye, and known as "*Scot's float*" to this day, not improbably from Sir John Scotte, who, together with Sir John Fogge and William Hawte, as Commissioners, devised a system of drainage for the Marsh, Scot's float being a large sluice or key of the system.

Sir John Scott.

ITM. I will that my sunt *Thomas Belling* shall have, when he fallith from his labor unto age, yerly during his liff, xx*s*. a yere, to be paide him by my Wiff, and after heir deceese, if the seid Thomas on leve my seid Wiff, that than I charge my son Willm Scott to pay him yerly as is aforseid.

ALSO I WILL that *John Adam*, my sunt, shall have when he fallith from age and may not endur to labor no longer, that than I will that he haue yerly during his liff, xx*s*. a year, to be paid him by my wife, and after his deceese the said John on leving my seid Wiff that then I charge my seid son Willm Scott to pay him yerely as is aforeseid.

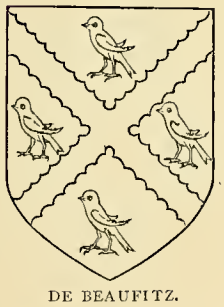
The residue of all my goodes, catalls, detts, my will pformyded and fulfilled, my detts paid, I *geve and bequeth to Agnes my Wiff, she to do therwith heir owen ffre will and disposicion,* whom I make and ordeyn myn *executrice,* with another speciall frende that yt shall please heir to have with heir as an executor if she will. And on that I *will and ordeyn my son S. Edward Poynyngs, knight,* to be . . . . . [*qy.*, supervisor or executor] of this my last will and testament, and I will that my seid son have for his labor xx mark, yt to be paid to hym at *Caleis* by the handes of *Willm Brereley,* hartly putting trust in my seid son to be the greate comforte, cher, and *aythare* [*qy.*] to my seid Wiff, my son Willm, and to all my sunts.

In Witnesse wherof, to this my last Will and testament, I have putt my seale the day of the moneth the yere of our Lord God, and the reign of the King above wretyn.

Probatum fuit superscriptm testm apud KNOLL xviij. die January, Anno dni Millmo cccclxxxvti ac approbat, etc., Et commissa fuit admstraco omii et singulor bonor, etc. Agneti relicte et execut.

(No. 16 in Ped.)

Agnes, daughter and co-heir of WILLIAM DE BEAUFITZ, of the Grange in Gillingham, Kent; wife of Sir John Scotte, of Scot's Hall.



DE BEAUFITZ.

Will dated 25th March, 1487. Buried in Brabourne Church.

ARMS.—*Argent between* 4 *Cornish choughs ppr, a saltire engrailed gules.*

Hasted, vol. iv. p. 443, has the following extract relating to this family:—"Acton Manor, in Charing, formerly the property of the noble and ancient family of Beaufitz, who resided there before they removed to Twidall in Gillingham. Robert Beaufitz held it in the reign of Henry III., and from him it descended to his grandson, Beaufitz, who about 4th Edward IV., made Twidall his residence; but Acton continued in his descendants till the reign of Henry VII., when John Beaufitz's daughter, Joane, carried it in marriage to Robert Arnold, of Sussex."

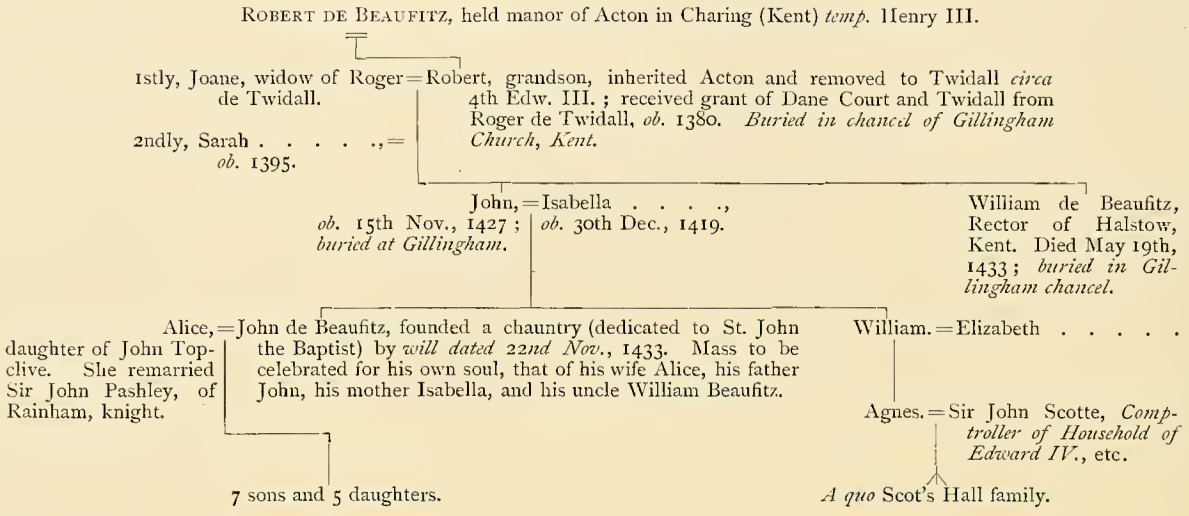
There are several monumental inscriptions to the Beaufitz family in Weever, but not to William, or Agnes, wife to Sir John Scotte.[k]

---

[k] There were formerly many brasses, memorials of the Beaufitz family, in the chancel of the church of Gillingham, and the *Registrum Roffense* contains an account of the painted glass in the windows in 1621, described as being filled with subjects from Scripture history, and the portraits of Robert and John Beaufitz, with their arms and names. A few of these brasses still remain in the Beaufitz and Twidall chapels in Gillingham Church, and a portion of the chapel in Gillingham Grange is extant, the old mansion having been taken down in 1756.

Lady (Agnes) Scott.

Pedigree of Beaufitz.


Robert de Beaufitz, held manor of Acton in Charing (Kent) temp. Henry III.
1stly, Joane, widow of Roger de Twidall.
2ndly, Sarah . . . . ., ob. 1395.
Robert, grandson, inherited Acton and removed to Twidall circa 4th Edw. III.; received grant of Dane Court and Twidall from Roger de Twidall, ob. 1380. Buried in chancel of Gillingham Church, Kent.
John, ob. 15th Nov., 1427; buried at Gillingham.
Isabella . . . ., ob. 30th Dec., 1419.
William de Beaufitz, Rector of Halstow, Kent. Died May 19th, 1433; buried in Gillingham chancel.
Alice, daughter of John Topclive. She remarried Sir John Pashley, of Rainham, knight.
John de Beaufitz, founded a chauntry (dedicated to St. John the Baptist) by will dated 22nd Nov., 1433. Mass to be celebrated for his own soul, that of his wife Alice, his father John, his mother Isabella, and his uncle William Beaufitz.
William.
Elizabeth . . . . .
Agnes.
Sir John Scotte, Comptroller of Household of Edward IV., etc.
7 sons and 5 daughters.
A quo Scot's Hall family.

WILL OF LADY (AGNES) SCOTT.

(*Widow of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall.*)

Milles, fo. xv.

Dated 25 *March*, *Proved* 4 *July*, } 1487.

In the name of God, Amen, the yer of our lord God mccccLxxxvij., I, Agnes Scotte, vidue, late the wife of Sir John Scotte, knight, being in hoole and p̄fit mynde, make my testament in this maner wise following. First, I bequeth my soule to all myghtie God, our lady seint marye, and to alle the holy companye of hevin, and my body to be buryed in the *Chirch of Brabo*r*ne*, w^t^ in the Counte of Kent, wher the body of the said S. John Scotte, my husband, lieth.

Item. I bequeth to the *high auter of the Chirch of Brabo*r*ne* for alle maner tithes by me the said Agnes forgoten, x*s*.

Itm̄. I bequeth to the *high auter of the Chirch of Smeth*, w^t^ in the said Shir, for alle man̄ tithes by me the said Agnes forgotten, vj*s*. viij*d*., and to the *paynting of the ymage of Seint John Baptist* w^t^ in the said Chirch, xx*s*., and *to the Repac̄on* of the same Chirch, xl*s*.

AND I WILL wher̄ my said husband S^r^ John Scotte gaf unto the said Chirch a large gowne of Crymisyne velwet to be disposed at my pleasur, that it be made into suche a thing or things as shalbe most expedient to the said Chirch and to the pleasur of God.

Itm̄. I bequeth to the *high auter of the parish Chirch* wherto my lond of Merwood w^t^ in Romeney merssh appteyneth to and ought of right to pay tithes for all man̄ tithes by me the said Agnes forgoten, iij*s*. iiij*d*.

Itm̄. I bequeth to the *repac̄on* of the *Chuncell* of the *parissh Chirch of Orlaston* of the goodes of Dionise Fynch and Willm Langhm, iiij *li*., and I will that the said Chirch have of my goodes toward the *repac̄on therof* for to help w^t^ the parish, xx*s*. Also I will that my gowne of Russet Velwett be made into a Cheseble and gevin unto the said Chirch to pray for my said husband, me, and all other frendis.

Lady (Agnes) Scott.

Itm. I bequeth my gowne of blewe damaske unto the *parish Chirch of Iden in Sussex.*

Itm. I bequeth my gowne of blak damaske to the *priorie of Horton in Kent,* and xx*s.* therw^{t}, to make the said gowne into an ornament for the Chireh, at the pleasur of the prio^{r} and his covent.

Itm. I will immediately aftre my decesse that myn executou^{r}s ordeyn or do to be ordeyned for me and my husband to be songe a hundred masses w^{t} in my moneth day.

Itm. I bequeth to euy poor houshalder w^{t} in the parisshes of *Smeth, Aldyngton, Braborn,* and *Bircholt,* immediate after my decesse, iiij*d.*

Itm. I bequeth to my goddought^{r}, *Thomas Pers Wife, of Braborne* aforesaid, immediate aftre my decesse, vj*s.* viij*d.*

Itm. I bequeth to my doughter Bedyngfeld[l] my bedys of goold garnisshed w^{t} the moder of perle.

Itm. I bequeth to my sonne *Bedingfeld* a Cuppe callid a spentyne garnished w^{t} silver and gilt.

Itm. I bequeth unto my said dought^{r} *Bedyngfeld* a lytill gilt standing cuppe which my lady of Burgoyn[m] gaf unto me, and countpoyne of fyne verdure wrought w^{t} silk in flowers.

Itm. I bequeth to *John Bedyngfeld*[n] a Tabulet of goold, with a evistope and a dyamond pin.

Itm. I bequeth to *Elizabeth Bedyngfeld* a Rynge of goold w^{t} a Turkes.

Itm. I bequeth to *Marie Bedyngfeld* a Rynge of goold with a Saff^{r}.

Itm. I bequeth to *Agnes Bedyngfeld* ij. chased pecis of silver pcelle gilt, w^{t} a earyng, a maser vj spones of silver, a pair bedys of corall, a ffederbed, w^{t} the bolster, ij. pillowes, and ij. pair of Gentilmen shetis, a hedde shete, a countrepoynt of verdure according to that hir moder shal-have a gilt girdell with a corse of Tawny damaske, a dyap tableeloth, a dyaper towell, vj. copaynes of diaper.

Itm. I bequeth to Joys Barrye a goode ffederbed, w^{t} a bolster, a payre of blankettis, a coverlitt of Tapestrie of xxx^{ti} flemyssh elles, a payre of gentilmen shetes, ij. payre of yeomen shettis, and a flatte pece of silver.

Itm. I bequeth to Thomasyne, my sunt, a ffederbedde w^{t} a bolster, a paire of blanketts, a couyng of blewe for a bedde, a playne table cloth, a large playne towell, and v. marc in stling money for hir mariage.

Itm. I bequeth to Margerie Pantu my sunt, a matas w^{t} a bolster, a pair of blankets, a paire of shetis, and a couyng for a bedde.

Itm. I bequeth to Margaret Bylborowe, xx*s.*

Itm. I bequeth to Elisabeth the doughter of William Turno^{r}, late the wife of Robert William, now being at Wittershm, xiij*s.* iiij*d.*

---

[l] Margaret Scott (Sir John Scotte's daughter) married Sir Edmund Bedingfield.

[m] "My Lady of Burgoyne," wife to the Duke of Burgundy (afterwards Charles, Emperor of Germany), to whom Sir John Scotte was sent by Edward IV. as ambassador, on the occasion of the espousals of the Princess Margaret (Edward's sister) to that prince.

[n] "John," "Elizabeth," "Marie," and "Agnes Bedyngfeld," probably children of Sir Edmund Bedingfield, of Oxburgh Hall.

Lady (Agnes) Scott.

Itm. I bequeth to Anne Hevnyngham,[o] *late the dought of* Thomas Yarde, a little standing cuppe, dought to my *sister* Gray.[p]

Itm. I bequeth to lytill John Scott my p'imar coued with blewe velwett.

Itm. I bequeth to my doughter Elizabeth Ponyngs,[q] vj. chased cuppes of silver with those that she hath in hir handes Redye, ij. standing cuppes oon gilt, and the other silver peelle gilt which she hath redye in hir handes, a basin of silver, with the Ewer which she hath, a pair bedes of goold, a standing cuppe gilt with a Greyhound in the bothome, which *the Duke of Burgoyne* gaf unto my husband, a carpette, alle the stuffe of household w^t^ in my place of Halle, as well as brasse peantie bedding and all other instroments of houshold which she occupieth daily, except suche instruments and things as appteyneth unto my said place of old tyme as standeth fast, as tables, ledes, brasse pots, and suche things as be resued unto me in certyn chmbers I resue those things in myn owen hand.

Also I bequeth unto my *said doughter poynyngs,* iiij. werking oxen w^t^ alle maner husbandrye, as well Waynes, courtes, cartis, wheles, Plowes, harnes therto belongyng which she occupieth at Halle.

Itm. I bequeth to my *sonne William Scotte,* my grete newe bedde of arras, with the counterpoynt, dowble valaunce, iij. curteyns of silk, and all man things unto the said bedde according complete, also a grete federbedde of downe, with the bolster therto belonging, a garnisshe of new peawtrie vessell complete, a grete latyn chafer, with a lydde for to hete water, vj. of my best . . . . of arras, ij. carpets, a masse booke, a chalis, ij. grete gilt saltes of the old fassion, which be my best ij. pottis of silver, peell gilt, vj. *Gobbelethy's* of silver peell gilt, a playne gilt cuppe standing, a grete standing gilt cuppe chassed, a standing gilt cuppe playne like a belle, a pax brede of siluer and gilt, a spentyne garnisshed with silver and gilt, vj. flat playne peas, with the ij. that he hath in his owen handes redy. And if it fortune *my said sonne William* to decease, as oure lord defende, afore the issue of his body lawfully begoten, That thenne I will that alle the said stuffe afore relievsed by me the said *Agnes Scotte,* to him bequethin Remayne unto his said issue. Except by any misse advente of the world or trowble which of grete necessite must nethis compelle the said *William* to shift and help him silf with the said goodes. And if it fortune the said Issue to desayce afore the said *William,* That thenne I wil that he dispose and do with the foresaid goodes as he shall seeme best at his owen pleasur and will.

---

[o] "Anne Hevnyngham" (or Hevenyngham), niece to Sir John and Lady Scotte, daughter of Thomas Yarde, of Denton, near Elham in Kent, by Joan, daughter of William Scotte, of Scot's Hall. She remarried Sir Henry Grey, of Ketteringham, Norfolk. Anne married Thomas de Heverynghan, of Ketteringham, and was buried with her husband in the church there, and in which the brass of Sir Henry Grey and his lady existed a few years ago, if not at this day. (*For Pedigree of Yarde, Hevenyngham, and Grey, see Biography of Yarde,* p. 128.)

[p] "My sister Gray." Joan Scotte's second husband was Sir Henry Grey, of Ketteringham (his first wife). The inscription underneath the brasses in Ketteringham Church, to Sir Henry Grey and his second wife, runs as follows: "*Here lyeth Syr Henry Grey, the sonne of Syre Thomas Grey, of Heton, and of Jone, his wyf, that was systere to the Duke of Norfolk, that dyed at Venis, and Emma, the wyf of the foresaid Syr Henry Grey, the daughter of William Appleyard, of the said county of Norfolk, Esquyre, on whose soules God have mercy.*" Between each figure are the arms of Brotherton impaling Grey. *Gules, a lion rampant and a bordure engrailed argent.*

Sir Henry Grey probably died without issue by either of his wives, as Ketteringham passed, after his death in 1492, to Thomas Hevenyngham, who had married his stepdaughter.

[q] "My doughter Elizabeth Ponyngs." Isabel, or Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Scotte, was wife to Sir Edward, last Baron Poynings. He was Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Governor of Dover Castle, and Lord Deputy of Ireland. He resided at Ostenhanger Castle, about four miles from Scot's Hall.

Lady (Agnes) Scott.

And the residue of all my goodes, cataillis, and dettis whiche I have in the world aboue alle my bequests afore relievsid, And all my forsaid husbandys will and myne trewly pformed and donne, and bothe o^{r} dettis content and paied, I geve unto *my said sonne William Scotte*, to have and enioye to his ppre use and pleasure, Whane I make and ordeyne myne Executo^{r}.

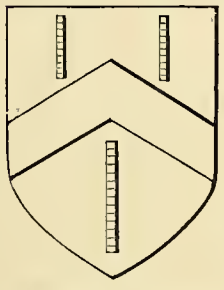
Wretyn the xxvth day of Marche, the yere of our Lord Jħu Criste M.cccclxxxvij.

Probatum iiij. die July, anno supradicto (1487), per Willmus Scotte, fil. and execut.

(No. 17 in Ped.) **Thomas Scotte,** fourth son. Died *s.p.*

(No. 18 in Ped.) **Margaret Scotte,** eldest daughter.

(No. 19 in Ped.) **Thomas Earde,** or **Yarde,** of Denton Court and Manor, near Elham, Kent, probably a son of John Yarde, of Denton, Sheriff of Kent, 19th Henry VI. (1441).



DE EARDE, OR YARDE.

ARMS.—*Gules, a chevron between* 3 *measuring yards, argent.*

The manor of Denton, near Elham in Kent, formerly belonged to this family, as well as that of *Tappington* in the parish of *Denton*. These were held by knight's service of the Honour of Chilham Castle, and of watch and ward of Dover Castle.

John de Earde paid an Aid at the making of the Black Prince a knight, and for one fee which *John de Earde* and *Henry de Tappington* held at *Tappington*. *John de Earde* was likewise a Commissioner for draining and embanking Romney Marsh in 18th year Edw. III. (1345). *Simon de Earde* was appointed Custos in Wat Tyler's rebellion, 1381. (*MSS. Book of Knights' Fees by Ciriac, Petyt, Fœdary of Kent; Arch. Kantiana,* vol. iii., p. 83.)

The Earde family likewise held lands in Surrey, and were buried in Cheam Church in that county.

The manor of Denton passed from the Yardes by the marriage of its heiress to the Langleys of Knowlton, and their heiress carried that estate to the Peytons of Norfolk and Cambridgeshire, of whom Sir Robert Peyton died seized of it 10th Henry VIII. It was for a short time in the possession of Mrs. Cecilia Scott, of Canterbury, of the Scot's Hall family, from whom it passed to Lord Clive), and thence to Lady Markham. The old Manor House (in which Mrs. Scott sometime resided at end of last century) has since been pulled down.

The Rev. Thomas Barham (of "*Ingoldsby Legends*" renown) at one time owned this manor, which he has rendered famous by his Legend of the "Spectre of Tappington."

(No. 20 in Ped.) **Joan Scotte,** youngest daughter. Married, 1stly, to Thomas Yarde, of Denton Court, Kent; and, 2ndly, to Sir Henry Grey, of Ketteringham (Norfolk); by the latter of whom she had no issue.

Thomas Yarde.

Pedigree of Yarde, Hevenyngham, etc.

John Yarde, Sheriff of Kent 1441; died 1449; *buried at Cheam, Surrey* (*Lysons*). = Anne . . . . . ., died 1453; *buried in Cheam Church* (*Lysons*).

See Surrey Archæological Collections, vol. iii., p. 339.

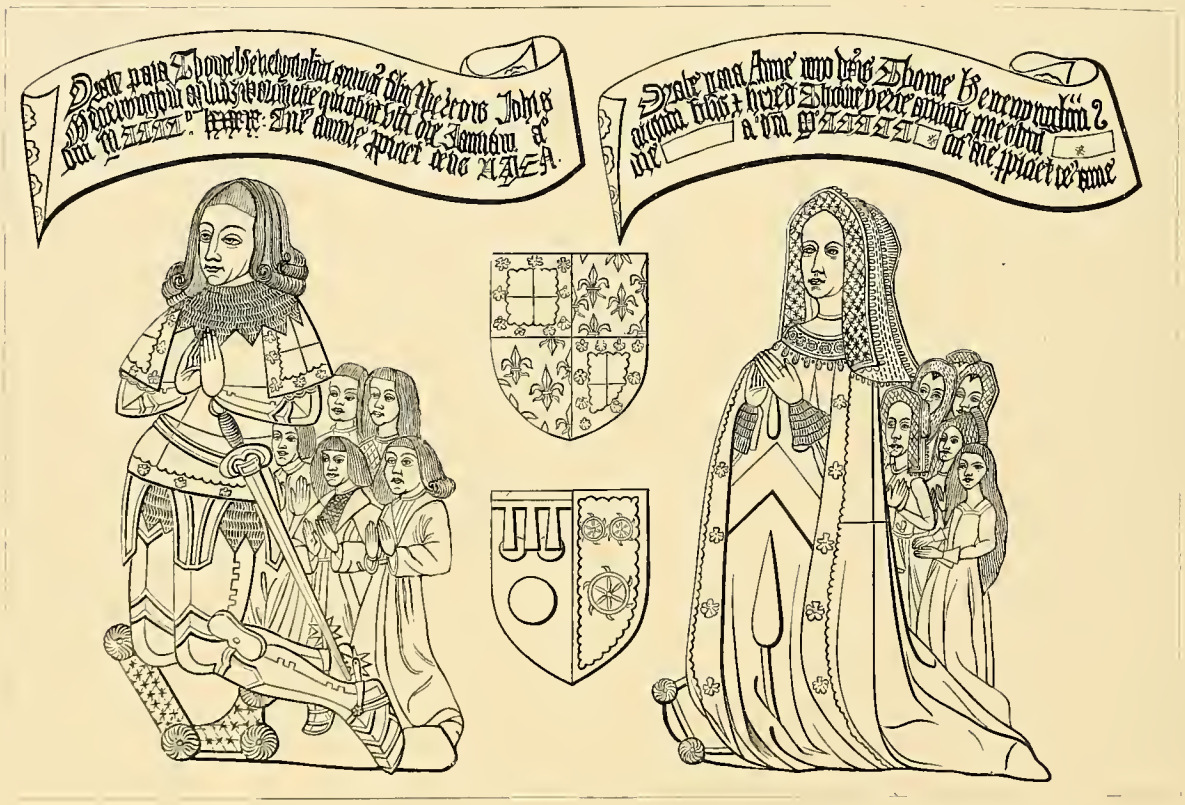
Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Redisham. = Sir John de Hevenyngham, Eques Auratus of Heveningham, Suffolk; *ob.* 31 Henry VI.

Arms of Hevenyngham quartering Redisham on the Hevenyngham brass. (*See below.*)

1stly, Thomas Yarde, of Denton Court, Kent, *whose mother is said to have been a Courtney* (*Harl. MSS.* 1560, *f.* 1296). = Joan Scotte, daughter of William Scotte, of Scot's Hall, Kent. = 2ndly, Sir Henry Grey, of Ketteringham, son of Sir Thomas Grey, by a sister of the Duke of Norfolk. (*See inscription on brass in Ketteringham Church*). Sir Henry Grey remarried Emma, daughter of William Appleyard, of Norfolk, Esq. Died, *s.p.*, 1492.

Anne Yarde, daughter of Thomas Yarde; carried the manor of Ketteringham to her husband, on the death, in 1492, of Sir Henry Grey without issue by either of his wives. (*See engraving below.*) = Thomas Hevenyngham, of Hevenyngham, Suffolk, first of family settled at Ketteringham, Norfolk. Was in the retinue and a great favourite of Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester. *Buried at Ketteringham.* (*See engraving below.*)

Five sons. Six daughters.



ENAMELLED BRASS REPRESENTATIONS OF THOMAS HEVENYNGHAM AND HIS LADY IN KETTERINGHAM CHURCH, NORFOLK.

Ketteringham Church in Norfolk contains one of those beautiful canopied tombs so common at the end of the fifteenth century. In the recess beneath the canopy are the representations on enamelled brass of Thomas de Hevenyngham and his Lady. The surcoat of the former displays his

Anne Yarde. arms, which likewise figure in one of the shields impaling those of his mother, a Redisham. The kirtle of the lady is supposed to represent the chevron between the three measuring yards (for Yarde), but the charge has more the appearance of bulrushes than anything else. The lower shield, viz., three roundlets or torteaux, with a label of three points, is unquestionably the arms of a member of the noble family of Courtney (*Earls of Devon*); but how, except with heraldic licence, it is found impaling the arms of Scott cannot be explained, as no record exists of such an alliance either in the Courtney or Scott pedigrees. The scroll over the figure of the male has the following inscription :—

Orate p aīa Thome Hebenyngham armigi filii et heredis Johis Hebenyngham, militis et banneritti, qui obiit ulti die Januarii ann. M°CCCCLXXXXIX° Cuj aīme ppiciet Deus. Amen.

On the scroll over the head of the female figure:—

Orate p aīa Anne nuper uxoris Thome Hebenyngham armigi filie et hered Thome Yarde, armigi, qui obiit, die a° dñi M CCC. Cuj ppiciet Deus. Aīe.

The family of Hevenyngham, of Hevenyngham, Suffolk, was of great antiquity in that county, and traced their descent to Walter de Hevenyngham, seated in that parish before the Conquest. The family is now either extinct or no longer connected with the county. A great deal of ink has been shed in endeavouring to reconcile or make clear, firstly, the proper charges on the lady's kirtle in the Ketteringham brass illustrated above; and, secondly, in the attempt to account for the arms of Courtney impaling those of the Scot's Hall family, also represented there. Recent research in independent quarters has established the fact almost beyond dispute, that the grandmother of Anne de Heveningham, on her father's side, was a member of the noble family of Courtney. Still the impalement of Scott with Courtney would appear to be a complimentary heraldic licence which may have been customary in the fifteenth century. The will of Lady (Agnes) Scott, printed in this work, throws considerable light on the connection of the families of De Hevenyngham, Yarde, Grey, and Scott, still leaving their connection with the Courtneys a matter of doubt. The clause in the will particularly relied upon runs as follows (see p. 126):—

"Item. I bequeth to Anne Hevenyngham, late the doughter of Thomas Yarde, a little standing Gilt cuppe, doughter to my sister Grey."

Anne Yarde's mother, Joan Scott, having remarried for her second husband, Sir Henry Grey, of Ketteringham, and he after her death marrying Emma, daughter of William Appleyard, of Norfolk, but leaving no issue by either of his wives, Ketteringham passed from him, by gift, to his step-daughter, Anne de Heveningham, daughter of his first wife by her first husband, Thomas Yarde. A little further on in our Biography we may refer to a theory that this family of Appleyard of Norfolk were afterwards connected by marriage with the Scot's Hall family, and thus a near relation of the unfortunate Amy Robsart, wife to Lord Robert Dudley, the celebrated Earl of Leicester. But we anticipate. *The authorities cited in connection with the relationship of the families above mentioned, and the seeming inconsistencies in the heraldic display on the De Heverynghan brass, are, Blomfield (Hist. Norfolk,* vol. v., p. 91); *Cotman's Brasses, Norfolk and Suffolk,* vol. i., p. 28; *Miscellaneous Tracts of Norfolk Archæological Society,* vol. iii., p. 284; *Surrey Archæological Collections (extract by William Warwick King, Esq.),* vol. iii., p. 339; *Suckling's History of Suffolk; and Harl^n MSS.,* 560, f. 1296.

(No. 21 in Ped.) **Michael Scotte,** second son of William Scotte, of Scot's Hall.

(No. 22 in Ped.) **William Scotte,** third son of William Scotte, of Scot's Hall.

This William Scott, third son of William Scotte, of Scot's Hall, would appear to have settled at Stapleford Tany in Essex, and to have been the progenitor of the family of that name at Stapleford, Woolstan Hall, in Chigwell, Essex, and of Lytchett Minster in Dorsetshire, and elsewhere.

As before observed (p. 91), the manor of Chigwell, etc., passed to William Scott, through the De Warrens and Fitzalans, in similarity of descent to the manor of Evegate in Smeeth, to the elder branch of the Kentish family. At all events, the manor of Woolstan in Chigwell passed by grant of Henry VII., in the beginning of his reign, to William Scott, on the attaint of John Howard, Duke of Norfolk (*Jocky of Norfolk*), slain at Bosworth Field, 1485.

The titles of Richard Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel, with the Arundel and certain other estates (restored to him 4th year Edw. IV.), passed, by his marriage with Eleanor, daughter of Henry Plantagenet, Earl of Lancaster, to his son Thomas, Earl of Arundel; whilst Evegate in Smeeth, Kent, and Chigwell in Essex would appear to have passed to his representatives and descendants by his first wife, Isabel, daughter of Hugh le Despencer the younger. The pedigree illustrating the descent of the manor of Evegate, Smeeth, by marriage to the Scotts of Scot's Hall, will be found in this Biography, and, to some extent, will serve to exemplify the claim that William Scott may thus have had to the manor of Woolstan in Chigwell, and who by the payment of a fine, on the attaint of the Duke of Norfolk, may have obtained from King Henry VII., the grant of this manor, as a representative claimant, in accordance with the custom of those times.

The account of the manors of Stapleford Tany, and Woolstan in Chigwell, as well as the interesting pedigree of the Scotts of Woolstan, commencing with this man, will be found in *Morant's History of Essex*, vol. i., pp. 169, 180.

William Scott held at time of his death, Nov. 3, 1491, the manor of Woolstan, with its appurtenances, of the King in *capite* by knight's service, and the manors of Stapleford Tany, Howsham or Oversham Hall, Langtons, and St. Margaret's Inge, all in Essex. He also, in accordance with the almost universal practice in those days, on leaving his father's roof and becoming possessed of extensive lands, adopted arms differing from his paternal coat. The heralds, however, of that day retained the tinctures of sable and argent, a distinguishing feature in the arms of the Kentish Scots. (*For arms of Scott of Chigwell and their descendants, see* p. 91.)

(No. 23 in Ped.) **Sir William Scott,** of Scot's Hall, K.B., eldest son and heir of Sir John Scotte.

High Sheriff of Kent, 1491, 1502, 1515, and 1517.

Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Constable of Dover Castle.

Sir William Scott, like his father, was a gallant soldier, engaged in the warlike incidents of those stirring times. Having been a Yorkist in his predilections, we find him, in common with many others, receiving a pardon, in 1485, from Henry VII., for all political and treasonable offences committed by him during previous reigns, and especially that of Richard III., styled by the King in the deed of

Sir William Scott.

pardon as "*De facto sed non de jure*," King of England.[a] He was in the retinue at Calais of King Henry VII. in 1500, and afterwards rose in favour with King Henry VIII., with whom he was frequently in personal attendance, as will be shortly shown by numerous extracts from the State Paper Records. He was by that monarch appointed to the highly responsible office formerly held by his father as the Deputy of King Edward IV., of Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Constable of Dover Castle. He frequently held the appointment of High Sheriff of Kent, and was included in many and various Commissions in connection with civil matters relating to the county, or military or naval services under the King. There have been few men of this family more distinguished than Sir William Scott, whose possessions and influence in his native county were unbounded. His arms appear on the north transept of Canterbury Cathedral, and in the window of that transept (usually known as Edward IV.'s Window), in which this is now almost the only coat remaining, the others having disappeared when the stained glass throughout the cathedral was more or less destroyed in Parliamentarian times. A tradition exists in the Scott family that the very beautiful gate of Christchurch, adjoining the cathedral, was built, in 1517, by six Kentish knights, whose arms formerly appeared in a succession of square compartments, together with those of royal and noble personages then living. Of these Kentish men the arms of Sir Henry Guldeford, K.G., Comptroller of the Household of Henry VIII.; Sir William Scott, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle; Sir John Fineux, Lord Chief Justice of England; and Sir Edward, Baron Poynings, K.G., Deputy Lord Keeper of Ireland, and afterwards Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports undoubtedly existed on the Christchurch gate within a comparatively recent period, thus giving consistency to the tradition in question. But these, in common with the other distinguished royal and noble badges, have now perished by the hand of time. A short account of the heraldic shields on this gate, as they appeared about a century ago, may be gleaned from MS. 162 in Bib. Soc. Antiq. Lond.

Of memorials of this distinguished Kentish man that now exist, we may mention the ornamental corbels of shields supported by angels, with the arms of Scott and Scott impaling Lewknor (see p. 80), that now appear in the stonework of the west door in the tower of Iden Church, Sussex, which he doubtless rebuilt, as its architecture exactly corresponds in style to that of the end of the fifteenth or commencement of the sixteenth centuries. The same arms, impaling Lewknor, not many years ago also existed in the stained glass of the church of Appledore. But these, together with so many memorials in the churches on the ridge overlooking Romney Marsh (the manors in which they were situate having been for so many generations the possessions of the Scott family) have now disappeared.

It may not be considered out of place here to record our belief that the beautiful little chapel, now partly in a ruinous condition, attached to the remains of the residence of the ancient family of De

---

[a] The occasions for this pardon (which will be found more at large among the Scot's Hall Deeds and Records) not improbably refer, firstly, to the retaking Bodiam Castle, Sussex, from the Lancastrians, for which duty a commission, of which Sir William Scott was a representative, was appointed in the first year of Richard III. (see p. 133); and, secondly, to his complicity, in the year 1483, with the Kentish rising, headed by the Duke of Buckingham, of Penshurst, against Richard III. This Kentish army, amounting to 5000 men, assembled under the Duke of Buckingham, was disbanded, and the Duke beheaded. A letter from the Duke of Norfolk (Jockey of Norfolk, slain by the side of Richard III. at Bosworth) to John Paston thus refers to the Kentish rising:—

"Ryght welbeloved frynde, I commaunde me to you. It is soo that the Kentysshmen be up in the Weld (*Weald of Kent*), and say that they will come and robbe the Cite, which I shall let (hinder) if I may."

See Fenn's *Paston Letters*, vol. ii., p. 314, second edition; and Furley's *Weald of Kent*, vol. ii., part 1, p. 406.

Sir William Scott.

Horne, and known as Horne's Place, in Appledore, was built by Sir William Scott. The architecture is of the Perpendicular style, and most beautiful and unique of its kind, especially the clunch or Tottenhoe stone mullions of the three windows, as seen from the interior, which are wonderfully light and graceful in proportion and tracery. The corbels (also in clunch, or fine chalk) which support the shafts of a very beautiful wooden roof, bear alternately the Catherine wheel (the Scott badge), or the horse-shoe (the badge of the De Ferrers family), suggesting the not improbable descent of the manor of Appledore to Sybilla Lewknor, wife to Sir William Scott, in direct blood descent from the Countess of Athol (buried at Ashford), a daughter of Henry Ferrers, Lord of Groby. It may be remarked that there are few chapels of this period now in existence of better type than the Scott chapel at Horne's Place, Appledore, the present residence being but a tithe, in size, of the ancient mansion that in bygone days occupied its site. Tradition states that a subterranean passage of upwards of a mile in length formerly furnished a communication between Horne's Place in Appledore and the manorial residence of the same name in Kennardington, and which, like its namesake in the adjoining parish, is still in existence, although shorn of its fair proportions, and degenerated to a farmhouse residence.

As the manors of Appledore, Warehorne, and Kennardington were alike the possessions of the family of De Horne, and after them of the Scotts, it is not improbable that the two residences named after the former were inhabited by kinsmen, and during the Wars of the Roses maintained a common subterranean communication. Be this as it may, the flagged flooring in the crypt or undercroft of the Horne's Place chapel has in one spot a peculiarly hollow sound, suggestive of a vault or subterranean passage below; a speculation which time and opportunity may some day set at rest.

Of memorials which no longer survive relating to Sir William Scott and other contemporaneous coadjutors in State affairs, may be mentioned the elaborate stained glass that, within the present century, graced the windows in many of the rooms and in the hall of the College at Ashford, founded (*circa* 1475) by Sir John Fogge, Treasurer of the Household of Edward IV.[b] In the large windows of the hall, interspersed with representations, in stained glass, of trees, birds, and beasts, were seven coats representing respectively the royal arms (Edward IV.), together with those of the De Criols (*formerly lords of Ashford*); Sir William Scott, or Sir John Scott, his father; Sir John Fogge impaling Hawte (*for his second wife, Alice, a daughter of Sir William Hawte and Joan Woodville aunt of the Queen*); Cardinal Pole, and two other coats unknown. In addition to which, in the Parlour (a portion of the wing of the college now taken down) were represented, in stained glass, the badges of Henry VII. (viz., *the red and white rose*) and of the Princess Mary (*a pomegranate*), suggestive of her descent from the royal family of Spain, together with the arms of Fogge, Scott, Poynings quartered with Brian and Fitzpayne, the Royal arms, those of Archbishop Warham (*gules, a fess, or*), Dr. White (Sir John Fogge's confessor), Darrell, Engham, and Archbishop Kemp. In fact, most of the windows in the college, within

[b] This college (a portion of which survives, serving as the Vicarage, adjoining the churchyard of the beautiful church of Ashford) was, together with the church, founded by Sir John Fogge, the devoted adherent and personal friend of King Edward IV. That king granted a charter to him of lands in Kent, Essex, and Sussex for the maintenance of the vicar, two chaplains, and certain secular officers, charged with the celebration of a daily service, for the welfare of the King, George Archbishop of York, Sir John Fogge, and Alice, his wife, during their lives, and afterwards for the benefit of their souls, *and of those of certain of the King's subjects belonging to the County of Kent, slain in defence of his title at the battles of Northampton, St. Albans, and Sherbourne.* The death of the King, and the misfortunes of the founder and his family, in succeeding reigns, prevented the completion of Sir John Fogge's design, and the college was probably dissolved in Henry VIII.'s reign, when chauntries were suppressed. (See Rev. A. J. Pearman's *Hist. of Ashford.*)

Sir William Scott.

the period of a century, were ablaze with stained glass, of a date and style now becoming extremely rare, from the rage for restoration and modernization that has unfortunately prevailed during this century, and is scarcely abated at the present day, to the destruction of ancient landmarks, historic links, and artistic display that can never be replaced or reproduced.

Sir William Scott rebuilt Scot's Hall *circa* 1491. It is stated by Philipott to have been at that period in a ruinous condition. Sir William Scott served the office of Sheriff (1491-2) in the mansion lately rebuilt, at that time one of the most magnificent manorial residences in Kent, and probably equal in extent to Knowle or Penshurst, the latter of which mansions would appear to have been rebuilt about the same period, replacing, as in the case of Scot's Hall, an earlier feudal residence. So similar are the architectural features and general elevation of Penshurst of the present day to our representation of the second Scot's Hall, as to induce a belief that they were built about the same period, and not improbably by the same architect.

About this period Scot's Hall was frequently the temporary abode of royal and distinguished persons arriving at or about to embark from ports on the east coast of Kent, on their way to or from Canterbury or London, on pilgrimages, or visits to the monarch or other distinguished personages. Thus, in 1523 the Princess Cecilia[c] slept at Scot's Hall on her way from Hythe to Canterbury, on a visit to King Henry VIII.

EXTRACTS FROM SCOT'S HALL AND PUBLIC RECORDS.

Pat. Rot. (29) 1 Richard III. (1483).

A commission issued (Nov. 8th, 1483) to Thomas, Earl of Surrey, Sir John Broke, Sir Thomas Echingham, William Scot, Richard Lewknor of Brambletye, Thomas Oxenbridge of Brede, and Vincent Vinche (Ffinche), to levy men in Kent and Sussex *to retake the castle of Bodiam from the rebels.*[d]

Sir William Scot was in the retinue of Henry VII. when the King, and Elizabeth of York, his wife, landed at Calais on May 8th, 1500, in company with the Duke of Buckingham, the Earls of Surrey and Essex, and Lord Daubeney, then Lord Lieutenant of the Town and Marches of Calais.

In *Rymer's Collection*, vol. xiii., p. 265 (1509), there appears a Commission dated from Knoll, 29th Sep., 1509, addressed to Sir William Scott and James Dygges (*Diggs family, of Barham, and afterwards of Chilham, Kent*), directing them to take the musters at Dover of "*le crewe*" of 100 persons, about to be sent to Calais under the conduct of Sir John Pecche (*of Lullingstone Castle, Kent*), knight of the king's body-guard.—(*Pat. 1st Hy. VIII.*, p. 1 *en* 18 *dor.*; and *Chronicles of Calais*, p. 214.)

The *Chronicles of Calais* inform us that on May 22nd, 1514 (6th Henry VIII.), there landed at Caleys the Lord Burgavenny, the Lord Dawbeney, Lord Clinton, Ser John Raynfforthe, Ser William Scot, Ser John Scott, his sonne, Ser Edward Guldeforde, Ser Henry Gilforthe, dyvars Esquiers and gentylmen, and men of warre, to the number of vm. The Lord Burgayny was chefe capitaine of all.

In pursuance of treaty, March 19th, 1519, Sir William Scott was appointed to attend King Henry VIII. at Calais, and at the Field of the Cloth of Gold on the occasion of the King's interview with Francis I., King of France, together

---

[c] "The Princess Cecilia;" either Cecilia, the aged, unmarried daughter of Edward IV. and Elizabeth Woodville, his queen, or a daughter of Charles V. of Spain; most probably the latter.

[d] The castle was taken from Sir Thomas Lewknor (a very near kinsman of Sybella Lewknor, Sir William Scott's wife), and dismantled. With its moat, tower, bridge, and embattled walls, the castle is one of the most picturesque ruins in Sussex at this day. It, with the manor of Bodiam, was for many generations possessed by the Lewknors, and was built by their ancestor, Sir Edw[d] Dalyngruge, by licence of King Rich[d] II., in ninth year (1386) of his reign. The castle surrendered May 24th, 1484, and has never since been restored or rebuilt, although Sir Thomas Lewknor's attainder was afterwards reversed.

Sir William Scott.

with Sir Edward Guldeford (*ancestor of Lord Guildford Dudley, who married Lady Jane Grey*), Sir Henry Guldeforde, Reginald Pympe (*father-in-law of Sir John Scott*), Sir Thomas Boleyn (*father of Lady Anne Boleyn, Queen of Henry VIII.*), and others.—(*Calendar State Paper*, vol. iii., part 1—1519 to 1523.)

On May 24th, 1522, Sir William Scott, with Sir John Scott (his son), Sir John Fogge, Sir Henry and Sir George Guldeford, were appointed to attend upon the Lord Legate at the meeting of Henry VIII. and the Emperor Charles V. of Spain at Dover.—(*State Papers*, vol. iii., part 2—1519 to 1523.)

The following is an abstract of letter (see *State Papers*, vol. iii., part 2, dated Oct. 29th, 1522):—

"Warham (Archbishop of Canterbury), Lord Cobham (*probably Lord-Lieutenant*), Boleyn, and Sir John Norton (*subsidy Commissioners for Kent*) to Wolsey.

"On receipt of the Commission for providing against the landing of enemies in these parts, we wrote to the ports and towns along the coasts and to the persons appointed by the Commission, and next day to the Warden of Dover, to warn the Cinque Ports, according to custom.

"To-day the undersigned, with Sir William Scotte, Sir John Fogge, and Sir William Hawte, the Commissioners named in the said commission, have written to the said Warden to order the Ports to send out vessels by day and night to descry the enemies' ships and give warning to the nearest port; and then to fire the beacons and send word to the Commissioners.

"We have appointed Sir William Hawte, who lives near Dover and Sandwich, Captain of the Coasts between those towns, and of the men in ten hundreds near. John Briggs, Alderman of Canterbury, and Thomas Hardess (*qy. Hardres*) will lead those from Canterbury to Hawte. The Archbishop and Prior of Christchurch will send out, when needed without delay, their servants and tenants to Hawte, reserving a few to defend the church. Sir William Scotte, Sir John Fogge, and William Kempe (*of Olantigh, Wye, Kent*) are Captains of twelve hundreds near Hythe, Fulstone (*Folkestone*), and Lydde. Sir John Norton (*of Sheldwich*) and Sir William Crowmer, of the town and hundred of Faversham, to aid Sir William Scotte, Geo. Guldford, and Alexander Culpeper, of *Le seven* hundreds and two next to them; Antony St. Leger, ——, Wotton, Jasper Tirel, and John Cromer, of the hundreds of Maidstone and three next; Lord Cobham, of the city and hundred of Rochester and seven others; Sir Thomas Bullayne, of the hundred of Tunbridge and five others; Sir John Wiltshire, of three hundreds next to his house; and John Crispe (*Quex Park*), of the Isle of Thanet of four hundreds.

"The Captains shall resort to the hundreds allotted to them, and CERTIFY the Archbishop of the number of men within ten days. If a landing is attempted during this they shall come with what men they can; every captain and petty captain having his standard, the number of which may deter the enemy from landing. The captains could not keep their retinues at the coast, and the men could not keep themselves, and therefore they adopt the above plan. There is a Clerk of Posts between them and Wolsey and the coast.[*]

"To, etc., my Lord Cardinal of York, Legate de latere."

In August, 1523 a subsidy for four years, in aid of the anticipated war with France, was granted, and the following gentlemen were appointed Commissioners in Kent for its collection, viz.,—Sir Thomas Boleyn (*Hever*), Sir Henry Guildford (*Hemsted*), Sir Thomas Neville, Sir Henry Wyatt (*Allington Castle*), Sir William Scotte (*Scot's Hall*), Sir Edward Neville, Sir William Haute (*Hautsbourne*), Sir John Fogge (*Repton and Ashford*), Sir John Scotte (*son of Sir William*), John Hales (*of Canterbury*), Alexander Culpeper (*of Bedgebury*), William Kempe (*Olantighe*), Robert Sandys, Anthony St. Leger (*of Ulcomb*), Richard Wotton (*of Boughton Malherbe*), William Whetnal (*of Hextals in East Peckham*), Robert Engcham.

Sir William Scott died August 24th, 1524, and was buried with his forefathers in *Brabourne Church*, where his monumental brass and inscription now exist. (See p. 45.)

---

[*] Henry VIII. about this time had concluded, through Wolsey, an offensive alliance with Spain and the Pope against Francis I. of France. Wolsey stipulated that the King should, the following summer (1522), invade France with 40,000 men: such was the political change of sentiment in three years towards France, whose king had been fêted by Henry VIII. with unparalleled pretension and profuseness at the Field of the Cloth of Gold, so termed from its magnificence, involving the ruin in estate of many of the nobility and commoners in attendance on the King on that occasion.

Sir William Scott.

WILL OF SIR WILLIAM SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL.

Bodefelde, fo. 29.
Test^{m} Willi Scotte milit.

In the name of God, Amen. The first day of August in the yere of our Lord God a thousande fyve hundred and xxiiij^{ti} I, Sir Willm Scott, knight, beyng hole of mynde and of parfite remembraunce, thanked be Almighty Jesu, make and ordeyn this my present testament in maner and fowrme folowing, that is to say —

First, I bequeth and recomende my soule to Almighty God, to our blessed lady saint Mary the Virgin, and to all the saints in hevyn, And *my body to be buried in the parishe churche of Braborne in the countie of Kent.*

Item. I geve and bequeth to the mariage of *every of the doughters of Sir John Scott, knyght,* nowe and at the day of my decesse, beyng unmaried, xlvj *li.* xiij*s.* iiij*d.*, to be paid to everey of them at the day of their said mariage, or as soon after as it can or may conveniently be levied acurding as I have recyted and declared my mynde therof more at large in my last Will of my lands, and noon otherwise. And if it happen any of the said doughters of the foresaid *Sir John Scott* to decesse before she or they be maried, Than I will that the part of her so decessed shall cesse, and nothing to be paid thereof.

The residue of all and singular my goods, catalls, and detts aboue not bequethed I geve and bequeth to Dame Sybell, my entirely beloved wife, she to take, retayn, and dispoase the same goods and catalls at her own frewill and libertie to hir propre and only use, as she shall thinke best. The whiche Dame Sybill, my wife, I make, ordeyn, and constitute of this my present testament my sool executrix by these prents. These being Witnesse :—Sir Willm Hawt, *knyght,* Sir John Scott, *knyght,* John Hales, *esquier,* Willm Kemp, *esquier,* Edward Scott, *esquier,* Willm Petite, John Smyth, and other.

Ulta voluntas.
Euisdm Willi.

To all true cristen people to whose notice this present writing shall come, William Scott, *knyght,* gretyng in our Lord euerlasting, Knowe ye me the said *William Scott,* in the first day of *August* in the yere of our lord god *a thousande five hundred and twenty and foure,* and in the *xvj. yere of the Reign of King Henry the VIIIth,* with good deliberacon and aduice to have made and declared, and by this presents make and declare this my last Will of the disposicion of all my maners, londes, and tenements in the *Counties of Kent, Sussex, and Essex* in this maner and forme that followeth.

Ffirst I will that all such persones as nowe be or hereafter shall be seased or enfeoffed in any maners, londes, and tent^{s} in the said Counties or in any parte or pcell thercof, their heires and assignes, during my life naturall shall stande and abide therof seased to my only use w^{t} out impechment of wast. And that the said persones and feoffees as is abouesaid, their heires and assignes, after my decesse shall stand and be seased of and in the said mano^{rs}, londes, and tenements, and eny parcell therof, to the uses and entents in this my present Will declared as followeth.

First I will that all persones as nowe be seased or infeoffed to my use and in the *Mano^{rs} of Brabourne, Combe, Halle, Tattenham,* and *Hamme next Sandwiche,* with the appurtunes in the *Countie of Kent,* and of my landes and tenements called *Armynards* and *Tattenhm* in the *same Countie,* and of and in all other my londes and tenements, rents, and seruics in *Smeth, Braborne, Hastinglygh, Wye, Ham next Sandwiche, Eastry, Norborne,* and *Betteshanger,* and eleswhere in the lats of

Sir William Scott.

Saint Avstens and Hedling in the *Countie of Kent*, and of and in the *maners of Ligh, otherwise called the Mote Ryver, and the flote*, with the appurtences in the *Countie of Sussex*. And of and in all my other londes and tenements, rents, and services in the *Countie of Sussex*. And of all and in my *manors of Estylbrery, otherwise called Seintcleers, and Olde Halle and Berkyslande in the Countie of Essex*, or of the reusion of the same manors of *Oldehall* and *Bekeslande*, when it shall fall. And of and in all my other londes, tenements, rents, reuersions, and seruics in the *countie of Essex*, their heires and assignes, immediately from and after my decesse shall stande and abide thereof, seased to thuse of *Dame Sybill*, my best beloued *Wife*, during her naturall lyfe. The same *Dame Sybell* paying therof yerely during hir lyfe at foure most usuall termes of payments in the yere by evyn porcions unto *Edward Scott, my sonne*, twenty mres the woods and underwoods of and in the said maner of *Lygh, otherwise called the Mote Ryver and flote*, and of and upon the said other londs and tenements oonly from the said *Dame Sybell* excepted.

And also I will that the said *Dame Sybell* shall paye and charge hirself to paye of and for the profits of the said *Manors of Braborne and Combe*, clxxv *li.*, that is to sey therof to the *mariag of eny* of Alice, Kateryn, Elizabeth, Mary, Sybell, *doughters of* Sir John Scott, *knyght*, xxxv *li.*, that is to say thereof yerely, during the terme of fyve yeres next after my deeesse at the feasts of Easter and Saint Michell, by evyn porcions therof, xxx *li.*, and in the sixt yere after my decesse at the said feasts, by evyn porcions, xxv *li.* And yf any of the said doughters happen to decesse before she be maried, then the payment of hir so dying unmaried to cease and not to be paide. And yf the same *Sybill* happen to dye within the said terme of vi. yeres, Then the said Sir John Scott to be charged wt the payment, and to paye the saide sumes which shalbe so due and ought to be paide after the deth of the same *Dame Sybell*.

And I will that all such persones as nowe be seased or infeoffed of and in the said *Manor of Hamme next Sandwiche*, wt thappurtnes in the said *Countie of Kent* and of my other londes, tenements, rents, and seruces, with the appurtnes *in Hamme next Sandwiche, Estry, Norborne*, and *Betteshanger*, or elleswhere, in the said *lasts of Saint Augustens and Hedlyng* in the said *Countie of Kent*, And of and in the Manour of *Eastilbure*, otherwise called *Saint-cleere*, wt thappurtennes in the Countie of *Essex*, their heires and assigns, shall from and after the decesse of the said *Dame Sybell*, and in the accomplishement of the joynto[r] to Alice, *daughter and one of the heires of* Thomas Fogge, Esquire, to her by me graunted atte tyme of consumacn of mariage betwene her and *Edward Scott, my sonne*, whiche mariage by godd's grace shalbe accomplisshed, shall stande and be seased of the same manors, londes, and tenements, to the use of the said *Edward* and *Alice*, and of the heires male of the body of the same *Edward* begotten. And yf it shall happen the said *Edward* to dye, lyving the same *Dame Sybell* and also the same *Alice*, Then I will that the said feoffees, their heires and their assignes, shall immediately after and from the decesse of the said *Edward*, stande and be seased of the said *Manours of Hamme* and *Eastilbury*, otherwise called *Saintclers*, and of and in the said lands and tents in *Hamme, Estry, Norborne*, and *Betteshanger*, or *elleswhere* within the *said lasts of Saint Augustenes and Hedlyng*, in the Countie of Kent, to thuse of the said Alice during her lyfe. And after the decesse of the same *Dame Sybell* and *Alice*, and the longer lyver of them both, to thuse of the heire males of the body of the said *Edward* begotten, the said use therof to the said *Dame Sebill* for terme of hir liffe, to the contury before expressed notwithstanding.

And I will that my feoffees that nowe be seased or enfeoffed of and in my said *Manours of Braborne, Coombe Hall*, and *Tatenhm*, with thappurtennes, and of and in my said lands and tents called *Armynards* and *Tatenhm*, and of and all other londs and tents in *Smeth, Braborne, Wye, Hastyngleigh*, their heires and their assignes, shall immediately from and after the decesse of the said *Dame Sebill*, my Wife, stand and abyde therof seased without any estate or estates therof to be

Sir William Scott. executed to thuse of Sir John Scott, *knyght, sonne and heir apparaunt of me,* the said *Sir William Scott,* and of the eldest heire male of his body lawfully begotten, and beyng heire at the comon lawe, and so from oon his eldest heire male to the other next and eldest heire male of his body comyng after the course of the comon lawe of this Realme as longe as the said *Sir John Scott* shalhave any heire male of his body comyng. And for defaute of heire male of his body lawfully begotten, to thuse of the said Edward Scott, and of the heires male of his body lawfully begotten.

And I will that after the decesse of the said *Dame Sybell,* all such psons that nowe be seased or enfeoffed of and in the said *Manors of Lygh,* otherwise called the *Mote Ryver and flote,* wt thappurtennes, and of and in the *Manor* of *Oldhall* and *Beskysland,* and the reusion thereof, wt thappurtennes, and of and in all other my lands, tents, reusions, and seruies, wt th'appurtennes, in the said counties of *Sussex* and *Essex,* the said *Manor of Estilbury,* wt th'appurtennes as is aforewilled, only except shall stande and be therof seased to thuse of the said Edward Scott, and of the heires males of his body lawfully begotten to thuse of the said Sir John Scott, and of the heires males of his body lawfully begotten.

And I will that all suche psones as nowe be seased and enfeoffed of and in the *manors, lands,* and *tents* called *Gulles, Hayton, Carpentersmersh,* and *Shrymplynden,* with thappurtennes in the *countie of Kent,* theire heires and theire assignes, shall after and from my decesse stand and abide seased therof to thuse of the said *Sir John Scott, knyght,* and Dame Anne, *his Wife,* and the heires males of the body of the said *Sir John Scott* lawfully begotten, and for defaute of heire male of the body of the said *Sir John Scott* begotten to thuse of the said *Edward,* and of the heires males of his body begotten.

Also I will that such persones as now be seased or enfeoffed to my use of and in the *Manours of Orlanston,* and *Merewood,* with thappurtennes in the said *Countie of Kent,* and of and in all my lands and tenements in *Orlanston, Rokyng, Brenset, Sevyngton, Midley, Lyde, Olde Rumey,* and *Bromehill* in the said Countie of Kent, and of and in all such my other londes and tenements, wt thappurtennes in the *lath of Shepway and Sherwynghopp* in the *same Countie* whiche be *not* in this my present will otherwise willed neither assigned, their heires and assignes, shall immediatly from and after my decesse stande and be seased therof to thuse of the said *Sir John Scott,* my sonne, and the heires males of his body lawfully begotten, and for the faulte of heire male of his body begotten, to thuse of the said *Edward Scott,* and of the heires males of his body lawfully begotten.

And I will the said *Sir John Scott* shall paye of thissues revennues and profits of the said *Manor of Orlanston* and *Merewood,* lviij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.*, that is to say, to the *mariages of* euy of the said Alice, Kateryn, Elizabeth, Mary, and Sebill, *his doughters,* xj *li.* xiij*s.* iiij*d.*, that is to say, therof yerely during the said fyve yeres next after my deceas, x *li.* at the feasts of Easter and Saint Michell tharchanngell, by evyn porcions. And in the said sixt yere after my decesse, at the said feasts, viij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.* And yf it happen any of the said doughters to decesse before they shalbe maried, then the said payment of her parte sease and not to be paide. And yf the said *Sir John Scott* make defaulte in payment of his parte of any of the said sumes of money which ought by him to be paide as is abouesaid to the mariage of his said doughters, Then I will my said feoffees, their heires and assignes, of and in my said *Manours of Orlanston* and *Merewood,* shall make Woodesales and levye the sumes of the woods and underwoods, and all other issues and profits of the said Manors of Orlanston and Merewode, and aswell therof paye the labour, costs, and charges of the same feoffees and their assignes aboute their busynes in the same.

And further, I will that my said sonnes, *Sir John Scott* and *Edward Scott,* and either

Sir William Scott. of theym, and theire heires males of theire bodies comyng, shall and may assigne reasonable porcions for Joyntours of suche manors, londs, tenements, remaynders, and reusions as to them severally be assigned, or to them shall come in use according to this my present Will, to suche persones as they or any of them shalbe maried unto, and to be had to euy suche persone only for terme of hir lyfe after the decesse of hir husbonde. And the said feoffees therof seased, theire heires or theire assignes, shall stande and be seased to thuse of that maners, londs, and tents, so to be assigned for any joyntor after the decesse of the husbonde, any clause or article in this my present Will to the contrarye notwithstanding.

And I will that noon estate by the feoffees in any of my manours, londs, tents, Reucions, or seruics, their heires or their assignes, shalbe executed by my said sonnes, neither to their heires males of theire bodies comyng. But the same manors, londs, and tents shall stande and abide in feoffement to the uses aboue said. And when and as often as it shall happen the said manors, londes, and tents, or any parcell therof, to be in the possession or seasin of oonly two of the feoffees nowe beyng, or whiche hereafter shallbe seased therof, as survyvors to the other feoffees, then and so often those two psones so beyng seased by survivors shall enfeoffe xii. or mor to thuses and intents of this my present will. And I will that euy of the said two feoffees so making the said estates at suche tyme as the newe feoffement therof shalbe so made shall have for their labour in that behalf aboue the costs and charges of license of the kynge for the alienacions where licencs ben requisite to be had, vj*s.* viij*d.*

Also I will that either of my said sonnes shal at such time as they shal be by me or by the same *Dame Sebill* required, mak and enseall such writings of graunts, confirmacions, ratificacions, and couenants as shall be aduised by the councel of me the said *Sir Willm Scott* and *Dame Sebill,* or either of us, which shall or may be more further assurance to the performanns of this my present Will, and to the uses and entents thereof. And yf the said *Sir John Scott* for his parte shall refuse so to doe when he shalbe thereunto lawfully required, Then I will that the said *Edward* shalhave the profits of the said *Manors of Orlanston* and *Merewode,* and londs and tents in *Mydley, Lyde, Olde Romey,* and *Promehill* unto suche tyme as the said *Sir John Scott* have and shall enseall, subscribe, and deliuer the said writings, so to be aduised. Also in like maner yf the said *Edward Scott* refuse for his parte to doo when he shall be therunto lawfully required, then I will that the said *Sir John Scott* shall have the said xvti mares to said Edward assigned, as is aboue-said during the lyfe of the said *Dame Sebill,* and after her decesse the said Manors of *Lygh,* otherwise called the *Mote Ryver and flote,* until the said Edward shall have ensealled, subscribed, and delivered the said writings.

Also I will that every of the sade *Dame Sebill,* during her lyfe, and *Sir John Scott* and *Edward Scott* shalhave the euidences, court rolls, and wrytyngs concerning the said maners, londes, and tenements seuerally to them to be deliuered according to their titles and uses to them as be therof before to them assigned at such tymes as they and every of them shall and according to this Will ought to have the profits of the said manors, londs, and tenements.

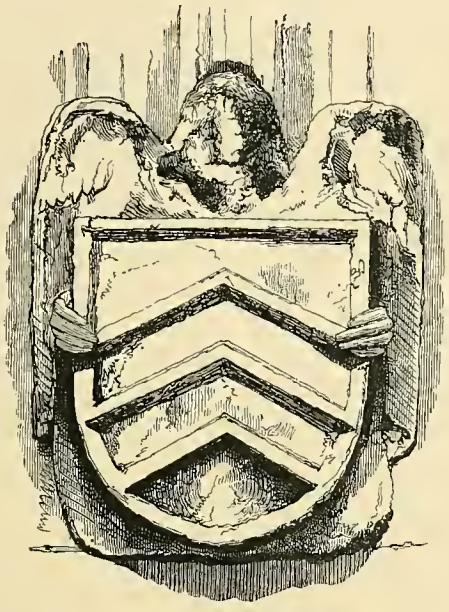
Thise witnesse, *Sir William Hawte, knyght, Sir John Scott, knyght, John Hales, Esquier, William Kempe, Esquier, Edward Scott, Esquier, William Petite, John Smyth, and others.*(f)

(f) "Sir William Hawte" married Joan Woodville, daughter of Sir Richard Woodville, of the Mote, Maidstone, and as such she was aunt to Elizabeth Woodville, Queen of Edward IV. Sir William Hawte was a connection by this marriage of Sir John Scott, whose wife, Anne Pympe, was, through her mother (Elizabeth, daughter

Sir William Scott.

Probatum fuit testamentum prescripti defuncti . . . cum . . . . . voluntati eiusdem coram prefat̄ comisarys in ecclea Cath dni Pauli Londin primo die mensis February anno dni millmo quingentesimo xxiiij. jurament Domine Sibelle Relicti et executricis inhonor testo noiat In psona Edwarde Scott, etc.

(No. 24 in Ped.) **Sybilla Lewknor,** daughter of Sir John Lewknor, knight, of Goring and West Dean in Sussex, wife to Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall.



ARMS OF LEWKNOR, FROM WEST DOOR, IDEN CHURCH, SUSSEX. (*See* p. 80.)

Will dated August 4th, 1528. Buried, as her will directs, in the monastery of the Whitefriars Observants at Canterbury.

ARMS.—*Azure, three chevrons argent.*

The eminent knightly, but now extinct, family of Lewknor was at this period one of the most influential in the county of Sussex. It came originally from Gretworth in Northamptonshire, and was in direct descent from Sir Nicholas Lewknor, Keeper of the King's Wardrobe 50th Henry III., who died in 1268. In the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries this family probably possessed more extended possessions and manorial residences than any other in the county, the Earls of Arundel and Norfolk perhaps excepted. The pedigree of the ancestry of Sir John Lewknor (*father of Sybilla, wife to Sir William Scott*) furnishes a list of ten knights in lineal succession from Sir Nicholas above mentioned. (*See Vincent's "Sussex," Coll. of Arms.*)

Old Gerard Legh, in his *Accidens of Armourie* (quoted by Mr. Marc Antony Lower, F.S.A., in his pamphlet on the "Castle of Bodiam and its Lords"), speaking of the three chevrons as a cognizance, says in reference to the Lewknor coat:—"The ancestour of this coat hath builded three great houses in one province;" the chevrons being regarded amongst heralds as emblematical of rafters, suggestive of a love for building. The Lewknors, however, as Mr. Lower suggests, had more than three great houses in Sussex. They possessed in that county, besides several minor mansions, the principal seats of Bodiam Castle, Goring, Dedisham, Stanstead, Sheffield, Brambletye, Trotton, West Dean, and Preston in Binderton, together with the manors of Bodiam, Camois Court, Wanyngore, Dalyngruge, Iford, and Old Park in Roughey (Horsham), besides lands in Kent, Middlesex (South Mimms), Oxford, Norfolk, Northampton, Leicester, and Huntingdon. But notwithstanding their great wealth and ubiquity, they as a family may now be said to be extinct, a circumstance we may probably trace to their misfortunes during the

---

and heir of John Pashley), a direct descendant of Sir Richard Woodville above mentioned, grandfather of the Queen.

"John Hales," at this time one of the Barons of the Exchequer and a Kentish man; afterwards Lord Chief Baron.

"William Kempe," of the family of Kempe, of Olantigh, Wye, Kent.

Sybilla Lewknor.

Wars of the Roses, and the not less calamitous conflicts in Parliamentarian times, in the attempt of Sir William Waller to root out the name of Lewknor in Sussex, so intimately connected was that name in the seventeenth century, with the royal cause in that county. At an earlier period, however, the Lewknors had been zealous partizans during the disastrous Wars of the Roses, as we find members of the same family in array in arms on the opposite sides of York and Lancaster. Thus, Richard Lewknor, of Brambletye House, and his brother, Sir Thomas, of Binderton, as Yorkists, adhered to the cause of the usurper, Richard III.; whilst their nephew, Sir Thomas Lewknor, of Bodiam Castle, was of the Lancastrian party, and as such, was attainted of high treason in 1483, the first year of Richard III.'s reign, for having, after the landing of the Earl of Richmond, assembled men-at-arms and made traitorous proclamation in October of that year at Maidstone, Rochester, Gravesend, and Guildford, in company with Sir George Brown, of Betchworth Castle, Sir John Guildeforde, of Rolvenden, Sir John Fogge, of Repton and Ashford, and others. (*Rot. Parl.*, iv., p. 245 *b*). In consequence of this a Commission was issued on 8th November following, addressed, amongst others, to Sir William Scott, to levy men in Kent and Sussex, to "retake the Castle of Bodiam from the rebels."[a] (See p. 133.)

Sir John Lewknor, brother of Sir Thomas Lewknor, of Bodiam Castle, and father of Sybilla Lewknor, the subject of our memoir, was, like the rest of his family, in the profession of arms. He was slain at the battle of Tewkesbury on 4th May, 1471, and as he was proclaimed after that battle, he would appear to have fought on the side of Henry VI. This assertion is made on the strength of the following extract, culled from an interesting letter of the 9th May, 1471, from the Mayor and Citizens of London in reply to a letter of request of the 8th May from the Lord Falconbridge, requesting passage for his host through London, and repudiating the idea that he had any intention to rob the city:—

"Moreover, Sir, we have received a proclamation sent from you, in the which among other articles we understand that you, by the commandment of Henry, late King of this realm, Margaret, late Queen, and Edward, late called Prince (*Edward, Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester*), by the advice of the Earl of Warwick (*the Kingmaker*), whom ye suppose to be alive, as we been informed and other ye be ordained, Captain of the Navy of England, and men of war both by the sea and the land. Right Worshipful Sir, we marvel greatly that ye being a man of so great wisdom and discretion should be deceived by simple sayings and feigned tales. We certify you upon our worship and truth that both the said Edward, late called prince, and the Earl of Warwick have been slain and dead, for we know for certain not only by the report of men of credence, both of this city, but by others which were with the said Earl of Warwick on the field (*Tewkesbury*) when he and his brother, Marquis Montague, were slain, but also by open lying of their bodies in the church of Pauls by the space of two days, which many of us did see and understand for certain to be the bodies of the said Earl of Warwick and Marquis, also, Sir, the said Edward late called Prince, the Earl of Devonshire, Lord John Somerset, Lord Wenlock [*John, Lord Wenlock, whose wife was a Scott, of the Scot's Hall family*], Sir Edmund Hapden, Sir Robert Whittingham, *Sir John Lewknor*, John Delves, with others, who were slain upon Saturday last past at Tewkesbury, and the Duke of Somerset, Lord of St. John's, Sir Gervase of Clifton [see p. 105], Sir Thomas Gresham, with others, who to the number of 12 persons been taken and beheaded on Monday last past, as we been certainly informed at Tewkesbury aforesaid, where God gave our Sovereign Lord the King Edward IV. the victory," etc., etc—*Extracted from Journals City of London, Guildhall* (A.D. 1471, No. 8, fol. 4*b*, 5, and 5*b*.)

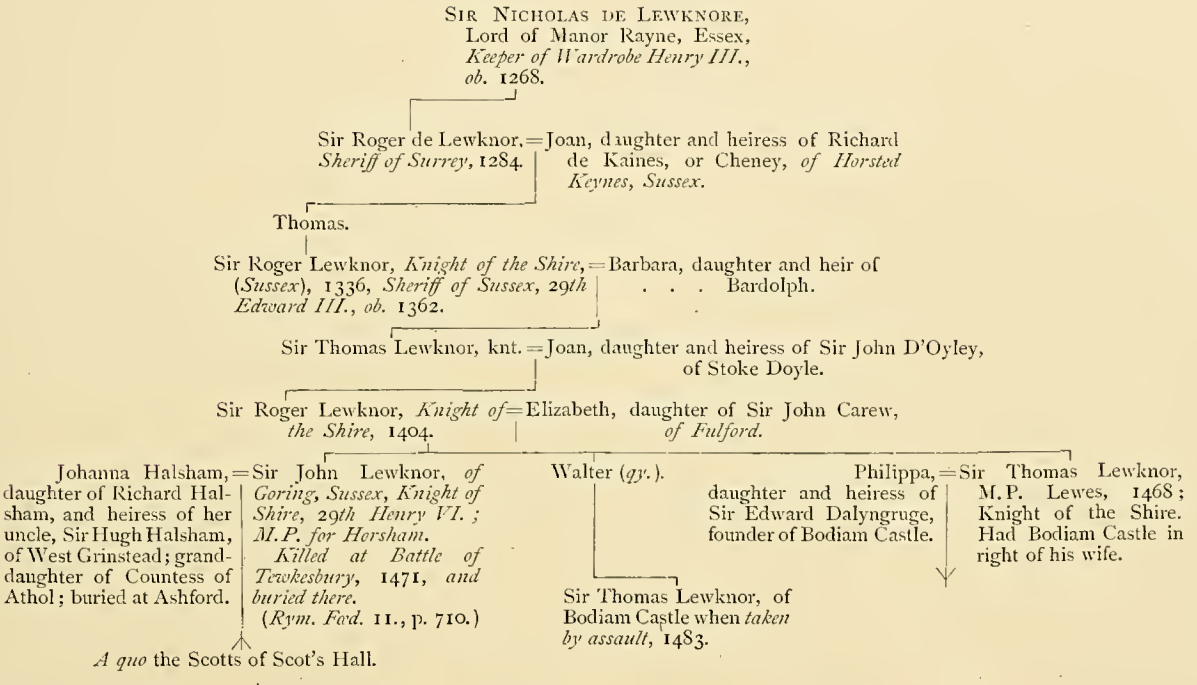
There can be little question that Sybilla Lewknor carried to her husband, by marriage, certain lands in Sussex and Kent: to wit, in Appledore, Iden, and probably elsewhere in the neighbourhood of

---

[a] The field with earthworks in the immediate vicinity of the castle, known as the "Gun-battery field," suggests the point at which, in 1484, the fortress was taken by assault. It was never again rebuilt, although the attainder of Sir Thomas Lewknor was subsequently reversed.

Sybilla Lewknor. Romney Marsh, and that the manors of Stophams, Stevens, *alias* Poundes, in the barony of Bircholt, passed at this time to the family of Scott in a similarity of blood descent (see p. 23), through that lady, from the De Valences, Comyns of Badenoch, Duchess of Athol, and Halshams, as their more important manor of Brabourne. The manor of Brabourne would appear, however, to have passed, through the trustees of Sir John Lewknor (in right of his wife, Joan Halsham), to Sir John Scott, previous to the marriage of his son with Sybilla Lewknor, who nevertheless brought to her husband large manorial possessions, as above stated.

LEWKNOR PEDIGREE. (*Sussex Archæological Collection, vol. iii., p. 92, and M. A. Lower's "Bodiam Castle and its Lords."*)


Sir Nicholas de Lewknore, Lord of Manor Rayne, Essex, *Keeper of Wardrobe Henry III.*, *ob.* 1268.
Sir Roger de Lewknor, *Sheriff of Surrey*, 1284. = Joan, daughter and heiress of Richard de Kaines, or Cheney, *of Horsted Keynes, Sussex.*
Thomas.
Sir Roger Lewknor, *Knight of the Shire*, (*Sussex*), 1336, *Sheriff of Sussex*, 29*th* *Edward III.*, *ob.* 1362. = Barbara, daughter and heir of . . . Bardolph.
Sir Thomas Lewknor, knt. = Joan, daughter and heiress of Sir John D'Oyley, of Stoke Doyle.
Sir Roger Lewknor, *Knight of the Shire*, 1404. = Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Carew, *of Fulford.*
Johanna Halsham, daughter of Richard Halsham, and heiress of her uncle, Sir Hugh Halsham, of West Grinstead; granddaughter of Countess of Athol; buried at Ashford. = Sir John Lewknor, *of Goring, Sussex, Knight of Shire, 29th Henry VI.; M.P. for Hersham. Killed at Battle of Tewkesbury*, 1471, *and buried there.* (*Rym. Fœd.* 11., p. 710.)
A quo the Scotts of Scot's Hall.
Walter (*qy.*).
Sir Thomas Lewknor, of Bodiam Castle when *taken by assault*, 1483.
Philippa, daughter and heiress of Sir Edward Dalyngruge, founder of Bodiam Castle. = Sir Thomas Lewknor, M.P. Lewes, 1468; Knight of the Shire. Had Bodiam Castle in right of his wife.

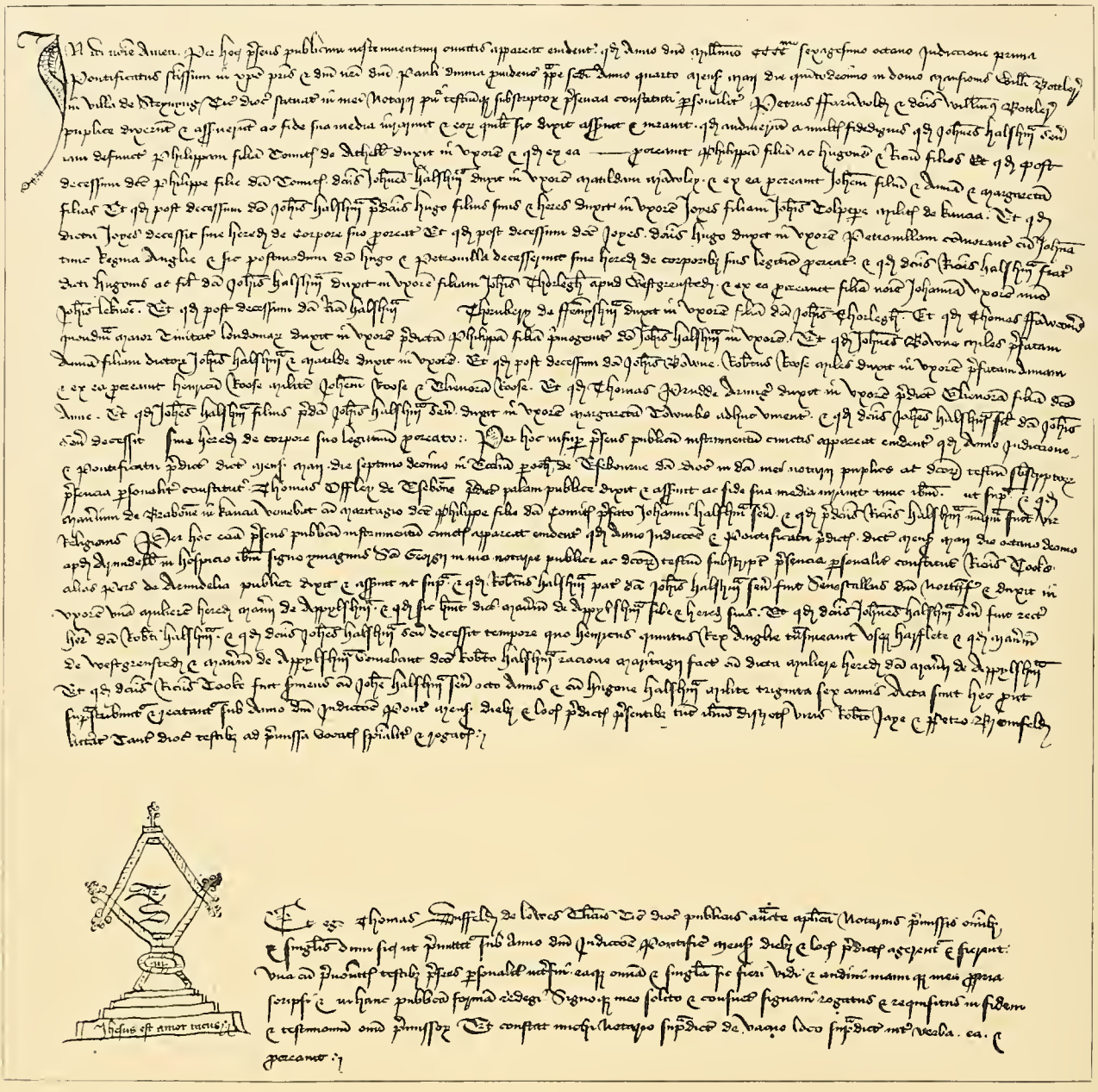
The Lewknors were entitled to quarter the arms of *Dalyngruge, Tregoz, Folyott, Camoys, Bardolph, Grandison, Echingham, Braose, Hussey, D'Oyley, Goring, Poynings*, and *Halsham*.

We insert here an interesting notarial instrument, from *the Scot's Hall Records*, which purports to be the "Petigre," or Pedigree, of Sir Hugh Halsham, knight, in relation to his manor of Brabourne, Kent.

By the marriage of Sybilla Lewknor (whose mother, Joanna Halsham, was sole heiress of her uncle, Sir Hugh), the Scotts derive a descent from the De Valences, Comyns, Baliols, Athols, and Strathbolgis, which to the descendants of Sir William Scott is matter of considerable interest, apart from its historical value, and the amount of genealogical information it in other respects supplies.

Halsham Deed.

The facsimile is an exact copy of the original deed or instrument, but reduced in size one half, and rendered by photo-zincographic process.



7 Edw. IV. 15 May, 1468.

A Translation of the above notarial instrument, endorsed, "*The Examinacon of the Petigre of Hughe Allsham, knight, of the Inheritance for his estate in the mannor of Braborne.*"

In the name of God, Amen. Be it known to all men by this present public instrument, that in the year of our Lord one thousand four hundred and sixty-eight, and in the fourth year of the Pontificate of our most holy Father in Christ and our Lord, the Lord Paul II., by Divine Providence Pope, on the 15th day of May, in the mansion-house of William Boteler, in the ville of Steyning, situate in the diocese of Chichester, in the presence of me, a Public Notary, and of the underwritten witnesses personally appearing. Peter Ffarnvold and the said William Boteler publicly said and affirmed and have sworn on their oath, and each of them so said, affirmed, and swore that they had heard from many persons worthy of credit that John Halsham the elder, now deceased, took to wife Philippa,

Halsham Deed. daughter of the Countess of Athell, and by her had issue Philippa, a daughter, and Hugh and Richard, sons. And that after the decease of the said Philippa, daughter of the said Countess, the said John Halsham took to wife Matilda Mawley, and by her had issue a son, John, and Ann and Margaret, daughters. And that after the decease of the said John Halsham the said Hugh, his son and heir, took to wife Joyes, daughter of Sir John Colpeper, knight, of Kent. And that the said Joyes died without issue of her body begotten. And that after the decease of the said Joyes the said Hugh took to wife Petronilla, dwelling with Joan, then Queen of England, and that the said Hugh and Petronilla afterwards died without heirs of their body lawfully begotten. And that the said Richard Halsham, brother of the said Hugh and son of the said John Halsham, took to wife the daughter of John Thorlegh, of West Grinstead, and by her had issue a daughter named Johanna, now the wife of John Lewknor. And that after the decease of the said Richard Halsham . . . . . Thornbery of Ffenysham, took the daughter of the said Thorlegh to wife. And that Thomas Fawconer, sometime Mayor of the City of London, took to wife the said Philippa, eldest daughter of the said John Halsham. And that Sir John Bowne, knight, took to wife the beforenamed Ann, daughter of the said John Halsham and Matilda. And that after the decease of the said John Bowne, Sir Robert Roose took the said Ann to wife, and by her had issue Sir Henry Roose, knight, John Roose, and Eleanor Roose. And that Thomas Prudde, Esq., took to wife the said Eleanor, daughter of the said Ann. And that John Halsham, son of the said John Halsham the elder, took to wife Margaret Cowmbe, now living. And that the said John Halsham, the son of the said John Halsham the elder, died without heirs of his body lawfully begotten.

Be it known, moreover, to all men by this present public instrument, that in the year "Indiccione," and Pontificate aforesaid, on the 17th May, in the Church of the Parish of Esebourne, in the said diocese, and in the presence of me, the said Public Notary, and of the said witnesses personally appearing,

Thomas Offley, of Esebourne aforesaid, openly and publicly said and affirmed and swore on oath then to the same as above, and that the manor of Brabourne in Kent came by the marriage of the said Philippa, daughter of the said Countess, to the said John Halsham senior, and that the said Richard Halsham never was "vir religionis" (*under vows*).[h] (*See* p. 79.)

Be it known also to all men by this public instrument that in the year "Indiccione" and Pontificate aforesaid, on the 18th day of the said month of May, at Arundell, in a hospice there with the sign of the image of Saint George, in the presence of me, the said Public Notary, and of the said witnesses personally appearing, Richard Cooke, *alias* Pers, of Arundel, publicly said and affirmed as above and that Robert Halsham, father of the said John Halsham the elder, was Seneschall of the Lord of Norfolk, and took to wife a woman, heir to the manor of Appylsham, and that thus he had the said manor of Appylsham to him and his heirs. And that the said John Halsham the elder was the right heir of the said Robert Halsham. And that the said John Halsham the elder died at the time when Henry the Fifth, King of England, crossed over to Harflete,[i] and that the manor of Westgrensted and the manor of Appylsham came to the said Robert Halsham by reason of his marriage with the said woman, heir to the said manor of Appylsham. And that the said Richard Cooke was servant with the said John Halsham the elder eight years, and with Sir Hugh Halsham, knight, thirty-six years. Done as above written and recited, in the year of our Lord, the Indiction, the Pontificate, the month, days, and places aforesaid, then being present the discreet men Robert Jaye and Peter Bromfield, "litterati" of the diocese of Canterbury, witnesses specially called and asked to the premises.

And I, Thomas Suffeld, of Lewes, clerk in the diocese of Chichester, by apostolic authority Public Notary, to all and singular the premises, as executed as aforesaid in the year of our Lord, the Indiction, the Pontificate, month, days, and places aforesaid, done and caused to be done being present in person with the said Witnesses, saw and heard with them all and singular the things here done, and with my own hand have written them and reduced them to this public form, and being asked and required, have in faith and testimony of all the premises, signed the same with my accustomed sign. The blank space above, between the words "ea" and "procreavit," was left by me the aforesaid Notary.

(Notarial monogram or autograph) T. S.

---

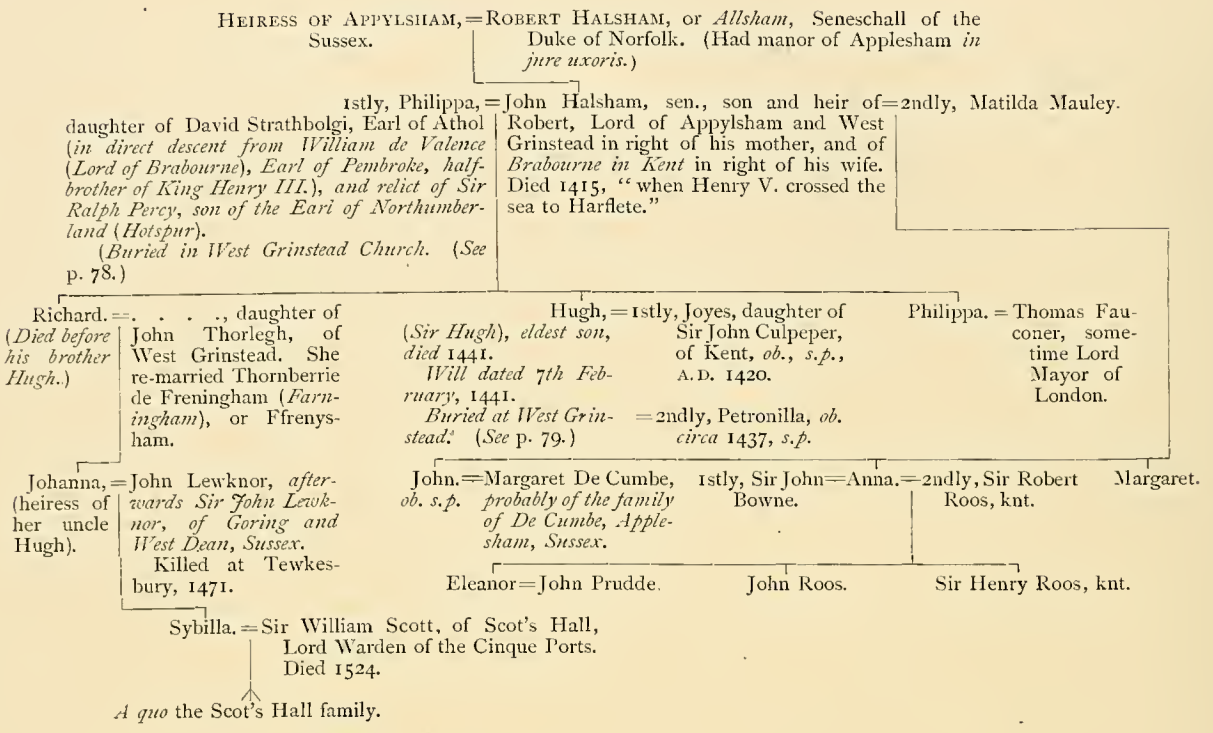
[h] "Nunquam fuit vir religionis." A novitiate, but not under vows of celibacy. Blomfield, in his "History of Norfolk," writing concerning the large possessions of the Halshams in Norfolk, asserts that Richard Halsham had been a Celestine monk in Paris. Be this as it may, it is quite clear in the deed before us that he was not under vows, and that his issue was legitimate.

[i] "Tempore quo Henricus quintus transmeavit usque Harflete"—referring to the time when Henry V. crossed the sea to Harfleur, just before the battle of Agincourt, Oct. 25, 1415.

Halsham Deed.

The Pedigree of Sir Hugh Halsham and his Ancestry in relation to his Manor of Brabourne in Kent.

Extracted from the above recited Notarial Instrument, with additions in Italics. (*See pp. 78 and 79.*)


Heiress of Appylsham, Sussex. = Robert Halsham, or *Allsham*, Seneschall of the Duke of Norfolk. (Had manor of Applesham *in jure uxoris.*)
1stly, Philippa, daughter of David Strathbolgi, Earl of Athol (*in direct descent from William de Valence (Lord of Brabourne), Earl of Pembroke, half-brother of King Henry III.), and relict of Sir Ralph Percy, son of the Earl of Northumberland (Hotspur).* (*Buried in West Grinstead Church.* (*See p. 78.*) = John Halsham, sen., son and heir of Robert, Lord of Appylsham and West Grinstead in right of his mother, and of *Brabourne in Kent* in right of his wife. Died 1415, "when Henry V. crossed the sea to Harflete." = 2ndly, Matilda Mauley.
Richard. =. . . ., daughter of John Thorlegh, of West Grinstead. She re-married Thornberrie de Freningham (*Farningham*), or Ffrenysham. (*Died before his brother Hugh.*)
Hugh, (*Sir Hugh*), *eldest son, died* 1441. *Will dated 7th February*, 1441. *Buried at West Grinstead.* (*See p. 79.*) = 1stly, Joyes, daughter of Sir John Culpeper, of Kent, *ob., s.p.*, A.D. 1420. = 2ndly, Petronilla, *ob. circa* 1437, *s.p.*
Philippa. = Thomas Fauconer, sometime Lord Mayor of London.
Johanna, (heiress of her uncle Hugh). = John Lewknor, *afterwards Sir John Lewknor, of Goring and West Dean, Sussex.* Killed at Tewkesbury, 1471.
John. *ob. s.p.* = Margaret De Cumbe, *probably of the family of De Cumbe, Applesham, Sussex.*
1stly, Sir John Bowne. = Anna. = 2ndly, Sir Robert Roos, knt.
Margaret.
Eleanor = John Prudde.
John Roos.
Sir Henry Roos, knt.
Sybilla. = Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports. Died 1524.
A quo the Scot's Hall family.

WILL OF LADY SIBILL SCOTT.

Tankyn I., fo. 1.

1528.

This is the last Wille of me, Dame Sibill Scote, widowe, the late Wife of Sir William Scott, knyght, made and declared the iiijth day of August, the xxth yere of the Reigne of o^{r} Souaigne lord King Henry the viijth.

Ffirst I bequeth my soule to almighty God, our blessid lady saint Mary, and to all the holy company of hevyn, and my body to be buried in the *church of the Obstunt ffreres of Caunterbury.*

Item. I bequithe to the *high awter of the Churche of Smethe,* xs., for my tithes ther nedigently forgotten.

Item. I bequeth to the *Churche of Brabourn,* xxs.

Item. I bequeth to the said Churche of Obserunts freres, tenne pounds.

Item. I will that myn executours bestowe at my burying and monethis mynde after their discrecion, fourty pounds.

Lady (Sybilla) Scott.

ITEM. I will that my said executours prouide an honest seculer prest to singe for the soule of the said Sir Willm Scott, my late husbonde, whose soule God ꝑdon, and for my soule in the said church of Brabourn for the space of oon hole yere next after my decesse, and he to have for his salary tenne mares.

ITEM. I will and bequeth unto SIR JOHN SCOTT, myn eldest sonne, all suche plate and utensills of householde, the whiche is conteyned in a note of an endenture drawen by John Hales, oon of the Barons of the King's Exchequer, made between me the said Dame Sibill and EDWARD SCOTTE, *my seconde sonne* of the oon ꝑte, and the said Sir John Scott, knyght, of the other parte.

ITEM. I will and bequethe unto EDWARD SCOTT, *my secunde sonne*, all suche plate and stuffe of housholde and catall the whiche I have *at the manors of Mote in Sussex*, I will and bequeth unto the said Edward foure letill siluer gobletts w^t^ oon couer oon great cuppe . . . . . and two siluer potts.

ITEM. I wille that myn executours content and paye unto ALICE, ELIZABETH, MARY, and SIBILL, doughters of the said SIR JOHN SCOTT, to euery of them at the day of their mariages, xxxvj *li.*, according to the wille of the said SIR WILLM SCOTT, my said late husbonde. Prouided that if it happen that I dye before the fest of All Saint next comyng, That then my executos shall content and paye unto two of the said doughters of the said foure doughters that shall happen first to be maried, to euery of the said two doughters, xxxvj *li.*, and then to be discharged of the payment of the remenent of the said money to the other two doughters.

ITEM. I will to FFRAUNCES and SIBILL, doughters of EDWARD BOUGHTON,[j] to euery of them tenne pounds, to be paid to them at the day of their mariage.

ITEM. I will to NICHOLAS BOUGHTON, sonne and heire of the said Edward, vj *li.* xiij*s.* iiij*d.*

ITEM. I will to ALICE,[k] the Wife of my sonne, EDWARD SCOTT, my cheyne of golde.

The residue of my goodes I will and bequeth to myn executours to order and dispouse to the hono^r^ of God and to the wurshipp of me, and for the welth of my soule.

AND I ordeyn and make of this my ꝑnt wille my faithfull and true executours EDWARD SCOTT, my said seconde sonne, and WALTER HENDLEY, gent. And I ordeyn and make the said SIR JOHN SCOTT, *knyght, my sonne and heire,* Supuisour of this my said testament and last Will. And I will and bequethe unto the said *Sir John Scott, knyght,* for his payne and diligence aboute this ꝑnt will my great gilt pott. And I will and bequeth unto the said Walter Hendley for his payne, iij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.*

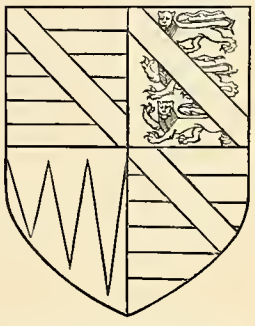
14° die Jan^ii^ 1529. Admon. granted to John Scott, knt., the Executors having renounced probate.

---

[j] Sir Edward Boughton married Anne, daughter of Sir William Scott and Dame Sybilla Lewknor.

[k] "Alice," daughter and heir of Sir Thomas Fogge, Sergeant Porter of Calais.

(No. 25 in Ped.) **Sir Edward Poynings,** Knight of the Garter.



POYNINGS, OF POYNINGS, SUSSEX, QUARTERED WITH ARMS OF BRYAN AND FITZPAINE.

ARMS.—*Barry of six or and vert, a bend gules.*

Privy Councillor to King Henry VII., and one of the executors of that monarch's will.
Lord Deputy of Ireland, 10th Henry VII. (1495).
Constable of Dover Castle, 1505.
Knight of the Garter.
Comptroller of Household King Henry VIII.
Again Constable of Dover Castle and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports in reign of Henry VIII., an office he held at time of his death.

Sir Edward, the last of the Barons of Poynings, Brian, and Fitzpain, in the legitimate line of descent, Knight of the Garter, and a native of Kent, was a most distinguished man-at-arms in the reigns of Henry VII. and Henry VIII., and, though the last, was by no means the least famous of a gallant race, who had borne their banners in defence of their country at Agincourt, Cressy, and Poictiers.[1]

To borrow the words of the biographer of the family of Poynings, as inscribed in the Sussex Archæological Collections, "they ranked among the barons of the realm, had built a stately castle, had gained laurels on every battle-field, had made splendid alliances, had acquired manors, parks, and forests stretching across the country, and had achieved a reputation and a position that placed them on a level with the most renowned dukes and earls in the kingdom." Sir Edward Poynings was a faithful adherent of Henry, Duke of Richmond, was with that prince at the battle of Bosworth, and retained the confidence of the monarch when seated on the throne. He was, with his brother-in-law, Thomas Scott (or Rotherham), Archbishop of York (son of Sir John Scott), one of the eighteen distinguished personages recommended by Henry VII., in his will, as advisers and counsellors to his son after his death.

By that king Sir Edward Poynings was made a Knight of the Garter, and was appointed Governor of Dover Castle and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, confirmed afterwards by King Henry VIII., by whom he was also sent as Ambassador to the Emperor Maximilian, and, in 1511, appointed Admiral of the expedition sent to assist Charles, Prince of Castile, against Charles Edmunde, Duke of Guelders, in pursuance of a treaty by which Henry VIII. was bound to assist the Prince of Castile against his foes. (*Treaty dated from Knoll,* 22 June, 3 Henry VIII.)

---

[1] The family of Poynings was of Saxon origin, and assumed its name (in *Domesday* spelt Punnynges) from the manor in the parish of Poynings in Sussex, its manorial residence and *caput baroniæ* for many generations. Of the castellated mansion at Poynings (at the foot of the Devil's Dyke near Brighton) little remains, and that consisting of but a confused heap of flint and rubble now covered with ivy.

The very beautiful cruciform church of Poynings, in the immediate vicinity of the manorial residence, built about the end of the reign of Edward III., still remains, a memorial of the munificent piety of this family; but of the stained glass with which the windows were glazed, and of other interesting relics originally within the church, not a vestige appertaining to the noble founders now exists, if we except their coats-of-arms carved in stone over the window in the chancel, and over the north door of the aisle.

Sir Edward Poynings.

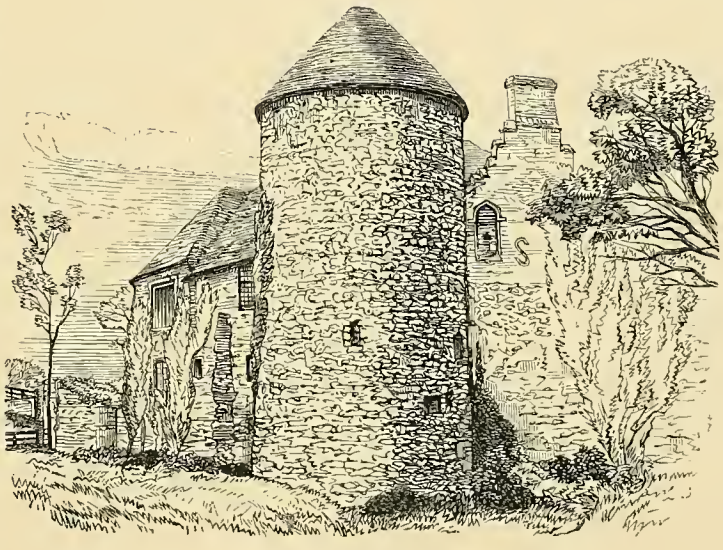
This distinguished Kentish man was in personal attendance on Henry VIII., and was one of the Judges at the Lists, at the Field of the Cloth of Gold, and at Calais; and many and interesting are the letters from him to the King, as recited in the Calendar of the State Papers. Sir Edward was likewise at the battles and sieges of Therouenne and Tournay, of which latter place he was Governor.

But one of the most distinguished appointments held by this gallant soldier was that of Lord Deputy of Ireland, in which capacity he was mainly instrumental in driving Perkin Warbeck out of that dependency. In 1495 (10 Henry VII.) the enactment known as the "Statute of Drogheda," or "Poynings' Law," was passed, which declared that all general statutes hitherto made in England, should be in force in Ireland also. This statute was only repealed at the commencement of the present century.

Sir Edward Poynings, who married Isabel Scott (*daughter of Sir John Scott, Comptroller of the Household of King Edward IV., and brother of Sir William Scott, the Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports*), resided at Ostenhanger Castle, which he rebuilt magnificently some years before his death, probably as an inheritance to his only legitimate son, who, however, died during his father's lifetime before the castle was completed. The united manors of Ostenhanger and Westenhanger had recently been acquired by Lord Poynings by purchase, from the heirs of the Fogges and the De Criols. It is said that the castle, when rebuilt, contained 365 windows and 126 rooms, and that he greatly enriched the decorations of the beautiful chapel, which, with the greater part of the castle used for domestic purposes, now no longer exists. The walls within the moat were very extensive, embattled, and flanked by nine towers, one of which is known as Rosamund's Tower to this day.[m] Tradition likewise asserts that a

---

[m] Ostenhanger Castle is said to have belonged to King Henry II., and Rosamund Clifford is traditionally asserted to have been secreted here before her removal by her royal lover to Woodstock. Two localities anciently within the walls are assigned as the place of her retirement, one being an upper room, 160 feet long, anciently known as Rosamund's Gallery (*Furley's Weald of Kent*, vol. 1. p. 345), and the other the Round Tower, flanking the present ruined wall of the castle. The latter, however, is scarcely likely to have been a place of confinement, as, by its construction internally, it has evidently, from the period of its erection, served as a columbaria or dovecot; and a most interesting specimen of such an adjunct to a castle or fortress this will, on examination, be found. As access to the interior (fitted up with stone shelves, or recesses, for the accommodation of many hundreds of birds) was from the top of the roof, the denizens of the interior were out of reach of crossbolt and arrow, and thus calculated to furnish a constant, if not considerable, supply of animal food to a beleaguered fortress.



ROSAMUND'S TOWER IN WESTENHANGER CASTLE, 1875.

The castle of Ostenhanger, with the other estates held *in capite*, passed as an escheat to the crown on the death, without legitimate issue, of Edward, Lord Poynings. Queen Elizabeth, who calls it "her own house," visited it during her progress in 1573 (see p. 99).

Sir Edward Poynings.

subterranean communication anciently existed between the castle and Somerfield House in Sellinge, formerly belonging to the Poynings family, and afterwards the residence of the Heymans, but of which not a stone *in situ* now exists.

For the following interesting extracts we are indebted to Mr. Furley in his *History of the Weald of Kent* :—

"On the 21st May, 1520, Henry VIII. left his palace at Greenwich to attend the grand tournament at the Field of the Cloth of Gold. The first evening he slept at Oxford, his own Priory ; thence to Leeds Castle, also in his hands ; thence to the Archbishop's palace at Canterbury on the 25th. Whilst there he heard that the Emperor Charles of Spain was off Hythe with a Spanish squadron, who, hearing that Henry and his court were so near at Canterbury, expressed an anxiety to pay his respects to his uncle and aunt. The Emperor and Queen-mother landed at Dover, and proceeded to the castle, where, according to etiquette, the keys of that fortress were handed to the Emperor by Sir Edward Poynings, the Lord Warden and Constable, the Emperor graciously declining to accept them. A few hours later the King (Henry VIII.) arriving by torchlight, Charles arose and embraced him on the staircase.

"The King, Queen Catherine (*the Emperor's aunt*), and the Emperor Charles of Spain, after attending the cathedral in state, graced with their presence a grand ball and banquet given by Archbishop Warham. The Duke of Buckingham, officiating as the Archbishop's butler or steward, rode into the hall upon a white hobby, alighted, kneeled, and presented water, in which the King and Queen washed together, the Duke of Suffolk holding the towel. Amongst the guests on this occasion were the Duke of Buckingham, the Earl of Essex, Lords Cobham, Abergavenny, Brooke, and Clinton, Sir Edward Poynings (Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports), Sir William Scott, Sir Thomas Scott (*query, Sir John Scott*), Sir John Fineux, Lord Chief Justice Sir William Hawte, and others."

The following is an extract from the *Chronicles of Calais*, p. 9 :—

"1511. The 3 yere of Henry the Eighth, in the monethe of Julii, lorde Ponyngs went out of England into Geldarland with 1500 men of warre. He took shipinge at Sandwiche; and in Gilderland he conquered a little Towne or twayne, and a castle or twayne, and then he went to the siege of Fenlawe,[n] for ther lay a seige or he cam ; he continuyd with his company till aftar all-halewen tyde, and there they were almoste betrayed by the lorde amerall of all the easte, for he went ofte into the towne of Fenlawe, and had promysed the capitayne to descyve them all, but the kyng of Englande sent for them to come home into England ; and then lady Margaret, Duches of Savoye, aunte to the yonge duke of Burgoyne,[o] gaffe to all Englishe men coates of whit and grene, red and yelowe ; the white and grene for the kynge of England's liverye, the red and yelowe for the Duke of Burgoyne's lyvery, and these iiij colours were medeled together. And (at) Ser Edward Poyning's departure, the yonge duke made dyvars gentlemen of England knights, as *ser John Skott*, ser John Norton, ser John Fogge, and ser James Derelle ; for our kynge sent the lord Poynings, chefe capitayne, withe these xv. hundred men, for to helpe the duke of Burgoyne agayne the duke of Gildar. They all came backe to Calleys, and so over to Englande, the xxv. of November. Ser Francis Cheny, ser John Norton, ser John Scott, ser John Fogge, ser Richard Whetill, and ser James Darell, were the chefe of that army."

The *Testamenta Vetusta*, vol. ii. p. 578, recites the following extract from Sir Edward Poynings' [p] will, and supplies explanatory foot notes :—

Amongst the grants recited in the *Calendar of State Papers*, vol. iii. part 2 (1519—1523), *inter alia*, is one addressed to Henry, Earl of Northumberland, which confers on him livery of lands as kinsman and heir of Sir Edward Poynings, viz., son of Henry (Percy) husband of Eleanor, daughter of Richard, son of Robert, late Lord Poynings, father of Robert, father of the said Sir Edward, and as kinsman and heir of the said Robert, late Lord Poynings, Bryan, and Fitzpayne. (*Weston*, 1 *July Pat.*, 15 *Henry VIII.*, *p.* 2, *m.* 4.)

[n] Venloo.

[o] Charles, afterwards the Emperor Charles V.

[p] "A distinguished soldier in the reign of Henry VII., by whom he was honoured with the Order of the Garter, and appointed of his Privy Council, and was one of the eighteen personages recommended to his son in his will as

Sir Edward Poynings.

"My body to be buried in the parish Church of Oston Hanger. Dame Isabel, my wife, who was daughter to Sir John Scott; to Dame Jane Clynton,[q] late wife of Lord Thomas Clynton, one sparner[r] of silk, with curtains of the same; to the monastery of Muttenden St. Radegund, where I am founder, xl*s.*, to pray for my soul; William Scott, my brother; I will that my feoffees stand enfeoffed of my manors of Ostenhanger, Boroughmersh, Estbrigge, Salrewood, Lyn'sson, and Sellinge, besides Horton the Monks (in Kent), for twelve years to the use of Edward Thwaite, my servant, and after to the use of Thomas,[s] my bastard son and his heirs; remainder to Adrian, my bastard son, and his heirs; remainder to Edward, my other bastard son; remainder to the Lady Jane Clynton, wife to Thomas, Lord Clynton, for her life; remainder to Edward Clynton, son and heir of Thomas, Lord Clynton, and his heirs of his body; Isabel Clynton and Barbara Clynton, daughters of the said Lady Jane Clynton, now in non-age. And I constitute Sir John Newton (*qy. Norton*), knight, and James Digges, esquire, supervisors."

"Proved 19th December, 1521."

Sir Edward, Lord Poynings, died 14th Henry VIII., 1523, without legitimate issue; he had, by four concubines, three sons and four daughters: Sir Thomas, created Baron Poynings (died without issue), Sir Adrian Poynings (*who married Mary, daughter of Sir Owen West, and was buried in the church of St. Nicholas at Guildford, died without male issue, leaving only daughters and co-heirs*), and Edward, third son, slain at Bologne 38th Henry VIII. Of Sir Edward's daughters, Jane was married to Thomas, Lord Clinton, Margaret to Edward Barry of Sevington, Maria to Thomas Wilsford, and a fourth to . . . . . Lewknor.

The name and family of Poynings is now extinct, as well as those of Lewknor and Beaufitz, mentioned in the preceding Biographies.

Of memorials of this man still existing in Kent may be mentioned the arms of Poynings that appear on the roof of transepts of Canterbury Cathedral. His arms likewise formerly existed on the Christchurch gate of Canterbury, probably as one of the founders (see p. 131), and in the chancel windows in Brabourne Church, dimidiated with those of Scott. (See p. 52.)

There is likewise at the present time, in stained glass, in the east window of the chancel of Hastinglegh Church, East Kent, within a wreath of the Garter, the arms of Poynings quartered with Bryan, Fitzpain, and St. John, suggestive of the baronies held by the family of Poynings.

---

worthy of his confidence. In the reign of Henry VIII. he was ambassador of the Emperor Maximilian, and in 1513 was present at the battle of Therouenne and the siege of Tournay, of which place he was appointed Governor. Shortly before his death he was constituted Governor of Dover Castle, in which important office he died *s. p. l.*"

[q] "Thomas, eighth Lord Clinton, is stated to have married *Mary*, natural daughter of Sir Edward Poynings, K.G., and by her to have left issue Edward, his son and heir, who succeeded his father in his honours 7th August, 1517. This account is fully confirmed by the above will, excepting that the name of the said Lady Clinton appears to have been *Jane*."

[r] "*Sic* in the MS. whence the above abstract is taken; but it is evidently an error of the transcriber, as it should be 'sparver,' a bed."

[s] "This Thomas was created by patent, 30 January, 1545, Baron Poynings, but dying the same year, *s. p.*, the dignity *became extinct*."

(No. 26 in Ped.) **Isabel, or Elizabeth,** eldest daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, wife to Sir Edward, Lord Poynings. (See *ante.*)

Died 15th August, 1528. Will proved at Canterbury 5th October, 1528. (For brass and monumental inscription in Brabourne church, see p. 46.)

The following is an extract from her Will in *Testamenta Vetusta*, vol. 2, p. 634:—

"Dame Isabel Poynyngs, of Smeeth, in the county of Kent. My body to be buried in the church of Brabourne. To our Lady chapel of Curt of Strete,[t] a yard and 2 nails and a half of cloth of Gold, for a vestment.

"*Bequests.*—William Bedyngfield,[u] Rose Bedyngfeld, Isabella Barry. To the herymete of Curte of Street, vj*s.* viij*d.* Nicholas Bedyngfeld, *Executor.*

"Proved at Canterbury, 5 Oct., 1528."

(No. 27 in Ped.) **Sir Edmund Bedingfield,** of Oxburgh Hall, Norfolk, K.B.

ARMS OF BEDINGFIELD OF OXBURGH HALL.

ARMS.—*Ermine, an eagle displayed, Gu beaked and peded, or.*

Sir Edmund Bedingfield, or Tudenham, for he appears to have been known by both these names, the latter probably in the first instance as heir of his mother (sister and heir of Sir Thomas Tudenham, beheaded in 1461), was, according to Blomfield, in his *History of Norfolk*, created Knight of the Bath at the coronation of Richard III. He had been an adherent of Edward IV. and the Yorkist party, had served in the wars in France, and by that monarch had a licence, dated 3 July, 1482, to build and fortify (*more castelli*) his mansion at Oxburgh, the manor of which had recently come into his possession; but whether in right of his wife as a kinswoman of John Lord Wenlock and Thomas Rotherham, *alias* Scott, Archbishop of York, or in descent and as heir of Margaret Tudenham, his mother, is not certain, as will appear hereafter.[v]

Sir Edmund Bedingfield was likewise greatly in favour with Henry VII., by whom he was made

---

[t] The chapel of Court at Street, near Hythe, now in ruins, was formerly (1530) the scene of the denunciations, ravings, and prophecies of Elizabeth Barton, known among Romanists as the "Holy Maid of Kent." (See p. 101.)

[u] The Bedyngfields here mentioned were kinsfolk of the family of the same name at Oxburgh Hall, Norfolk, and probably the ancestors of the Bedingfields of Brabourne, afterwards settled in East Kent.

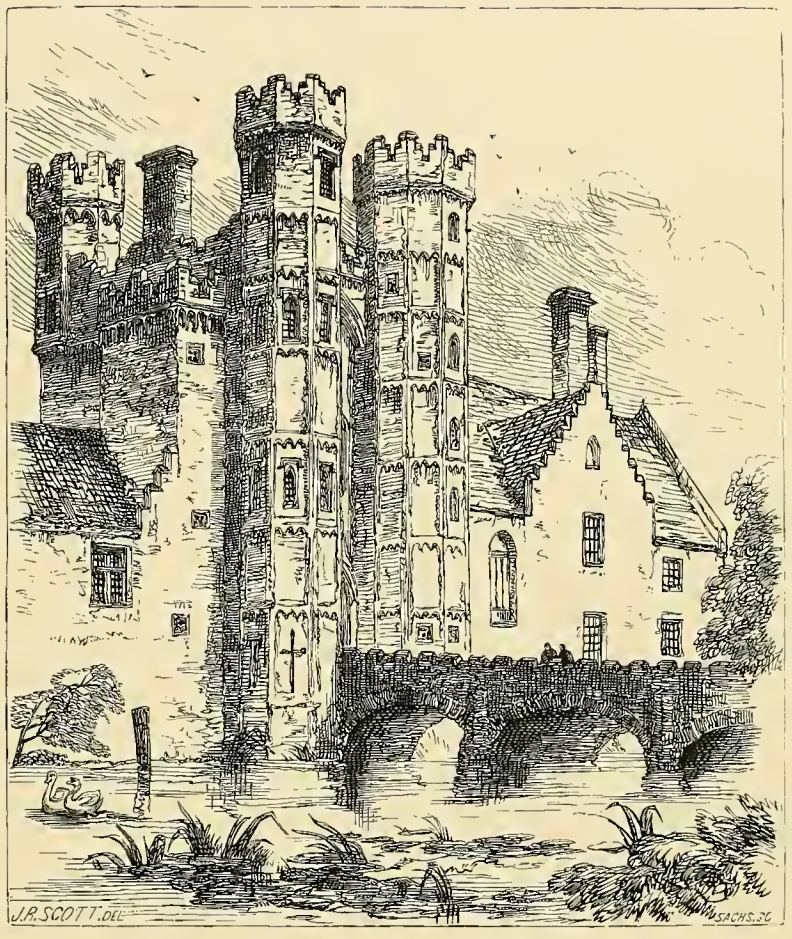
[v] A great portion of the original building of Oxburgh no longer remains; but the tower gateway and bridge of red brickwork may be considered as one of the finest examples now existing of this type and material in the

Sir Edmund Bedingfield.

a Knight Banneret the day after the battle of Bosworth Field. That king visited him at Oxburgh, and the chamber in which the monarch slept is known as the King's Chamber to this day.[w]

---

kingdom. There are many memorials in stained glass of the alliance of Edmund Bedingfield and Margaret Scott not only in the magnificent hall of the mansion, but likewise in the adjoining church. Blomfield, in his *History of Norfolk*, gives an account of this interesting relic of the times of York and Lancaster. Sir Henry Paston Bedingfield, Bart., LL.D., lineal descendant of Sir Edmund above mentioned, now resides at Oxburgh. (See *Pugin's Examples of Gothic Architecture*, vol. 1. p. 45, and plates 52—56.)



OXBURGH HALL, NORFOLK, 1875.

[w] Some little confusion and doubt exists as to the manner of descent of the manor of Oxburgh to the Tudenham or Bedingfield family. Looking, however, to all the circumstances of the case, one is inclined to the belief that it passed, on the death of Sir Thomas Tudenham, knight (whose Will is dated the evening before he suffered death in the Tower of London, in 1461), to John Lord Wenlock, who it would appear had two wives, but no issue, and left an heir general, and who, according to Leland, was married "to a kinsman of Thomas Scotte, otherwise called Rotherham, Archbishop of York." "He had with her yn mariage Luton in Bedfordshire, and three hunderith markes of landes thereaboute, and a faire place within the paroche of Luton called Someries (afterwards possessed by Sir Thomas Rotherham, or Scott, a nephew of the Archbishop, who married Katherine, only child of Anty., Lord Grey of Ruthin, son of Edmund, Earl of Kent), the whiche house was sumptuously began by the Lord Wennelok, but not finisched." It is further traditionally asserted that one of the wives of Lord Wenlock was a member of the Scot's Hall family; but her place in their pedigree has never been ascertained, although his name in connection with Archbishop Scotte, or Rotherham, at times appears in their Records in the light of a trustee. There can be little question, therefore, that the heir general married to a kinsman of Archbishop Rotherham was no other than the prelate's sister Margaret, married to Sir Edmund Tudenham, or Bedingfield, who in the reign of Edward IV. erected the Manor House of Oxburgh.

Again, Blomfield, in his *History of Norfolk*, vol. 3, p. 488, asserts that Margaret Scott was *widow* of Sir Edmund Tudenham, K.G., and that her arms ("*three Catherine wheels*," *etc.*) were impaled with those of Tudenham ("*Lozengée argent and gules*") in the chancel window of the church of Oxburgh, and in connection with the arms of Bedingfield. This confusion of names of Tudenham and Bedingfield in the person of this Sir Edmund probably arises from the fact that he was equally known by one or the other surname; a circumstance not unusual in early times, when a man derived property in fee in right of both father and mother, or as heir of their near kinsfolk. Looking, therefore, to the facts of the case, whilst not unmindful of its difficulties, we come to the conclusion that Margaret

Sir Edmund Bedingfield.

The following Pedigree of the Family of Bedingfield of Oxburgh has kindly been furnished by the present proprietor of that mansion, Sir Henry Paston Bedingfield, Bart., LL.D. The Pedigree of the Tudenhams and their ancestry, carried many descents higher, is to be found in Blomfield's *History of Norfolk*, vol. vi. p. 174, and vol. iii. p. 482, etc.

* Sir Edmund Bedingfield, K.B. = Margaret, daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, Comptroller of Household of Edward IV.; Comptroller of Calais; Lord Warden of Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle, etc. (See p. 106.)
Had patent, July 3, 1482, to build and fortify a mansion at Oxburgh.

Sir Edmund Bedingfield, knighted on the field of Roye in France by the Duke of Suffolk, Nov. 1, 1523; died 7 Edw. VI. = Grace, daughter of Lord Marney.

Sir Henry Bedingfield, died 25 Elizabeth = Katherine, daughter of Sir Roger Townsend, of Raynham.

Edward Bedingfield, Esq., died 27 Elizabeth = Anne, daughter of Sir Robert Southwell.

Thomas Bedingfield, Esq., died 32 Elizabeth = Katherine, daughter of John Jerningham, Esq.

Elizabeth, daughter of Lord William Howard = Sir Henry Bedingfield, died 1657. = Elizabeth, daughter of Peter Houghton, Esq.

Sir Henry Bedingfield, died 1685. = Margaret, daughter of Edward Paston, Esq.

Lady Anne Howard, daughter and heir of Charles, Earl of Berkshire. = Sir Henry Bedingfield, died 1704. = Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Arundel.

Sir Henry Bedingfield, died 1760. = Elizabeth, daughter of Charles, Earl of Burlington.

Sir Richard Bedingfield, died 1795. = Mary, daughter of Anthony, Viscount Montagu.

Sir Richard Bedingfield, died 1829 = Charlotte, daughter of Sir William Jerningham, and sister of George, Lord Stafford.

Sir Henry Bedingfield, died 1862. = Margaret, daughter of Edward Paston, of Appleton.

Sir Henry Paston Bedingfield, of Oxburgh Hall, Norfolk. = Augusta, daughter and heir of Edward Clavering, Esq., of Callaby Castle.

*Note.—Sir Edmund Bedingfield would appear to have left eight children: Sir Edmund, Lord of Oxburgh; Sir Thomas, died *s.p.*; Robert, Rector of Oxburgh; Peter, Lord of Quiddenham (*for whose descendants see Blomfield, History of Norfolk*, vol. i. p. 340); and, according to the Scott Records, another son, John, and three daughters, Elizabeth, Margaret, and Agnes.

There are many references to Sir Edmund Bedingfield in the "*Paston Letters*," *circa* Edward IV. and Henry VII. These throw considerable light on the warlike proceedings of the times, whilst they likewise afford an insight into the domestic affairs of the several writers.

As so many of the subjects of the Scott biography of this period are from time to time mentioned in the "*Paston Letters*" in connection with the stirring events then enacting, especially in France, and from the nature of the references to these individuals in this correspondence, it is clear that they were connected by family relationship with the writers in a nearer or more remote degree. It is, therefore, satisfactory to be enabled, from the Scott Pedigree and Records, to supply in some respects these links of kinsmanship or family connection, which are best shown in the accompanying table.

Bedingfield (*née* Scott) conveyed by marriage the manor of Oxburgh to her husband, as heir-at-law of Lord Wenlock, or Archbishop Rotherham, her brother. Be this, however, as it may, we append an abstract of the Wills of Sir Thomas Tudenham, knight, and Sir Edmund Bedingfield, his nephew :—

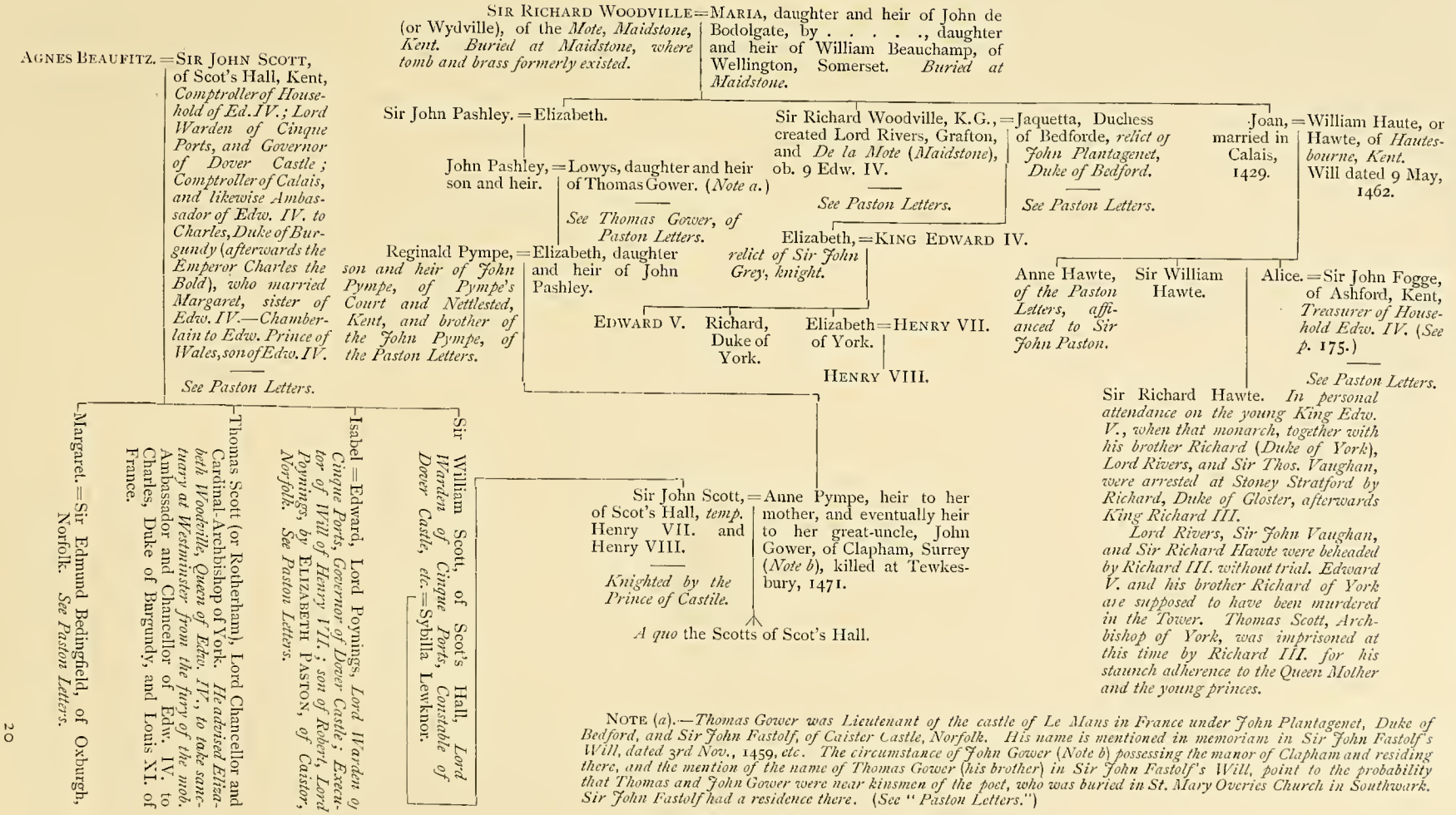
Nicolas's Testamenta Vetusta, vol. i. p. 297.

"Thomas Tudenham, of the diocese of Norwich, knt. February 22, 1461-2. To Sir John Wenlock, knight and baron, one quarter part of the Barony of Bedford; also my manors of Oxburgh, Shyngham, and Sparham in the county of Norfolk for the term of his life; and I will that the said Lord Wenlock sell my manors of Wangford and Elveden in the county of Suffolk. Proved Oct 23, 1461."

Nicolas's Testamenta Vetusta, vol. ii. p. 429.

"Edmund Bedingfield, of Oxburgh, co. Norfolk, at Calais, 1496. I will that my wife, Margaret, have Denham for life, with remainder to my son Edmund. I bequeath all my lands to my heir, My sons Thomas and Peter. To each of my unmarried daughters cccc marks. I will that a priest pray for the soul of Sir Thomas Tudenham, my uncle."

A PEDIGRAIC TABLE, compiled on the authority of the Scot's Hall Records and MSS., showing the connection of various individuals mentioned in Fenn's "Paston Letters" (*temp.* Edward IV. and Henry VII.) with the Family of Woodville, of the Mote, Maidstone, Kent, and of Grafton, Northamptonshire.


Sir Richard Woodville (or Wydville), of the *Mote, Maidstone, Kent. Buried at Maidstone, where tomb and brass formerly existed.*
Maria, daughter and heir of John de Bodolgate, by . . . . ., daughter and heir of William Beauchamp, of Wellington, Somerset. *Buried at Maidstone.*
Agnes Beaufitz.
Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, Kent, *Comptroller of Household of Ed. IV.; Lord Warden of Cinque Ports, and Governor of Dover Castle; Comptroller of Calais, and likewise Ambassador of Edw. IV. to Charles, Duke of Burgundy (afterwards the Emperor Charles the Bold), who married Margaret, sister of Edw. IV.—Chamberlain to Edw. Prince of Wales, son of Edw. IV.*
See Paston Letters.
Sir John Pashley.
Elizabeth.
John Pashley, son and heir.
Lowys, daughter and heir of Thomas Gower. (*Note a.*)
See Thomas Gower, of Paston Letters.
Reginald Pympe, *son and heir of John Pympe, of Pympe's Court and Nettlested, Kent, and brother of the John Pympe, of the Paston Letters.*
Elizabeth, daughter and heir of John Pashley.
Sir Richard Woodville, K.G., created Lord Rivers, Grafton, and *De la Mote* (*Maidstone*), ob. 9 Edw. IV.
See Paston Letters.
Jaquetta, Duchess of Bedforde, *relict of John Plantagenet, Duke of Bedford.*
See Paston Letters.
Joan, married in Calais, 1429.
William Haute, or Hawte, of *Hautesbourne, Kent.* Will dated 9 May, 1462.
Elizabeth, *relict of Sir John Grey, knight.*
King Edward IV.
Edward V.
Richard, Duke of York.
Elizabeth of York.
Henry VII.
Henry VIII.
Anne Hawte, *of the Paston Letters, affianced to Sir John Paston.*
Sir William Hawte.
Alice.
Sir John Fogge, of Ashford, Kent, *Treasurer of Household Edw. IV.* (*See p.* 175.)
See Paston Letters.
Sir Richard Hawte. *In personal attendance on the young King Edw. V., when that monarch, together with his brother Richard (Duke of York), Lord Rivers, and Sir Thos. Vaughan, were arrested at Stoney Stratford by Richard, Duke of Gloster, afterwards King Richard III.*
Lord Rivers, Sir John Vaughan, and Sir Richard Hawte were beheaded by Richard III. without trial. Edward V. and his brother Richard of York are supposed to have been murdered in the Tower. Thomas Scott, Archbishop of York, was imprisoned at this time by Richard III. for his staunch adherence to the Queen Mother and the young princes.
Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, *temp.* Henry VII. and Henry VIII.
Knighted by the Prince of Castile.
Anne Pympe, heir to her mother, and eventually heir to her great-uncle, John Gower, of Clapham, Surrey (*Note b*), killed at Tewkesbury, 1471.
A quo the Scotts of Scot's Hall.
Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall, *Lord Warden of Cinque Ports, Constable of Dover Castle, etc.*
Sybilla Lewknor.
Isabel.
Edward, Lord Poynings, *Lord Warden of Cinque Ports, Governor of Dover Castle; Executor of Will of Henry VII.; son of Robert, Lord Poynings, by* Elizabeth Paston, *of Castor, Norfolk. See Paston Letters.*
Thomas Scott (or Rotherham), Lord Chancellor and Cardinal-Archbishop of York. *He advised Elizabeth Woodville, Queen of Edw. IV., to take sanctuary at Westminster from the fury of the mob.* Ambassador and Chancellor of Edw. IV. to Charles, Duke of Burgundy, and Louis XI. of France.
Margaret.
Sir Edmund Bedingfield, of Oxburgh, Norfolk. *See Paston Letters.*

Note (*a*).—*Thomas Gower was Lieutenant of the castle of Le Mans in France under John Plantagenet, Duke of Bedford, and Sir John Fastolf, of Caister Castle, Norfolk. His name is mentioned in memoriam in Sir John Fastolf's Will, dated 3rd Nov., 1459, etc. The circumstance of John Gower (Note b) possessing the manor of Clapham and residing there, and the mention of the name of Thomas Gower (his brother) in Sir John Fastolf's Will, point to the probability that Thomas and John Gower were near kinsmen of the poet, who was buried in St. Mary Overies Church in Southwark. Sir John Fastolf had a residence there.* (*See "Paston Letters."*)

(No. 28 in Ped.) **Margaret,** second daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall (No. 15 in Ped.), wife to Sir Edmund Bedingfield.

As before observed, under the previous biography of Bedingfield, it is asserted by Blomfield (*History of Norfolk,* vol. iii. p. 488) that this lady was the widow of Sir Edmund Tudenham, K.G. If so, it is not improbable that the manor of Oxburgh may have passed, in right of her first husband, and in the absence of issue by him, to her second husband, Sir Edmund Bedingfield; but we are of opinion, notwithstanding, that Sir Edmund Tudenham and Sir Edmund Bedingfield were one and the same individual.

Margaret Bedingfield was the foundress of a chapel in the church of Oxburgh, and by her Will, dated January 12th, 1513, desired her body to be buried there before the image of the Trinity.

Of her sons, Sir Edmund of Oxburgh was knighted by Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, at the town of Roye in France, on All Hallow E'en day, 1523, and is the ancestor of the present lord of Oxburgh. Robert, who was rector of Oxburgh, was a benefactor of the College of Corpus Christi in Cambridge, and caused the west windows to be placed there in 1512. He was buried at Oxburgh.

The Earls of Burlington are in direct descent from Sir Edmund and Lady (Margaret) Bedingfield.

(No. 29 in Ped.) **Thomas Scotte,** *alias* **Rotherham,** Cardinal-Archbishop of York, son of Sir John Scotte, of Scot's Hall. (See Ped. No. 15.)

Born 1423; died 29th May, 1500.

Thomas Scotte, surnamed Rotherham,[x] is said, in the first instance, to have been Rector of Ripple in Kent, and afterwards of Rotherham in Yorkshire, and Provost of Beverley. He was appointed Bishop of Rochester 27th March, 1468, and translated to Lincoln, 10th March, 1472, and enthroned as Archbishop of York 3rd September, 1480. He was likewise—

Privy Councillor and Chaplain to Edward IV.;
Lord Keeper of the Privy Seal;
Lord Chancellor of England, 5th June, 1475. (*Beatson*);
Chancellor of the University of Cambridge, 1469, 1473, 1475, 1478, and 1483;
Master of Pembroke College, 1480; and
Created Cardinal of St. Cecilia by the Pope, *circa* 1480. ("*Lord Campbell's Lives of the Chancellors.*")

---

[x] Thomas Scotte assumed the name of Rotherham, from the place of his early preferment near the town of Sheffield in Yorkshire, a custom almost invariable amongst ecclesiastics in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. At the period of which we are writing, we have the instances of William of Wickham, William of Waynfleet, John of Wheathampstead, and Simon of Sudbury. In the Abbey of Bayham four Abbots in succession are thus described, viz., Thomas Greenwich, Thomas Deptford (from the Abbey lands there), Thomas Leedes, and Roger Malling. Priests, being *mortui sæculo,* relinquished their family names on ordination.

Archbishop Scott, or Rotherham.

Thomas Scott, or Rotherham, was a munificent prelate, and, in many respects, an extraordinary man, in troublous times of no ordinary import. Like the rest of his family, who prospered so greatly by the favours extended to them by the house of York, he appears to have been eminently Yorkist, and for his staunch adherence to the fortunes of Edward IV. and his unfortunate Queen, and their no less unfortunate son, Edward V., he was imprisoned by Richard III. in the Tower. After the return from exile of Edward IV. (the patron of his family and kindred), he almost alone withstood the fury of the mob when Queen Elizabeth Woodville, on his advice, for the first time took sanctuary at Westminster, in which cheerless abode she was delivered of her son, afterwards the uncrowned Edward V. Some years later the Archbishop[y] again appears (*see Shakespeare's Richard III.*) to have befriended the unfortunate deserted and widowed Queen, and a second time to have placed her in the sanctuary at Westminster, and there deposited with her the Great Seal as security for his sincerity.[z]

The Archbishop thus pathetically describes the event:—"About her I found much heaviness rumble haste and business, carriage and conveyance of her stuff, chests, coffers, packs, and fardells, all trussed on mens backs, no man unoccupied, some lading, some going, some discharging, some coming for more, and some breaking down walls to bring goods in the next (*nearest*) way. The Queen herself sat alone on the rushes, all desolate and dismayed."

This description refers to the Queen's second flight to the Sanctuary, when hurried from the Palace of Westminster at midnight, accompanied by the Archbishop, her younger son Richard, Duke of York, her five daughters, and the Marquis of Dorset, previously to the seizure and murder of her sons and the imprisonment of her kinsmen by Richard, Duke of Gloucester, who immediately afterwards usurped the crown.

Thomas Scott (who was considered one of the greatest equity lawyers of the age) was secretary to four kings (Henry VI., Edward IV., Richard III., and Henry VII.). At great cost he built the beautiful church of All Saints, Rotherham, one of the finest edifices of the Perpendicular period to be found in Yorkshire, as well as the chapel on the bridge crossing the river Don in that town, and a college there.

Lincoln College, Oxford, was likewise (in 1474) rebuilt and re-endowed by him, whilst Bishop of Lincoln, and thus named after his diocese. The circumstance that settled his determination in this respect is thus related. The Bishop, whilst at Oxford (which was then in the diocese of Lincoln), attended a visitation sermon, preached in Latin by John Tristoppe, who took for his text Psalm lxxx. 14 and 15, "BEHOLD, AND VISIT THIS VINE, WHICH THY RIGHT HAND HATH PLANTED," etc. The Bishop's resolve was taken, and the college, which had fallen into decay and indiscipline, was rebuilt and

---

[y] Thomas Scott's nephew, Sir John Scott, was married to Ann Pympe, a cousin of Queen Elizabeth Woodville (see pp. 153-159), in descent from her aunt, sister of Richard Woodville, first Earl Rivers, father of the Queen.

[z] ARCHBISHOP. "My gracious lady, go,
And thither bear your treasure and your goods.
For my part, I'll resign unto your grace
The seal I keep; and so betide to me,
As well I tender you and all of yours!
Come, I'll conduct you to the Sanctuary." [*Exeunt.*]
King Richard III., act 2, scene iv.

Archbishop Scott, or Rotherham.

re-endowed with certain lands in Buckinghamshire and Oxfordshire, and the number of Fellows increased from seven to twelve. It was stipulated that the Fellowships should be held by persons born in the diocese of Lincoln and York, with a preference to the parish of Rotherham.

A singular instance of royal favour, altogether without precedent in the judicial history of this country, occurred in 1475, when Edward IV. appointed *two* Chancellors, viz., Thomas Scotte (*then Bishop of Lincoln*), the subject of our memoir, and John Alcock (*Bishop of Rochester*). These distinguished prelates held the title of Lord Chancellor for several months together, as proved by several Privy Seal bills addressed to both, by the same title, from April 27 to September 28, 1475. Foss, in his "*History of the Judges,*" suggests that the double appointment was made by the King with the intention of taking Thomas Scott, the Chancellor, with him in his contemplated invasion of France, and leaving Bishop Alcock to act in that capacity during his absence from home. The armament, however, was in the end delayed, and Bishop Rotherham having returned from France, whither the King had sent him, he, after the 28th September, resumed his functions as sole Chancellor. Thus it appears that the chief negociations at this crisis with Charles, Duke of Burgundy (brother-in-law of the King), and Louis XI., concerning the claim of Edward IV. to the throne of France, were chiefly entrusted to two members of the Scot's Hall family, viz., Sir John Scott, as Ambassador, and his son, Bishop Rotherham, as Chancellor and adviser.

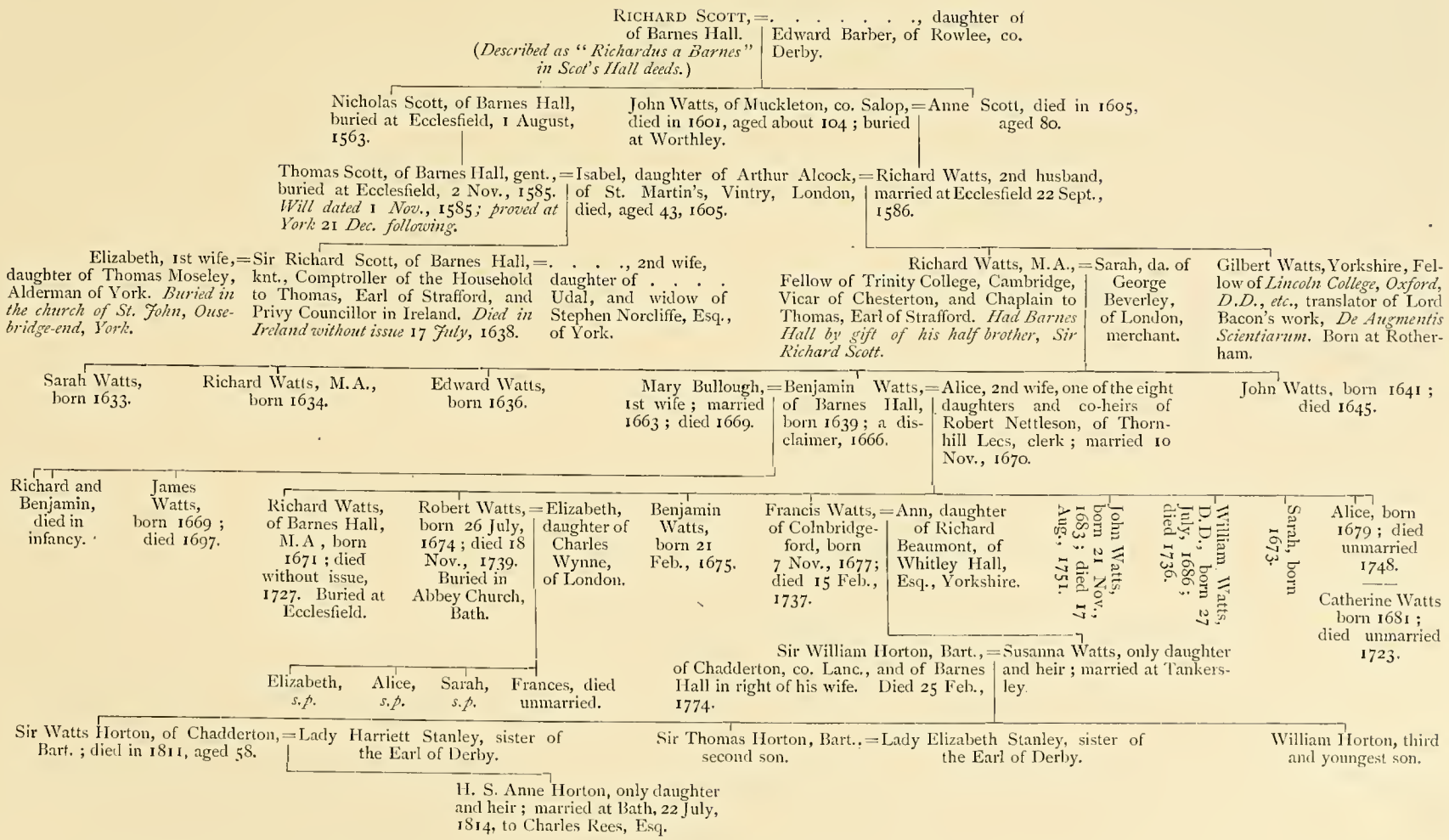
Questions have arisen as to the patronymic of this distinguished man, some authorities asserting his name to have been Rotherham. This is not so: he was unquestionably one of the Scot's Hall family, and as such his arms, impaled with those of the see of York, now exist (although almost undecipherable) on the roof of the Chapel of the Virgin in Canterbury Cathedral, and were so described by Willement, about seventy years ago, in his "*Heraldic Notices of Canterbury Cathedral.*" In addition to which they are thus heraldically displayed in the Divinity Hall at Oxford, in commemoration of his foundation of Lincoln College.

But, as before observed, his name frequently appears in the Scot's Hall Records of the period, sometimes in the light of a trustee, at others as arbitrator. The same confusion exists with reference to his heirs general, some authorities asserting that the family of Rotherham, of Luton, Bedfordshire, was descended from kinsmen of the Archbishop of that name, and on his death became his heirs. This is only true in part, as will shortly be shown. On the division of the inheritance, at the death of Thomas Scotte, *alias* Rotherham, a portion of his estates passed to the heirs of his "consanguineus" John Scotte. The Luton estates, which it is said the prelate inherited from John, Lord Wenlock (said to have married a Scott of the Scot's Hall family) passed to an heir general, who, assuming the Archbishop's ecclesiastical name of Rotherham whilst dropping that of Scott, likewise assumed the arms sometimes attributed to the Archbishop, viz., "*Vert, three bucks trippant, or, a bend sinister argent,*" a coat borne by the Rotherhams of Farley in Bedfordshire and of Essex to this day. On the other hand, the Yorkshire and Lincolnshire estates passed to a family of the name of Scott (doubtless kinsmen or connected with the Kentish family of that name), formerly known as of Barnes Hall, in Ecclesfield, Yorkshire, and who lived at that place for many generations, until merged in other families by the marriage of female heirs. This family, whilst retaining the patronymic of "Scott," did, in accordance with the practice of the times, assume a separate coat-of-arms, suggestive of the foundation of a distinct family, and it is curious and instructive to find the arms so assumed by the Scotts of Barnes Hall, viz., "*Vert, three roebucks trippant, argent attired or,*" to be in fact almost identical with those of the family surnamed Rotherham, their "consanguinei," and co-representatives of the Archbishop in the disposition of his property.

We here append the Pedigree of Scott and Watts of Barnes Hall, from Hunter's "*Sheffield,*" Parish of Ecclesfield, p. 262.

PEDIGREE OF SCOTT AND WATTS, OF BARNES HALL.

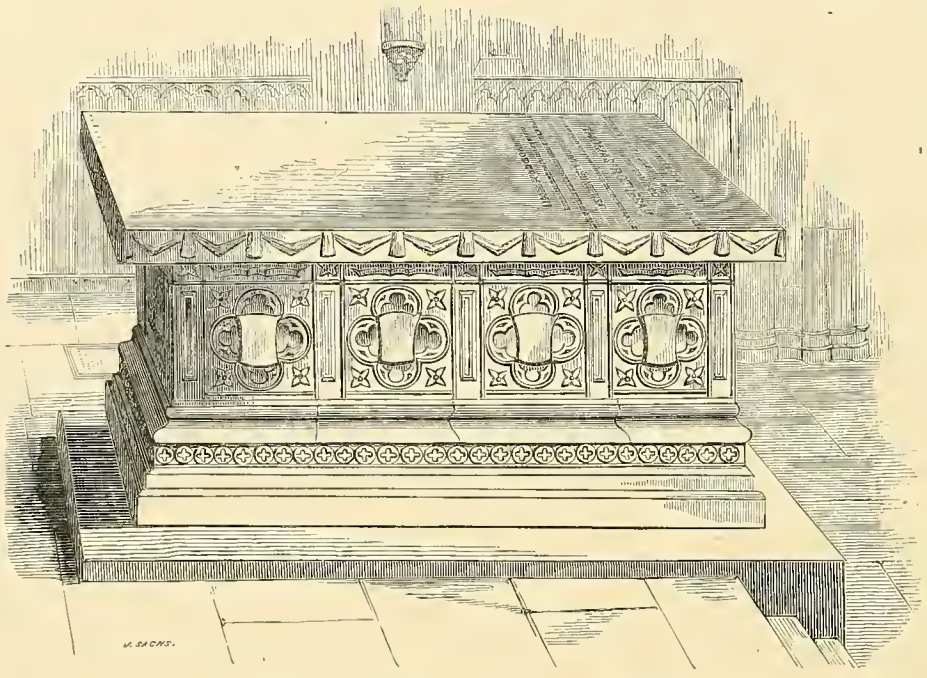
ARMS OF SCOTT.—*Vert, three roebucks trippant, argent attired, or.*
CREST.—*On a wreath, a buck's head and neck argent, attired or between two sprigs vert.*


Richard Scott, of Barnes Hall. (*Described as "Richardus a Barnes" in Scot's Hall deeds.*) = ..., daughter of Edward Barber, of Rowlee, co. Derby.
Nicholas Scott, of Barnes Hall, buried at Ecclesfield, 1 August, 1563.
John Watts, of Muckleton, co. Salop, died in 1601, aged about 104; buried at Worthley. = Anne Scott, died in 1605, aged 80.
Thomas Scott, of Barnes Hall, gent., buried at Ecclesfield, 2 Nov., 1585. *Will dated 1 Nov., 1585; proved at York 21 Dec. following.* = Isabel, daughter of Arthur Alcock, of St. Martin's, Vintry, London, died, aged 43, 1605.
Richard Watts, 2nd husband, married at Ecclesfield 22 Sept., 1586.
Elizabeth, 1st wife, daughter of Thomas Moseley, Alderman of York. *Buried in the church of St. John, Ousebridge-end, York.*
Sir Richard Scott, of Barnes Hall, knt., Comptroller of the Household to Thomas, Earl of Strafford, and Privy Councillor in Ireland. *Died in Ireland without issue 17 July, 1638.* = ..., 2nd wife, daughter of . . . . Udal, and widow of Stephen Norcliffe, Esq., of York.
Richard Watts, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, Vicar of Chesterton, and Chaplain to Thomas, Earl of Strafford. *Had Barnes Hall by gift of his half brother, Sir Richard Scott.* = Sarah, da. of George Beverley, of London, merchant.
Gilbert Watts, Yorkshire, Fellow of *Lincoln College, Oxford, D.D., etc.*, translator of Lord Bacon's work, *De Augmentis Scientiarum*. Born at Rotherham.
Sarah Watts, born 1633.
Richard Watts, M.A., born 1634.
Edward Watts, born 1636.
Mary Bullough, 1st wife; married 1663; died 1669. = Benjamin Watts, of Barnes Hall, born 1639; a disclaimer, 1666.
Alice, 2nd wife, one of the eight daughters and co-heirs of Robert Nettleson, of Thornhill Lees, clerk; married 10 Nov., 1670.
John Watts, born 1641; died 1645.
Richard and Benjamin, died in infancy.
James Watts, born 1669; died 1697.
Richard Watts, of Barnes Hall, M.A, born 1671; died without issue, 1727. Buried at Ecclesfield.
Robert Watts, born 26 July, 1674; died 18 Nov., 1739. Buried in Abbey Church, Bath. = Elizabeth, daughter of Charles Wynne, of London.
Benjamin Watts, born 21 Feb., 1675.
Francis Watts, of Colnbridge-ford, born 7 Nov., 1677; died 15 Feb., 1737. = Ann, daughter of Richard Beaumont, of Whitley Hall, Esq., Yorkshire.
John Watts, born 21 Nov., 1683; died 17 Aug., 1751.
William Watts, D.D., born 27 July, 1686; died 1736.
Sarah, born 1673.
Alice, born 1679; died unmarried 1748.
Catherine Watts born 1681; died unmarried 1723.
Elizabeth, *s.p.*
Alice, *s.p.*
Sarah, *s.p.*
Frances, died unmarried.
Sir William Horton, Bart., of Chadderton, co. Lanc., and of Barnes Hall in right of his wife. Died 25 Feb., 1774. = Susanna Watts, only daughter and heir; married at Tankersley.
Sir Watts Horton, of Chadderton, Bart.; died in 1811, aged 58. = Lady Harriett Stanley, sister of the Earl of Derby.
Sir Thomas Horton, Bart., second son. = Lady Elizabeth Stanley, sister of the Earl of Derby.
William Horton, third and youngest son.
H. S. Anne Horton, only daughter and heir; married at Bath, 22 July, 1814, to Charles Rees, Esq.

Archbishop Scott, or Rotherham.

Thomas Rotherham died of the plague, at Cawood Castle, Yorkshire, at the age of seventy-six, and his body was burnt. A carved oak figure of him was made, and the effigy lay in state and was afterwards buried in York Cathedral. Subsequently, when many tombs were despoiled and opened, this figure was taken out of his coffin. The head alone remains under a glass tomb in the sacristy.

The Tomb, however, in which the ashes of the Archbishop and the effigy were placed, was in existence until about forty years ago, when it was destroyed in the calamitous fire that ravaged a large portion of the cathedral. The authorities of Lincoln College have, however, restored, or rather replaced the tomb, but bare of the heraldic enrichments of which the previous mausoleum was so profuse. A portrait of the Archbishop is in Lincoln College, but when placed there is unknown.



ARCHBISHOP ROTHERHAM'S TOMB, YORK CATHEDRAL.

(No. 30 in Ped.) **Sir John Scott,** knight, of Scot's Hall, eldest son and heir of Sir William Scott. (See Ped. No. 27.)

Knight of the King's Body-guard, Henry VIII., 1515—1518. (*State Papers.*)
Sheriff of Kent, 1528.
Knighted (*circa* 1520) by the Prince of Castile for signal services rendered against the Duke of Guelders.[a]

Sir John Scott, like his immediate ancestors at Scot's Hall, was by profession a soldier. This circumstance may be partly attributed to the fact of his family holding so many manors *in capite*

[a] Sir John Scott's banner is thus described in part of a volume in Harleian Library, 4632, col. 209—225: "Sir John Scott, knt, 'White semee of Catherine wheels, sable.' The device on a wreath, a griffon's head with wings endorsed, sable. Motto, 'Humble and loyall.'"

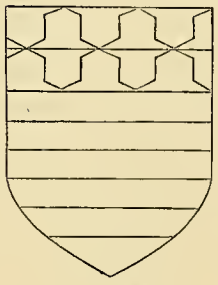
Sir John Scott. of the King by knight's service, especially that of Brabourne by watch and ward of Dover Castle. He was with his father in France, and probably it was in that country that he gained his spurs, on the occasion when Charles, the Emperor of Germany and Prince of Castile and Austria, in return for the assistance rendered him in men and arms by Henry VIII., paid a complimentary visit to Henry, landing at Hythe in the month of May, 1520, previously to the famous interview between those monarchs and the French King Francis, on the Field of the Cloth of Gold. Sir John was appointed to attend the King and Queen at the interview with Francis I. at the Field of the Cloth of Gold, and was there with his father, with whom, in a year or so following, viz., on 24th May, 1522, together with Sir John Fogge, Sir Henry and Sir George Guldeforde, and others, he was likewise appointed to attend upon Cardinal Archbishop Wolsey, the Lord Legate, at Dover, at the meeting of Henry VIII. and the Emperor Charles V. of Germany, preparatory to the execution of the treaty between those monarchs signed at Bruges, providing for the defence of the realm against France, Scotland, and other foreign powers.

Sir John Scott, Sir John Fogge (*son of the Treasurer of the Household of Edward IV.*), George Guldeforde, and William Hawte were ordered to be at Dover on this occasion, prepared with victuals and carriages, to convey the Emperor's staff to Canterbury; the assistance of the Mayor and officers of Dover was likewise required.

In 1521 Sir John Scott, with Sir Thomas Cheney, Sir John Fogge, Edward Boughton, John Moyle, John Mayny, and others, were appointed a jury of the County of Kent on the trial of Edward, Duke of Buckingham, on the charge of intending to exalt himself to the crown, etc. (*State Papers*, 1519 to 1523.)

Sir John Scott died previously to 1534. It is not known where he or his wife were buried; it is supposed at Nettlested Church in Kent, which formerly contained interesting memorials of the Staffords (Dukes of Buckingham), the Pympes (who rebuilt the church, *circa* 1460), and probably of the Scott family.

(No. 31 in Ped.) **Anne**, daughter and heiress of Reginald Pympe, of Nettlested Place in Kent, and heiress of her mother, Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of JOHN PASHLEY, of Smeeth, Kent, and of Pashleys, Ticehurst in Sussex, wife to Sir JOHN SCOTT, of Scot's Hall, Kent.

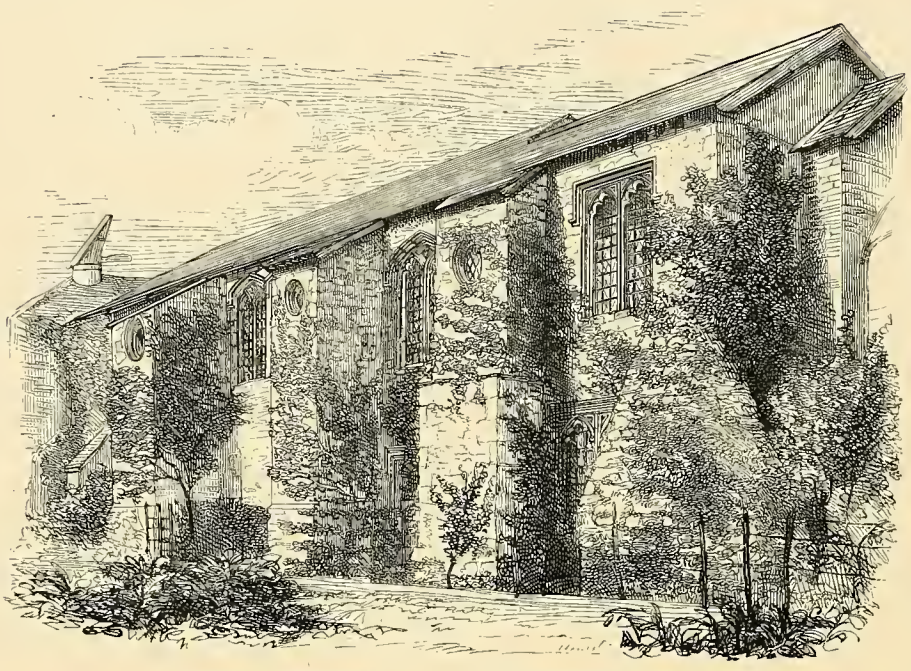


DE PYMPE.

ARMS.—*Barry of four, gules, and argent, a vair in chief.*

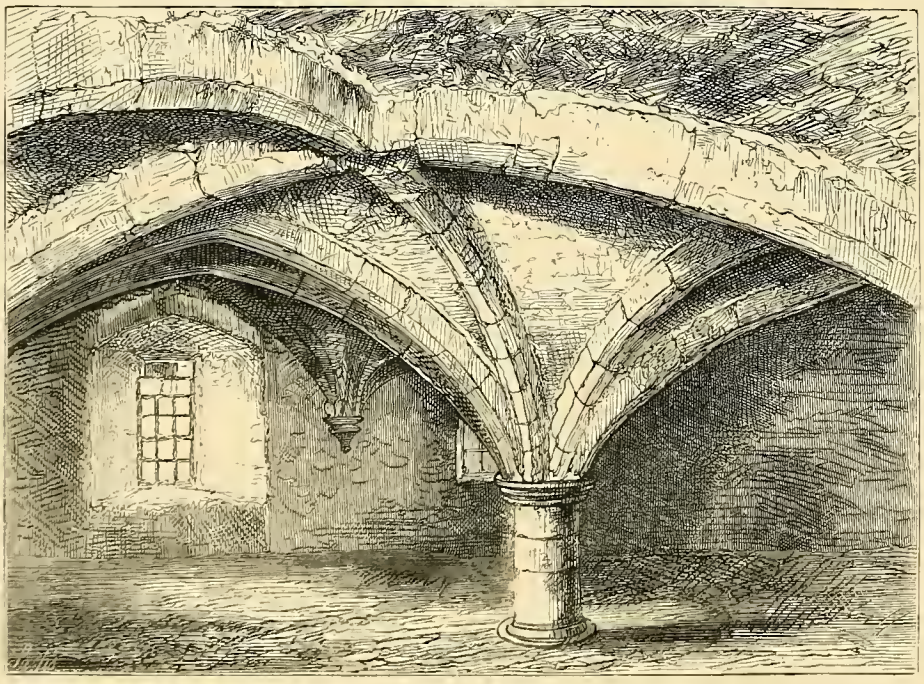
The ancient family of Pympe, originally of Saxon origin, derived its name from the pre-Domesday manor of De Pympa, in East Farleigh and Nettlested, Kent. The family would appear to have been located at Pympe's Court, and at All Saints in the hundred of Hoo, near Rochester, from an early period after the Conquest. It was William de Pympe, one of this family, who built (*circa* 1370) the mansion of Nettlested Place, an interesting portion of which (supposed to be the Banqueting Hall) now remains, as well as a portion of the

original gate-house, or entry into the inner court or quadrangle, and likewise a most interesting manorial barn, the ancient timbering of which is still in good preservation.[b]



ANCIENT BANQUETING HALL IN NETTLESTED COURT, KENT.

[b] The remains of the Place House at Nettlested (*Domesday, Nedestede*), would from their importance at this day, appear worthy of a short notice. Of this once extensive and interesting mansion (the ruins and foundations of which may yet be traced. and of the materials of which many neighbouring cottages have been constructed), only the banqueting hall and crypt now remain. The gateway towards the river (erected early in the seventeenth century, of debased architecture), the fountains, the wooden bridge across the Medway, the unrivalled fish-ponds and terrace-walks, are of the past. The gardens, however, now in the careful occupation of Mr. White, of Nettlested, still exhibit evidences of the extent and beauty of this once famous spot. The extent of Nettlested Place, and its original importance as a manorial residence, may be gathered from the fact (noted in an old MS. in the possession of the Rev. Mr. Cobb, the present much esteemed Rector



REMAINS OF CRYPT AT NETTLESTED COURT, 1875.

Anne Pympe, wife to Sir John Scott.

The manor and mansion of Nettlested passed, about the year 1490, by the marriage of Anne Pympe (as heir to her father) to Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. The adjoining manors of Hylth and

---

of Nettlested), that early in the sixteenth century, when this residence had passed by marriage to Sir John Scott, his retainers and servants maintained at Nettlested, who attended the services at the church adjoining within the limits of the domain, numbered no less than sixty persons.

We cannot do better than give the description of these interesting remains in the words of our friend, Mr. Charles Baily, to whom we have before expressed our obligation for friendly information now embodied in this work. Mr. Baily, in his letter to us, observes that "The very interesting remains of the old mansion are situate at a short distance to the south of the church. These are worthy of the most careful examination. The lower story, or crypt, as in many mansions erected during the fourteenth century, is divided by stone columns into two aisles and four bays in length. From the tops of these columns (which have moulded capitals and bases) spring a series of stone chamfered, arched ribs, crossing the apartment to the side walls, where they rest on corbels, the filling-in of the spandrels of the vault being of chalk. The floor of this basement is lighted by a series of small original windows, and is slightly below the natural surface of the ground, and, as was usual at this period, it appears that there was no internal communication from this vaulted basement (which was probably used for the keeping of stores) to the upper floor. This crypt is entered by a doorway on its north side; and there are other apartments in the lower story beneath the great hall, but these possess no feature of interest, except the construction of the massive timber floors of the banqueting hall above. Above the crypt, on the upper floor, we find the remains of several rooms. Externally, on the south side, the architectural design of the wall (built of Kentish ragstone) is of a very extraordinary character, exhibiting a range of buttresses of immense size, with three large windows, each two lights wide, with segmental pointed heads, which appear to give the length of the grand hall. On the north side is the original external entrance to this hall, viz., a pointed-headed doorway immediately over the entrance to the basement, such an arrangement being common in English mansions in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, a similar example existing at the Temple Manor-house at Strood, near Rochester. On the outside of this doorway are marks, indents, and mortices in the stonework, which prove beyond a doubt that this upper door was approached by means of a staircase with landing, and a penthouse roof over the same, the landing to the upper door forming a covering to the entrance to the crypt or basement, the whole being constructed in woodwork."

Mr. Baily goes on to say, "It is difficult to account for the very large size of the buttresses on the outside of the south wall, particularly as we do not see a corresponding arrangement on the north. But a considerable alteration must have been made to the mansion early in the fifteenth century, for the windows of the hall are of that time, and the north wall also may have been so. In the interior of the hall there is not much left to tell us what was the peculiar design of the roof; but we may rest satisfied that it was exposed to view, and as the heavy buttresses were intended to counteract a great thrust, we may be justified in supposing that the roof was constructed with arched principals of stonework, such as we see at the present day at the great hall at the Archiepiscopal Palace at Mayfield in Sussex, and at the 'Mote' at Igtham in Kent. At the upper or western end of the hall the rooms were of a more private sort, and those at the east end, in one of which we find some remains of a large fire-place, may have been the kitchen and the domestic offices. Near to the north-eastern angle of the house are some doorways and what appears to be the remains of a stair-turret, giving access to the upper floor from the basement."

"The manorial barn is situated to the west of the remains of the old manor-house, just described. It is a very fine erection of timber-work, and, like most buildings of this date, is divided into a number of bays, in this case eight. The length is about 120 feet, and the width about thirty-one feet. On each side there are two waggon entrances; the clear opening of each is fourteen feet. The wooden sills of the framed sides of this barn are laid on an underpinning of rubble-work, having on the top a worked coping of freestone, with a splayed edge externally, on the east side, near the north end. This is left in a very perfect condition."

"The construction of the timber principals dividing the bays is worth attentive examination. Each principal has two stout side-posts, framed into the sills, and which support the horizontal plates or the heads of the sides. On these plates rest the ends of the tie-beams, into the ends of which are framed the principal rafters. About half way between the top of the tie-beam and the apex of the roof a collar-beam is placed, framed to the rafters, which assists to support the purlins. In the lowest division of each side-slope of the roof, a series of very finely carved wind-braces are introduced, forming a row of pointed arches. Beneath the tie-beams, curved strutts are also introduced, adding greatly to the strength and fine effect of the roof. In some cases the strutts under the tie-beams are placed with the external

Anne Pympe, wife to Sir John Scott.

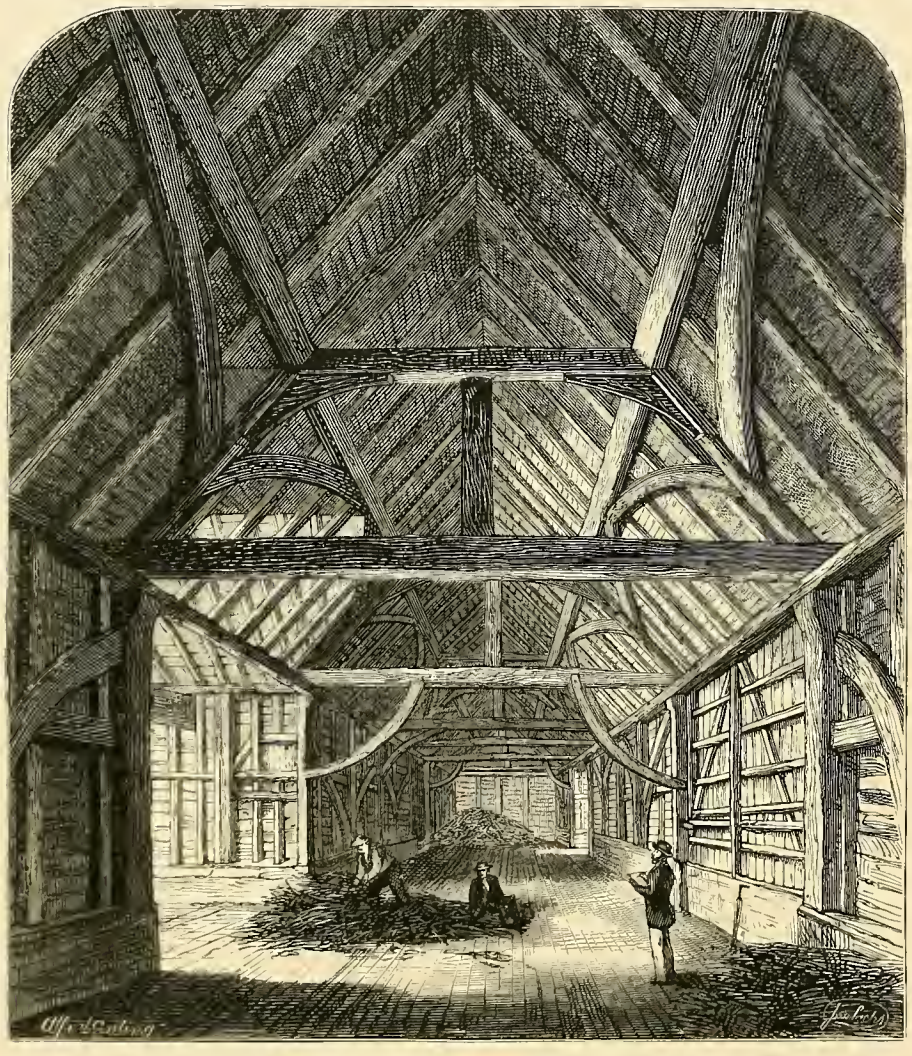
Pympe's Court would appear to have passed to his grandson, Sir Thomas Scott, by purchase, or as the eventual heir of John Pympe, of Pympe's Court in East Farleigh.

At Nettlested the family of Scott resided for a period of nearly two hundred years. As before asserted in the foot-note, Sir John Scott principally resided there, although, as heir and eldest son to his father, he was likewise in the entailed possession of Scot's Hall. Here also occasionally resided Sir Thomas Scott, of Armada fame, who (or his son, Sir John Scott) would appear to have made considerable alterations, and to have partly rebuilt the banqueting hall, as suggested by a date (1586) in the spandrel of a door in the south or garden front.

Sir John Scott, son of Sir Thomas Scott above mentioned, and known as Sir John Scott, *of*

---

curved sides hanging downwards; but in all probability these are of modern date, and replace the original braces. Owing to the plain character of the construction of this barn, there is considerable difficulty in stating the precise date when it was built; but at the northern end are the remains of the ancient gateway by which one of the courtyards was entered, and there is every reason to suppose that this gateway, with the room over it and the barn adjoining, to be of the same age."



MANORIAL BARN AT NETTLESTED COURT, KENT, TEMP. EDW. III.

"The jambs of this gateway are of stone, which carry a timber-head, or lintel, straight and flat; the section of the moulding of the jambs is quite sufficient to prove that the gateway cannot be later than the latter part of the reign of Edward III. (say about 1360). Over this gateway is an apartment constructed of timber, which is of the same period as the gateway itself, and which is of an ornamental character, and still in a very complete state. It was probably the residence of the official whose duty it was to attend to the gate. This room is covered by a roof of interesting design, having a principal tie-beam and king-post, with collar-beams and strutts, which carry a Leon beam; the whole is richly moulded and well finished. It is lighted by a flat-headed window (over the gateway below) of two lights, with tracery in the woodwork in the heads, and suggestive of the same date."

Anne Pympe, wife to Sir John Scott.

Nettlested, afterwards possessed this place, and in the church adjoining his two wives are buried. It is in the crypt of Nettlested Place that he is said, in the reign of Queen Mary, to have imprisoned his first wife, Elizabeth Stafford,[c] grand-daughter of the last Duke of Buckingham of that name, beheaded in 1521, for setting up a claim to the throne in the event of the King (Henry VIII.) dying without issue.

On the death (in 1616) of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested (*who was buried at Brabourne*), various members of the Scott family resided there, the last of whom was Edward Scott, whose father had obtained an act of Parliament for the sale of certain of his estates for the payment of his debts, and by whom the greater portion of this fine old manorial residence was pulled down and the materials sold, leaving, however, a larger portion of the old mansion than exists at the present day. Nettlested Place eventually passed by sale to Sir Oliver Boteler, Bart., of Teston, about the end of the last century, since which time no portion of the old place has been used residentially. The walls, gateway towards the river, and the western end of the banqueting hall have since that time disappeared, and given place to hop-kilns, malt-houses, etc. Sufficient, however, is left to create interest, in an antiquarian point of view.

Before parting with the subject of Nettlested manor and mansion, it may be well to mention that Sir John Scott built (in accordance with the wish expressed in the will of his ancestor, John Pympe) the porch to the church of Nettlested as it now exists; and in which church (the presentation to the living of which was in the owner of the mansion and manor) formerly was buried Margaretta de Cobham (1337), wife to Sir William de Pympe, as appeared by an inscription on a brass formerly on the chancel floor, but now lost or removed. A tomb also formerly existed on the north side of the chancel, and is supposed to have contained the ashes of the founder of the church, who probably was John Pympe, who in his will, dated 1495, directs his body to be buried in the "Queire" of the church at Nettlested, etc. The interior walls of the chancel, a few feet from the flooring, have a singularly hollow sound, suggestive of recessed tombs, which may have been built up by some Rector of the parish, zealous for so-called restoration. The stained glass in the church, portions of which still remain, is suggestive of the period of the Wars of the Roses, and teems with the badges of Edward IV. and of the Stafford family. The arms of Pympe are also in the chancel (east) window, in which is likewise beautifully represented the reception of St. Thomas à Becket, Archbishop, by the monks of Canterbury, at the Cathedral door, after his return from exile. The windows of the aisle formerly

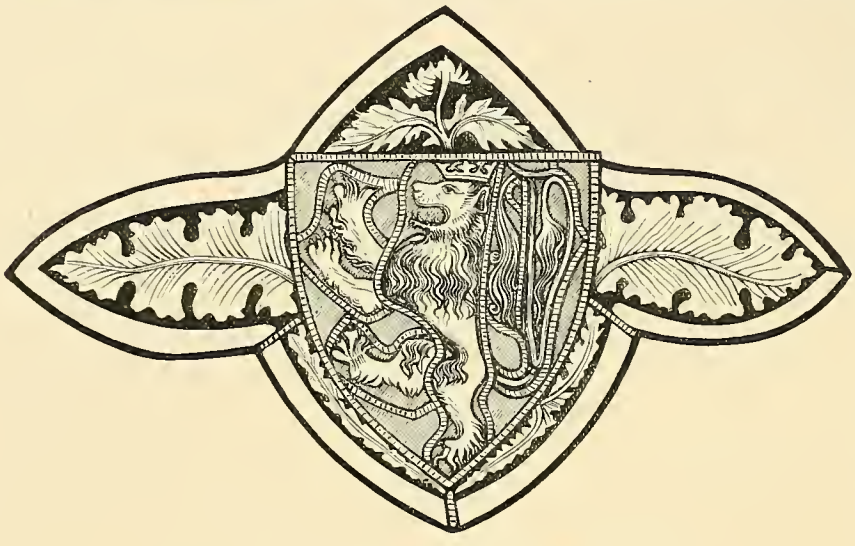
---

[c] Respecting this lady (who was a Protestant), tradition asserts that she was prevailed upon, against her will, being of small fortune, to marry Sir John Scott of Nettlested. He being a furious Papist, imprisoned her in the crypt of Nettlested, where, but for the attentions of a favourite servant, she would have been starved to death. She attempted to escape by working a way with her bodkin through the stone mullions and iron bars of her prison-house; but failing in this, she nevertheless succeeded in escaping to Geneva, from whence she returned to England on the accession to the throne of Queen Elizabeth, and eventually became one of the ladies of the bedchamber to that monarch. It is likewise traditionally asserted that the Queen being at Chatham in 1573, paid her a visit at this place; but this can scarcely have happened, as this lady was then the wife of Sir William Drury, of Hawsted, who died in 1578, in which year Queen Elizabeth certainly paid a visit to Hawsted Hall in Suffolk, then recently rebuilt by him, at that time Lord Justice of Ireland, and Lord President of the Province of Munster. It is probable that this circumstance may have furnished foundation for the assertion that Queen Elizabeth visited Lady Scott at Nettlested, or that monarch may have done so in one of her later progresses. Of her exile at Geneva, we have evidence in her monumental inscription in Nettlested Church; but no inference can be drawn from this that her expatriation was in consequence of any ill-usage on the part of her second husband, but rather suggests that it was in respect of the exile of her family consequent on the beheading of her grandfather, Edward the last Duke of Buckingham, and the proscription of his family, who were thereby reduced to the greatest poverty, and in two generations were extinct.

Anne Pympe, wife to Sir John Scott.

contained stained glass representations of the twelve apostles; but these in the whole of the lower compartments are now gone. In the tracery above are many blank shields. A perusal of the will of John Pympe, printed below, will explain the purpose they were intended to serve.

Anne Pympe, as heir to her mother, Elizabeth, daughter of John Pashley, or Passelee, likewise carried the manor of Evegate, or Thevegate (*The heave gate*), in Smeeth, to Sir John Scott. His family had been for many generations previously resident at the manor of Halle in that parish, and from it, it obtained the name of "Scot's Hall." A chapel, or chauntry, formerly existed in the Norman church of Smeeth, and is now known as the "Scott" chapel, although it does not appear from its appearance or from the Scott records, to have been much used by the family as a place of interment. Underneath a window in this chapel there appears to be a recessed and arched canopy, of the character of a founder's tomb, and in the glass above a beautiful heraldic representation of the arms of Pashley, viz., "*Purpure a lion rampant, crowned and double queued, or.*" This tomb, and the stained glass in the window above, probably represent the founder of this chapel. The character and date of this glass may be considered as early in the fourteenth century. It is a very interesting piece of workmanship and design, and probably the only memorial of the Pashleys now left in East Kent or West Sussex, where they formerly had such extensive possessions. The manors of Evegate and Scot's Hall in Smeeth are now the property of the Right Honourable E. H. Knatchbull-Hugessen, M.P.



THE PASHLEY LION IN WINDOW OF SMEETH CHURCH.

Anne Pympe, the subject of our memoir, was likewise heir to her grand-uncle, John Gower, of Clapham, Surrey, she having, by petition to Parliament, obtained, in the first year of Henry VII., the reversal of the attainder passed in 3rd and 4th Edward IV. against him. John Gower, of Clapham, is supposed to have been a near relation of John Gower, the poet, who largely contributed, at end of fourteenth century, to the rebuilding of the church of St. Mary Overies in Southwark, and in a chapel of which he was buried. (See pp. 55 and 60.)

We have printed two letters of John Pympe to Sir John Paston, of Caistor Castle, Norfolk, which appear in Sir John Fenn's original "*Paston Letters.*" These are interesting as specimens of orthography of the fourteenth century. In the first we have departed from the original mode of spelling; the latter, a quaint poetic effusion, is a verbatim transcript of the original. The explanatory notes are those of Sir John Fenn. We conclude the biography of Anne Pympe with the interesting Will of John Pympe (*her uncle*), which throws considerable light on the history of the church of Nettlested, the restoration of which would appear to have been completed early in the sixteenth century. The porch mentioned in the will is, however, traditionally asserted to have been added to the church by Sir John Scott, the subject of our memoir.

A LETTER FROM JOHN PYMPE TO SIR JOHN PASTON, KNT.,

Extracted, with accompanying notes, from Fenn's original "Paston Letters," No. 77, vol. 2, p. 227, March, 1476, 17th Edward IV.

"To MASTER SIR JOHN PASTON, be this Letter delivered IN CALAIS.

"Honour and joy be to you, my right good master, and most assured Brother, letting you know that all your Wellwillers and Servants, in these parts, that I know, fare well, and better would, if they might hear of your well being, and forthwith some of your French and Burgundy tidings; for we in these parts be in great dread lest the French king with some assaults, should in any wise disturb you of your soft, sote (*sweet*), and sure sleeps, but as yet we nothing can hear that he so disposeth him.

"Marry, we have heard say that the Frows (*women*) of Bruges, with their high Caps, have given some of you great claps; and that the feat of their arms doing is such, that they smite all at the mouth, but in faith we care not for you, for we know well that ye be good enough at defence; but we hear say, that they be of such courage, that they give you more strokes than ye do them, and that they strike surer than ye also; but I think that the English Ladies, and Gentlewomen, and the Poor also, can do as well as they, and list (*desire*) not to learn of them nothing; and therefore we dread lest their high courages should move them to make you war also; but God defend, for by my truth then have ye much to do; for it were better and more ease for to labour three or four days with Mattocks and Pickaxes to overturn your Sand hills, as we hear say ye do right worshipfully, than only one day to endure their fierce encounters; so as ye might either get or save your worships by; and look that ye trust to have no rescue of us, for so God me helpe, we have enough to do in these parts with the same wars.

"But in one thing we praise your sadnesses (*wisdoms*) and discretions right much, that is, in keeping of your Truce and Peace with the King of France, as the King hath commanded; and a great reason why, for it were too much for you to have war with all the world at once, for the war aforesaid keepeth you blameless, for every reasonable man weeteth well, that it is too much for any people living to do both at once. Sir, as for the more part of my thought, I pray you recommend me unto yourself, praying you that I may continue in such case as your goodness hath taken me of old, and if ye list to send any tidings or other thing to the parties that were wont to warm them by your fire, in faith I shall do your errand.

"As for Barley, it is of the same price that it was wont to be of, and is the most sure corn, and best enduring that may be; and Sir, where that some time was a little Hole in a wall, is now a Door large enough and easy passage, whereof ye were the Deviser and have thank for your labour of some parties, but nothing lasteth ever; I mean that I trow, my passage shall hastily fail me, and the Door shall be shut up again; less then (*unless*) Fortune be agreeable to have my Counsel kept; for not long ago making my entry at that passage, I saw a Sparrow that useth those eireys, and I saw her sit so still that I could not endure, but I must needs shoot her, and so God me help. I smote her I trow even to the heart; and so I dread me lest either the Barley will eat the Sparrow, or else the Sparrow will eat the Barley, but as yet all is well, but reason sheweth me, that it must needs fail by continuance, less then (*unless*) I forsake both the Sparrow and the Barley also.

"Sir, I have thank for the shew that I once made of you and daily gramercy (*give thanks*), and ye their prayer.

"Sir, farthermore I beseech you, as ye will do any thing for me, that ye see one day for my sake,

John Pympe. and for your own pleasure, all the good Horse in Calais, and if there be amongst them any prized horse of deeds, that is to sell, in especial that he be well trotting of his own courage, without force of Spurs, and also a steering horse[d]: if he be, he is the better; I pray you send me word of his colour, deeds, and courage, and also of his price, feigning as ye would buy him yourself, and also I would have him somewhat large, not with the largest; but no small horse, as (*qy.* no) more than a double horse; praying you above all things to have this in remembrance, and that hastily as may be, for there is late promised me help to such an intent, and I wote not how long it shall endure; and therefore I beseech you send me word by time.

"I trow the French men have taken up all the good horse in Picardy, and also they be wont to be heavy horse in labour, and that I love not, but a heavy horse of flesh, and light of courage I love well, for I love no horse that will always be lean and slender like Greyhounds. God keep you.

"Your,

"JOHN PYMPE."*

"(Recd) Sunday, 16th of March, 1476 (17th Edward IV.)"

"I pray you to recommend me to my Cousin Sir *John Scot* and all his, in especial Mrs. Bedingfield."[e]

---

* "Under the direction of this letter, and in a hand of the time (I believe in Sir John Paston's hand) is written, 'Ion Pympe,' 'xvi. die Mar. A° E. 4, 17' (16th day of March, 17th Edw. IV.), being the date when the letter was received.

"I have given this letter merely as a specimen of the humour of the time, which, though indelicate, may, I fear, be matched by many a modern correspondence.

"Some amour seems to be couched under the simile of the sparrow, the barley, and the door, etc.

"The latter part of this epistle shows us what were the qualities of a Horse at that time most esteemed.

"The writer was a person of some consideration, as he was to have had Sir J. Paston's lodgings in London, and was cousin to Sir J. Scot, Deputy Governor of Calais, and Ambassador to the Duke of Burgundy. (Pl. vi., No. 29.)"

A LETTER FROM JOHN PYMPE TO SIR JOHN PASTON, KNT.,

Extracted, with accompanying notes, from Fenn's original "Paston Letters," No. 77. vol. 2, p. 235, April, 1477 (17th Edw. IV.)

"To Master S[r] JOHN PASTON, knight, be this Lett[r] delyvered in Calis.

"Fresh amorouse sihts of cuntreys ferre and straunge
Have all fordoone[f] yo[r] old affeccon
In plesurys new, yo[r] hert dooth score and raunge
So hye and ferre that like as the Fawcon
Which is alofte tellith scorne to loke a down
On hym that wont was her feders to pyke[g] and ymye
Ryht so forgoty͡e ye have yo[r] pore pympe.

---

[d] "Query, a horse that obeys the rein."

[e] "Margaret, daughter of Sir John Scott, and wife to Sir Edmund Bedingfield, of Oxburgh Hall, Norfolk."

[f] "Destroyed."

[g] "A term in falconry, signifying the adding a piece to a feather in a hawk's wing."

John Pympe.

" That wrytith sendith and wishith alday yo^{r} wele
More than his owne but ye ne here ne se
Ne sey, ne send and evyr I write and sele
In p^{r}se and ryme as well as ht will be
Sum evyll tong I trow myss—sayeth of me
And ells yo^{r} fast and feithfull frendelynes
Ye thenk mysspent on such as I, I gesse.

" I wyll abate my eustomable concourse
To yow so costuouse[h] whan so evyr ye com agayn
Which that I fele of reson by the course
Of my p$^{\text{ȳ}}$ferid s$^{\text{ȳ}}$vyce hath made yow so unfain
For veryly the water of the Fowntayne
W^{t} hrede only forthw^{t} yowre presens
Me shuld content much more than yo^{r} expense.

" But ay deme I thus that Fortun hath hyryd yow
For she but late of sorowys moo than many
Hath rakyd un to myn hert an hepe more thã a mowe,
And wuld that ye shuld ley thereon on hye
Yo^{r} hevy unkyndnes to make ht fast to lye
And God know^{t} well ht cannot lõg lye there
But ht wyll bryng me to the chirch here.

" Take ht awaye therefore y praye yow fayre
For hardyly my hert beryth hevy y nowh
For there is sorow at rest as in hys chayre
Fixid so fast w^{t} hys p$^{\text{ȳ}}$kks rowh
That in gode feith I wote not whã I lowh
For Mast^{r} Paston the thyng whereon my blisse
Was holly sette is all fordoone I wysse.

" By yo^{r} John Pympe, thes beyng the vj. Lett^{r} that I have send yow

" Always prayyng yow to remembr the hors that I have in every Lett^{r} wrytten for, As thus that hit wuld plese yow to undrestond who hath the gentyllest hors in trottyng and steryng that is in Calis, and if he be to sell to send me word of hys pris, largenesse, and colo^{r} hytt. It is told me that the Mast^{r} Port^{r} (*Thomas Fogge, of Repton, Ashford,* see p. 175) hath a coragiouse ronyd hors, and that hee wuld putt hȳ away by cause he is daungerous in companye, and of that I fore (*care*) not so that he be not chorlissh at a spore as plungyng, and also I sett not by hym, but if he trotte hye and getilly. No more, but God kepe yow. " JOHN PYMPE."

" I have here a letter written to Sir John Paston in rhyme, as a specimen of the poetry of the age. It contains neither anecdote nor information, except expressing the writer's sorrow at the fear of having by his extravagances displeased Sir John. The simile of the falcon is happily introduced.

" By the writer's enquiry concerning a horse, and his referring back to his former letters, this appears to have been written in the latter end of March, or in April, 1477, 17th Edw. IV. (Pl. vi., No. 29.)"

[h] Expensive.

John Pympe. (Ed. Note.) We fear that John Pympe, the rhyming poet of the "Paston Letters," brother to Reginald Pympe, Sir John Scott's father-in-law, was an extravagant man; his frequent correspondence with Sir John Paston, in the "Paston Letters," leads to this conclusion. In addition to which we find amongst the Scott Records a list of the debts of John Pympe, which appear to have been referred to the arbitration of Thomas Rotherham, or Scott, then Bishop of Lincoln, and uncle of Sir John Scott. The MS. is simply a fragment and without date.

WILL OF JOHN PYMPE, OF NETTLESTED, KENT, 1496.

Extracted from Probate Court, Doctors' Commons.

IN DEI NOMINE, AMEN, the vij. day of the month of August, in the yere of oure Lord God mcccclxxxxvj, I, John Pympe, of *Nettalsted* in the Countie of Kente, hole of mynde and in good memory, make and ordeyn this my pñt testament in this wise. Furst, I bequeith my soule to Allmyghty God, Fader of heuen, my Maker, to oure blessed Lady Sainte Mary, his Moder, and to all the holy Company of heuen, and *my body to be buried in the queire of the parishe Churche of Nettilsted aforesaid* before the Image of oure blessed Lady in the selfe place where as the Sepulture of oure Lorde is wounte to stonde at the Fest of Ester, and so to be leyde there in a tombe of stone made under suche forme as the blessed sacremente and the holy crosse may be leide upon the stone of the said tombe in maner of sepulture at the Feeste as bovesaide. And I will *the saide tombe here the Epitapheyne graven in laten (brass) here lyeth buried John Pympe, Sonne of John Pympe, Sonne of John, Sonne of Reignolde, Sonne of Sr William Pympe, Knyght, that hadde to Wiffe Elizabeth, the doughter of Richard Whethill, Leuetennte of the Castell of Genys (Guines, near Calais)*, oon whose soules Jhu have mercy. Item, I bequeth to the high auter of the said Church for my tithes and offringe forgoten, &c., vj*s.* viij*d.* Item, *I will that wtin ij. yere after my deceace there to be made a faire litell porche of ston over the South dorre of the said Church of such height*, as in no wise hit mynyshe the light of the Wyndowe over the said dorre and the said porche for that intente to be cou̅ed with leede. Item. *Where as the Roffe of the body of the said Churche is nowe Rigged with Rigge tile I will that it be rigged wt leede as the Chauncell is*, and that to be done wtin the space of the aforesaid ij. yeres. Item. *I will that wtin other ij. yeres next after that all the Flore of the body of the said Church and of the belfrey be pavyd with pavyng tile.* Item. *I will that wtin the same ij. yere the grete open arche between the belfroy and the body of the Churche be stopped up wt lyme and stone, and in the oone side of the said arche to be sette a fayre litell dorre of stone, and in the other side toward the high auter a windowe of stone to se the auter.* And I will *that there be a flore leide upon cordell wtin the said belfroye of a convenent hight so that the lofte there upon may s̅ue for a Septre (qy.) to the said Church.* Item. *I will that wtin oone yere next after that the two auters in the body of the said Church be* p̄closed (*parclosed*) *a bowte wt the fayrest borde yt canne be made of Oke growing on the Maner of* Netilsted, *that oone in the honour of Saint Mighell, that other in the honor of Saint Ignasuis*, and that to be done under suche fourme as enrich of the said p̄closys extende in lenght fro the Church Windowes to the Chauncell dorr, and that oone halfe of the lenght of every p̄close to be devided wt a p̄ticion fro the open sight of every auter for gentell women to knele in such wise as they in every p̄close may have a

John Pympe.

sight to the high auter throwe the p̄close of every side of the Chauncell, prouided allwey that the said p̄closes excede not in heght the soyle (*sill*) of the Church Windowes for stopping of Lighte. And I will that there be made a syling (*ceiling*) on euerych of the said auters in maner of Vawte Werke that may shayle som dele over the said awters fro the somer of the Rode lofte so as in no wise hit mynyshe eny light of the saide windowes, and also that the said p̄closes be of no more widnesse than is nedefull that oon half for the prest and his Clerke that other halfe for theme that shall knele w^tin lest that the pace betweene the body of the churche and the said p̄closes be defourmed w^t over much straytnesse. Item. *Where as there be certayne blanke skoggyngs (escutcheons) in the Wyndowe of Saint Thomas (St. Thomas of Canterbury) wtin the saide Churche, I will that there be putt in those skocchyns the armes of Master* Sir Thomas Sellinger (*St. Leger*)[i] *and of my Lady his Wiffe, The armes of my Cosen* James Sellinger *and of his Wiffe, The armes of my Cosen* Bartilmere Sellinger *and of his Wiffe, The armes of Sir John Cheyne*[j] *and of his Wife, The armes of Sir Ric. Guildeford and of my suster his Wiffe,*[k] *The armes of my Cosen Edwarde Guildeforde and of his Wiffe, The armes of my Cosen George Guildeforde and of his Wiffe, The armes of me and of my Wiffe, The armes of my* broder Reignolde *and of his Wiffe. And I will that a knoleche be sought howe alliaunce of Sellinger, Cheyne, and Pympe came first in by marriage, and the best knowleche that may be founde to be shewde in the said Wyndowes by armes in such romes as may be thought most convenient wtin the Windowes of the said Church.* Item. I bequeith to Margerete Norton which som tyme was servant to my Fader and Moder in recompence of money to me at dyu̅se tymes lente bothe in my Childehode and syne and for mony other kindenes to me shewd, iiij *li.* in golde, so that she make a clere discharge to myn executors of all man^d other demaundȩ, safe that I will that she have deliv̄ed ij. Salte of silu̅ co̅ued wains by estimacion xl^te and a standing cuppe co̅ued p̄cell gilte and vij. spones of silu̅, which all I borowed of her and have occupied hit be long space. And I will that this bequeith be the first thing that be paid next after my fun^dall expences *The residue of all my goodȩ and Cattellȩ my dettȩ paid, I geve and bequeith holy unto* Elizabeth *my Wiffe,* whome I make and ordeyne my soole Executrice to p̄fourme this my p̄nt testament as is before rehersed as myne as especiall trust ys in her and as she thinkith best to plese God for the helthe of my soule and of her owne frendȩ soules and all xp̃en Soules.

Probatum fuit suprascriptum testamentum coram domino apud Lamehith xiiij die mensis Novembris anno^o domini m̄illmo cccc. nonagesimo sexto iuramento relict et executricis, etc., etc.

---

[i] St. Leger. The alliances suggested above we have endeavoured to supply; but in what manner these had connection with the family of Pympe it is difficult to say. The arms of St. Leger formerly existed in Nettlested Church.

Sir John St. Leger, of Ulcomb, = Margerie, daughter and sole heir of James Donnett, of Rainham, Kent.
Sheriff of Kent 9th Henry VI.; buried at Ulcomb 1442.

- Sir Thomas St. Leger; = Anne, Duchess of Exeter; *buried at Windsor.* *buried at Windsor.*
- Bartholomew = Blanche, daughter of Lord Fitzwalter.
  - Anne, sole daughter and heir, was married to Sir George Manney, Lord Roos, mother to Earl of Rutland.
- Sir James. = Anne, eld. daughter and co-heir of Thomas Butler, Earl of Ormond.
  - *A quo* Devonshire St. Legers.

[j] Sir John Cheney, of Shurland, Kent, K.G., created Lord Cheney 3rd Henry VII. He died without issue 10th May, 1499, when his honours became extinct. His arms, with those of his maternal ancestors, the Shottesbrooks, Cralles, and Peppleshams, were formerly in Nettlested Church John Pympe married Elizabeth, or Isabel, daughter of Richard Cheney, of Sheppey, probably a brother of Lord Cheyney above mentioned, and son of Sir John Cheney, who married Eleanor, daughter of Sir Robert Shottesbrook.

[k] Guldeford. For connection with family of Pympe, see p. 171.

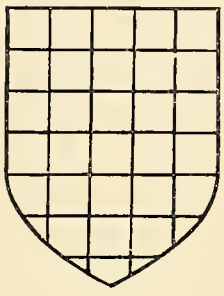
The former involving a direct blood descent from ALICE, sister and heir of JOHN DE PLANTAGENET, or DE WARREN, eighth and last Earl passed by marriage to the SCOTTS. The Pedigree likewise illustrates the ancient con-

The Pedigree is educed principally from an ancient and original illuminated Pedigree, and from Deeds and MSS., formerly in the pos-

daughters are amongst the representatives of the family

DE WARREN, FITZALAN, AND SERGIEUX.

PASHLEY.

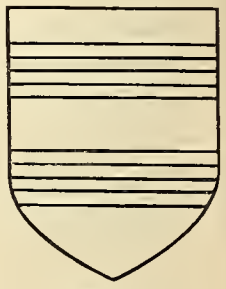


DE WARREN, OF PLANTAGENET.

WILLIAM DE WARRENNE, Count de Warrenne in Normandy, Earl of Surrey, England. = GUNDRADA, daughter of William the Conqueror, *buried at Southover, Lewes, where her cyst is extant.*

A quo in direct descent Wm. Plantagenet, or De Warrenne, 7th Earl of Warren and Surrey.*.

1stly, MAUD, daughter of Sir Bartholomew Baddlesmere, son of Lord Baddlesmere, *"The Great Lord of Kent."* = EDMUNDE DE PASHLEE, Esquire, in descent from Robert de Pashlee, Treasurer of England *temp.* Henry III. = 2ndly, MAUD, the daughter and heir of Thomas Normanville, co. Kent.



DE NORMANVILLE.

Edmund = ...

DE PASSELE.

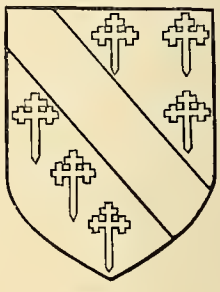
Alice, heir to her brother John. = Edmund Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel; *beheaded.*

John, *last* Earl of Warren and Surrey, *died* 1347, *s.p.*

Sir Robert Pashley, knt = Anne, daughter of Sir John Howard, of Norfolk, knt.

1stly, Isabel, daughter of Hugh le Despencer the younger, Earl of Winchester, *beheaded.* = Richard Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel and Surrey; *attainder reversed by Parliament 4th Edw. III., and had Castle of Arundel given him; died* 1375; *buried at Arundel.*

2ndly, Eleanor Plantagenet, fifth daughter of Henry, Earl of Lancaster.

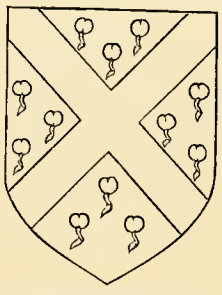


HOWARD.

Philippa, only child. = Sir Richard Sergieux, or Sergeaulx, knt., son of . . . . Sergieux, by . . . . ., daughter and co-heir of Baddlesmere. *Add. MSS. Brit. Mus.*, 14311, p. 32.

A quo the Earls of Arundel and Surrey.

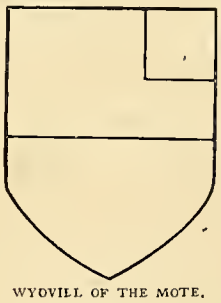
FITZALAN, EARLS OF ARUNDEL.



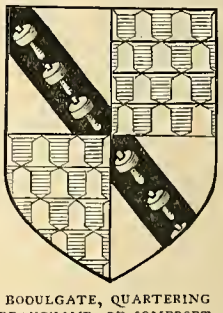
DE SERJEAULX, OF CARMINOW, CORNWALL.

WOODVILLE.

SIR RICH. WOODVILLE, of the Mote, Maidstone, Constable of the Tower, Sheriff of Kent, 1334, died 1342, *buried at Maidstone.* = MARIE, daughter and heir of John Bodulgate, Esquire, *buried at Maidstone.*



WYDVILL OF THE MOTE.



BODULGATE, QUARTERING BEAUCHAMP, OF SOMERSET.

Richard, Earl of Oxford; *extinct in male line.* = Eleanor, daughter and one of the heirs of Sir Richard Sergieux, knt.

Sir Wm. Marney, of Layer Marney, Essex; *extinct in male line.* = Elizabeth, daughter and one of the heirs of Sir Richard Sergieux, knt.

Philippa, daughter and one of the heirs of Sir Richard Sergieux, of Cornwall, kt., *whose descendants are representatives and heirs of the ancient and noble family of De Warrenne.* = Sir Robert Pashley, knt.

other issue.

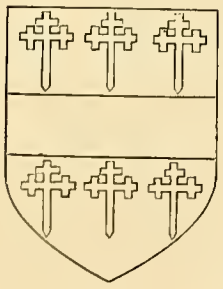
Sir John Pashley, knt. = Elizabeth Woodville, *aunt to Queen of Edward IV.*

Sir Rich. Woodville, EARL RIVERS. = Jaquetta, relict of John Plantagenet, Duke of Bedford.

John Pashley, son and heir to Sir John Pashley, and heir to his mother in respect of the manors of Mote Rigge and Frenchcourt in Sussex. = Lowys, daughter and heir of Thomas Gower, *in probable descent from Sir Robert Gower, buried at Brabourne, ancestor of the poet.* (*See* p. 58.)

Elizabeth, relict of Sir John Grey. = KING EDWARD IV. OF ENGLAND.

A quo QUEEN VICTORIA.



GOWER.

Elizabeth, daughter and heir of John Pashley. = ☞

Margery, married to . . . . Brianstone.

Elizabeth, A Daughter, married to Isley of Farningham.

Anne Pympe, da. and one of the heirs of her father, heir to her mother in respect of the manor of *Evegate in Smeeth, etc., and on the reversal of the attainder in* 1485 *of John Gower, of Clapham, her great uncle, she became his heir.* = ☞

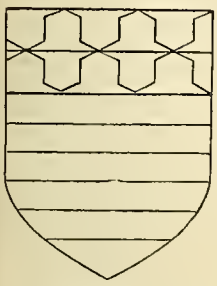
A quo the family of Scott, direct heirs and representatives of the Earls of Warren.

* *The ancient Earldom of Warren is supposed to have been originally of Norman creation, and to have derived its designation from the town and district of Guarrenne in Normandy. As John Plantagenet, the last Earl of Warren and Surrey, died without legitimate issue, his sister Alice (married to Edmund Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel, attainted and beheaded) became his heir, and her son, Richard Fitzalan, obtaining the reversal of his father's attainder, was created Earl of Arundel and Surrey. Thus it would appear that the ancient title of Earl of Warren became extinct, or in abeyance: if the latter, the family of Scott in the direct line claim, through Richard Fitzalan's only daughter Philippa by his first wife, to be the nearest direct male heirs and representatives of the ancient royal and noble family of De Warrenne. The arms of this family, "Checquée or and azure," are supposed to be one of the most ancient coats known in heraldry, and probably the earliest authenticated coat of arms recognized in this country. The family of Scott, of Scot's Hall, is entitled to quarter this ancient coat.*

of Warren and Surrey; the latter from the ancient Saxon family of DE PYMPE, from whom the Manor of Nettlested, and other lands, nection between the families of PYMPE, PASHLEY, WOODVILLE, SCOTT, and GULDEFORD.

session of the Scotts of Scot's Hall, but now in the possession of Mrs. Fairfax Best, widow of the late Thos. Fairfax Best, Esq. (whose of Scott), and from public MSS. and Pedigrees.

DE PYMPE, OF PYMPE'S COURT AND NETTLESTED, KENT. (*See* p. 159.)



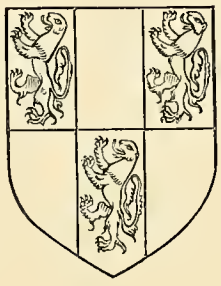
DE PYMPE.

SIR PHILIP DE PYMPE, of Pympe's Court, East Farleigh. — *Furnished a guard for the defence of the sea coast, 11 Edw. III. 1338 to 1346.* = Alice . . . . ., 1st wife.

= Joan . . . . ., 2nd wife. She re-married John de Cologne.

Sir Thomas, *paid aid for Nettlested, Hylth, and Pympe, 20 Edw. III.*, 1347.

Sir William de Pympe, Sheriff of Kent 37, 45, and 49 Edward III.; died 1376. — *Resided at Nettlested, and kept his Shrievalty there.* = 1stly, Margaretta de Cobham, of the family of the Barons Cobham in Kent; died 1337, and buried at Nettlested. "*Hic jacet Domina Margareta de Cobham, quondam uxor Will^i Pympe, militis, qui obiit 4 Sep.*, 1337."



WHETHILL.

= 2ndly, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Richard Whethill, Lieutenant of Castle of Guines, near Calais.

Reginald de Pympe, served office of Sheriff of Kent, 1372, and for his father the year of his death, 1376, and again in 1409. *Died* 1438.

William de Pympe. Richard. Joan.

John, died 1422.

John. = Philippa. Will dated 1479.

**Extract from Will of* JOHN PYMPE, *dated 7th August, 1495.*

"*I will my bodye to be buried in the Quiere of the Parishe churche of Nettlestead aforesaide, and to be layed there in a Tombe of stone, in manner of sepulture, and the tombe to have this Epitaphe engraven in latten: (brass.)*

"*Here lyeth buried John Pympe, sonne of John, sonne of John Pympe, sonne of Reignolde, the sonne of Ser William Pympe, knighte, that had to wyfe Elizabeth, the daughter of Richarde Whethill, Lieutenante of the Castell of Guines.*"

GULDEFORDE, OF HEMSTED, KENT.

SIR JOHN GULDEFORDE, knt., of Hemsted, Kent, Comptroller of Household of Edward IV., in succession to Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. *Sir John Guldeforde was attainted by Richard III. for espousal of the cause of the Earl of Richmond. Attainder reversed by Henry VII., by whom made a Privy Councillor.*

Anne. (*See John Pympe's Will*, p. 169.) = Sir Richard Guldeforde, knt., *attainted 1st Richard III.; reversed 1st Henry VII., on his return from exile.* Privy Councillor to Henry VII.; Master of the Ordnance; K.G. and Knight Banneret; Comptroller of the King's Household (Henry VII.) *Died at Jerusalem on a Pilgrimage.*

Sir Edward Guldeforde, Marshal of Calais, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Constable of Dover Castle, Master of the Ordnance. = Eleanor, sister and co-heir of Thomas West, Lord De la Warr.

George, Esquire of the King's Body-Guard. = Elizabeth, da. and heir of Sir Robert Mortimer, knt., by Elizabeth, da. of John Howard, Duke of Norfolk.

John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, attainted and *beheaded* 1st Mary. = Jane, heir to her brother, died 1555, buried in Chelsea, having had by the Duke eight sons and five daughters.†

Sir Richard Guildford, died in Spain without issue.

Reginald Pympe, of Nettlested, *attainted* 1483 *for assisting Duke of Buckingham against Richard III.; attainder reversed* 1 *Hy. VII.*

Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, Sheriff of Kent, 19 Henry VIII., *Knight of King's Body-guard.* (*See* p. 158.)

* John, *attainted in* 1483, *with his brother; attainder reversed* 1485. *Buried in chancel of Nettlested Church.* — (*See Will*, p. 168.)

= Elizabeth, da. of Sir Rich. Cheney, of Shurland, Kent.

Lady Jane Grey, QUEEN, beheaded. = Lord Guildford Dudley. — "*The eight days' Queen.*"

Robert Dudley, celebrated Earl of Leicester, *Queen Elizabeth's Minister and Favourite.*

other issue.

John, Earl of Warwick, condemned for high treason. Died in prison.

† *Hasted states that the eight sons of the Duchess of Northumberland had no legitimate issue.*

(No. 32* in Ped.) **Edward Scott,** of the Mote, Iden in Sussex, second son of Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall. (No. 23 in Ped.)

Page of the Chamber Extraordinary of Royal Household of Henry VIII. (1516). (*State Papers,* vol. ii. part 1, 1515 to 1518.)

We have but scanty information as to this man, the first of this name who appears to have resided at the castellated and crenelated mansion of Mote, formerly the residence of the family of Pashley, his ancestors (see pp. 119, 120). This mansion, together with the manors of Flote River and Mote, in Iden, Sussex, near Rye, does not appear to have passed from the family of Pashley to that of Scott by the marriage of Anne Pympe, heiress of John Pashley, of Ticehurst, etc., and mother of Edward Scott, inasmuch as it and the manors abovenamed had been in the possession of the Scotts for some generations before the subject of our memoir was in residence there. It not improbably passed by deed of gift of Dionysia Fynche, of the family of Finche, of Netherfield, Sussex, sister of Vincent Finche, the common ancestor of the Scotts and the Finches, Earls of Winchelsea, Nottingham, and Aylesford. Be this as it may, the mansion of Mote, by which name it was at the time of which we are writing then termed, remained for many generations the patrimony of the descendants of Edward Scott, whose family, to distinguish it from the Scotts of Scot's Hall, of Egerton in Godmersham, of Nettlested, and of Longage House in Lymynge and elsewhere in Kent, were designated of "the Mote" in Iden. The descendants of Edward Scott (pedigree of whose issue we append below) appear to have been content with the position of country gentlemen, little appearing in the county or public records of the time concerning them. Their mansion, of a semi-fortified character, built in 1283, was somewhat of the same type as the neighbouring castle of Bodiam, built a century later; nothing but the moat remains of the Scott residence, whilst Bodiam Castle as a most picturesque ruin still delights the eye of the artist and feeds the imagination of the antiquary.

Edward Scott, of the Mote, died about 1535, and was buried in the Scott or Mote Chapel in Iden Church, Sussex, rebuilt by his father.

A NOTE OF THE WILL OF EDWARD SCOTT, OF IDEN.

dated 15 April, 1534.
Hogan, fo. 29. prov. 19 Nov., 1535.

Will of Edward Scott, of Idenne in Sussex, Esquire, dated 15 April, 25 Henry VIII., prov. 19 Nov., 1535, by Alice Scotte, als Oxenbridge W^d^ of Testor.

Gives to Iden High Alter for tithes withheld, xiij*s.* iiij*d.*

Exor to bestow at my Outbering monethis mynde, and yeres mynd, evy tyme, iiij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.* To the guylding of the Tabernacle of Alhallowes in the said Church, 20*s.* To Iden Chureh, to the performing of the seyling of the said Church, xl*s.* To daughter Jane on marriage, £40. To the Child which my Child goeth with if a daughter, £20. Executors to have custody of daughters till marriage. To every servant a reward in wife's discretion. Specific legacies to servants.

The residue to Alice, my wellbeloved Wife, who is appointed executrix. Walter Hendle,[1] and Walter Foster, supervisors.

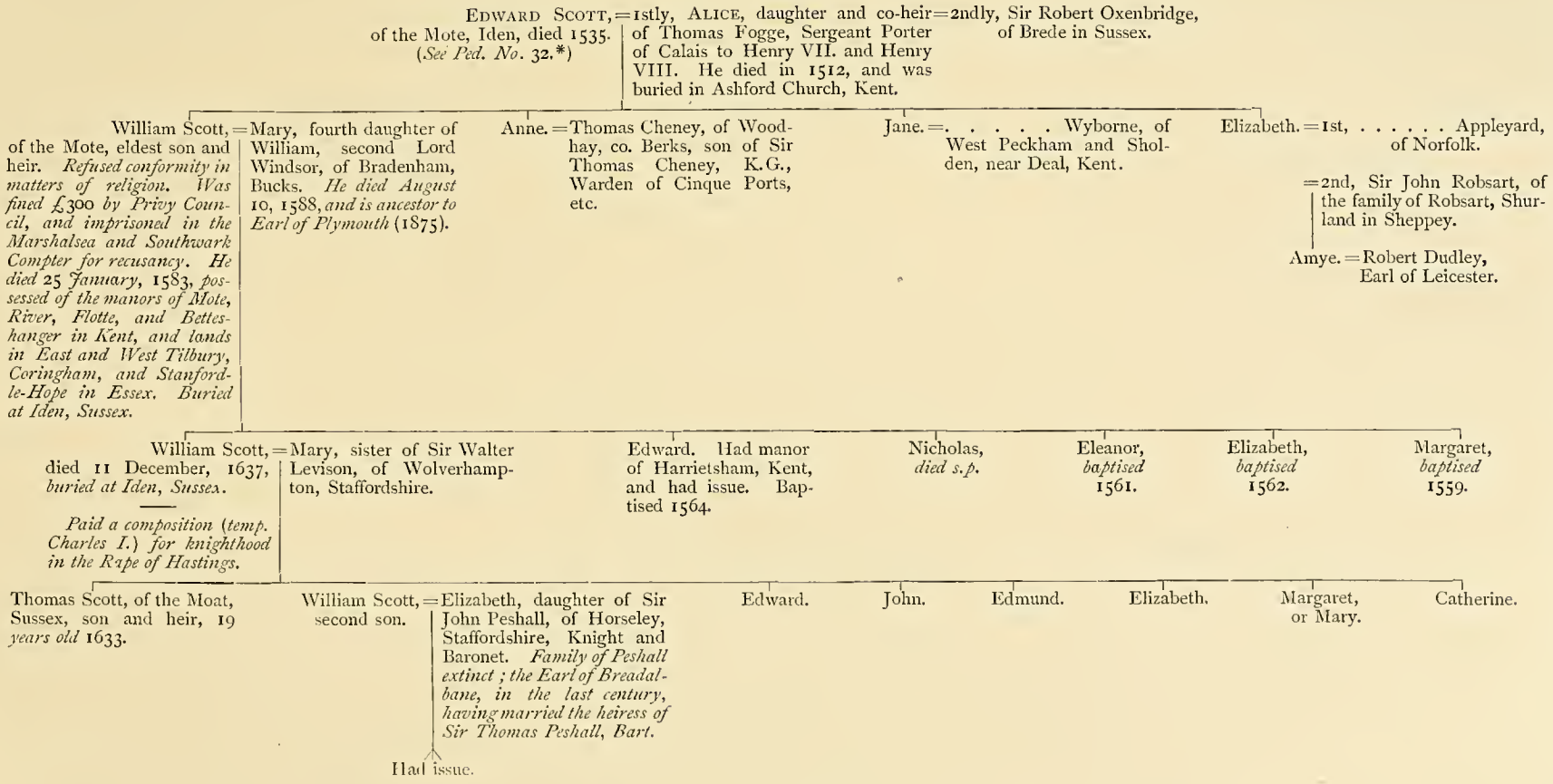
By a contemporaneous Will directs his father's feoffees to hold the manor of the Mote Ryver and Flote and all other lands in Sussex to use of Alice his wife for life for her joynture.

---

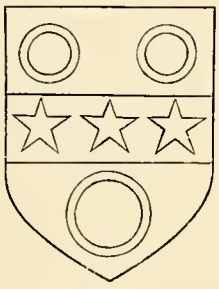
[1] Sir Walter Hendley, of Coursehorne (Kent), knight.

PEDIGREE OF THE SCOTTS OF MOTE IDEN IN SUSSEX.

Burrell MSS. 5697; *Additional MSS.* 5679 *to* 5690, 5698 *and* 5699; *Iden Register*; *Harl. MSS.* 892, *p.* 39; *Landsdowne MSS.* 873, *p.* 34; *and Scott MSS.*


EDWARD SCOTT, of the Mote, Iden, died 1535. (See Ped. No. 32.*)
=1stly, ALICE, daughter and co-heir of Thomas Fogge, Sergeant Porter of Calais to Henry VII. and Henry VIII. He died in 1512, and was buried in Ashford Church, Kent.
=2ndly, Sir Robert Oxenbridge, of Brede in Sussex.
William Scott, of the Mote, eldest son and heir. Refused conformity in matters of religion. Was fined £300 by Privy Council, and imprisoned in the Marshalsea and Southwark Compter for recusancy. He died 25 January, 1583, possessed of the manors of Mote, River, Flotte, and Bettes-hanger in Kent, and lands in East and West Tilbury, Coringham, and Stanford-le-Hope in Essex. Buried at Iden, Sussex.
=Mary, fourth daughter of William, second Lord Windsor, of Bradenham, Bucks. He died August 10, 1588, and is ancestor to Earl of Plymouth (1875).
Anne. =Thomas Cheney, of Woodhay, co. Berks, son of Sir Thomas Cheney, K.G., Warden of Cinque Ports, etc.
Jane. =. . . . . Wyborne, of West Peckham and Sholden, near Deal, Kent.
Elizabeth. =1st, ... Appleyard, of Norfolk.
=2nd, Sir John Robsart, of the family of Robsart, Shurland in Sheppey.
Amye. =Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester.
William Scott, died 11 December, 1637, buried at Iden, Sussex.
Paid a composition (temp. Charles I.) for knighthood in the Rape of Hastings.
=Mary, sister of Sir Walter Levison, of Wolverhampton, Staffordshire.
Edward. Had manor of Harrietsham, Kent, and had issue. Baptised 1564.
Nicholas, died s.p.
Eleanor, baptised 1561.
Elizabeth, baptised 1562.
Margaret, baptised 1559.
Thomas Scott, of the Moat, Sussex, son and heir, 19 years old 1633.
William Scott, second son.
=Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Peshall, of Horseley, Staffordshire, Knight and Baronet. Family of Peshall extinct; the Earl of Breadalbane, in the last century, having married the heiress of Sir Thomas Peshall, Bart.
Had issue.
Edward.
John.
Edmund.
Elizabeth.
Margaret, or Mary.
Catherine.

(No. 33 in Ped.) **Alice,** one of the daughters and co-heirs of Thomas Fogge, Esquire, Sergeant Porter of Calais to Henry VII. and Henry VIII., wife to EDWARD SCOTT, Esquire, of the MOTE, Iden in Sussex. She re-married Sir Robert Oxenbridge, of Brede Place in that county.[m]



ARMS OF FOGGE, OF REPTON, KENT.

ARMS.—*Argent on a fess between three annulets sable, three mullets of the first.*

In our description of the once knightly and powerful family of Fogge of Repton in Ashford, we cannot do better than follow the words of Mr. Thomas Godfrey-Faussett, so pathetically set forth in his notes on the MSS. of the Fogge's, of Dane's Court in Tilmanston, as published in the fifth volume of *Archæologia Kantiana*, p. 125.

"Without containing," writes Mr. Godfrey-Faussett concerning the family of Fogge, "many historical characters, this is nevertheless one of the most interesting genealogies of our county history, if only for the gradual stages of decay in a great house so plainly to be traced through its last nine generations. We find Sir John Fogge, in the fifteenth century, lord of immense territory, heir of the Fogges, Valoignes, and Criolls, of royal blood himself, and by marriage the near connection of the King (see p. 175), the builder of the church and founder of a college in Ashford. His two sons divide his property, one half of which ends in the second generation in co-heiresses and sale; the other survives to the third descent, when for no assigned cause—we may suppose extravagance—all is lost but a mere remnant, and the owner of castles and many a broad domain retires to one small manor-house. Here the family rallies in comfort, but shorn state, for three more generations. A stout Cavalier pays the penalty of his loyalty, and the estate is reduced to £50 a year. The end is now near; we soon read of mariners and blacksmiths, till the last heiress of the race, the descendant of kings and crusaders, with at least as much royal and noble blood in her veins as any contemporary in the county, is the wife of a poor shepherd, living in a wretched hovel at Eastry."

The history of the prosperity and vicissitudes of the family of Fogge is so copiously set forth in the MSS. above referred to, that we cannot do better than refer our readers to the same source, concluding with a notice of the Pedigree of the subject of our memoir, partly drawn from the Faussett MSS.

[m] Sir Robert Oxenbridge, of Brede in Sussex, was a member of the ancient family of that name, derived from lands called Oxenbridge in Iden in that county. Sir Robert was of Brede Place, then just rebuilt, and was sometime M.P. for Horsham, and Knight of the Shire in 1554-5-7; Sheriff of Sussex and Hampshire and Constable of the Tower of London in 1556. The family of Oxenbridge in Sussex is now extinct, Ursula, the sole heiress of the family, having married the ancestor of the present Lord Monson, who may be considered as the representative of that family.

Alice Fogge.

Extract from Pedigree of Fogge, of Repton in Ashford, etc.

From the Faussett MSS. and the Scott Records.

Sir Francis Fogge, *temp.* Edw. II. and Edw. III., of Repton in Ashford, *jure uxoris, buried in Cheriton Church.* = Joan, daughter and co-heir of Warretius de Valoynes, of Repton Place, Ashford.

Sir Thomas Fogge, Knight of Shire of Kent 1377, 1379, 1381; Captain of Calais Castle 22 June, 1377. *Buried at Glastonbury.* = Ann, Countess of Joyeaux in Normandy. *Buried at Ashford.*

Sir Thomas Fogge attended John of Gaunt into Spain in 1386; Knight of Shire 1382 to 1388; *obit.* 1407; *buried in nave of Canterbury Cathedral.* = Joan, daughter and heir of Sir Stephen de Valence; *obit.* 1425; *buried in Canterbury Cathedral.* (Second wife.)

Sir William Fogge. = ..., daughter and heir of Septvans of Ash and Dymchurch. (Second wife)

Sir John Fogge, Treasurer of Household of Edward IV.; Chamberlain (*together with Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall*[n]) to Edward, Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward V. (*Sloane MS.* 3479); Sheriff of Kent 1454, 1474, and 1481. *Built the beautiful church at Ashford, in which he was buried. Will proved* 1490. = Alice, daughter of Sir William Hawte, of Hautsbourne, by Joan Woodville, Aunt to Queen Elizabeth Woodville.*

* *Alice was likewise sister to Sir Richard Hawte, Treasurer of Household of Edward IV., and Comptroller of Household of Edward, Prince of Wales.* Sir Richard Hawte's name occurs twice in the will of his cousin Anthony, Lord Rivers (*brother to the Queen*), to whom he was executor. (*See p.* 153.)

Thomas Fogge, Esquire, Sergeant Porter of Calais to Henry VII. and Henry VIII.; *obit.* 16 August, 1512; *buried in Ashford Church.* = Eleanor, daughter and heir of Sir Robert Brown, fifth son of Sir Thomas Brown, of Betchworth, and Eleanor Arundel, *who afterwards married Sir Thomas Vaughan.*[o]

For an interesting account of the daily ceremonial in opening and closing the gates of Calais (the key to the kingdom of France) see "Chronicle of Calais," p. 141.

Ann, eldest daughter and co-heir. = William Scott, son of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, and brother of Sir Reginald Scott; died at Fogge's Court, Great Mongeham, Kent, *s.p.*

1st, Edward Scott, of the Mote, Iden, Sussex, son of Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall. = Alice, second daughter and co-heir. = 2nd, Sir Robert Oxenbridge, of Brede.

A quo Scotts of Mote.

---

[n] Little is known of the names of the officers attached to the household of Edward, Prince of Wales, son of Edward IV. and Elizabeth Woodville, his Queen. Froude asserts, and truly, that many, if not most, of the appointments about the person of the Yorkist monarch, Edward IV., were occupied by kinsmen and connections of the Queen. This assertion of the most recent of our historians is verified so far as modern research is concerned, and it is not surprising to find the influence of Elizabeth Woodville exhibited in the appointment of the officials charged with the care of the young prince, and eventually unfortunate king.

The Sloane MS. 3479 supplies interesting information on this head, and the *Patent of Edward IV., dated* 26 *June,* 1471 (the prince then being nine months old), furnishes the names of the Prince's Household, viz.,—the Queen; Thomas Bourchier, Archbishop of Canterbury; George, Duke of Clarence; Richard, Duke of Gloucester (*afterwards Richard III.*); Robert Stillington, Bishop of Bath and Wells (*Lord Chancellor* 1467); Lawrence Booth, Bishop of Durham (*Lord Chancellor* 1483); Anthony Woodville, Lord Rivers (*brother to the Queen*); Thomas Myllyng, Abbot of Westminster (*Chancellor to the Prince*); William Hastings, knight (*Lord Chamberlain to the King*); Richard, Lord Dacres (*Steward to the Prince*): *John Fogge, John Scott, and Thomas Vaughan, knights* (*Chamberlain to the Prince;* Richard Hawte, knight, (*Comptroller of Household of the Prince*); John Alcock, Bishop of Rochester 1472 (*Lord Chancellor* 1485), and Richard Forster (*Preceptors to the Prince*), to be of the Council of the said Prince, giving unto them, or any *four* of them, with the advice and consent of the Queen, powers to advise and counsel until the Prince was fourteen years old, an age he never attained.

[o] Sir Thomas Vaughan was connected with the families of *Woodville, Fogge, and Hawte,* by his marriage with Eleanor, sister of John, Lord Maltravers, and widow of Sir Thomas Browne, of Betchworth in Surrey. He had

(No. 34 in Ped.) **Anne,** daughter of Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall (see Ped. No. 23), wife to Sir Edward Boughton, knight.

(No. 35 in Ped.) **Sir Edward Boughton,** knight, of Burwash Court in Plumstead, Kent.

ARMS.—*Argent, a fess indented, sable, between three cross croslets.*

Sir Edward was by profession a soldier, holding extensive lands by knight's service at Burwash in Plumstead, within the parishes and villages of Plumstead, Bostal, Wickham, Welling, Woolwich, Bexley, Erith, and Crayford, together with the advowson of the vicarage of Plumstead and the chapel of East Wickham. These lands (disgavelled by act of 31st Henry VIII.) remained for about five generations in the family, the remnant of them being alienated, about the year 1685, to John Mitchell, Esq., of Richmond.

Sir Edward Boughton, with other Kentish knights, was in the retinue of the Duke of Suffolk at the meeting at Dover (1539) of the Lady Anne of Cleeves and Henry VIII.

PEDIGREE OF BOUGHTON, FROM "SCOTT'S HALL RECORDS."

SIR EDWARD BOUGHTON, knt. of Burwash Court. = ANNE SCOTT.

- Nicholas, son and heir, died 9 Elizabeth, 1567.
  - Edward, son and heir.
- Frances.
- Sybill.

(No. 36 in Ped.) **Catherine,** daughter of Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall. (See Ped. No. 23.)

(No. 37 in Ped.) **Elizabeth,** daughter of Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall. (See Ped. No. 23.)

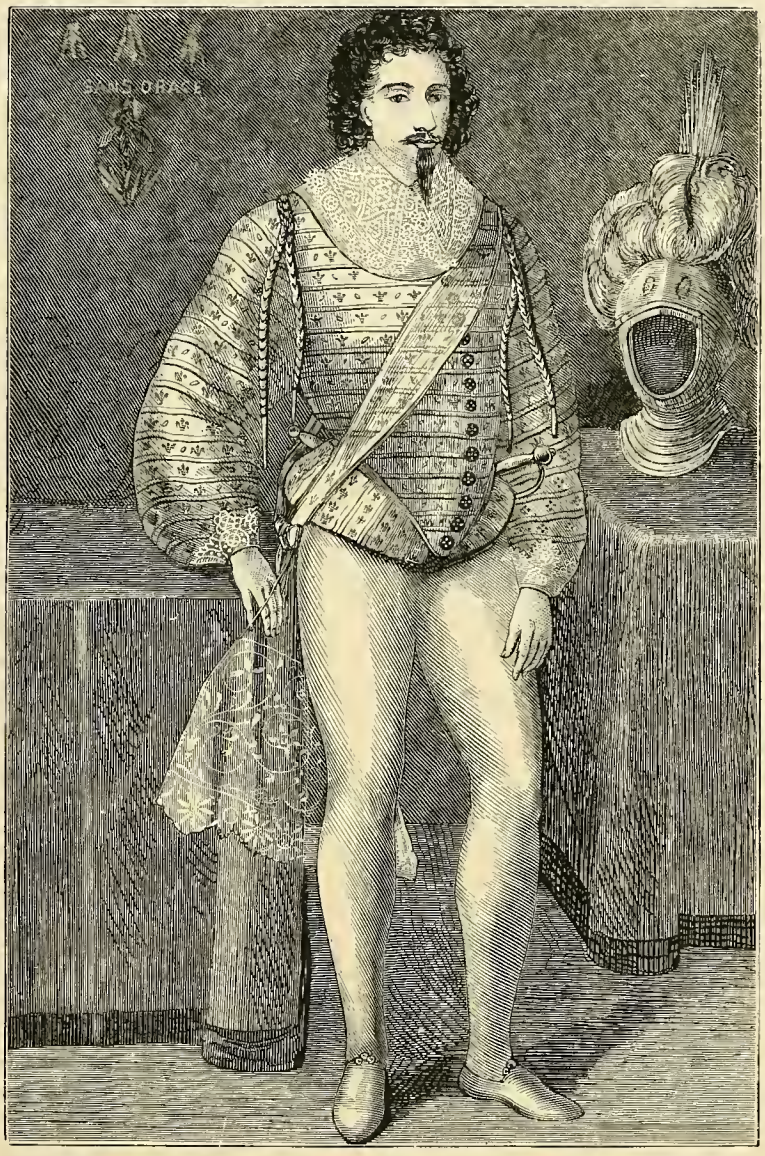
---

been Treasurer of the Household of Edward IV., and was of the Privy Council of Edward V. He was, with Sir Richard Hawte and Anthony, Lord Rivers, in personal attendance on Edward V. and his brother Richard, Duke of York, when, in view of Edward's coronation, they were hastening from Ludlow Castle to London immediately after the death of Edward IV. Richard, Duke of Gloucester, and Buckingham, anxious to prevent the coronation, came from York in haste to Stony Stratford, and there seized, in the presence of the King, Lord Rivers, Sir Richard Hawte, and Sir Thomas Vaughan, who were hurried to Nottingham, from thence to Pontefract, and beheaded without trial; whilst the young King, aged twelve, and his younger brother, Richard, Duke of York, were consigned to the Tower of London, never again to issue from its gates in life. These startling events were followed by the second flight of the widowed Queen to the Sanctuary at Westminster, and the imprisonment of Thomas Scott, the Archbishop of York and Lord Chancellor (see p 155), for the countenance and assistance rendered by him to the Queen and her royal children; such indeed were the deadly risks encountered at this period by the partizans of the rival houses of York and Lancaster. Sir John Scotte (*Chamberlain to the young King*), mentioned above, was Comptroller of the Household of Edward IV., *and of the family of Scot's Hall.* He was at this date (1483) very old, and died about two years after the events here recorded. He probably was too infirm to take much part in them, and to this fact he may reasonably be supposed to have saved his head. (See p. 106.)

(No. 38 in Ped.) **Sir Reginald Scott,** of Scot's Hall, eldest son and heir of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. (See Ped. No. 30.)

Captain of the Castles of Calais and Sangatte (near Calais); High Sheriff of Kent 1541-2.

Sir Reginald Scott (named Reginald, from his maternal grandfather, Reginald Pympe, of Nettlested, Kent), was principally engaged abroad in military service. We find him before he had gained his



SIR REGINALD SCOTT, KNT., CAPTAIN OF CALAIS CASTLE, A.D. 1542.

Engraved, by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.[p]

[p] The interesting series of family portraits engraved in this work, dating from the time of Henry VIII. to the end of the last century, form only a portion of the collection that formerly existed at Scot's Hall. These, with others not engraved, as being too collateral to the object of this work, are now in the possession of Mrs. T. Fairfax Best,

Sir Reginald Scott.

spurs in attendance upon, and in the retinue of, the Duke of Suffolk, at the meeting of Henry VIII. and the Lady Anne of Cleves at Dover. He was in 1542 Captain of the Castles of Calais and Sandgate; but whether the latter was Sangatte near Calais, or Sandgate in Kent (then recently built for the defence of the coast), does not clearly appear; but it was probably the fortified outpost of that name, in the neighbourhood of Calais. Like his ancestors, he was in the Commission of the Peace, and had served the office of High Sheriff of his native county. He inherited very large possessions, especially in West Kent in the valley of the Medway, in right of his mother, as heir to the Pashleys, Pympes, and Gowers. She was kinswoman of Elizabeth of York, Queen to Henry VII., in right of her descent from the Woodvilles of Maidstone. For a list of manors and lands, see *Coles' Escheats*, vol. v. p. 404; ditto, vol. vii. p. 21; and *Rot. Esch.*, 1554-5.

It is asserted that the Scotts of Halden and of Conghurst in Kent, derive their origin, *temp.* Henry VI., from the Scot's Hall family. There is not sufficient evidence of this fact, beyond the circumstance that the Place House in Halden, Kent, which was sold by Sir Reginald Scott to Sir Edward Hales, and from him called Hales' Place, was originally the seat of the Scotts of Halden, ancestors of the Scotts of Conghurst and of Hayes, Kent, derived by the marriage of Thomas Scott, second son of Henry Scott of Halden, who died in 1512, with Mildred, only daughter and heir of George Conghurst, in Hawkhurst, Kent.

With reference to the arms borne by the families of Scott of Halden and Conghurst (*the latter so clearly derivasive of the former*), it is worthy of remark that the tinctures of these coats, viz., *argent and sable*, are (as is almost invariably the case in all coats of families bearing the name of Scott, who claim to derive their origin from the Scot's Hall family,) the same tinctures as those borne by that ancient Kentish sept; the only exception in this respect being the arms of Scott of Ecclesfield in Yorkshire, whose tinctures are *vert and or*. The pedigrees of the Scotts of Halden and Conghurst, will appear hereafter.

SCOTTS OF HALDEN, KENT.

SCOTTS OF CONGHURST, KENT.

Sir Reginald Scott's Will is dated 4th September, 1554. He died on the 16th December following. It is not known where he or his wives were buried; probably at Brabourne or Smeeth, if not at Scot's Hall, in the chapel there.

---

whose daughters are amongst the representatives of the Scot's Hall family. There are five portraits by Zucchero in this valuable collection, including a fine representation of Mary Queen of Scots, which doubtless came into the possession of the Scott family from the Drurys of Halsted, with whom, by marriage and wardship, it was intimately connected; Sir Drue Drury, be it remembered, together with Sir Amias Poulet, had the charge of Mary Queen of Scots, the day she was beheaded, that unfortunate lady having distributed the whole of her moveable chattels, the night previously, to those about her. Amongst the *Scot's Hall Records* is a deed whereby Sir Robert Drury *(brother of Sir Drue)*, assigns all his goods and chattels to Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, in satisfaction of a claim arising out of the breach of a pecuniary trust. It is asserted that in this manner the Scott family became the possessors of this valuable relic, which has remained ever since in the possession of the family.

WILL OF SIR REGINALD SCOTT.

More, fo. xl

I, Reginalde Scott m^is^ IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN, The 4th daie of September the yere of our lorde God *a thousand five hundred fiftie-foure*, and in the first and seconde yeres of the RAYNE OF PHILLIPE and MARIE by the Grace of GOD King and Queene of Englande, France, Naples, Jerusalem, and Ireland, Defenders of the Faithe, Princes of Spaine and Cecile, Archdukes of Austria, Dukes of Millaine, Burgundy, and Brabant, Counts of Hapsburge, Flaunders, and Tiroll.

I, Raynolde Scott, knyght, of *Smethe in the Countie of Kente*, Do make, ordeine, and declare this my presente testamente and laste will in maner and forme followinge.

FFIRST. I bequeath my soule unto allmyghtie god my creator and redemer, And my bodye to be buried in the parishe churche where I shall happen to dye, or wheare it shalbe thoughte moste mete by the discretion of my executors.

ITEM. I bequeath to the reparacions of the churche of *Smethe, fortie shillinges*.

ITEM. I will that there shall be distributed amongste the poore people of the parishe of *Braborn* by my executors, iij *li.* vj*s.* viij*d.*

ITEM. I geve likewise to the poore people of the *parishe of Braborn and Bycheholte* amonges them, xl*s.*

ITEM. I geve to the poore people within the parishe of *Aldington*, xl*s.*

ITEM. To the poore people within the parishe of *Mersham*, xl*s.*

ITEM. To the poore people within the parishe of *Sellinge and Stanforde*, xl*s.*

ITEM. To the poore people within the parishes of *Horton and Postlinge*, xl*s.* Item, to the poore people within the parishe of *Orlaston*, xx*s.*

ITEM. I bequeath *to Marie my Wife* one hundrede poundes in moneye, to be paide to her by my executors within one quarter of a yere nexte after my decease.

ALSO I will that my saide wife shall have all her apparell and Juells, that is to saie ringes, chaines, and all other things belonginge to her bodye.

ITEM I geve and bequeath to euerie of my daughters, that is to say *Katerine*, *Anne*, *Marie*, *Elizabethe*, *Ursula*, and *Margarete*, to either of them *towardes their mariage, two hundred poundes* iff the proffitts of my landes will therunto extende within *fiftene yeres* after my decese, (yff not) Then I will they shall have but *two hundrede markes* a pece towarde theire mariage, to be paide to either of them when she or they shall cum to the age of xx. yeres if she or they be not before then maried. And if they or either of them shall happen before then to be married, then she so maried shall be paide the said somme of two hundrede pounds at the daie of her mariage. And if anie of them dye before she or they do cum to the age of xx. yeres not being maried, Then the paimente of the saide two hundrede poundes given to her so dieinge unmaried shall cease and not be paide.

ALSO I WILL that my executers have the custodie of *Katerine*, *Anne*, *Mary*, *Elizabethe*, *Ursula*, and *Margarete*, my daughters, untill they be and shall cum unto the age of twentye yeres if they be so longe unmaried, and they to have yerely fowre poundes for euerie of them to find them withall.

Prouided allways that if *mistres Breult, the wife of Robert Breult, Esquire*, will keep the said Anne, my daughter, I will that she shall have the keepinge of her untill the saide age of xx. yeres, and she to have yerely paide her so longe as she shall kepe her, by my executers, foure poundes.

ITEM. I will that my executers shall have the lease of all suche manors, landes, and tenements, rents, and servyces withe theire appertuncs *that I have of my syster, Dame Anne Pollarde*, painge to her and her assignes the rente reserved accordinge to the indentures made betwene her and me, and the overplus therof they to have to the performance of this my present testamente and laste will.

ITEM. I will that my executers *shall have my lease of the parke of Aldington*, and they to paie the farme therof, and of the overplus thereof my executers shall paie unto my aunte *Elizabeth Pimpe* five pounde of lawfull money yerely duringe her naturall life at two termes in the yere, that is to saie at the feaste of the annunciacion of oure Ladye and Sainte Michaell the archangell, and the firste paimente to beginne at the feaste of Sainte Michaell the Archangell or the annuncion of owre ladie that shall happen to the nexte after my decease.

AND in like maner to paie unto my two sisters, *Alice and Elizabeth*, fowre markes, a pece of lawfull moneye yerely duringe their lives in like maner and forme as is before expressed unto my Aunte *Pimpe*, so that they wilbe ordered by my executers.

AND in like manner to pay unto John Strogull, my servante, five poundes of lawfull moneye yerely during his life at the saide feastes, in like maner and forme as is before expressed unto my Aunt Pimpe.

Sir Reginald Scott.

ITEM. I will that they shall paie unto Robert Wickes, my Servante, xl*s.* of laufull monye yerely during his lyfe, in like maner and forme as is before expressed unto myne aunte Pimpe.

ITEM. I will that my executers shall paie unto *George Skott, my sonne, when he shall come to the age of xxi. yeres, two hundred poundes.* Or ells (*or else*) if they can purchase tenne pounds yerely in landes, Then they make or cause to be made an estate of inheritance unto the same George, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. The remainder thereof unto *Thomas Scott*, my Sonne, and other like remainders as the landes be hereafter in this my present will given to my other sonnes.

ITEM. I will that my executors shall paie unto *William Scott*, my sonne, when he shall come to the age of xxj. yeres, Two hundred poundes. Or ells, if they can purchase tenne poundes yerely in landes, Then they make or cause to be made an estate of inheritance unto the same Willm Scotte, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten, With such other like remainders as the landes be hereafter in this my presente will given to my other sonnes.

ITEM. I will that *Brian*, my sonne, be in the keepinge and custodie of *Dame Marye, my wife*, and she to have yerely paide her by my executors five poundes untill he cum to the age of xxj. yeres, if she doe keep him so longe.

ITEM. I will that *Charles, Henrie, George*, and *William*, my sonnes, shall be in the kepinge of my executors, and they to finde them to schoole, and they to be reasonablie allowed for their charges.

ITEM. I will to my saide *Aunte Elizabeth Pympe* fyve markes of lawfull monie to be paide her by my executers w'in one monthe nexte after my deccase.

ITEM. I geve to John Paterson, my servante, xx*s.*

ITEM. I geve to Robert Wikes, my servaunte, xl*s.*, to be paide to him when he shall be of the age of xx. yeres.

ITEM. I will and geve all my houshold stuff and plate wholye unto my *sonne Thomas Scotte, to be preserved and kepte within my House at Hall for him and to his use.*

ITEM. I geve unto my said *sonne Thomas Scott* all my evidences, escripts, muniments, courtrolles, and rentalls, and all other writings whatsoever nowe remaining and beinge within my two studies or closetts at *Hall*, touchinge and concerninge all such maners, landes, tenements, rents, and seruices, the which *I have given unto the saide Thomas Scotte, my sonne*, in and by this my presente Testamente and laste Will. And that all the saide evidences escriptes, muniments, courtrolls and rentalls, and other writinges nowe beinge in the saide studies, or closetts, shall abide and remaine there still, and not to be taken awaye or removed, but there to be preserved and kepte for and to the use of him as shall fortune to be my eldest sonne and heire of the same house when he shall come to the age of xxj. yeres.

PROUIDED ALLWAYS, and my Will is my said executors shall have authorete to alter and change suche of the same my stuffs (except my beddinge, testures, and hangings of verdure or Tapestrie) as they shall thinke mete, So alweys they have to be delieuered to my saide *sonne Thomas* so much of other stuffs of that sorte so changed was.

THE RESIDEWE of all my goodes, catells, plate, and redy moneye before not given or bequeathed, I will that *Sir John Baker, knyght*,[q] and *Thomas Scott, my sonne*, shall have it to paie my detts and bequestes.

The whiche said *Sir John Baker, knyght*, and the said Thomas Scotte, my sonne, I do ordeine and make to be my executers of this my presente Testamente and laste will.

PROUIDID ALLWEIS, and my verie mind and wyll is that when my executers have paide, discharged, and performed all debtes, bequests, funerall expencys, and all other charges that they shall be at by reason that they be my executors, That if there remaine any monye, housholde stuff, plate, leass, or anye other mouable goodes in their handes that were myne, That then they deliver that shall remaine unto the saide *Thomas Scott*, my sonne, or to him that then shall fortune to be myne heire and owner of my saide maner of Hall.

I WILL that *Dame Marie, my Wife, and the saide Thomas Scott, my sonne, shall have my maner of Hall together* with the landes therto belonginge, The whiche were late in the occupienge of Richarde Andrewes untill the feaste of Sainte Michaell the Archangell next after that the saide *Thomas Scott, my sonne, shalbe of the full age of xxj.* yeres, painge unto the saide *Sir John Baker, knyghte*, for the yerely farme therof yerely, xx *li.* of lawfull money of Englande at two severall feastes of the yere, that is to saie at the feaste of the annunciacion of owre ladye and Sainte Michaell the Archangell, by evin porcions, towardes the performance of this my presente Testamente and laste will.

PROUIDED ALLWAYS, and my verie minde and will is, that if the *same Dame Marie, my wife, do marie* or fortune to decease at any time before the saide *Thomas Scott, my sonne, shall cum and be of the age of xxj. yeres*, Then the

---

[q] Sir John Baker, of Sissinghurst Castle in Cranbrook, the bloody Attorney General to Queen Mary; father-in-law of Sir Thomas Scott.

Sir Reginald Scott. saide graunte and lease of her parte of the said maner of Hall and the saide landes to cease and be voide, and she to haue the occupeinge of some of the household stuff suche as shall be thoughte needfull for her duringe the time that shall be thoughte mete by my saide executers, and she to receive the same by an Indentarye indented, and she to be bounde to my executers before the recerte therof for the safe redeliuene ageine of the same to my saide executers in as good case as she did receive it, sauing the reasonable weare therof.

ITEM. I geve to *Isabell Blachenden*, my servante, to her mariage tenne pounds.

Ultima voluntus Euisdem Regenaldi.

AND AS TOUCHINGE THE DISPOSICION OF MY LANDES AND TENEMENTS.

FFIRST, I WILL that accordinge to agreemente made betwene *Sir John Baker, knyghte*, and me, *Ser Rainolde Scott, knyghte*, for the mariage of *Thomas, my sonne*, and *Elizabethe, the daughter of the saide Ser John Baker, knighte*, I will and my verie mynde is that after the Solemnizacion and mariage had and made between the saide parties, and also carnall copulacion betwene them, That the saide *Thomas Scott* and *Elizabethe* shall have and holde for terme of theire lyves and of the longeste lyver of them for and in the name of the *iointure of the saide Elizabethe the maner of Orlanston withe appurtinances, within the countie of Kent*, withe all suche landes tenements and hereditaments as Richarde Andrewe nowe hathe and holdethe to farme, amountinge to the cleere yerely value of fortie poundes by yere ouer and aboue all charges and reprises. And to the *heires males* of the bodie of the saide *Thomas*, on the bodye of the saide *Elizabethe*, lawfully begotten. And for defaute of such issue, remainder therof to the heires males of the bodye of the saide Thomas Scott lawfully begotten, withe suche remainder as shalbe hereafter declared.

AND ALSO I WILL that the saide *Thomas and Elizabethe*, after the saide mariage and carnall knoledge hadde, *and after the decease of Dame Anne Pollarde, shall have the manors of Strechelande and Birchold*, withe the appurtenances of the yerely value of xv *li*, and as muche or as manye of the landes of the *maner of Combe* w^t^ the appertinances as shalbe to the clere yerely valewe of xj *li*. xiij*s*. iiij*d*. for terme of theire lyves and of the longeste lyver of them, and to the *heires males* of the bodie of the saide *Thomas* on the bodie of the said *Elizabethe* lawfully begotten.

AND for defaute of suche issue the remainders of the said *manors of Orlaston, Bircholt, and Strechelande*, and as moche of the said *manor of Combe* as will amounte to the yerely value of xj *li*. xiij*s*. iiij*d*., withe the appurtinances, to the heires males of the bodye of the saide *Thomas Scott*, my sonne, lawfully begotten. And for lack of suche issue, The saide maners, landes, and other the premiss^s^ withe the appurtinancs shall remaine unto *Brian Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue the remainder therof unto *Charles Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *George Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder thereof to *William Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Rainolde Scott*, sonne and heire of my brother, *Richard Scott*, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *William Scott*, sonne and heire of *Edward Scott, my unkle*, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto the righte heires of me, the *said Rainolde Scott*, knighte, for ever.

ITEM. I will that my executers, by the space of fifteen yeres after my decease, have and receive the p̄fitts of all those mershe lands lienge in the parishe of *Snave* and *Ivechurche*, within the said Countie of Kent, called *Grainge Landes, Mylbanke, the nyne acres Popeland, and Phillippes, conteyning by estimacion lxxvj. of lande*, and of all my landes and tenements lyeinge in the parishe of *Aldington* called *Stonestede*, lyinge within the tenure of the Courte of Pulton (*qy*.), to and for the performance of this my testament and last Will.

AND I WILL that my executers shall have powre and authoritie to sell all my woodes which grewe or shall growe during the same time upon the saide landes. And they to save the springes therof.

AND AFTER the saide xv. yeares, I will that *Charles Scott, my sonne, shall have all the saide marshe lande lyinge in the saide parishes of Snave and Ivechurch*, To haue and to holde to him and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten, and for lacke of suche heires the remainder therof unto *Thomas Scott, my sonne*, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder thereof unto *Brian*, my sonne, and his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder thereof unto *George Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder thereof unto *William Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder thereof unto *Rainolde Scott*, sonne and heire of my brother, *Richarde Scott*, deceased, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue,

Sir Reginald Scott.

the remainder therof unto *William Scott*, sonne and heire of my unkle, deceased, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto the nexte heires of me, *the said Sir Reanolde Scott*, knighte, for ever.

AND I WILL that after the said xv. yeres, that the saide *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, shall have all my saide landes and tenements lienge and beinge in the saide parishe of *Aldington cauled Stonestede*. And also *after the decease of Dame Marye, my wife, the saide Henrie Scott, my sonne*, shall have the *Manor of Shrimpenden*, withe all the landes and tenements therto belonginge lieng and beinge in the parishe of *Bilsington* and in the *tenure of the courte of Saltewoode*, to have and to holde the saide Manor and all the saide landes and tenements, withe the appurtinances, unto the saide *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten, and for lacke of such issue, the *remainder* therof unto *Thomas Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten; and for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Bryan Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder thereof unto *Charles Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, unto *George Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *William Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Rainolde Scott*, sonne and heire of my brother *Richarde Scott*, deceased, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder thereof unto *William Scott*, sonne and heire of *Edward Scott*, myne unkle, deceased, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto the righte heires of me, the said Ser Rainolde Scott, for ever.

ALSO I WILL that my executors shall have, receive, and take the issues and proffettes of my manor of *Orlanston* with the appurtinances untill carnall copulacion be had betweene the saide *Thomas Scott*, my sonne, and the saide *Elizabethe*. And to have full powre and authoritee to sell and lett to farme the same manor, withe the appurtinances, duringe the saide time.

ALSO I WILL that my executers shall have, receive, and take the issues and proffitts of *my manors of Capell and Heanden*, withe the appurtinances, by the space of xv. yeres, and to have full powre and authoritee to sell and lett to farme the same duringe the said terme of xv. yeres (excepte all the thirde parte of all my landes holden of the king and quene), *The whiche thirde parte I have excepted and do not declare therof my will, because they shall descende unto my heire, so that if I chaunce to dye my heire beinge within the age of xxj yeres, that the kinge and Quene's maiesties maie have the saide thirde parte in warde withe myne heire accordinge* to the Statutes for declaracions of will late made.

AND I WILL that after the saide xv. yeres be expired, *Thomas Scott, my sonne, shall have my Manors of Capell and Heanden*, together withe all the landes thereunto belonginge within the countie of Kente, with the appurtinances, To have and to holde the same maners and landes, withe the appurtinances unto the saide *Thomas Scott, my sonne*, and to his heires males of his bodie, lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Bryan Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *Charles Scott*, my sonne, and his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder thereof unto *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *George Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lack of suche issue, unto *William Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his body lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Rainolde Scott*, sonne and heire of *Richarde Scott*, my brother, deceased, and to his heires males of his body lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *William Scott, sonne and heire of Edward Scott, myn Unkle, deceased*, and to his heires males of his body lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto the righte heires of me the said *Ser Rainolde Scott*, knighte, for ever.

AND I WILL that *Dame Marie, my wife*, shall have my messuage called *Merewoode*, and all the landes thereunto belonginge set lienge and beinge in the parishe of *Newington*, in the saide countie of *Kente*, for the terme of her naturall life. And after the decease of the same *Dame Marie*, my wife, I will that *Brian Scott, my sonne*, shall have the *saide Messuage cauled Merewood*, withe all the landes thereunto belonginge, to have and to holde to him and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Charles Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, and his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *George Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, unto *William Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Thomas Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Rainolde Scott*, sonne and heire of *Richarde Scott*, my brother, deceased, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the

Sir Reginald Scott.

remainder therof unto *William Scott*, sonne and heire of *Edward Scott*, *myne unkle*, *deceased*, and to his heires males of his bodye lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder thereof unto the righte heires of me the saide *Ser Rainolde Scott*, *knighte*, *for ever*.

ITEM, I WILL *that after the decease of Dame Marie*, *my wife*, my manor of *Thevegate*, withe all the landes and tenements therunto belonginge, withe the appurtinances, lienge and beinge within the *parishe of Smethe* and *Aldington*, or els wheare within the countie of Kent, belonginge or appertaininge unto the said manor, shall remaine unto *Thomas Scott*, *my sonne*, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *Brian Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *Charles Scott*, my son, and his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *George Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, unto *William Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto the heires males of me the said *Ser Rainolde Scott*, knighte, and the said Dame Marie, my Wife, lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Rainolde Scott*, *sonne and heire of Richarde Scott*, *my brother*, *deceased*, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder thereof unto *William Scott*, *sonne and heire of Edward Scott*, *myne unkel*, *deceased*, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto the righte heires of *me the saide Ser Rainolde Scott*, for ever.

PROUIDED ALLWEIS that if the saide *Dame Marie*, *my wife*, *do decease* before my saide sonne, Thomas Scott, or any other of my sonnes that shall fortune to be my eldeste sonne do cum to the age of xxj. yeres, Then I will that my executors shall receive and take the issues and proffitts of all the saide *maner of Thevegate*, together with all the saide landes and tenements to the saide manor belonginge, withe the appertinances, unto the saide Thomas Scott, my sonne, or any other of my sonnes that shall fortune to be my eldeste sonne, shall cum and be of his saide age of xxj. yeres to the performance of this my presente testamente and laste Will.

AND FURTHER I WILL that after the decease of *Dame Anne Pollarde*, my sister, that my executers shall receive and take the issues and proffites of my manors of *Braborn*, *Combe Hall*, *Bircholte*, and *Stretchelande*, withe all suche landes and tenementes, withe the appertinances, whiche she holdethe for terme of life (excepte as muche thereof as I have before assigned unto the saide *Elizabethe* for terme of her life onlie), untill suche time as my executors have performed and fulfilled this my presente testamente and last will, Savinge unto the kinges majestye and the Quenes maiestye the third part thereof accordinge to the Statute therof provided until my eldeste sonne come unto his full age of xxj. yeres.

AND after my saide last will and testamente performed, I will all the saide maners, landes, and tenementes, with the appertinances shall remaine unto *Thomas Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *Brian Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof to *Charles Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *Henrie Scott*, my sonne, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of such issue, the remainder therof unto *George Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *William Scott*, my sonne, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto the heires males of me the saide *Ser Ranolde Scott*, knyghte, and the saide Dame Marie, my wife, lawfully begotten, and for lacke of suche issue, the remainder theiof unto *Rainolde Scott*, *sonne and heire of my brother*, *Richarde Scott*, *deceased*, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten; and for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto *William Scott*, *sonne and heire of Edward Scott*, *my unkle*, *deceased*, and to his heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for lacke of suche issue, the remainder therof unto the righte heires of me the saide *Ser Rainolde Scott*, *knighte*, *for ever*.

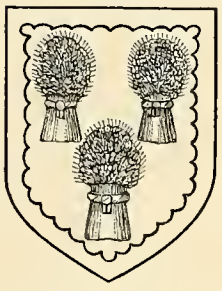
PROUIDED ALLWEIS, and my verie minde and will is that if there be any thinge in this my presente testamente and laste will conteined otherwise than the lawe will beare or suffer, Then I will it bee reformed, corrected, amended, and made accordinge to the lawe by the saide my executors and theire lerned counsell in the lawe.

These beinge presente Witness, John Blechinden, John Barowe, Ric. Master, John Strogull, William Langdon, William Hills, and Richarde Andrewe.

REINOLDE SCOTT.

Probate granted 13th February, 1555.

(No. 39 in Ped.) **Emmeline,** daughter of Sir William Kempe, of Ollantigh, Kent, first wife to Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall.



KEMPE OF OLLANTIGH.

ARMS.—*Gules within a bordure engrailed, three garbs, or.*

The eminent and knightly family of Kempe of Ollantigh in Wye, Kent, held for many generations a high and honourable position in that county. Ralph Kempe (the ancestor of Sir William) was in possession of that manor in the reign of Edward I. Of this family was John Kempe, Archbishop of Canterbury, and Cardinal of Rome (St. Cyriack), who built an oratory or chapel attached to the mansion of Ollantigh, and founded a college at Wye, portions of which exist to this day. Sir Thomas Kempe (father of Sir William) rebuilt that mansion, and dying in 1520, was, as well as many of his descendants, buried in the church at Wye. The family connection with this manor ceased about the year 1607.

PEDIGREE OF CHICHELEY, KEMPE, ETC.

THOMAS CHICHELE, of Higham Ferrers, Northants, died 1400. = AGNES, daughter of William Pincheon.

- Henry, Archbishop of Canterbury, founder of All Souls' College, Oxford, died 1443.
- Sir Robert Chichele, knt., Lord Mayor of London, 1411-21. ARMS.—*Or, a chevron between three cinquefoils, gu.* = Agnes, daughter and heir of William de Apuldrefeld, of Otterplay in Challock, Kent.
  - Sir Valentine Chiche. ARMS.—*Azure, three lions rampant, and a bordure argent.* = Philippa, daughter and heir of Sir Robert Chichele, *brother to Sir William Chicheley, Chamberlain of London.*
    - Sir Thomas Kempe, K.B., of Ollantigh, son of William Kempe and Alice Scott, daughter and heir of Sir Robert Scott, *Lieut. of the Tower of London, of the Scot's Hall family.* (*See* p. 106.) = Emeline, daughter and co-heir of Sir Valentine Chiche.
      - 2ndly, Sir William Kempe, born 1487, second son. = Eleanor, daughter and co-heir of Sir Robert Brown, fifth son of Sir Thomas Brown, of Betchworth, Surrey, by Eleanor, daughter of Sir Thomas Fitzalan, and sister of John, Lord Maltravers, of Betchworth Castle. *She remarried Sir Thomas Vaughan.* (*See* p. 175.)
        - Sir Thomas Kempe.
        - Margaret. = George Fogge, of Brabourne and Repton, co-heir to his nephew.
          - *A quo Fogges of Dane Court in Tilmanstone.* (*See Kentish Archæologia*, vol. v. p. 125.)
        - Emmeline. = Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall.
          - *A quo family of Scott of Scot's Hall, akin to founder of All Souls' College, Oxford.* (*See No.* 64 *in Ped.*)
      - 1stly, Thomas Fogge, Sergeant Porter of Calais to Henry VII. and Henry VIII., died 1512; buried in Ashford. (*See* p. 175.)
        - Anne, daughter and co-heir. = William Scott, son of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, died *s.p.* (*See* No. 42 *in Ped.*)
        - Alice, daughter and co-heir. = Edward Scott, of the Moat, Iden, Sussex, son of Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall. (*See p.* 173.)
          - *A quo Scotts of Mote.* (*See No.* 32* *in Ped.*)

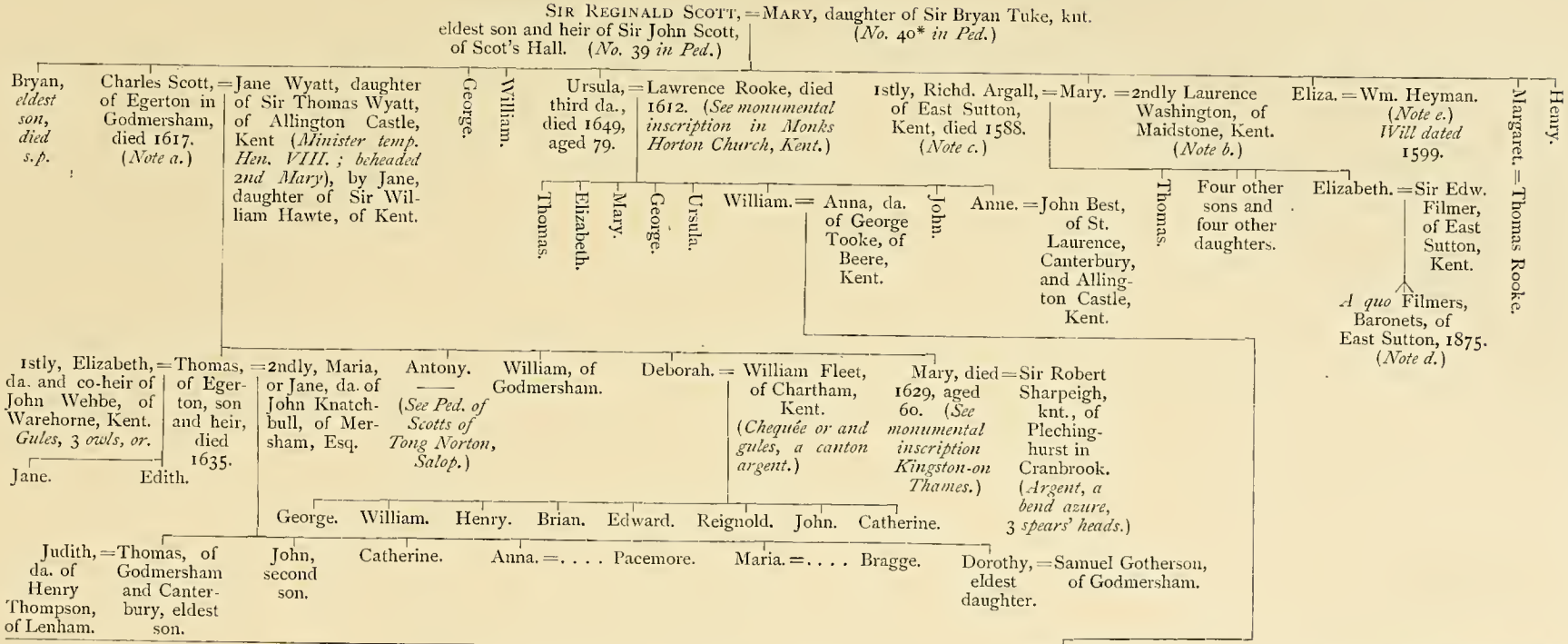
For issue of Sir Reginald Scott and Emmeline Kempe, see No. 64 in Ped., *et postea.*

(No. 40 in Ped.) **Mary,** daughter of Sir Bryan Tuke, knt., second wife to Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall.

ARMS OF TUKE.

ARMS.—*Per fess dancettée azure and gules, three lions passant guardant.*

Sir Bryan Tuke, of the family of Tuke or Tooke, of Layer Marney in Essex, originally from Nottinghamshire, held various appointments during the reign of Henry VIII. He appears to have been, firstly, Secretary of Cardinal Wolsey, and afterwards a Groom of the Chamber, in 1539, at the reception of the Lady Anne of Cleves at Dover; Master of the Postes; Treasurer of the King's Chamber, Master of the Jewell House; and, finally, Ambassador to France with Bishop Tunstal. Leland describes him as "Anglicæ linguæ eloquentiæ mirificus." There are many letters amongst the State Records from Sir Bryan Tuke, whilst engaged as Secretary to Cardinal Wolsey.


Sir Reginald Scott, eldest son and heir of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. (No. 39 in Ped.)
Mary, daughter of Sir Bryan Tuke, knt. (No. 40* in Ped.)
Bryan, eldest son, died s.p.
Charles Scott, of Egerton in Godmersham, died 1617. (Note a.)
Jane Wyatt, daughter of Sir Thomas Wyatt, of Allington Castle, Kent (Minister temp. Hen. VIII.; beheaded 2nd Mary), by Jane, daughter of Sir William Hawte, of Kent.
George.
William.
Ursula, third da., died 1649, aged 79.
Lawrence Rooke, died 1612. (See monumental inscription in Monks Horton Church, Kent.)
1stly, Richd. Argall, of East Sutton, Kent, died 1588. (Note c.)
Mary.
2ndly Laurence Washington, of Maidstone, Kent. (Note b.)
Eliza.
Wm. Heyman. (Note e.) Will dated 1599.
Henry.
Margaret.
Thomas Rooke.
Thomas.
Elizabeth.
Mary.
George.
Ursula.
William.
Anna, da. of George Tooke, of Beere, Kent.
John.
Anne.
John Best, of St. Laurence, Canterbury, and Allington Castle, Kent.
Thomas.
Four other sons and four other daughters.
Elizabeth.
Sir Edw. Filmer, of East Sutton, Kent.
A quo Filmers, Baronets, of East Sutton, 1875. (Note d.)
1stly, Elizabeth, da. and co-heir of John Webbe, of Warehorne, Kent. Gules, 3 owls, or.
Thomas, of Egerton, son and heir, died 1635.
2ndly, Maria, or Jane, da. of John Knatchbull, of Mersham, Esq.
Antony. —— (See Ped. of Scotts of Tong Norton, Salop.)
William, of Godmersham.
Deborah.
William Fleet, of Chartham, Kent. (Chequée or and gules, a canton argent.)
Mary, died 1629, aged 60. (See monumental inscription Kingston-on Thames.)
Sir Robert Sharpeigh, knt., of Plechinghurst in Cranbrook. (Argent, a bend azure, 3 spears' heads.)
Jane.
Edith.
George.
William.
Henry.
Brian.
Edward.
Reignold.
John.
Catherine.
Judith, da. of Henry Thompson, of Lenham.
Thomas, of Godmersham and Canterbury, eldest son.
John, second son.
Catherine.
Anna. =. . . . Pacemore.
Maria. =. . . . Bragge.
Dorothy, eldest daughter.
Samuel Gotherson, of Godmersham.
Sir William Rooke, of Horton, knt., and of St. Laurence, Canterbury, ob. March 10, 1690, æt. 70, buried in St. Paul's, Canterbury.
Jane, da. and co-heir of Thomas Finch, of Coptree, Kent, died 1711.
Admiral Sir George Rooke, knt., ob. 1708. Hero of Gibraltar.
Mary, da. of Thomas Luttrell, of Dunster Castle, Somerset. (Second wife.)
George Rooke, Esq., ob. 1739, buried in St. Paul's, Canterbury, s.p.
Frances, da. of William Ward, Esq., sister of John, Viscount Dudley, and Ward, married 1723.

Note (a).—*The manor of Egerton, in Godmersham, was anciently the estate of the noble family of De Valence, Earls of Pembroke, and passed in similarity of descent to the heirs of Aymer de Valence, viz., to the Comyns and Strabolgis, as the manor of Brabourne. From David Strabolgi, Earl of Athol, it passed by deed of gift, circa 20 Edw. III., to Sir Gilbert de Hilles (or de Helles), his kinsman, who lies buried in the church of Egerton, and in which family this manor continued for many generations, until it passed by sale to Charles Scott with whose descendants it remained until it passed to Mr. Sam*l *Gotherson, in right of his marriage with Dorothy Scott, grand-daughter of Charles above named. In the Egerton chauntry many of the family of the De Helles and Scotts of Egerton are buried, but their monuments have disappeared.*

Note (b).—*A Colonel Washington, of Maidstone, was in 1648 a commander of a regiment, on the side of the Royalists, and was at the siege of Maidstone. It is probable he was a descendant of Laurence Washington, of Maidstone. Qy., Is this the Laurence Washington from whom the President of America is descended?*

Note (c).—"*Richard Argall.*" *The following monumental inscription is in East Sutton Church:—"Rich*d *Argall, of East Sutton, in the county of Kent, Esq., deceased anno Dm*ni *1588, leaving 5 sons and 6 daughters living. Mary, his second wife, one of the daughters of Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall, married the second time to Laurence Washington, Esq., died in anno 1605. Thomas Argall, eldest son of the said Richard and Mary, died in anno 1605, whose souls," etc., etc.*

Note (d).—*In the same church is the following monumental inscription:—"Under this rest, in certain hope of the resurrection of the bodies of Sir Edw*d *Filmer, knight, and Dame Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of Richard Argall, Esq. They lived together 44 years, and had issue 18 children, 9 sons and 9 daughters. He departed this life 2 Nov., 1629, she the 9 Aug*t*, 1638."*

Note (e).—*William Hayman was son of Sir Peter Hayman, of Somerfield and Sellinge, Kent, by Mary, Tyrrell, da. and co-heir of William Tyrrell, brother and co-heir of Edward Tyrrell, of Beeches, county of Essex.*

(No. 41 in Ped.) **Sir John Scott,** son of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. (See Ped. No. 30.)

Sir John Scott's profession was that of the law. He appears in the Patent Rolls, 4 Henry VIII. (1504) as an apprentice to that profession, and, according to Foss, in his *History of the Judges*, he was one of the Judges of the Exchequer from 1513 to 1521.

He was, in 1530, one of the Commissioners appointed to inquire into the possessions of Cardinal Wolsey. He is said to have resided at Camberwell, and to have founded the family afterwards known as the Scotts of Camberwell, many of whom were buried in that church; Sir John being buried on the north side of the chancel, having died 7th September, 1532. Le Neve, Norroy King of Arms, saw the original portrait of this man at Aylsham, in Norfolk, in 1715.

The arms of the Scotts of Camberwell are, "*Argent, on a fess, sable, three boars' heads, couped, or.*"

EXTRACT FROM PEDIGREE OF SCOTT OF CAMBERWELL.

(*Harl. MSS., Brit. Mus.* ff. 20*b*, 21, 24*b*.)

SCOTT OF CAMBERWELL.

Sir John Scott, Baron of the Exchequer, died 1532. = Elizabeth, daughter and co-heir of Richard Skinner.

1stly, Elizabeth, daughter and heir of John Robins. = John Scott, of Camberwell. = 2ndly, Margaret, daughter of . . . . Barton.

= 3rdly, ..., daughter of John Samford.

Margaret, *married.*

Edgar Scott. Southwell Scott, *ob. s.p.*

John, *s.p.* William. Bartholomew. Acton. = Anne, daughter of Edmunds. Richard. = Mary, daughter of Edward Weldon. Edward. = Dorothy Bere, of Horsman's Place, Dartford. *She remarried Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, Kent. She had no issue by either husband.*

Sir Peter Scott, of Camberwell, son and heir of Acton Scott, died 28 June, 1622. *He resided at Scot's Hall at Chelsham, near Tatsfield, Surrey, now a farmhouse, 1875.* = Elizabeth Kiddermister, daughter of Edmund, and sister of Sir John, of Langley Marsh, Bucks.

Elizabeth = Edward. Webb.

John, born about 1617. = Elizabeth Cherry.

Mary. = Thomas Cleaver, Canon of Windsor.

Lettice. Elizabeth.

Francis. = Lucy van Court, only daughter of Peter van Court, merchant, of London. She was heir to her brothers, Peter and James.

Margaret, daughter of Sir William Bowles, knt., of Clerkenwell, Middlesex. = Peter Scott, Rector of Sunninghill and Prebend of Windsor. = Margaret, daughter of Clement Spelman, Esq.

Henrietta Maria, died an infant.

Francis, Lord of Manor of Camberwell, lived at Aylsham in Norfolk, and from whom Peter le Neve, Norroy at Arms, had account of family. = Katherine, daughter and heir of James Thompson, of Barrow by Aylsham in Norfolk, 1713.

James, *unmarried.*

No issue.

Lucy. = Thomas Dickins, of London.

Isabella = -- Vaux, of London. — *No issue.*

Elizabeth = Hopkins, Bishop of Londonderry. — *Issue, two sons.*

Margaret. = Edward Maidman, *Attorney-at-Law, London.*

Peter Scott, buried at Camberwell, *unmarried.*

Bartholomew, buried at Camberwell, *unmarried.*

William Scott, buried at Camberwell, *unmarried.*

(No. 42 in Ped.) **William Scott,** son of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. (See Ped. No. 30.) Died *s.p.*

(No. 43 in Ped.) **Anne,** eldest daughter and co-heir of Thomas Fogge, Sergeant Porter of Calais to Henry VII. and Henry VIII.,[r] and wife of William Scott. She afterwards re-married Henry Isham, Captain of Walmer Castle, Kent.[s]

William Scott, with his wife Anne, resided at Fogge's Court (afterwards called Scott's Court), in Great Mongeham, near Deal. The manor and mansion of Fogge's Court had belonged to Sir John Fogge, of Repton in Ashford, who died possessed of it in 1490, leaving it by will to his eldest son, Thomas Fogge, Sergeant Porter of Calais, from whom it passed to Ann, his eldest daughter (*see* pp. 174-5), wife to William, brother to Sir Reginald Scott. On the death of William without issue, the estate passed into other hands. Ann Scott, in 1561, conveyed her portion of Heppington Manor to Sir Thomas Hales, whose son, William of Thanington, in 1640 conveyed it to Thomas Godfrey, of Lidd, in whose family it remained for many generations.

(No. 44* in Ped.) **Richard Scott,** third son of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. (See Ped. No. 30.)

(No 45 in Ped.) **Mary,** daughter of George Whetenall, of Hextal's Place, in East Peckham, Kent, son of William Whetenall, of East Peckham, Sheriff of Kent 18th Henry VIII., wife of Richard Scott. She re-married Fulke Onslow, Clerk of the Parliaments, *temp.* Elizabeth.[t]

ARMS OF WHETENALL.— *Vert, a bend, ermine.*

---

[r] The opening and closing the gates of Calais in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries was a matter of the greatest political and military importance, surrounded as that town and fortress at that period was by a hostile country. The orders, regulations, and oaths administered to the officers engaged in this service, for their due performance, were of the most stringent character. These officers consisted of a Knight, a Sergeant, and a Gentleman Porter, with a staff of armed subordinates. The Lord Deputy of Calais (an office held by the highest nobility in the land) received the keys every night, and gave them to the Night Porter in the morning, specifying the number of gates he appointed to be open for the day. This was done when the first watch-bell had tolled three times, when the guard turned out into the market-place, to beat the *reveillée* with fife and drum At the dinner time (an hour before noon), the gates were closed and the keys delivered to the King's Deputy, and after dinner were re-opened with the same ceremony, and finally closed for the day at four P.M. The regulations in reference to strangers were equally stringent and oppressive, and which the French authorities kept up centuries after Calais was lost to the English.

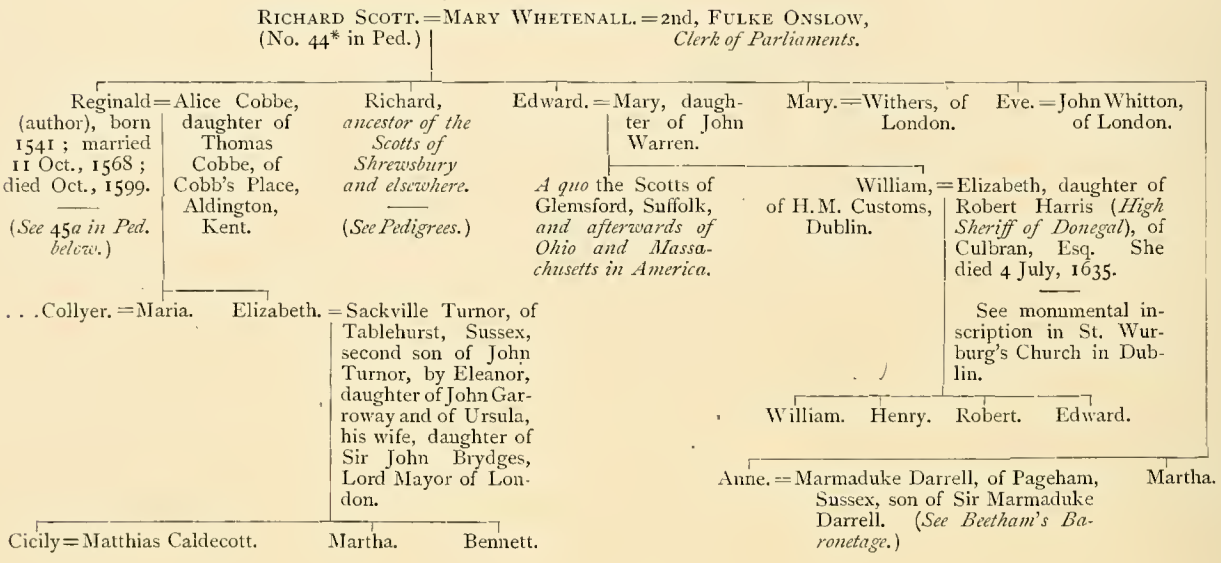
[s] An ancient family seated for many generations at Lamport in Northamptonshire, and descended from Azor, the father of Roger de Isham, one of the first benefactors to the priory of St. Andrew's in Northants, founded by Simon de St. Liz in the eighteenth year of the Conqueror's reign. Sir John Isham, of Lamport, of this family, was created a baronet by Charles I., 30 May, 1627. Amongst the State Papers, under date of April 29, 1576, is a letter from the Lords of the Council to Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, and Mr. Thomas Wotton, directing them to hear and determine all matters in controversy between Captain William Hawkes, of Walmer Castle (Kent), and Mr. Henry Isham.

[t] Fulke Onslow was of a family in Surrey. He died 8th August, 1602, æt. 88, as appears on a monumental inscription in the church of Hatfield, Herts.

Mary Whetenall.

The family of Whetenall, of East Peckham, was of some importance in the county of Kent during the reigns of Henry VIII. and Elizabeth, and held lands in the valley of the Medway, and in Brenchley. One of this family, Thomas Whetenall, probably a brother of Richard above mentioned, married Catherine, daughter of John Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury. This family is no longer connected with the county of Kent.

DESCENDANTS OF RICHARD SCOTT AND MARY WHETENALL.


Richard Scott. (No. 44* in Ped.) = Mary Whetenall. = 2nd, Fulke Onslow, Clerk of Parliaments.
Reginald (author), born 1541; married 11 Oct., 1568; died Oct., 1599. (See 45a in Ped. below.) = Alice Cobbe, daughter of Thomas Cobbe, of Cobb's Place, Aldington, Kent.
Richard, ancestor of the Scotts of Shrewsbury and elsewhere. (See Pedigrees.)
Edward. = Mary, daughter of John Warren.
Mary. = Withers, of London.
Eve. = John Whitton, of London.
A quo the Scotts of Glemsford, Suffolk, and afterwards of Ohio and Massachusetts in America.
William, of H.M. Customs, Dublin. = Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Harris (High Sheriff of Donegal), of Culbran, Esq. She died 4 July, 1635.
See monumental inscription in St. Wurburg's Church in Dublin.
. . . Collyer. = Maria.
Elizabeth. = Sackville Turnor, of Tablehurst, Sussex, second son of John Turnor, by Eleanor, daughter of John Garroway and of Ursula, his wife, daughter of Sir John Brydges, Lord Mayor of London.
William. Henry. Robert. Edward.
Anne. = Marmaduke Darrell, of Pageham, Sussex, son of Sir Marmaduke Darrell. (See Beetham's Baronetage.)
Martha.
Cicily = Matthias Caldecott.
Martha.
Bennett.

(No. 45a in Ped.) **Reginald Scott,** son of Richard Scott and Mary Whetenall, was a man sufficiently remarkable to justify a short notice. By most genealogists he is mentioned as a son of Sir John Scott, thus confounding him with his uncle, Sir Reginald. He was educated at Oxford, where he failed to attain a degree, and retired to his native county and settled at Smeeth, receiving great encouragement in his studies from his cousin, Sir Thomas Scott, then of Scot's Hall. He published in 1573 a work entitled, "*A Perfite Platforme of a* HOPPE-GARDEN *and necessarie Instructions for the making and mayntenance thereof, with Notes and Rules for Reformation of all Abuses commonly practised therein, very necessarie and expedient for all men to have, which in anywise have to doe with Hops,*" *by Reynolde Scot, 4to, London, 1573, printed in black letter with many woodcuts; it was reprinted again in 1576 and 1578 by Henry Denham.*

Reginald Scott appears to have devoted himself to the study of obscure and abstruse authors, whose works in that unlearned age had been much neglected, and to husbandry and gardening pursuits, some minor works on which latter subjects he is said to have published. The work, however, by which his name will immemorially be connected was that in relation to witchcraft, dedicated to his cousin, Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, and entitled, "*The Discovery of Witchcraft, wherein the lewd dealings of Witches and Witchmongers is notably detected, the Knavery of Conjurors, the Impiety of Inchanters, the folly of Soothsayers, with many other things are Opened, which have long been hidden, howbeit very necessary to be known,*" *4to, London, 1584, also reprinted in 1651, and again in folio, 1655.* The "*Discovery of Witchcraft*" was written to mitigate the rigours of the times in relation to Witches, and the principles enunciated were by at least a century in advance of the prejudices of the learned and the superstition of the vulgar, who in that age universally believed in the reality of witches (see p. 101).

Reginald Scott. In the preface, Reginald Scott declares that his views are to prevent "the abasement of God's glory," and the rescue of the Gospel from an alliance with "such peevish trumpery," and to enlist "favour and Christian compassion" towards the "poor souls" accused of witchcraft, rather than "rigour and extremity." So great was the universal condemnation of this work, not only at the universities and amongst the high clergy of that period, that the author was treated with the greatest obloquy, and, according to the custom of the day, the book, or rather the copies of the first edition, was burned by the common hangman. Not content with this, King James I. published to the world his famous "*Demonologie*," *printed in Edinburgh in* 1597, mainly to refute the errors of that "damnable heretic Scot." Even so late as 1670 Joseph Glanvil, the famous philosophical and theological writer, and a fellow of the Royal Society, advocated the existence of witches and witchcraft. Sir Walter Scott, in his celebrated work entitled *Demonology and Witchcraft*, draws largely from Reginald Scott, and E. Lynn Linton's interesting *Witch Stories* contain many extracts from that author, of whose work a copious analysis will be found in *Oldys British Librarian* and the *Retrospective Review*. As specimens of superstitious religious belief at the dawn of the Reformation, we print the two following letters:—

Ade Davie's Mourning, *from Reginald Scott's "Discovery of Witchcraft."*

"Ade Davie, wife of Simon Davie, husbandman, had a wiser man for her husband, simple and unlearned as he was, than had many a wretched creature for her judge. Ade suddenly became sad and pensive as she never had been in times past. Her husband did his best to cheer her, but Ade still continued sorrowful; when, at last, her burden grew heavier than she could bear, falling down at Simon's feet she besought him to forgive her, for that she had grievously offended both God and him. Her poor husband, being abashed at this her behaviour, comforted her as he could; asking her the cause of her trouble and greefe; who told him that she had, contrary to God's law, and to the offence of all good Christians, to the injury of him, and specially to the losse of her own soul, bargained and given her soul to the devill, to be delivered unto him within short space. Whereunto her husband answered, saying, 'Wife, be of good cheer, this thy bargain is void and of none effect; for thou hast sold that which is none of thine to sell: sith it belongeth to Christ, who hath bought it, and dearly paid for it, even with his blood, which he shed upon the crosse: so as the devil hath no interest in thee.' After this, with like submission, teares, and penitence, she said unto him, 'Oh, husband, I have yet committed another fault, and done you more injury; for I have bewitched you and four children. 'Be content,' quoth he, 'by the grace of God Jesus Christ can unwitch us; for none evill can happen to them that fear God.'

"This fresh and pure idyl comes to us with a sweet and wholesome savour, in the midst of the foul quagmires of superstition where it stands; and that poor husbandman's simple faith in God's goodness and his wife's virtue is more touching than many a grand heroic deed which has the suffrages of all history to float it through the life of the world. Simon Davie was an unlettered man, but he was strong-hearted and believing, and thinking that earnest prayer might comfort his wife, when the time approached for the Devil to come and close his bargain, knelt down by her and prayed, she joining with him fervently. Then they heard a low rumbling noise below, which made the windows shake, and which convinced the poor wife that it was the Devil trying to take possession of her soul, but barred out from the chamber by the fervent prayers aforesaid. In the morning it was found that the noise came from a dog which had devoured a sheep that was newly flayed and hung against the wall; and in due time, Ade Davie recovering her reason (for she was crazed, and took every fire to be the fire lighted to burn her for witchcraft), came to the knowledge that she had never sold her soul to the Devil at all, and had never bewitched husband or children, but had always been a faithful wife and fond mother, afflicted with a light brain and nervous imagination."

The Possession of Mildred Norrington, *from Reginald Scott's "Discovery of Witchcraft." London*, 1584.

"Mildred, the 'base daughter' of Alice Norrington, being seventeen years of age, was likewise possessed of the Devil, in much the same way as Alexander Nyndge had been. She lived as servant with William Spooner, of Westwell, in the county of Kent, and her case attracted great attention. All the divines of the neighbourhood assembled at Spooner's house on the 13th of October, 1574, to endeavour to cast out the Devil by such means of prayer and exorcism as they had at their command. Powerfully did they pray; mightily roared the Devil; 'And tho' we did command him many times, in the name of God, and of his son Jesus Christ, and in his mighty Power to speak, yet he would not, until he had gone through all his Delays, as roaring, crying, striving, and gnashing of teeth, and otherwise, with mowing and other terrible countenances, and was so strong in the maid that four men could scarce hold her down.' This continued for about two hours, and then he spoke out, but very strangely, crying, 'He comes, He comes,' and 'He goes, He goes.' When charged to tell the exorcists who had sent him, he said, 'I am in her way like a Log, and I made her run like Fire; but I could not hurt her.' 'And why so?' said we. 'Because God

Reginald Scott.

kept her,' said he. When asked when he came to her, he said, 'At night, in her bed.' And when charged to tell them his name, he said, 'The Devil, The Devil.' But being still more powerfully exhorted, he roared and cried as before, and spake terrible words: 'I will kill her; I will kill her; I will tear her to pieces: I will kill you all!' Asked again, and conjured so that he could not escape, he was forced to confess that his name was Satan, and Little Devil, and Partner, and that old Alice had sent him—old Alice, in Westwell Street, with whom he had lived these twenty years shut up in two bottles. 'Where be they?' said we. 'In the back side of her house,' said he. 'In what place?' said we. 'Under the wall,' said he. The other was at Kennington, in the ground. Then we asked him what old Alice had given him. He said, 'Her will, Her will.' 'What did she bid thee do?' said we. 'Kill her maid,' he said, 'because she did not love her.' He then said that he had been to the vicarage loft in the likeness of two birds, and that old Alice had sent him and his servant (another devil) to kill whom she loved not. 'How many hast thou killed for her?' said we. 'Three,' said he 'Who are they?' said we. 'A man and his child,' said he. 'What were their names?' said we. 'The child's name was Edward,' said he. 'What more than Edward?' said we. 'Edward Ager,' said he. 'What more?' said we. 'Richard Ager,' said he. 'Where dwelt the man and the child?' said we. 'At Dig, at Dig,' said he. This Richard Ager was a gentleman of forty pounds' land by the year; a very honest man, but would often say he was bewitched, and languished long ere he died. The Devil (or Mildred for him) said that he had also killed Wotton's wife, and that he used to fetch old Alice meat and drink and corn, and that he had been at many houses (named) doing her wicked will. Then he was adjured so that he could not resist, when he cried out that he would go, he would go, and so he departed. Then said the maid, 'He is gone. Lord have mercy on me! for he would have killed me!' So those ministers and neighbours present all kneeled down and thanked God for Mildred's deliverance; and she kept her countenance, and did not betray herself. But a short time after, the 'bruit of her divinity and miraculous trances' spreading far and wide, Mr. Thomas Wotton, 'a man of great worship and wisdom, and for deciding and ordering of matters, of rare and singular dexterity,' got to the true understanding of the case, when 'the Fraud was found and cozenage confessed, and she received condign Punishment.' After her trial, and when she knew the worst, she 'showed her Feats, Illusions, and Trances, with the residue of All her miraculous works in the Presence of divers Gentlemen of great worship and Credit at Boston-Malherb, in the House of the said Mr. Wotton.'" "Now compare this wench with the witch of Endor, and you shall see that both the cozenages may be done by one art," says Reginald Scott.

ABSTRACT OF WILL OF RAYNOLDE SCOTT.

Dated 15 September, 1599.
Proved 22 November, 1599.

Kidd, fo. 86.
Abstract.

Will of Raynolde Scott, of Smeth in the County of Kent, gentleman, made the 15th September, 1599, appoints his wife, Alice, executor, and gives her all his goods, chattels, plate, householdstuff, jewels, and chains, with all his leases and goods, moveable and unmovable, except such as ar otherwise disposed of.

Appoints Mr. Edward Hall, of Ashford, and Raynolde Keale, of Smethe, overseers of his will, and gives to each of them for their pains, £5. Gives to Sir John Scott "my lease of the bankes or ponds at Aldinge" (*Aldington*).

To his Grandchild Cisley Turnor, £10. "to buy her a little chaine."

To his daughter-in-law, Marie Collyar, £6 13*s.* 4*d.*, "to be bestowed in apparell upon herself;" neither would I have her mothershand anie thing the shorter towardes her in that respect.

To his daughter Turnor, "the cov^{t} that I have of my cozen, Charles Scott, touching the . . . . . of my lease when his grace doth . . . . . his lease of Braborne Rectorie, provided that my meaning is that my said wief shall enioye the full tearme that I nowe possesse, and howsoever it shalbe renued my daughter shall have the onelie renuinge, which shalbe in effecte after the whole tearme w^{ch} I holde now be expired, so as by any meane renuings my saide wief be not defeated of my true meaninge towards her. To my wief and to her heirs for ever all my landes in Aldington now in occupon of John Pollard, and all my landes in Ruckinge in occupion . . . Diggons. And all my landes in Sellinge in occupon of Coatier (*qy.* Collyar). And to my wife all my other landes in Rumey marshe or elsewhere in Kent during her lief

To my serv Moyle Smythe, 20*s.* yearlie during his lief.

And so I ende, desyreing the walde to iudge the best hereof, and of the consyderacons, for greate is the trouble my poore wief hath had with me, and small is the comforte she hath receyed at my handes, whome yf I had not matched w^{t} all I had not dyed woeth one groate.

Proved according to sentence 22 Nov^{r}, 1599, by Alice Scott, widow, the Executrix. Sent^{ce} affirmg the Will in a suit, Alice Scott, the widow, *v.* Elizabeth Turnor, als Scott, daughter of the deceased.

(No. 46 in Ped.) **Mildred Scott,** daughter of Sir John Scott (*Ped. No.* 30), married, in 1528, firstly, to John Diggs, of Dygge's Court in Barham; and, secondly, to Richard Keyes.

(No. 47 in Ped.) **John Diggs,** of Dygge's Court in Barham in Kent, bore for his arms "*Gules on a cross argent, five eagles displayed, sable.*"

He was the son of James Diggs, Esq., of that place, and Mildred, his first wife, daughter of Sir John Fineux (*Lord Chief Justice of England*), and co-heir to her mother, one of the daughters and co-heirs of William Apulderfield, Esquire. John Diggs, the grandfather of John, served the office of Sheriff of Kent in 1464, and married Joan, daughter of Sir Gervase Clifton, by Isabella Herbert, or Fynche, relict of Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall. She and her second husband, Sir Gervase, resided at Scot's Hall, in right of her dower, and at which place he served the office of Sheriff of Kent in 1440 (see p. 105). The descendants of John Diggs and Mildred, his wife, were seated for many generations at Barham, and afterwards at Trenches, in Reigate, Surrey.

The manor of Fawkham, in Axtane Hundred, which was escheated to the crown on the death without legal issue of Edward, last Lord Poynings, was granted by Henry VIII. to James Diggs, above mentioned, who in the fourteenth year of that reign settled it in tail male on John Diggs, his son, and Mildred Scott, his wife, from whom it passed, after many generations, to Thomas Barham, of Barham Court in Teston.

The old manor house, formerly possessed by the Grandisons and the Poynings, had in Hasted's time disappeared, with the exception of the foundation and a portion of what appeared to be the chapel. John Diggs likewise possessed Popeshall, near Dover, as the heir of James Horne, of Horne's Place, Appledore, and which originally belonged to the extinct family of De Orlanstone. (See p. 104.)

Sir Dudley Diggs, of Chilham Castle, Master of the Rolls *temp.* Elizabeth, was of this family.

(No. 48 in Ped.) **Richard Keyes,** of Essex and Kent, second husband of Mildred Scott, whose arms were "*Gules, a chevron ermine, between three leopards' faces, or.*"

Little is known of this family, which appears in the sixteenth century to have been connected with the county of Kent. One of this family, Martin Keyes, or Key, and described as of Kent, married Lady Mary Grey, sister of the unfortunate Lady Jane Grey.

(No 49 in Ped.) **Catherine,** daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall (*Ped. No.* 30), married to Sir Henry Crispe, of Quex Court, in Birchington, Thanet.

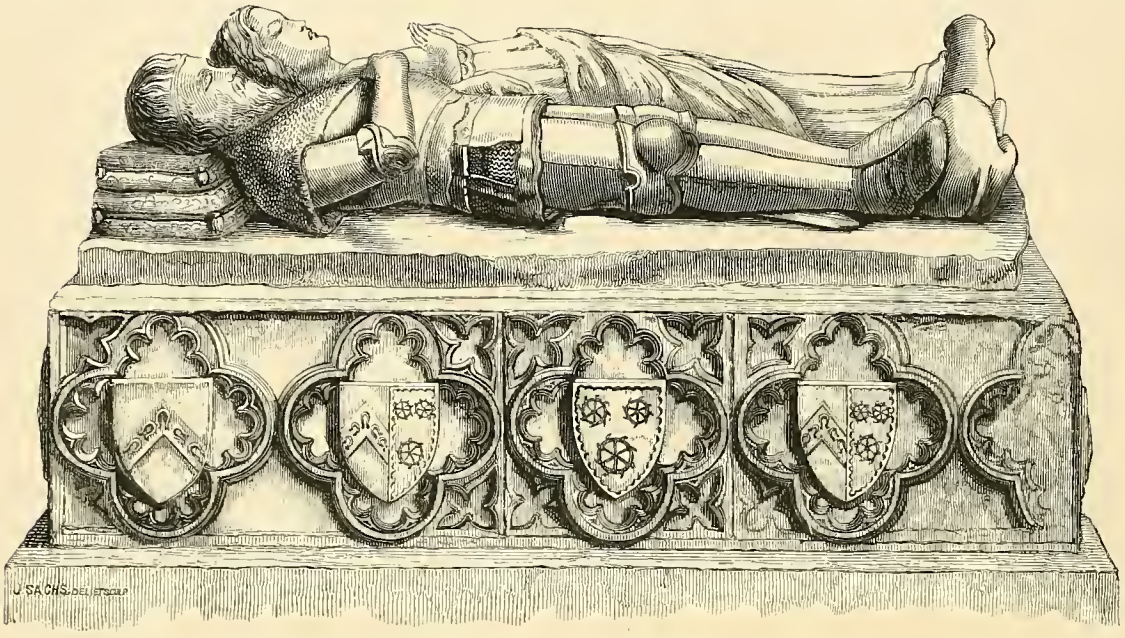
(No. 50 in Ped.) **Sir Henry Crispe,** of Quex in Thanet.

ARMS.—*Or, on a chevron sable, five horseshoes, argent.*

Sir Henry Crispe, the subject of our memoir, was a descendant of the family of Crispe, settled for many generations at Stanlake in Oxfordshire, and was a man of considerable note in the reign of

Sir Henry Crispe.

Henry VIII., in the thirty-eighth year of which he served the office of Sheriff of Kent, and was afterwards knighted, having a year or so previously built the mansion house of Quex, in which he served his shrievalty. According to Philipott (*Kentish historian*), so great was his influence that he was styled *Regulus insulæ*, or the Governor of Thanet. The mansion of Quex or Queakes was quadrangular in



ALTAR TOMB AND EFFIGIES OF SIR HENRY CRISPE AND HIS FIRST WIFE, CATHERINE SCOTT, IN BIRCHINGTON CHURCH, THANET, KENT.

form and very large in extent, and a considerable portion was in existence fifty years ago, but much altered in architectural feature and degenerated in character. The descendants of this man eventually decayed in influence and importance, although married into many of the best families in the county, including, amongst others, the Culpepers, Knatchbulls, and Ropers. The last acres of this once celebrated estate were only a few years ago alienated by a lineal descendant in the male line.

1stly, CATHERINE, daughter of Sir John Scott, *buried at Birchington.* = SIR HENRY CRISPE, knt., died 1575, *buried at Birchington* = ANN, daughter of John Haselhurst, Esq.

Nicholas, Sheriff of Kent 1st Elizabeth, 1558. Died *s.p.* = Frances, sole daughter of Henry, Lord Cheney, of Tuddington.

Four sons. Two daughters.

(Nos. 51 and 52 in Ped.)

Isabella Scott (51), daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, married to Richard Adams (52), Esq., of London.

ARMS OF ADAMS.—*Argent, on a cross gules, five mullets, or.*

(No. 53 in Ped.)

Alice Scott, daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall. (Unmarried in 1571.)

(No. 54 in Ped.)

Mary, daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, married to Nicholas Ballard, of Horton, near Canterbury, Kent.

(No. 55 in Ped.) **Nicholas Ballard,** of Horton-upon-Stour, near Canterbury, was a member of the family of that name, and a descendant of Fulco de Ballard, seated at Horton in the 20th of Edward III. This family bore for arms "*Sable, a griffin segreant, ermine.*" His great-grandfather, Thomas Ballard, of Horton, had served the office of Sheriff of Kent in 31st of Henry VI. Nicholas Ballard, in the reign of Philip and Mary, alienated Horton to Robert Trollope, Esq., and Sappington Manor in Petham, to a member of the family of Streynsham.

It would appear from the State Paper Records, as if Nicholas Ballard, in the year 1551, had been in communication with William Cecil, afterwards created Earl of Salisbury, in respect of the sale of Horton and Northbourne Manors; but it does not appear that his negociations had been successful. He died in the reign of Queen Mary without issue.

(No. 56 in Ped.) **Elizabeth Scott,** sixth daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall.

This lady is mentioned in Sir Reginald Scott's will as his "sister," and at that time (1554) as unmarried. She would appear, according to Brabourne Register, in 1569 to have married Stephen Whitfield; but the name of Elizabeth is so common at this period of our biography, as to render it difficult to assign to each individual of this name her proper place in the pedigree.

(No. 57 in Ped.) **Stephen Whitfield,** whose arms are described as "*Argent, a bend between two engrailed cottises, sable,*" would appear to have belonged to the family of Whitfield of Wadhurst in Sussex, and Tenterden in Kent, then recently established in those parts. They afterwards became very numerous, and resided for many generations in various parts of the counties of Kent and Sussex, at Tenterden, Bethersden, Ashford, and Lewes. Of any issue of this marriage we are ignorant.

(Nos. 58 and 59 in Ped.) **Sybil** or **Isabella Scott,** daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, and wife to Richard Hynde, Esq., of Essex.

Arms of Hynde.—*Gules, three hinds' heads, erased, or.*

(Nos. 60 and 61 in Ped.) **Anne Scott,** daughter of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, wife to Sir . . . . . Pollard, died *s.p.*

Extract from Will of Sir Reginald Scott.—"*And further I will that after the decease of Dame Anne Pollarde, my sister, that,*" *etc., etc.*

(No. 62 in Ped.) **George Scott,** son of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, died *s.p.*

(No. 63 in Ped.) **Pashley Scott,** son of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, died *s.p.*[u]

---

[u] Thus it would appear that Sir John Scott had by Ann Pympe, his wife, fourteen children.

(No. 64 in Ped.) **Sir Thomas Scott,** of Scots Hall, eldest son and heir of Sir Reginald Scott, by Emeline Kempe, his first wife.

Sheriff of Kent 18th Elizabeth, 1576.
Knight of the Shire in Parliaments of 13th and 28th Elizabeth.
Commander-in-Chief of the Kentish forces assembled on Northbourne Downs in 1588.
Commissioner in 1581 for the construction of a wall across the Bay of Dover, and for a harbour and jetties connected therewith.
A Commissioner for the construction and maintenance of a sea wall between Romney, Lydd, and Dungeness, in Romney Marsh, etc., etc.

SIR THOMAS SCOTT, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE KENTISH FORCES AT THE APPROACH OF THE ARMADA.

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

There is no name mentioned in this biography that more readily commends itself than the subject of this memoir. Sir Thomas Scott was in his time, as the various biographies mentioned below will fully attest, a remarkable man. Indeed, it has been stated that so jealous was Queen Elizabeth of his well-deserved reputation and universal influence in the county of Kent, that on the application made either by his brother-in-law, Lord Buckhurst, or by his cousin, Lord Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, to that monarch, in recognition of his public services, that he should be ennobled, the Queen petulantly declined, on the ground that Sir Thomas Scott had already more influence in Kent than Majesty herself.

Amongst the Calendar of State Papers are numerous letters addressed from the Council, from Lord Cobham, Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, and others of note as statesmen, to Sir Thomas Scott, and which will shortly be shown, had reference to his public services, in relation respectively to the construction of Dover Harbour, the more perfect embankment and drainage of Romney Marsh, and to the threatened approach, in 1588, of the Spanish Armada, when he,

Sir Thomas Scott. was appointed Colonel-Commander of the Kentish forces, then assembled at Northbourne Downs near Dover, under Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, as Commander-in-Chief of the army encamped in 1588 at Tilbury Fort in Essex.

Sir Thomas Scott held so many Commissions in relation to state and county interests, that it would trespass too much on the space of so limited a work as this, to give more than the most cursory details of the work and public service entrusted to him by the Privy Council.

We find him, whilst yet a comparatively young man, named, in 1569, with Lord Cobham (as Lord Warden), Sir Thomas Kempe (of Olantigh, Kent, his kinsman), Sir Thomas Wotton (of Boughton Malherbe), Sir Thomas Guildford (his cousin), and others in the county of Kent, as a Commissioner for the defence of the sea coast, concerting arrangements for the firing of beacons throughout Kent, and providing "Hobelers," or light horsemen to act as scouts night and day, to give the earliest warning of the approach of a hostile fleet then expected from the coast of Spain. The Commissioners met at Ashford on 1st October, 1569, and the report made on this occasion to the Privy Council, is a long and careful document, and many precedents embodied therein were, upwards of two centuries afterwards, considered and adopted, when a descent on the English coast was in contemplation by the first Emperor Napoleon.

Sir Thomas Scott was likewise a Commissioner, together with many of the Privy Council and Ministers of State, to consider and report on the desirability of improving the breed of horses in this country, and he published a work on this important question, which is either out of print, or so rare as never to be met with in catalogues of scarce publications of a bygone period.

We have before referred to Sir Thomas Scott's influence in the county of Kent. This is best exemplified by the expedition with which he equipped and assembled four thousand armed men on Northbourne Downs, the day following the receipt by him of letters from the Privy Council. He was called by his contemporaries the "Father of Romney Marsh and the Founder of Dover Haven," in the construction of which he acted as Chief Commissioner.[v]

We can do no better, in concluding our memoir of this distinguished man, than to quote the quaint phraseology adopted by Hunter (in his *History of London*), who, alluding to the public services and character of this worthy, writes:—

"We seize the opportunity of giving the life of one whose excellent character deserves particular attention. If Britain had many such she might bid defiance to adepts in philosophy that disgrace humanity and shock our nature. Sir Thomas Scott's immediate progenitors were Sir Reginald Scott, Sir John Scott, Sir William Scott, and Sir John Scott, knights. His mother was a daughter of Sir William Kempe (*Ollantigh*). His descent therefore was extremely good, but not (*qy*) noble. He came to the estate, finding it encumbered with a debt of 2000 marks: but by attention to all his concerns and appropriating everything to its proper use, he was enabled to live with the greatest respect-

---

[v] In 1581 an Act of Parliament was passed for raising supplies for the construction of Dover Haven. The money granted by the statute was, threepence a ton on every vessel loading or unloading in *any* port within the realm for seven years, and three halfpence on every chaldron of coals, and the same on every grindstone landed for sale.

Mr. Digges, of the Chilham Castle family, was employed as engineer of the Harbour, and under him a Mr. Pett (not improbably the father of the celebrated ship-builder of Chatham Dockyard of the time of Charles II.), who would appear to have superintended the construction of the wooden jetties. Sir Thomas Scott was Commissioner-in-Chief, and superintended the construction of the stone wall across the bay, called the "Pent," which was seventy feet at the bottom and forty feet at the top. The cost of this wall was £2700 (*equal in this day to about* £30,000), and was completed in three months. The principal wooden jetty, which was in existence about fifty years ago, was named, after Queen Elizabeth, the "Queen's Jetty."

Sir James Hales was treasurer, his recompense being five shillings and eight pence for every £50 received and accounted for; whilst a fourth Kentish man, viz., Thomas Smythe, of Leeds Castle (better known as "Customer Smythe," as he farmed, under the Privy Council, the Custom duties of London), had control of the collection of these various duties.

Sir Thomas Scott.

ability, and perform the most important services to Queen Elizabeth, his sovereign. He was Deputy Lieutenant and afterwards Knight of the Shire of Kent. In the county and in Parliament he was ever attentive to his duty; as a magistrate he was wise, just, and indefatigable. He was the father of Romney Marsh. The Haven of Dover was contrived by him and executed under his own eye Nothing could exceed his assiduity in having it brought to perfection. His skill in whatever related to war was so great, especially in horsemanship, that he was fixed upon to govern the camp at Northbourne, where he acquired great commendation. He was so active in the public service, that when the Spanish armada threatened our coast, and the Privy Council sent him to raise what forces he could collect, he sent 4000 men, who reached Dover the next day. His hospitality was as extraordinary; he kept house at Scot's Hall thirty-eight years without intermission. He generally had a hundred persons in his house; but the resort of those who came from affection, duty, and business was incredible. His Christmasses were beyond belief splendid, and yet notwithstanding his expenses at home, and still more those on behalf of the State, in the latter of which he was ever lavish, he increased his stock, his staff, his plate, was a great builder, and at his death did not owe five pounds. As he had no ambition or vain glory, the sycophant and flatterer never intruded themselves where they were sure to meet reproof and contempt. He was religious without any pretence to extraordinary piety, for which reason he neither loved or was commended by the puritans. He could write well, as his essay on Horses (the management of) evinces. He said little, but when called upon he was eloquent as well as wise, and such was his hatred of litigation, that he never had a lawsuit. Possessing such an exalted and at the same time so amiable a character, it is no wonder that he had no known enemy in England. As a testimony of his public esteem, the people of Ashford requested permission to retain his respected remains amongst them; but that being declined, he was interred in Brabourne church amongst his ancestors. He married thrice. His wives were of the families of Baker, Heyman, and Beere. He had no issue by the two last; by the first (who was sister to the Lady Buckhurst, who married the Earl of Dorset) he had seventeen children. His widow resided at Dartford (*Horseman's Place*), where she was born, and with the same hospitality she had seen at Scot's Hall. His eldest son inherited that seat; his second son, Sir John Scott, knighted on the field in his lifetime, possessed Pympe's Court in Nettlested; his third son was slain in his sovereign's service; all his other children were virtuous. One of his daughters married a knight of great reputation; the others matched gentlemen of very good worship and credit. Such was Sir Thomas Scott, who died Dec. 30th, 1594, aged fifty-nine years. Nor can any one be surprised to learn that he was as much missed and moaned as any that died in Kent these hundred years. His justly-acquired reputation was the reward of his fidelity to his God, his sovereign, and his country. He was enabled to support his munificence in private life by superintending his affairs and having no waste in his house. It was remarked that at his table 'He would neither have want nor superfluity.' May God raise up such characters amongst us as to stem that innundation of impiety, disloyalty, and turbulence which threatens us with ruin."

It has been stated by Hunter and others that Sir Thomas Scott entered on the entailed possession of his estate encumbered with a debt of 2000 marks, and that by good management he died without encumbrance; but such would not so appear, as the Scott records reveal the fact that after his death one by one of the numerous manors (estimated at thirty in Kent alone), lately possessed by him, became alienated, or were sold, *inter alia*, to provide annuities and jointures for his numerous offspring.

In connection with the subject, it must likewise be borne in mind that about this time (*circa* 1580), and probably during the lifetime of this distinguished man, that the *third* Scot's Hall was rebuilt;[w] and evidence likewise exists, as suggested by a date (1576) on a spandrel of a door of the building (supposed to have been the banqueting hall), at Nettlested Place, that that manorial residence was at great cost enlarged and beautified, and most probably by him. In addition to which, there can be little doubt, as tending still further to the diminution of his estate, that the exercise of unbounded hospitality during a long course of years, and the unrequited, and we may say the unremunerated, public services rendered to State and county by Sir Thomas Scott, greatly

[w] A later period, viz. 1634, has been assigned at p. 98, as the date of rebuilding a large portion of Scot's Hall. This unquestionably was the date of the panelling of the chapel; but recent research induces the belief that it was rebuilt by Sir Thomas Scott about the year 1580, the panelling being an after addition.—Ed.

Sir Thomas Scott.

contributed to the gradual decay in wealth and influence which becomes apparent after his decease, and which, a generation or so later, was further manifest as a result of the loyal efforts made by his descendants to sustain the cause of royalty during the usurpation of Cromwell and the Parliament.

Although we have elsewhere alluded to the ancient Kentish Proverb, "*Scot's Hall shall have a fall*" (*see* p. 100), as having an earlier application, the prosperity and local influence of the Kentish Scotts, having culminated in the person of Sir John Scott, the grandfather of the subject of our memoir, or at a yet earlier period, yet the evidence of gradual decay in prosperity does not become fully apparent until the seventeenth or eighteenth centuries, after the desolating wars of the Parliament, a crucial period for many an old traditional and historic family.

We conclude our somewhat too lengthy biography of Sir Thomas Scott by printing the epitaph, so characteristic in its inflated style of the Elizabethan era. This effusion is attributed to Reginald Scott, the author of the *Discovery of Witchcraft*, the nephew of Sir Thomas, the original document, in Reginald Scott's handwriting, having in 1740 been lent to and retained by Mr. Abraham Fleming, for insertion in the second edition of Holinshed's Chronicles, but in which it does not appear. A copy, however, is amongst the Scott records, and is likewise to be found in *Peck's Collection of Curious Historical Pieces*. The explanatory notes are numerous; but as these in a condensed form appear in the extract from Mr. Hunter's *History of London*, quoted above, there will be no necessity to reproduce them here, not forgetting that—

"Praises on tombs are honours vainly meant, A well-spent life is the best monument."

It may be mentioned that Sir Thomas Scott's monument in Brabourne church, of which this epitaph was a part, and which was probably of a sumptuous character, was totally destroyed by the Parliamentarian forces in 1648, when Scot's Hall was searched for arms; the soldiers being encamped on the enclosure or lawn in front of the mansion, amused themselves in cutting down the yew and other ornamental trees for their camp fires. The arms, however, had just previously been removed by the Kentish Royalists, under Colonels Hammon and Hatton, then on their way to take possession of Dover Castle and the fleet in the harbour, in the name of the King and Parliament, which they succeeded in doing. Scot's Hall was at this time a great emporium of arms.

The exact situation of this tomb in Brabourne church is not known, and all that remains as a memorial of this Kentish worthy is the helmet supplied at his funeral, which still hangs on the chancel walls. After the desecration of his monument it is not improbable that his remains were removed to Scot's Hall chapel, where a slab to his memory formerly suggested that it was his last resting place. (See p. 99.)

"AN EPYTAPHE uppon the death of the noble and famous SIR THOMAS SCOTT, of Scotshall in the countie of Kente, who dyed on the 30th day of December, 1594, and was buried in Brabourne Church among his ancestours:—

"Here lyes Sir Thomas Scott by name;
Oh happie Kempe that bore him!
Sir Raynold, with four knights of fame,
Lyv'd lyneally before him.

"His wieves were Baker, Heyman, Beere;
His love to them unfayned.
He lyved nyne and fiftie yeare,
And seventeen soules he gayned.

"His first wief bore them every one;
The world might not have myst her!
She was a very paragon,
The Lady Buckherst's syster.

"His widow lyves in sober sort,
No matron more discreter;
She still reteiynes a good report,
And is a great housekeeper.

"He (being called to special place)
Did what might best behove him.
The Queen of England gave him grace,
The King of Heav'n did love him.

"His men and tenants wailed the daye,
His Kinne and countrie cryed;
Both young and old in Kent may saye,
Woe woorth the day he dyed.

Sir Thomas Scott.

" He made his porter shut his gate
To sycophants and briebors,
And ope it wide to great estates,
And also to his neighbours.

" His House was rightly termed Hall,
Whose bred and beefe was redie ;
It was a very hospitall
And refuge for the needie.

" From whence he never stept aside,
In winter nor in summer ;
In Christmas time he did provide
Good cheer for every comer.

" When any servis shold be doun,
He lyked not to lyngar ;
The rich wold ride, the poor wold runn,
If he held up his fingar.

" He kept tall men, he rydd great hors,
He did write most finely ;
He used fewe woords, but cold discours
Both wysely and dyvinely.

" His lyving meane, his charges greate,
His daughters well bestowed ;
Although that he were left in debt,
In fine he nothing owed.

" But dyed in rich and happie state,
Beloved of man and woman,
And (which is yeate much more than that)
He was envied of no man.

" In justice he did much excell,
In law he never wrangled ;
He loved rellygion wondrous well,
But he was not new-fangled.

" Let Romney Marsh and Dovor saye ;
Ask Norborne Camp at leyseur ;
If he were woont to make delaye
To doe his countrie pleasure.

" But Ashford's proffer passeth all—
It was both rare and gentle ;
They would have pay'd his funerall
T' have toomb'd him in their temple."

CALENDAR OF STATE PAPERS, 1547—1590.

The following are extracts from the State Paper Calendars from the originals in the Public Record Office, and are a portion only of the correspondence that is still extant in that depositary and the British Museum in relation to Sir Thomas Scott. We print elsewhere the original letters relating to this distinguished man, addressed to or received from Cecil, Burleigh, Wotton, Walsingham, Leicester, Dorset, and others of note as statesmen or warriors in the reign of Queen Elizabeth. These original letters are mostly from the Scot's Hall records, or from the collection at Hatfield of the present Marquis of Salisbury, or from other sources which will be duly noted with the customary acknowledgment, when the chapter on "Correspondence" is reached. The extracts from the State Records which are printed herewith, have reference to matters of State importance in which Sir Thomas Scott was engaged, and which refer, 1stly, to the construction of the first Dover Haven; 2ndly, to the construction of the sea wall between Romney, Dungeness, and Rye, etc., etc.

VOL. XXXVII.

1565. Sep. 1. at Hall, the house of Mr. Scott. (p. 258).

26. Lord Cobham to Sir William Cecil. Lady Cobham, although she is with child, will attend the Lady Cecilia when she arrives at Dover. Requests to know where she is to be lodged at Canterbury, his own house there being altogether unfurnished.

Sep. 2, at Sir Thomas Kempe's house. (p. 258.)

27. Same to same. Has heard of the arrival of the Lady Cecilia at Calais, and therefore proposes to repair to Dover to receive her. Fears his wife will be unable to meet her.

Sep. 3. Windsor. (p. 258.)

28. The Queen to Sir Henry Crispes, Sir Chr. Allen, Thomas Walsingham, Lady Hart, Lady Finch, Lady Norton (?), Lord Cobham, Sir Thomas Kemp, Thomas Wotton, Warham St. Leger, Richard Baker, Thomas Scott, and Nicholas St. Leger, commanding them to attend the Lady Cecilia on her arrival in England.

VOL. LXXXIX.

1572. Oct. 12 (?) (p. 451.)

36. Certificate by Sir Thomas Scott, Thomas Honywood, and Ralph Heyman, of able men and armour within certain Hundreds in the Lathe of Shepway, co. Kent.

VOL. CXLIV. NOVEMBER, 1580.

1580. Nov. 6. (p. 685.)

9. Commission of Deputation from Edward, Earl of Lincoln (Lord Admiral), Thomas, Earl of Sussex (Lord Chamberlain), Henry, Earl of Huntingdon (Lord President of the North), Ambrose, Earl of Warwick (Master of the Ordnance), Francis, Earl of Bedford, Robert, Earl of Leicester (Master of the Horse), Sir Henry Sydney (Lord President of Wales), and Sir Christopher

Sir Thomas Scott. Hatton (Vice Chamberlain), Lords Commissioners for the increase and breed of horses, and for the keeping of horses and geldings for service ; and to Henry, Lord Burgavenny, William, Lord Cobham (Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports), Sir Thomas Scott, Sir Thomas Walsingham, Sir Thomas Fane, and Thomas Wotton, Esq., appointing them DEPUTY Commissioners within the county of Kent, for the purposes of the above Commission.

VOL. CXVII.

1577. Oct. 24. Lambeth. (p. 560.) 9. Archbishop Grindall, to the Council, sends the Certificate of Sir Thomas Scott and Mr. Thomas Wotton, relative to the recusants within his diocese. Desires their Lordships to be intercessors with Her Majesty to be restored to her favour and to his liberty.

VOL. CXXXI.

1579. Aug. 18. Dover. (p. 630.) 72. Lord Cobham, Sir Thomas Scott, and others, Commissioners for repair of Dover Haven to the Council. Have surveyed the Harbour and consulted Mr. Burrowes and Mr. Pett on the proposed works. Send a plan of the same, "handsomlie sett owte." Estimate the charges at £21,000. Propose the immediate erection of three "groynes," to protect the haven. Annexing,

1. Declaration by Mr. Burrowes of the advantages of making a good haven at Dover, according to the platt now generally agreed upon ;
2. Survey of Dover Harbour, showing the expenses and estimates of charges for putting it into a proper state of repair, by Matthew Rickwarth, Sluice Master of Dunkirk.

VOL. CXL.

1580. July. (p. 668.) 46. The Council to Lord Cobham. Directs him to consult Sir Thomas Scott, Sir James Hales, and other competent persons, on plans suggested for repair of Dover Haven, and to employ either Burrows, Eaton, Pett, Baker, or the Sluice Master of Dunkirk, to make surveys and to give his opinion if the work could be successfully prosecuted.

VOL. CXLI.

1580. Aug. 15 ? (p. 671.) 26. Heads of a Commission for the repair of Dover Haven, and of general directions for their proceeding in the execution of that work. (On the 15th August the Council addressed a letter to Lord Cobham, Sir Thomas Scott, Sir James Hales, Thomas Wotton, Edw. Boys, Richard Barry, William Partrych, and Henry Palmer, naming them Commissioners, with directions to consider of the plans for repair of the Haven.—*Co. Reg.*)

VOL. CXLI.

1580. Aug. 24. Canterbury. (p. 672.) 36. Sir Thomas Scott, Sir James Hales, and others, Commissioners for Dover Haven, to the Council. Have met upon their Commission, and appointed a rate of wages for John Trewe while constructing the two rods of the pier. Desire a Commission for Trewe to take up workmen. They estimate 20,000 qrs. of wheat might at once be spared for exportation.

CALENDAR OF STATE PAPERS.—DOMESTIC—ELIZABETH, 1581—1590.

(*Edited by* ROBERT LEMON, ESQ., F.S.A.)

VOL. CLIII.

1582. April 21. Dover. (p. 51) 15. John Garrett (Mayor of Dover), Sir Thomas Scott, and others, Commissioners for Dover Haven, to the Council. Have, with the advice of Sir William Wynter, Mr. Digges, and Mr. Burroughs, now finally resolved on a platt for the making of a perfect and safe harbour, and have chosen officers to execute it. Annexing,

15—1. The answers of the Commissioners for Dover Haven to the articles received from the Privy Council, agreed upon by the Lord Cobham and the rest, with the good advice and assent of Sir William Wynter and Mr. Burroughs.

1582. May 18. Scot's Hall. (p. 55.) 53. Sir Thomas Scott to Sir Fr. Walsyngham. Progress in providing materials for the works at Dover, and of work already done. Requests a further supply of money for carrying on the works, and that the Queen's great house at the pier may serve for a storehouse.

VOL. CLV.

1582. Aug. 14. Dover. (p 67.) 15. Lord Cobham, John Garrett (Mayor), and other Commissioners for Dover Haven, to Sir Thomas Scott, treasurer of the works of Dover Haven. Desire payment of £445 to Farnando Poyntz, he having already received £500 to be employed on the works at Dover.

1582. Aug. 14. Dover. (p. 67.) 16. Lord Cobham, John Garrett (Mayor), and other Commissioners for Dover Haven, to Sir Thomas Scott, treasurer for Dover Harbour. To pay £55 to Farnando Poyntz for the works at Dover.

Aug. 16. Cobham. (p. 67.) 21. Lord Cobham to Sir Thomas Scott and other Commissioners for Dover Haven. Sends the letter from Mr. Secretary, pointing out a mistake in the form of the warrant for payment of money to Mr. Poyntz. The old warrants returned.

Sir Thomas Scott.

VOL. CLVII.

1582? (p. 87.) 72. Articles concerning libels lately dispersed in the town of Hythe, to be inquired of by virtue of a commission from the Council directed to Sir Thomas Scott, the Dean of Rochester, Thomas Tourney, and Edw. Peake. Attack upon the house of Mr. Honywood, late Mayor of Hythe.

VOL. CLVIII.

1583. Feb. 21. Scot's Hall. (p. 96.) 74. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. Suggests that the Commissioners for Dover Haven should be required to attend one general meeting yearly at Easter, on a day certain, to make their report on the works necessary to be taken in hand for the following year. Want of additional Justices of Peace, there not being one resident magistrate within twelve miles of Dover.

VOL. CLIX.

1583. March 10. Scot's Hall. (p. 100.) 17. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. Recommends the wall at Romney Marsh, as a model for the long wall proposed for Dover Haven.

March 24. Scot's Hall. (p. 103.) 44. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. Advocates the erection of the long wall for Dover Haven, according to the mode of construction used in Romney Marsh. Solicits leave to present to the parsonage of Ulcombe, if in the Queen's gift.

March 26. Scot's Hall. (p. 103.) 46. Sir Thomas Scott to same. The men of Romney Marsh have viewed the Haven, in order to make themselves acquainted with the state of the works at Dover.

March (?) (p. 104.) 54. Note of such things as are necessary to be done for carrying on the works at Dover Harbour. Money. The chief superintendence to be committed to Sir Thomas Scott; and Peter Pett to have the oversight of the works.

VOL. CLX.

April 25. London. (p. 106.) 21. Thomas Smythe, Customer of the Port of London, to Walsyngham. Certifying the amount received by him and Mr. Dove for tonnage money granted for the repair of Dover Haven.

1583. April 18. Scot's Hall. (p. 106.) 13. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. The Commissioners have agreed with the Expenditor upon articles for carrying on the works at Dover. Hopes that the walls about the pent-water may be finished before Hollantide. Incloses,

13. I. Articles agreed upon by the Commissioners at their meetings on the 9th and 10th of April, for the works presently to be done at Dover. The Romney Marsh men to undertake the cross wall and part of the long wall. The treasurer and other officers appointed.

May 16. (p. 109.) 46. Sir Thomas Scott and Sir James Hales to same. Offer to Mr. Bird to export 3,000 quarters of wheat yearly from Kent and Sussex, under the Dover licence, at 3*s.* 4*d.* per quarter.

May 21. (p. 109.) 49. John Smyth to Sir Thomas Scott. Progress of the works at Dover. Requests a further supply of money. Accounts for money already expended.

May 31. Dover. (p. 111.) 61. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. Reports the progress of the works. The wall at Paradise finished, and the cross wall raised three feet. Requests money, and that Her Majesty's master carpenters of the ships may be allowed to assist in the laying of the two sluices.

VOL. CLXI.

1583. June 2, Scot's Hall. (p. 111.) 2. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. Is sorry for his absence from Court on account of ill health. Recommends Mr. Barrey and Mr. Digges as proper persons to be overseers of the works at Dover. The Commissioners are restrained from granting any part of the licence for Dover Harbour. Great force of the flow of water out of the new pent.

June 9. Dover. (p. 112.) 7. Sir Thomas Scott and Richard Barrey to Walsyngham. Recommend that the construction of the sluice in the cross wall be intrusted to John Symons, the mason. Some delay will occur for want of a sufficient quantity of hewn stone.

June 9. (p. 112.) 8. Peter Pett and Matthew Baker, the master shipwrights, to same. They intend to construct the framework for the Dover sluice at Chatham. Require an advance of money.

July 21. Scot's Hall. (p. 116.) 39. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. God hath so prospered their works that all is accomplished in little more than two months. Extent and contents of the pents and walls completed.

July? (p. 117.) 48. Proofs by Sir Thomas Scott, testifying that the charges certified against Thomas Andrews, Mayor of Dover, for opposing himself against the works then in hand, were true.

VOL. CLXIII.

1583. Nov. 1, Scot's Hall. (p. 127.) 43. Sir Thomas Scott to Richard Barrey. Sends the confirmation of certain articles relative to the works at Dover Haven.

Nov. 8. Scot's Hall. (p. 129.) 58. Sir Thomas Scott to Henry Guildford, Esq. Thanks him for sending information of the decay between the two sluices at Dover Harbour. Thinks it necessary to stay the full payment of Pett and Baker for the sluice. Incloses,

58. I. The measurement of the great sluice taken by Stoneham, "the Splendor," and the Clerk. Sent from Sir Thomas Scott.

Sir Thomas Scott.

VOL. CLXIX.

1584. March 6. Scot's Hall. 12. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. In behalf of certain ministers and neighbours that tender the preaching of God's word, who desire time before they subscribe to the Archbishop of Canterbury's articles. Satisfactory state of the works at Dover Haven.

March 27. (p. 167.) 39. Sir Thomas Scott and Richard Barry to Sir Fr. Walsyngham. Proceedings in the election of John Cheesman, mayor of New Romney. Have examined witnesses on the complaint of William Southland and others against Thomas Eppes, the late mayor. Incloses,

39. I. Note of the points of the Council's Order in the causes of New Romney, performed and entered of record.
39. II. Objections against John Fowle, in disobeying the Order of Council in the causes of New Romney; signed by Wm. Southland and John Mynge.
39. III. Duplicate of the preceding.
39. IV. Special points in the Order of Council for quieting the controversy between the Mayor and Jurats of New Romney, which have not been observed. Thomas Eppes, the Mayor, and others sent for.
39. V. A breviat of the depositions against Thomas Eppes, the Mayor of New Romney, and Mr. Fowle.

March 27. New Romney. (pp. 167 8.) 40. Same to the Council. A duplicate of Their letter to Walsyngham. Inclosing,

40. I. A note of the points of the Council's Order in the causes of New Romney, performed and entered of record.
40. II. Special points in the Council's Order for settling the causes of New Romney; which have not been observed.
40. III. Interrogatories ministered on the part and behalf of William Southland and others, the inhabitants of Romney, against Thomas Eppes, the mayor.
40. IV. Deposition of witnesses taken before Sir Thomas Scott and Richard Barry, against Thomas Eppes, late Mayor of New Romney.
40. V. Examinations of witnesses taken at the town and port of New Romney before the same, on the part and behalf of Thomas Eppes, late mayor.
40. VI. Answers of Thomas Allen and others to the interrogatories on the part of William Southland, against Eppes, the mayor.
40. VII. The answer of the Mayor of New Romney in Kent to the bill of complaint of William Southland and others. Ill conduct of John Mynge, the town clerk, and of Thomas Heele, another of the complainants, "who did most undecently and unreverently behave himself in the church." Signed by Thomas Eppes, the mayor.
40. VIII. Objections against John Fowle for disobeying the Council's Order in the causes of New Romney.
40. IX. Answer of John Fowle to the articles objected against him.
40. X. Interrogatories to be ministered to the witnesses to be produced against Mr. Fowle, Jurat of Romney.
40. XI. Depositions of the witnesses against Mr. John Fowle, jurat of Romney.
40. XII. Order set down by Sir Thomas Scott and Richard Barry, upon hearing the matters alleged by Wm. Southland, John Mynge, and others, against Thomas Eppes, the mayor, for the final settlement of all controversies in the town of New Romney, and future regulation of the corporation.

VOL. CLXX.

April 10. (p. 171.) 26. Indenture between Queen Elizabeth and the Mayor and Jurats of the town of Dover for the payment of £5000 to Sir Thomas Scott, treasurer, for carrying on the repairs of Dover Harbour.

1584. April 22. Dover. (p. 173.) 45. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. Recommends that the workmen who had been engaged on the jetty at Scarborough and the works at Romney should be employed to finish the haven's mouth at Dover. Proceedings in the musters.

May ? (p. 178.) 100. Names of the officers for Dover Haven, with the rates of their several fees and wages; Sir Thomas Scott, treasurer.

VOL. CLXXI.

June 7. Scot's Hall. (p. 180.) 12. Sir Thomas Scott to Walsyngham. Has signed a warrant, authorizing Mr. Customer Smyth to receive £5000 out of the Exchequer for the use of Dover Harbour.

June 8. (p. 180.) 13. Thomas Digges to same. Send notes of matters about Dover, and requests him to write to Sir Thomas Scott and the rest of the Commissioners to meet Sir Philip Sidney at Dover, to consult upon a final resolution of all matters. Incloses,

13. I. Brief notes of the proceedings of Mr. Thomas Digges in the works at Dover Harbour since the beginning, with the present state thereof. Points out the errors of former persons engaged on the works.
13. II. Articles concerning the entrance of Dover Harbour, with the marginal observations on the same.
13. III. Estimate of the expenses of certain works necessary to be done in opening the mouth of the Haven, on the rocky soil above the Black Bulwark.
13. IV. Considerations where and in what manner the mouth of Dover Harbour may best be opened.

Sir Thomas Scott. 13. V. Specifications of an offer made by certain partners, touching the performance of the jetties and harbour of Dover, according to the platt by them presented

June 25. Scot's Hall. (p. 184.) 52. Sir Thomas Scott to Mr. Customer Thomas Smythe. Requests a further supply of money for the works at Dover Haven.

VOL. CLXXII.

July 14. London. (p. 190.) 24. Thomas Smythe to Walsyngham. Has sent £300 to Sir Thomas Scott for the works at Dover.

VOL. CLXXV.

Nov. 20. Scot's Hall. 9. Sir Thomas Scott and Edw. Boys to Walsyngham. Have received copies of the Instrument of Association, and many gentlemen of the shire desire to be admitted into that Christian and loyal society. Request that some one may be appointed to administer the requisite oaths, and suggesting that no recusant be permitted to enter into it.

VOL. CLXXVIII.

1585. April 1. 3. Brief of the accompt of Sir Thomas Scott, knight, Treasurer of the expenses of Dover Harbour, from the 10th day of April, 1584, until the 1st day of April, 1585.

ARMADA.

CALENDAR OF STATE PAPERS.—Domestic.—Elizabeth, 1581—1590.

(*Edited by* Robert Lemon, Esq., F.S.A.)

VOL. CCIX.

1588. April 22. Canterbury. (p. 478.) 106. Sir Thomas Scott and Sir James Hales to Walsyngham. They had sent the certificate of musters of their portion of the shire to Lord Cobham and Sir Thomas Fane, to be incorporated in the general certificate for the whole shire. The names of the martial men and of their present employments. Inclosing,

106. I. Certificate from the Deputy Lieutenants of the east part of Kent, of the number of men in the trained bands, the martial men that have borne office in the wars, and the landing places within the Lathes of Scray, St. Augustin's, and Shipway : not including the City of Canterbury nor the Cinque Ports.

VOL. CCXII.

July 12. Rochester. (p. 501.) 35 Sir Thomas Scott and Sir Thomas Fane, sen., to Lord Burghley Have been busy with Sir John Norreys in viewing the forces of Kent. They think 2000 men may be spared to attend Her Majesty's person, and 4000 to make head against the enemy after he is landed. Mr. William Sidley has been chosen provost-marshal. Recommend the Lord Lieutenant should have the command of the army himself. The trained archers have been furnished with muskets.

July 13. (p. 502.) 40. Sir Thomas Scott to Lord Burghley. Disposition of the forces in the county of Kent to withstand the enemy's landing ; himself and Sir James Hales to be at the places formerly assigned, and the other half of the shire to Sir Henry Cobham and Sir Thomas Fane.

VOL. CCXIII.

July 27. Dover. (p. 514.) 45. Sir Thomas Scott to Lord Burghley. The Spanish fleet having been seen off Boulogne, they had drawn all the forces within two miles of the shore, to make a show upon the Downs in sight of the enemy. Is glad his plan for the quartering of the forces for East Kent was approved of. Sir J. Norreys had caused all the forces to encamp near Dover. Defence of the isles of Sheppy and Thanet.

VOL. CCXIV.

Aug. 9. Camp at Norborne. (p. 527.) 52. Sir Thomas Scott to the Earl of Leicester. Intelligence from Sir F. Drake that the Spanish force intended to land at Dungeness, near Lydd. Desires to know if he should draw part of his forces to that place. Seven hundred muskets from the Low Countries have landed at Margate ; proposes their joining his camp.

VOL. CCXV.

Aug. 13. The Camp at Norborne. (p. 30.) 7. Sir Thomas Scott and Sir James Hales to Lord Cobham. Certify their numbers had decreased to 3300 foot and 300 horse in camp, as they had permitted many of the men to return for getting in the harvest, and others had since been dismissed. Want of money to pay off the companies, whereof they stand in great need.

Sir Thomas Scott.

Aug. 16. The Rainbow, Dover Road. (p. 532.)

22. Lord Henry Seymour to the Council. Has received intelligence from Sir Thomas Scott and others that the Duke of Parma had reinforced his shipping so as to transport 40,000 men for England. Doubts the information, but prepares to act upon it, and has sent Mr. Bellingham out for intelligence, who has returned somewhat damaged by the roughness of the weather. Intelligence that the Spanish fleet were in Scotland in Murrey Frith. He shall never be so happy as to see the Duke of Parma come out.

CALENDAR OF STATE PAPERS.—Domestic.—Elizabeth, 1591—1594.

(*Edited by* Mrs. A. E. Green.)

VOL. CCXXXVIII.

1591. Jan. 4. Richmond. (p. 1.)

4. A Commission to Lord Treasurer Burghley, Lord Cobham (Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports), Sir Thomas Scott, Sir Moyle Finch, Sir Henry Palmer, Sir John Hawkins, Sir Thomas Wilford, Sir Thomas Flood, and eighteen others, to carry on the works at Dover Harbour. (Abstract, 9¼ pages.)

VOL. CCXL.

Dec. 22. (p. 147.)

103. Lease to Sir Thomas Scott, of the Great Park of Aldington, co. Kent, with the lodge and coney warren for 21 years; rent, £80. (Docquet.)

WILL OF SIR THOMAS SCOTT.

Dated 17 Dec., 1594.

Scott, fo. 1. Proved 7 Jan., 1594-5.

In the name of God, amen, I, Ser Thomas Scott, of Scotte's Hall, in the parishe of Smiethe, in the countie of Kent, knight, do make and ordeyne this my last will and testament in manner and forme followinge.

First, I bequeathe my soule to Almightie God in his mercyes and in the meritties of his sonne, Xpiste Jesus my Savyoure and Redemer.

Item. I will my bodye to be buryed where yt shall be thoughte meete by my executers.

Item. I give to *Dame Dorothie, my wife,* all her apparrell and Jewells (the Jewells of Dyamondes and Rubyes which were my first wyves onlie excepted.)

Item. I give unto her the thirde parte of all my lynnen, pewter, and brasse (except suche as ar fastened to the house).

Item. I give unto her my best coache horses with all the ffurniture unto them.

Item. I give unto her more three gueldings, eighte of my best kyne, ffortie ewes, tenne quarters of wheate, tenne quarters of Barley or Malte, and one hundred markes of money to be payed within one halfe yere after my decease, and also convenyent ffurniture to be delivered unto her by myne executers for two chaumbers meete for gentlemente (*sic*) to lodgement, and fower for servauntes (lynnen excepted.)

Also I give unto her all suche plate, householdestuffe, and goodes as is conteyned in a schedule hereunto annexed.

Item. I give to the *Ladie Elizabeth Scott, wife to my sonne, Ser John Scott, knight,* the Jewell of Dyamondes and Rubyes before mencioned and excepted.[x]

Item. I give to my sayed *second sonne, Ser John Scott,* one hundred and fiftie poundes of lawfull englishe money to be payed within one yere after my decease.

Item. I give to *Ser Henry Bromley* and to *Anthonye Sentleger* and *Richard Smithe, Esquires, my sonnes-in-lawe,* to each of them a horse or a geldinge, *Ser Henry Bromley* to have his choice.

Item. I give to my eldest sonne, *Thomas Scott,* Esquire, all the rest of my housholdstuffe at *Scotte's Hall.*

Item. I give to *Warham Sentleger* and to *Anthonye Sentleger,* the two sonnes of my daughter *Sentleger,* to each of them a peece of plate, price twentie nobles.

Item. I give to *John Smythe* and *Richard, the twoe sonnes of my daughter Smythe,* to each of them a peece of plate, price twentie nobles.

Item. I give to *my sonne, Charles Scott,* the lease of my parsonage of *Braborne.*

Item. I give to *Richard Scott* and *Edward Scott, my sonnes,* my lease of *Aldington Parke.*

Item. I give to my *sonne Robert,* out of my lease of *Conwaye Courte, als Blackorze,* Twentie poundes yerelie, to be paid by

---

[x] This is most probably the jewel given to Sir John Scott (*temp.* Edward IV.) by the Duke of Burgundy (afterwards the Emperor Charles the Bold), to whom Sir John and his son, Archbishop and Chancellor Thomas Scott, were sent by Edward IV. as Ambassadors. See the portrait of Lady Elizabeth Scott, first wife to Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, for illustration of this jewel.

Sir Thomas Scott.

euen porcions at the twoe seuerall feastes of Sainct Michaell the Archanngell and the annuncyacon of the blessed Virgin Mary. And for defaulte of such payment yt shalbe lawfull to hym to enter and destreyne, etc.

ITEM. I give to my *brother, Charles Scott*, esquire, tenne poundes. ITEM. I give to Mercye Michell, my wyfe's mayd-seruante, for the paynes she hath taken in the tymes of my sickness, fyve poundes. ITEM. I give to William Solman, my seruante, fyve pounds. All the rest of my goodes, plate, household stuffe, and chattells, my debtes and legacys discharged, I will and bequeth to my saide *eldest sonne Thomas*.

ITEM. I make and appoynte my saied *eldest sonne, Thomas Scott*, and *my second sonne, Sr John Scott, and my brother, Charles Scott, Esquire*, EXECUTORS to this my last will and testament, and humblie praye *the righte honorable my especiale good Lord, my Lord of Buckhurst*, to vouchsafe to be ouerseer to the same, and to afford his favourable countennce and help to his poore kynnesmen, my executors, in the execution hereof. And I give *to his Lordshippe, for a poore remembraunce, a pece of plate, price* xl *li.*[y]

AS TOUCHING the disposition of my landes and tenementes, ffirst, my will and mynde ys to *leave unbequeathed to descend unto Thomas Scott, my eldest sonne, my Manors of Braborne, Coombe, and fferland, and my mannors of Orlanstone, Hammes, Brensett, and Sevington*, as a full third parte and more of all my landes and tenements.

ITEM. I give *to Dame Dorothie, my wife*, the seite of my *Mannor of Thevegate*, and all my landes and tenementes in the parishe of *Smeethe, in the occupacion of Richard Reader*, and all my landes and tenementes nowe in the occupacion of Raffe Parre, and one parcell more in the occupacion of Thomas Hall, *my mill called Thevegate Mill* and all my landes and tenementes in the occupacion of Edward Harte, twentie acres of meadowe in *Thevegate Meade* nowe in myne owne occupacion.

ITEM. I will unto her my wood called *Thevegate Parke*, to take and fell thereof yeerlie in seasonable tyme, two acres for her ffewell (*fuel*).

ITEM. I give unto my sayed wife my marsheland called *Armynere*, cont by estimacion threescore acres lying in the *parishe of Eastbridge*. All which Manor landes and tenements I do give unto *Dame Dorothie*, my wife, in lieue and satisfaction of her joynture in *Nettlestead*, and uppon condition that she shall suffer my sonne, *Sr John Scott, knighte, and the Ladie Elizabethe, his wife*, to enioye and possesse all the landes in Nettlesteade which she the sayed *Dame Dorothie* had of me in joynture.

ITEM. Yf my sayed wife shall refuse to accept of *Thevegate* and the other landes assigned unto her in leiue of her joynture at *Nettlested*, but will stand to her joynture, there then my will and mynde ys that she shall loose ye benefitt of this my last will and testament, and all the Legaceys therein made unto her, and that my *sayed sonne Sr John Scott* shall have and enioye all that unto her bequeathed during the natural life of the sayed *Dame Dorothie*.

AND THAT AFTER the decease of my sayed *sonne Sr John Scott, the Ladie Elizabethe, his wife*, shall have a hundred and fortie poundes yeerlie out of *Thevegate* and the other landes to *Dame Dorothie*, my wife, bequeathed so long as she the said *Dame Dorothie* shall life.

ITEM. I give to *Dame Dorothie*, my wife, yf she shall accept of this my will, fortie poundes yerelie out of *Hall Meade, Nesteades, Stonyfeilds, and Woodfeildes*, and yf she shall refuse to accept of this my will, then I give the same fortie poundes yerelye unto my sonne, *Ser John Scott*, and *to the Ladie Elizabethe, his Wife*, to be payed to her or them during the naturall life of the sayed *Dame Dorothie*, halfe yerely to be payed at the ffeastes of Saincte Michael the Archanngell and of the blessed Virgin Sainct Mary. And for defaulte of such payment yt shall be lawfull for her or them to enter and distrayne uppon the landes last before mencyoned, the which annuite of ffortie poundes yerelie I give as aforesayed to paye, acquit, and dischardge the annuitie which heretofore I have given to my *sonne Thos Scott* and his wife out of *Thevegate* as parcell of her joynture.

ITEM. After the decease of *Dame Dorothie, my Wife*, I give the sayed parcell of *Marshland*, called *Armyners*, to my *second sonne, Sr John Scott, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten*. And for defaulte of such yssue to *my sonne Thomas* and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten, and for defaulte of such yssue to my sonne *Charles* and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullye begotten. And for defaulte of such yssue to my *sonne Richard* and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullye begotten. And for defaulte of suche yssue to my *sonne Edward* and to the heires males of his bodye lawfullye begotten; and for defaulte of such yssue to my *sonne Robert* and to the heires males of his bodie lawfully begotten. And for defaulte of suche yssue to my *brother Charles Scott* and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullye begotten.

ITEM. I give to my *sonne Charles* one annuitie of twentie poundes yerelie out of *Godnes, Merywether, Davie, Kingham, Downe, Odymers*, and out of all my downes on the east side of the Rayles, to be halfe yerelie paied at the twoe usuall ffeastes of Sainct Michaell the archanngell and the annunciacion of the blessed Virgin Marie by even portions. And for defaulte of payment yt shall be lawfull for my sayed *sonne Charles*, or his assigns, to enter and distrayne in all the aforesayed downes and landes.

ITEM. Whereas I have already given to my *sonne Richarde* a lease of twoe parcells of landes called *Cowleaze-tree* and *Browningham* for many yeres yet to come, I give unto hym also one annuitie of fiftene poundes yerelie out of my *Mannors of Capell and Heanden*, to be payed halfe yerelie at twoe feastes aforesayed. And for defaulte of suche paymente yt shalbe lawfull for hym or his assignes to enter and distrayne in the Mannors aforesayed.

---

[y] Richard Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, first Earl of Dorset, married Cicily Baker, daughter of Sir John Baker, of Sissinghurst Castle, Cranbrook, Kent, and sister of Elizabeth Baker, first wife to Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall. Cicily Baker's portrait is still at Knowle House, Sevenoaks.

Sir Thomas Scott.

ITEM. I give unto *my sonne Edward* one annuitie of twentie poundes yerelie out of my Downes *in Hastingleighe*, to be payed at the two usuall feastes aforesayed. And for defaulte of payment yt shalbe lawfull for him or his assignes to enter and distrayne in any parte of the Downes aforesayed.

FFINALLY, I give to my *youngest sonne Robert* one annuitie of twentie poundes yerelie out of my landes and tenements called *Meede*, in the *parishes of Smeeth and Aldington*, to be payed by even portions at the twoe usuall ffeastes aforeseyed, and for defaulte of suche payment yt shalbe lawfull for hym or his assignes to enter and distrayne in any parte or parcell thereof.

ITEM. I give unto my *sonne Richard* tenne poundes yerelie to be payed out of the *parsonage of Braborne* by my *sonne Charles* untill my newe lease of *Aldington Parke* shall begynne.

ITEM. I give to my *sonne Edward* tenne poundes yerelie out of *Conwaye Courte als Blackloze* untill my new lease of *Aldington Parke* shall begynne, and in the meantyme my *sonne Robert* shall receyve but onlie tenne poundes yerelie out of the same.

ITEM. I will that myne executors shall receyve the proffittes of all my Mannors, landes, tenementes, hereditaments, and reversions which I have within the countie of Kent, *except my aforesaid Mannors of Braborne, Combe, ffforland, Orlandston, Ham Brensett, and Sevington*, for the performance of this my last Will and testament, and afterwards to remayne to my *sonne Thomas* and to the heires male of his bodie lawfullie begotten. And for want of such issue to my *seconde sonne, Sr John Scott, knight*, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullie begotten. And for defaulte of such yssue to my *third sonne Charles*, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullie begotten. And for defaulte of such yssue to my *fourthe sonne Richard*, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullie begotten. And for defaulte of suche yssue to my *fifth sonne Edward*, And to the heires males of his bodie lawfullie begotten. And for defaulte of suche yssue to my *sixt and youngest sonne Robert*, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullie begotten. And for defaulte of suche yssue to my brother Charles Scott, and to the heires males of his bodie lawfullie begotten. And for defaulte of suche yssue to the *righte heires of me, Sir Thomas Scott, knighte.*

WITNESSES to this Will to the allowance and publication hereof by *Sr Thomas Scott* aforesayd the xxvij.th of December, 1594, and in the xxxvij.th yere of the raigne of Quene Elizabeth.

RICHARD SMYTHE. RAYNOLD SCOTT. PERCEIVALL HINDE.
WILLM MORBREADE.

MEMORAND, the plate and goodes hereunto written are suche as my Will is that Dame Dorothie, my Wife, shall alsoe enjoye after my decease yf she accept of this my last Will and testamente.

IMPRIMIS. One bason and an ewer of siluer.
ITEM. A liuery pott of siluer.
ITEM. A tankard of siluer.
ITEM. A nest of playne siluer bowles.
ITEM. the lesser quilte cuppe of siluer with his couer.
ITEM. the Bell salte of siluer with his couer.
ITEM. the trencher salte of siluer.
ITEM. the sugar boxe of siluer.
ITEM. Sixe of the newe siluer spoones.
ITEM. the casting bottle of silver and guilte.
ITEM. the third parte of the spittes.
ITEM, a payre of Rackes.
ITEM. three Dripping pannes.
ITEM. a payer of Andyrons (*Handirons*) of brasse or copper.
ITEM. the lattyn tongues and fiireshouell to them.
ITEM. the third parte of the swyne.
ITEM. the third parte of the hoppes.
ITEM. the third parte of the hempe.
ITEM. the third parte of the cheese.
ITEM. the third parte of the fishe, candles, and coles.
ITEM. (*sic*) . . . . . quarters of woole.
ITEM. Armes to furnishe a lighte horse.
ITEM. two coursletts furnished.
ITEM. two musketts furnished.
ITEM. the newe green carpett, with the cupboard cloathe, the square green cloathe, six quishions of Turkey worke.
ITEM. two quishions of needleworke, the one large the other square, and two quishions of blacke velvett, the one longe the other square.
ITEM. two chaires of blacke leather, the one bigger then the other.

Sir Thomas Scott.

ITEM. three little stooles, the one playne velvett, the other ymbrodered on black velvett, the third figured satten.
ITEM. six joyned stooles, with a table belonging to them, a cupboard, and a joyned forme.
ITEM. one cheste joyned worke.
ITEM. a greate tubbe boughte of goodwife.
ITEM. a newe bucking tubbe.
ITEM. a newe washing tubbe to washe by hande.
ITEM. twelve truggs and one charne.
ITEM. eighte hoggesheads.

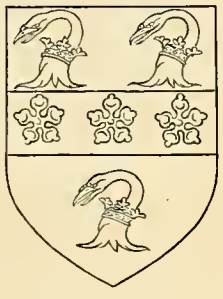
MEMORAND, my meaning ys that ys allso shalbe annexed as a codicill unto my will, viz., That my executers *shall finishe the buildinges which I have begonne at Thevegate*, in suche sorte as I meant to have done, so as the roomes which are to be made meete for *Dame Dorothie*, my wife, to inhabit in maye speedelie according to the plott and purpose which I went to accomplishe be perfourmed and done.

MEMORAND, that this poynte of my will shall allso be annexed to my Will in a codicill or Schedule, viz., fforasmuche as I have left to *Dame Dorothie*, my Wife, no money at all in her purse, that she shall receyue the Quarter's rent of her livinge due at Xpistmas last paste, which amounteth unto fiftie poundes.

Proved 7th January, 1594, by Thomas Scott, Esq., and Sir John Scott, knight, the sons, and Charles Scott, Esq., the brother of the deceased.

(No. 65 in Ped.)

Elizabeth Baker, eldest daughter of the Right Honourable Sir John Baker, of Sissinghurst Castle, Cranbrook in Kent, first wife to Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.



BAKER, OF SISSINGHURST CASTLE, KENT.

ARMS.—*Az. on a fess between three swans' heads, erased or, and ducally gorged gules, as many cinquefoils, or.*

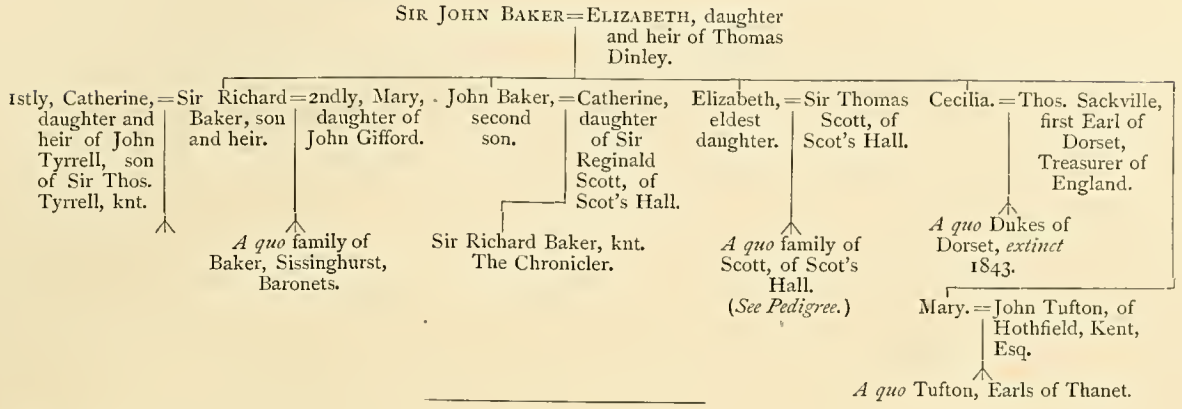
Sir John Baker was a man of great eminence in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., Mary, and Elizabeth, and appears to have taken a considerable part in the political and religious changes at that period. He was in succession, Recorder of London, Attorney General, Chancellor of the Exchequer to Henry VIII. (who left him £200 in his will), Secretary to the Privy Council, Speaker of the House of Commons, and Ambassador to Denmark, together with Henry Standish, Bishop of St. Andrews.[z] Sir John Baker was the only Privy Councillor who refused to sign the Will of Edward VI., whereby that monarch's two sisters were to be excluded from the throne. For this service Mary loaded him with honours, and he, a furious papist, became a zealous tool in her hands as an enemy of the Reformers, and thus, together with his royal mistress, obtained the unpopular name of "Bloody," he having been instrumental in the burning of two Protestant martyrs at Canterbury.

Sir John built the magnificent mansion of great extent, known for many generations as Sissinghurst Castle, portions of which (the moat, the gateway, towers, and some portion of the domestic offices) remain to this day. Queen Elizabeth visited Sir John Baker here in 1573, and, staying three days, afterwards proceeded to visit two of his sons-in-law, viz., Mr. Tufton, ancestor of the present Earl of Thanet, and Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, first Earl of Dorset, but avoided paying a visit to Sir Thomas Scott (Sir John's third son-in-law), although Her Majesty must have passed the lodge gates of Scot's Hall on her way to Ostenhanger Castle, "her own house," then occupied by Lord Buckhurst as her keeper. Sir John died shortly after the Queen's visit, and was buried with great pomp at Cranbrook Church.

---

[z] Ancestor to Longfellow's *Miles Standish*.

EXTRACT OF PEDIGREE OF SIR JOHN BAKER.


SIR JOHN BAKER=ELIZABETH, daughter and heir of Thomas Dinley.
1stly, Catherine, daughter and heir of John Tyrrell, son of Sir Thos. Tyrrell, knt.
Sir Richard Baker, son and heir.
2ndly, Mary, daughter of John Gifford.
John Baker, second son.
Catherine, daughter of Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall.
Elizabeth, eldest daughter.
Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.
Cecilia.
Thos. Sackville, first Earl of Dorset, Treasurer of England.
A quo family of Baker, Sissinghurst, Baronets.
Sir Richard Baker, knt. The Chronicler.
A quo family of Scott, of Scot's Hall. (See Pedigree.)
A quo Dukes of Dorset, extinct 1843.
Mary.=John Tufton, of Hothfield, Kent, Esq.
A quo Tufton, Earls of Thanet.

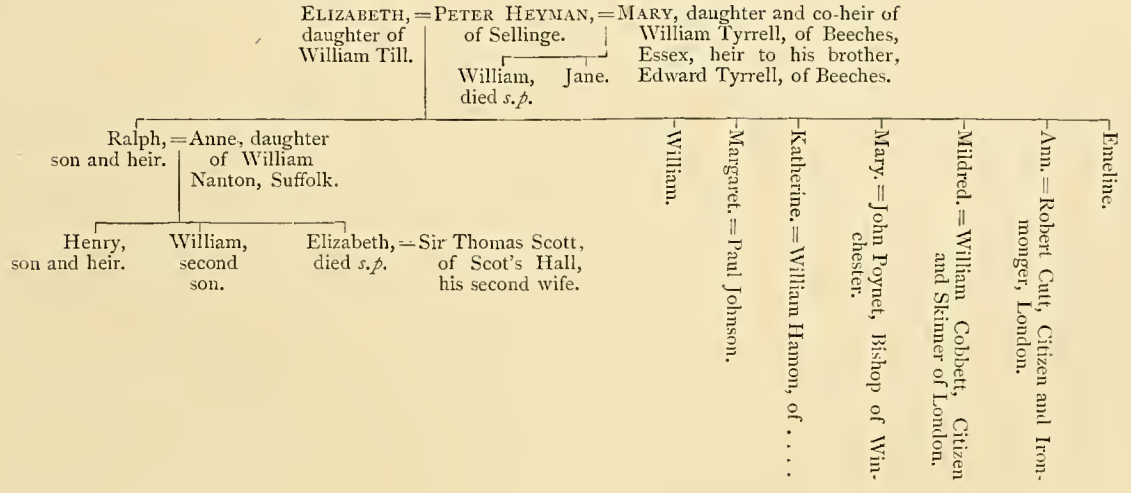
(No. 66 in Ped.) **Elizabeth Heyman,** eldest daughter of Ralph Heyman, of Somerfield, Kent, son and heir of Peter Heyman, of Sellinge, Kent, second wife to Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

ARMS OF HEYMAN.—*Argent, between three martlets, sable, a chevron engrailed, of the second bearing three cinquefoils, or.*

The family of Heyman lived for many generations at Somerfield House in Sellinge, Kent. No portion of the mansion now exists, although the site is still pointed out. Somerfield House originally belonged to the Poynings, and tradition to this day asserts, that formerly a subterranean passage existed between that place and the neighbouring Castle of Ostenhanger, the home of the De Criols, the Smythes, and Poynings. The family of Heyman rose into importance in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries; but the mansion of Somerfield had eventually to "yield," as pointed out in the old Kentish proverb quoted by us at pp. 100 and 102.

Elizabeth Heyman was married in 1583. She died 29th June, 1595, without issue, and was buried in Brabourne church.

PEDIGREE OF HEYMAN, SOMERFIELD. (*Brit. Mus. Add. MSS.* 5532, p. 60.)


ELIZABETH, daughter of William Till.
PETER HEYMAN, of Sellinge.=
MARY, daughter and co-heir of William Tyrrell, of Beeches, Essex, heir to his brother, Edward Tyrrell, of Beeches.
William, died s.p.
Jane.
Ralph, son and heir.=Anne, daughter of William Nanton, Suffolk.
William.
Margaret.=Paul Johnson.
Katherine.=William Hamon, of . . . .
Mary.=John Poynet, Bishop of Winchester.
Mildred.=William Cobbett, Citizen and Skinner of London.
Ann.=Robert Catt, Citizen and Ironmonger, London.
Emeline.
Henry, son and heir.
William, second son.
Elizabeth, died s.p.
Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, his second wife.

(No 67 in Ped.) **Dorothy Bere,** daughter of John Bere, of Horsman's Place,[a] Dartford, Kent, Justice of Oyer and Terminer. She married, 1stly, John Heyes, of Essex; 2ndly, Edward Scott, of Camberwell, Esq.; 3rdly, George Fynche, of Norton in Sheldwich in Kent; and, 4thly, Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, by the last of whom she had no issue, and whose third wife she was.

ARMS of BERE.—*Argent, a bear muzzled, sable, a canton ermine.*

(Nos. 68 & 69 in Ped.) **Catherine Scott,** (68), eldest daughter of Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall, by Emeline Kempe his first wife, married to John Baker (69), second son of the Right Hon. Sir John Baker, of Sissinghurst Castle. (See No. 65 in Ped., p. 207.)

(Nos. 70 & 71 in Ped.) **Anne Scott,** (70), youngest daughter of Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall, married to Walter Mayney or Mayne (71), of Staplehurst, Kent, son of John Mayney, of Biddenden, who died during his Shrievalty (Kent), 7th Elizabeth (1562).[b]

ARMS OF MAYNEY.—*Per pale argent and sable, three chevronels between as many cinquefoils counterchanged.*

(No 72 in Ped.) **Sir Edward Scott,** of Scot's Hall, K.B., fifth son, but eventual heir, of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Sheriff of Kent 18th James I. (1621).
Knight of the Shire (Kent) 1st Charles I. (1625).
Member of Parliament for Hythe 3rd Charles I. (1627).
Created Knight of the Bath at Coronation of Charles I.

Sir Edward Scott, K.B., although the fifth son of his father, was nevertheless the eventual heir, so far as related to the ancestral seat at Scot's Hall. Sir John Scott, an elder brother (who pre-

---

[a] Horsman's Place, according to Hasted, "was a mansion of note existing in his time (1780), and situated southwards of the High Street in Lowfield, close to Cranford stream. It was first owned by Thomas de Luda, 14th Edward II., and afterwards passed to the family of Shardelow, one of whom, Thomas de Shardelow, held it in the reign of Henry V., and whose daughter, Margaret, carried it in marriage to Thomas Horsman, who probably built the house here. It eventually passed to John Byever, or Bere, said to have been descended from the Fitz Bernards, and bearing similar arms. He rebuilt the mansion and gatehouse, as appears by the initial letters of his name and date, 1551 on the latter; John Bere founded almshouses in Lowfield, endowing them with these lands in 1572."—(*Hasted*, vol. i., p. 312.)

[b] Walter Mayney, of Spilsill in Staplehurst, served the office of Sheriff of Kent in the 13th Elizabeth, 1571. Sir John and Sir William Mayney, of Staplehurst, probably descendants of this man, were amongst the principal Royalists of Kent, having command of regiments under George Goring, the Earl of Norwich, the Royalist leader, and were with him at the sieges of Maidstone and Dover in 1648. Hasted claims for this family of Mayney, a descent from the renowned Sir Walter Manny.

Sir Edward Scott.

deceased him) had been in possession of that patrimony, but, dying without issue, it passed to the subject of our memoir.

Sir Edward, like his ancestors, was a soldier by profession, but, except in early life, does not appear to have served out of the country as they had invariably done. He was captain of a troop of horse in his native county, but does not seem to have held a commission under his father, as his brothers Thomas, Charles, and Reginald, at the assembling of the Kentish forces, some 4000 strong, at Northbourne Downs, near Dover, in 1589, in anticipation of a second invasion on the part of Spain.

He appears, however, to have been eminently serviceable in matters of domestic policy relating to his native county. Besides being in the Commission of the Peace, and a Commissioner for rendering the river Medway navigable from Maidstone to Tunbridge, as well as in relation to the drainage of Romney Marsh, he was during four Parliaments in the early part of the reign of Charles I. a Knight of the Shire for the eastern division of the county, jointly with the patriotic Sir Edwin Sandys; Sir Edward Hales, Sir Thomas Finch, Sir Dudley Diggs (*of Chilham Castle*), Roger Twisden (*of Roydon Hall*), and Norton Knatchbull (*of Mersham Hatch*), being returned at this time as representatives of the other divisions of the shire. He was likewise one of the Committee of Safety appointed by Parliament, but did not take an active part in its affairs, probably from a dislike of its arbitrary procedure.

Sir Edward Scott, whilst opposed to the extravagances of the monarch by whom he had been created a Knight of the Bath, nevertheless acted in the House of Commons in concert with Sir Edwin Sandys, Sir Dudley Diggs, Mr. Selden, Mr. Pym, and other independent men, in opposition to the attempt of the King to reimpose "Ship money." At a later period, probably in recognition of the independent position he took at this important juncture of public affairs, it would appear that the Parliament was desirous that he should accept the position of Lord Lieutenant of the county, an honour he seems to have declined, probably from a feeling that the acceptance of such an office at its hands at that time, exhibiting as it did a strong antagonistic feeling in opposition to the King and his measures, might have taxed his loyalty to his sovereign, or interfered with the honourable independence he desired to exercise in the interests of his country.

Sir Edward Scott died *circa* 1643-4, just after the troubles of the King and Parliament had become manifest. He appears, as the correspondence with his daughter-in-law (*Catherine, daughter of Lord Goring, Earl of Norwich, Royalist Commander at the Kentish rising*) suggests, to have been loyal to the last days of his life. Sir Edward Scott was thrice married, as will shortly appear. It is not known where he was buried, but probably at Smeeth.

EXTRACT FROM CALENDAR OF STATE PAPERS.—Domestic.—Charles I. 1625—1626. (Vol. xviii.)

1626. January 8. Dover Castle. (p. 217.)

28. Sir John Hippisley to Buckingham. "Sir Edwin Sandys and Mr. Scott stand for the county of Kent, but are opposed by Sir Edward Hales, a very honest man, and by Sir Robert Hatton, of whom he cannot hear much. If the Duke will that night send to all those of the navy to be there 'for Sir Sandys,' Hippisley thinks he will carry it, if not the Duke must bring him in for the Ports" (Cinque Ports).

WILL OF SIR EDWARD SCOTT.

Twisse 1646, fo. 7. Dated 13 October, 1641.
I, Edw. Scott. Proved 12 January, 1643.

In the name of God, Amen, I, Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, in the County of Kent, of the hon^ble^ order of the Bathe, Knight, beinge in perfect health and memorie, thanks therefore be given to Almighty God, doe make and constitute my last Will and tes^t^ in manner and forme followinge.

And first, I give and bequeath my soule into the hands of Almighty God, stedfastly believinge that by the merritts and

Sir Edward Scott.

sufferinge of his sonne, my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, to obteine pardon and remission of all my seinnes, my body I comend to the earth from whence it came to *be buried in the parishe church of Smethe or Netlested* in a decent manner accordinge to the discrecon of my executors hereafter nominated, there to remaine untill the resurection of all fleshe, confidently beleevinge that on that day my soule and body shalbe united againe and be made pertakers of the glorie of God in heaven.

And as touchinge those worldly goods wherewth God of his greate mercie hath blessed and endowed mee wth all, I doe give and bequeath the same in manner and forme followinge.

And first of all, I give and bequeath unto the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parishe of *Smethe* in the Countie of Kent, the some of *Twentie poundes* of good and lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath unto the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Braborne*, in the Countie aforesaid, the like some of *Twentie pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Nettlested* in the Countie aforesaid the some of *Tenne pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Aldington* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Twentie pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Orlaston* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Five pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poor, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Munks-horton* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Tenne pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poor, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Postlinge* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Tenne pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Stanford* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Tenne pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Limme* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Tenne pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Bromefield neere Leedes* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Five pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Yaldinge* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Five pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

Item. I give and bequeath to the most poore, aged, and impotent people of the parrishe of *Mereworth* in the Countie aforesaid, the some of *Five pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

And my further will and desire is that the seuall above named legacies devised as abouesaid to the poore of the said seuall parrishes shalbe paid and distributed accordinge to the decrecon of my executors wth in ffortie dayes next after my decease.

Item. My will and meaninge is that all the goods, chattles, and householdstuffe whatsoever w^{ch} did belonge unto my deere and wellbeloved wife *Dame Marie Scott* before my marriage with her shall remaine wholly to her and her executors, accordinge to such articles as I have agreed and consented unto wth the trustees of the said Dame Marie Scott, for that purpose appointed under my hand and seal.

Item. I give and bequeath unto the said *Dame Marie Scott* all such rings, jewells, and wearinge apperrell whatsoeu which she shall have in her use or custodie at the time of my decease.

Item. I give and bequeath to the said *Dame Marie Scott* all such monies as are in her custodie (except such somes of monie as I shall putt into the hand and keeping of the said Dame Marie Scott, and there entrusted by mee for my use and benefitt).

And I doe alsoe give unto the said *Dame Marie Scott* all other somes of monie as have been employed by her or her friends for her use and benefit.

Item. I give and bequeath unto the said *Dame Marie Scott* my best coach and furniture, wth foure of my best coach horses or Mares which I shall have at the time of my decease.

Item. I give and devise to the said *Dame Marie Scott* two of my best sadle horses at her choice and likeinge.

Item. I give and bequeath unto the said *Dame Marie Scott* the some of Two hundred pounds of good and lawfull monie of England, to be paide unto her wthin ffive monthes next after my decease.

Item. I give unto the said *Dame Marie Scott* ffive hundred ounces of my silver plate and vessell at her choice where she shall take it.

Item. I give and devise unto the said *Dame Marie Scott* a full third part of all my linnen and beddinge wth y^{e} appurtennces w^{ch} I shall have at the time of my decease.

Item. I give and bequeath unto my lovinge *Graundchild Margaret Browne*, the daughter of my sonne in lawe *John Browne, Esquieur*, the some of *one hundred pounds* of good and lawfull monie of England, to be paid unto her *Graundfather, Richard Browne, Esquieur*, wth in three months next after my decease, and to be employed by him for the best benifitt and advantage of her the said Margarett.

Item. I give and bequeath unto my very loving *brother, Robert Scott, Esquiour*, the some of *Twentie pounds* of lawfull monie of England.

Sir Edward Scott.

ITEM. I give unto my very louinge sonne in lawe, *John Brown, Esquiour*, the some of *Twentie pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto my very louinge kinsman, *George Rooke, of Munckshorton, Esquiour*, the some of *Twelve pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto my *nephew, Edward Scott, sonne of my said brother, Robert Scott*, the some of *ffortie pounds* of lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto my niece *Jane Scott*, daughter of the said *Robert Scott*, the some of *Twentie pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto my loveinge kinswoman, *Sarah Rooke, widdow*, the some of *Tenne pounds* of lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto *Thomas Rooke, her sonne*, the some of *Tenne pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto *Edward Harrison*, Clarke, whoe lives now in my house, the some of *Tenn pounde* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto *Launcelott Harrison, brother of ye said Edward Harrison*, the some of *Tenn pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto my servant, *Thomas Claire, of Nettlestead*, the some of *eight pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto *Marie Still*, whoe sometimes lived in my house, the some of *five pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto *John Hatch*, my servant, the some of *five pounds* of lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give unto my servant, *Marie Pattenden*, the some of *ffifteene pounds* of like lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto her sister, *Katherine Pattenden*, the some of *ffive pounds* of lawfull monie of England.

ITEM. I give to euy other servant to whome I have formerly in these present will made noe bequest, and w^{ch} shalbee dwellinge with mee at the time of my decease, soe much in monie as their seuall respective wages for halfe of the yeare would amount unto over and above such wages as shalbe due unto them respectively at the time of my decease, the said legacies to my said servants to be paid unto them wthin twentie dayes next a^{r} my dece.

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto *Richard Browne, Gent., my graundson, and sonne and heire apparent of my sonne in lawe John Browne, Esquiour*, the some of *twentie pounds* of good and lawfull mony of England, for and dureing the terme of the nrall life of him the said Richard Browne, to be had, perceaved, and taken, and to be issueing out and chargeable uppon all those thirtie acres of ffreshe Marshe, with the appurtennes, lyinge and being in *Bruckland* in the said Countie of Kent, now or late in the occupacon of *Richard Watts* and *Thomas Plumer*, their assignee or assignes, and by me purchased of Edward Berry, of y^{e} Cittie of Canterbury, Esquio^{r}, the said twenty pounds by the yeare, to be payable half yearely at the two most usual feasts in the yeare for payment, that is to say at the ffeast of St. Michaell th'Archangell and ye annunciacon of our blessed Ladie St. Marye the Virgin. And if it shall happen the said yearely rent to be behinde and unpaid by the space of twentie dayes after any of the said feasts in w^{ch} it ought to be paid, that then it shall and may be lawfull to and for y^{e} said Richard Browne to enter uppon the said Thirtie acres, and there to distraine, and the distresse or distresses to deteine and keepe untill he shalbe satisfied and paid the said yearely rent and the arrerages thereof.

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto *Tymothy Rooke*, my servant, the some of *ffive pounds* of good and lawfull monie of England, for and dureinge the terme of his nrall life, to be had, perceaved, and taken, and to be issuing out and chargeable uppon the said thirtie acres of freshe marshe, the said five pounde by the year to be payable halfe yearely at the two most usuall ffeasts in the yeare for payment, that is to say, at the ffeast of Saint Michaell th'Archangell and the annunciation of our blessed Lady Saint Marie the Virgin. And if it shall happen the said yearely rent to be behinde and unpaide by the space of Twentie dayes after any of the said ffeasts on w^{ch} it ought to be paid, that then it shall and may be lawfull to and for y^{e} said Tymothy Rooke to enter uppon the said Thirtie acres and there to distraine, and the distresse or distresses to deteine and keepe untill the said Tymothy Rooke shalbe satisfied and paid the said yearely rent and the arrerages thereof.

THE REST AND RESIDUE of my goods, chattels, debts, and household stuffe whatsoen the seuall Legacies and bequests in this my present last will performed and my ffuneralls discharged, I give and bequeath unto my *dearely beloved sonne, Edward Scott, Esquiour*.

ITEM. Of this my last Will and testament I doe nominate and appointe *my said sonne Edward Scott*, and my very *loueing kinsman, William Say*, of the Middle Temple, London, Esquiour, my true and lawfull executors, giveing and bequeathinge unto the said William Say for and towarde the paines in and about the execucon of my said will the some of Twentie pounde of lawfull monie of England.

PROVIDED ALWAYES, and my will and meaninge is that if my said *sonne Edward Scott shall depart this life before myselfe*, that then all my goods, debts, chattels, and household stuffe by this my pnte Will bequeathed unto my said sonne Edward Scott, I doe in that case will and bequeath the same to my said *Graundchildren, Richard Browne and Margarett Browne*, to be equally divided betwixt them, and my further will and meaninge is that if it shall please God to take my sonne out of this world before mee, whereby there would remaine but one onely executor of this my pnte will, I doe then hereby nominate and appointe for my other executor of this my last Will, in lieu and stead of my said sonne, my *loueing brother, Richard Browne, Esquiour*, desireing him to afford his paines in joyninge wth my other executor for the true and due performance of my said Will.

Sir Edward Scott.

And now againe I comend my soule into the hande of Almighty God, my Creater, redeemed Preserver, and Comforter, and take leave of this miserable world.

In witness whereof, this 13th day of Oct^{r}, in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand six hundred fortie and one, I have fixed my seale hereto, and to euy sheete hereof conteyninge tenne in number I have subscribed my name.

EDWARD SCOTT.

Sealed, subscribed, published, and declared in the pnce of

ANTHO. DABICOTT. WILLIAM HARTRIDGE. CHRISTOPHER DIXON.

Proved at London, 12 Jan., 1645, by EDWARD SCOTT, son of the deceased and one of the executors.

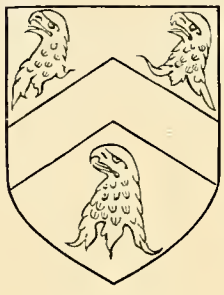
(No. 73 in Ped.) **Alice,** daughter and co-heir of William Stringer, of Jacques Court in Lydde, Esquire, first wife of Sir Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, K.B., by whom she had issue.

STRINGER.

ARMS.—*Per chevron, or and sable, three eagles displayed, counterchanged.*

By this marriage Jacques Court and Midley Manor in Lydde, Romney Marsh, passed to Sir Edward Scott, K.B. Jacques Court had previously passed to the Stringers by the marriage of a daughter and heir of a family of the name of Clache, in whose possession it had been for a few generations.

(No. 74* in Ped.) **Katherine,** daughter of John Honywood, of Elmsted, Kent, Esquire, second wife of Sir Edward Scott, K.B.



HONYWOOD.

ARMS.—*Argent, a chevron between three falcons' heads erased, azure beaked, or.*

Katherine Honywood was the sole heir of her mother, Jane, daughter of Peter Heyman, Esq., of Lyminge, Kent, by Mary, only daughter and heir of William Tyrrell, of Beeches, Essex. She was born at Elmsted, and baptized there 21st September, 1578, and married 26th August, 1616.[c]

SIR EDWARD SCOTT, K.B. = KATHERINE HONYWOOD.

Elizabeth. = John Browne, of Shingleton, in Great Chart (*Ashford*), Sheriff of Kent 6th James I., son of Richard Browne, of Shingleton, son of Sir Thomas Browne, of Betchworth Castle, Surrey, in descent from Sir Anthony Browne, K.B., *temp.* Henry IV.

Sir Richard Browne, Lord Mayor of London, 1660. Margaret.

The moated manorial residence of Shingleton (probably built by Richard Browne, of Shingleton, temp. Queen Elizabeth) is still in existence near Ashford, and is well worth a visit. Some of the principal rooms are panelled, and have highly elaborate ceilings of original construction.

(No. 75 in Ped.) **Mary,** daughter of John Aldersey, of Aldersey and Spurstow in Cheshire, and Bredgar in Kent. She married, firstly, Thomas Westrow, Esq., Alderman and Sheriff of London (see monumental inscription in St. Margaret's Church, Herts); secondly, Sir Norton Knatchbull, of Mersham Hatch, Sheriff of Kent 5 James I. and M.P. (*Hythe*), whose third wife she was; and, thirdly, Sir Edward Scott, K.B., by whom she had no issue.

ARMS.—*Gules on a chevron, engrailed argent, between two cinquefoils of the second, three leopards' faces, vert.*

---

[c] The ancient family of Honywood, of Evington, Sene, etc., in Kent, still resides in that county and derives an uninterrupted descent from William de Henewode, of Postling, a man of considerable reputation in the reign of Henry I.

(No. 76 in Ped.) **Thomas Scott,** eldest son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Sheriff of Kent 43rd Elizabeth; a Commissioner, jointly with Sir Edward Hales and Henry Heyman, Esq., in 1608, for the Survey of all the Crown Lands in Kent.[d]

Thomas Scott was likewise Captain of a troop of Lancers, under his father as commander-in-chief of the Kentish forces, in 1588 and 1589, in anticipation of a second invasion of England by Philip of Spain.[e]

Thomas Scott was twice married. He died some time previously to 1627, but where buried. is not known; probably at Smeeth Church, from whence so many of the ancient Scott memorials have disappeared.

(No. 76* in Ped.) **Mary,** daughter of John Knatchbull, of Mersham, Esq., and who died in 1600, was first wife of Thomas Scott, Esq., by whom there was issue a son, Thomas, who married Elizabeth, daughter and co-heir of Thomas Webbe, of Warehorne, by whom there was a daughter, Joan, who was twenty-two years of age in 1627.

Arms of Knatchbull.—*Azure, three crosses crosslet fetchée between two bendlets, or.*

(No. 77 in Ped.) **Elizabeth,** daughter and sole heir of Thomas Honywood, of Sene, second wife of Thomas Scott.

She survived her husband, and lived at Sene in Newington, near Hythe, and died there without issue, aged 60, in 1627. She was buried in Brabourne Church 14th of May of that year, where a slab of black marble on the chancel floor remains as a memorial of her.

Extract from Honywood Pedigree.

Mildred, daughter of Sir John Hales, Baron of the Exchequer. = John Honywood, first of Sene, and afterwards of St. Gregory's Priory in Canterbury, died 1557.

Margaret, daughter of William Bedingfield, of Bellaview, Kent. = Thomas of Sene, M.P. for Hythe 14th Elizabeth, *eldest son.*

Elizabeth, died *s.p.* = Thomas Scott, son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

---

[d] In relation to the survey of the crown lands in Kent, it may be mentioned in respect of the once royal manor of Aldington (the park of which, containing 1000 acres, was at this time leased of the Crown by the Scot's Hall family), that the last royal survey of this manor was in 1608, by which it would appear that the adjacent manors of Scot's Hall and Evegate were then considered as lesser manors appendant to the royal manor of Aldington. The tenant roll of Aldington included, in 1608, eighteen Kentish knights, and the colleges of All Souls and Magdalen in Oxford, their aggregate holdings amounting to 6000 acres, and extending over twenty-three parishes, from Elmsted to Lydd in Romney Marsh (Furley's *Weald of Kent*, vol. ii., part 2, p. 523). Aldington now is an inconsiderable village, with a population of about 100 souls, but its church is fine, and affords evidence of its importance in former times.

[e] In the Record Office, London, there is an interesting Roll which purports to be the account of Sir Thomas Heneage, knt., Treasurer at Wars from the 25th July (30th Elizabeth) to 31st May (31st Elizabeth). It furnishes the names, rank and title of command, rate of pay, etc, of all officers serving under Sir Thomas Scott (father of the subject of our memoir), "Colonell Generall of the Footemen in Kente," and Sir James Hales as Colonel of the horsemen in 1589 and 1590, when a second invasion was anticipated on the part of Philip of Spain, who was endeavouring to annex France to his own dominions, in which attempt he was opposed by Elizabeth, who sent over £22,000 in money and a reinforcement of 4000 men, to assist Henri Quatre against his enemies. Amongst the names of officers (exclusively Kentish) mentioned in this Roll, are those of three sons of Sir Thomas Scott (Charles, Reinolde, and Thomas), as well as the names of Goring, Hales, Nevinson, Fogge, Hamonde, Crisp, Rooke, St. Leger, Cobham, Boys, Fynche, Smythe, Brent, Dering, Engeham, Hardres, Whetenall, Heyman, and Blechenden.

(No. 78 in Ped.) **Sir John Scott,** of Nettlested Place, Kent, second son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Knight of the Shire 1st James I. (1603).

Captain of a Band of Lancers serving under the Earl of Essex in Spain, and under Lords Leicester and Willoughby in the Low Countries.

True to the ancient traditions of his family, Sir John Scott appears in his time to have borne a considerable part in military matters; he further appears to have been involved in the political embarrassments that marked the close of the reign of Queen Elizabeth. He was the staunch friend and adherent of Robert Devereux, the celebrated Earl of Essex (with whom he had served in the wars in Spain), and was for a time imprisoned in the Tower for his complicity with that popular but unfortunate nobleman in his alleged plot. His interest at Court with his kinsman, the Earl of Dorset, and his near connection with Robert Sydney, Earl of Leicester, of Penshurst, may have sufficed to save his head on this occasion, a fate that at one time, according to the State Paper records, seemed to await him. The family at Scot's Hall would appear to have taken a more than usual interest in the designs and fate of Essex, as we find so many of Sir John Scott's immediate relations mixed up with the Earl's quixotic demonstration. Sir Henry Bromley (Sir John Scott's brother-in-law), and his near kinsman, Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, Kent, and Philpot Lane, London, Sheriff of London and Middlesex at the time of Essex's rebellion, were imprisoned in the Tower for their adherence to that unfortunate nobleman, from whence they were eventually, after his decapitation, released.

SIR JOHN SCOTT, OF NETTLESTED. BY ZUCCHERO.

Engraved, by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

Sir John Scott.

Whilst not engaged abroad in a military capacity, and when leisure followed on his return to his native county, Sir John Scott appears to have devoted himself to domestic matters. He was concerned with the completion of Dover Haven, so successfully inaugurated and all but completed by his distinguished father, and appears to have rebuilt to a great extent the ancient manorial residence of Nettlested Place (see p. 160), and to have extended the famous gardens at that mansion to the opposite side of the River Medway, throwing a bridge across that stream, which, however, his brother, Edward Scott, after his death, was compelled to remove by order of the Privy Council. Sir John represented his native county in Parliament, but he does not appear to have troubled himself unduly with politics at this time. He was twice married, but died without issue by either of his wives. On his death, in 1616, the entailed possessions of Scot's Hall and Nettlested Place passed to his younger brother, Sir Edward Scott, K.B. Sir John was buried in Brabourne Church, where a tablet to his memory still exists.

EXTRACTS FROM CALENDAR OF STATE PAPERS.

Domestic.—Elizabeth, 1598—1601-2.

(*Edited by* Mrs. M. A. E. Green.)

1599. March 1. London. (p. 165.)

VOL. CCLXX.—48. John Chamberlain to Dud. Carleton, attendant on the Governor of Ostend. "Lady Drury, Sir Robert's mother, is dead, leaving Sir John Scott a fresh widower.[f]

1601, Feb. 13!

VOL. CCLXXVIII.—58. Proofs against Sheriff Smythe.[g] Edward Bromley testifies that he was required by his brother, Sir Hen. Bromley,[h] to go to the Earl of Essex on 8 Feb., and tell him that he and Sir John Scott would be ready to do him service, and that Sheriff Smythe would do the like, who was colonel of the men.

John Smythe, his brother, proved some things which Sheriff Smythe denied.

1602 Dec. 23. London.

VOL. CCLXXXVI.—13. John Chamberlain to Dudley Carleton, at the Ambassador's in Paris. . . . . .

. . . . . .

The Ladies of Lord Thos. Howard and Sir Robert Sydney, and young Mrs. Hatton, are in the straw. The Bishop of London, Sir John Scott, and Lady Hatton were gossips to Mrs. Fanshaw's sister, and have made another grand Christopher.[i]

1601. Feb. 24. London. (p. 590.

VOL. CCLXXVIII.—110. John Chamberlain to Dudley Carleton at the Hague. On the 19th the Earls of Essex and Southampton were arraigned at Westminster, before the Lord Treasurer, Lord High Steward of England for that day, nine earls, and sixteen barons. The charges were, Essex's attempt to surprise the Court, his coming in arms to London to raise rebellion, and defending his house against the Queen's forces. . . . . The Earl of Southampton spoke well, and pleaded hard to acquit himself, and then condescended to entreaty, and moved much commiseration. I think he was somewhat too submissive, and seemed too loth to die; nine were brought to trial at the King's Bench next day, but six were sent back without trial, only three were tried and condemned, Sir Edm Baynham, John Littleton (of Worcestershire), and Capt. Orwell; they are not yet executed. I think my Lord is to lead the way and the rest will follow; but the Queen inclines to mercy, and I think there will be no great executions. Saville of Eaton, Dean Wood, Dr. Fletcher, Dr. Hawkins, and others are in private custody, *and Sir Harry Bromley sent to the Tower;* it is feared *Sir John Scott may follow him. Sheriff* (*Thos.*) *Smythe and his wife* (*Sarah*) *are in durance, and in danger of misprision; he is dismissed his offices, and another alderman and sheriff chosen in his room* There is continual watch and ward day and night in arms in the city. Lytton is here with his trained band of 300 men, and other captains, with some 2000 from the neighbouring shires. (2⅓ pages. Printed in Chamberlain's Letters, pp. 103—107.)

---

[f] Sir John Scott's first wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Stafford, of Blatherwick, son of Henry, Lord Stafford, son of the Duke of Buckingham, beheaded in 1521 for laying claim to the throne, in the event of failure of heirs of Henry VIII. Elizabeth Stafford had married, firstly, Sir William Drury, of Hawsted, Suffolk, President of Munster and Governor of Berwick; afterwards Sir John Scott, of Nettlested.

[g] Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, Kent, and of Philpot Lane, London, Sheriff of London and Middlesex, was brother of Sir John Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle (who married the Lady Isabella, the daughter of the Earl of Warwick), and of Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle, Kent, who married Elizabeth, sister of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested. Sir John Scott about this time married Catherine, daughter of Thomas Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle (known as "Customer Smythe"), sister of Sir John and Sir Richard Smythe, and widow of Sir Rowland Hayward, Lord Mayor of London.

[h] Sir Henry Bromley, son of Lord Chancellor Bromley, married Anne, sister of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested.

[i] This allusion probably refers to the Lord Chancellor, Sir Christopher Hatton, who died in 1591. Sir Christopher Hatton was a great favourite with Queen Elizabeth; the "Gossips" were doubtless sponsers to the future "Grand Christopher."

1601. March 2. (p. 4.) VOL. CCLXXIX.—10. Extract from Examination of Edward Bromley, gent, before Lords Egerton, Buckhurst, and Nottingham, and Sec. Cecil. "On their return, he required examinate to go to the Earl next morning, and tell him that he and Sir John Scott would be ready to do him service, and that Sheriff Smythe would do the like. Went and delivered the said message at Essex House, and the Earl willed him to retnrn to his brother and Sir John Scott, and entreat them to repair to Sheriff Smythe's house, and they should hear from him presently. Related the Earl's message to his brother, who acqnainted Sir John Scott therewith, being then at church, and they two agreed to dine with Sheriff Smythe. Returning to Essex House, met the Earl at Essex Gate, coming out, and went in his company to Sheriff Smythe's house, where he related to the Earl the answer of his brother and Sir John Scott, when the Earl said it was well. Went with the Earl to Ludgate, and after the repulse, returned to Essex House; after the Earl had yielded, he and Capt. John Salisbury escaped.

1601. April 5. (p. 26.) VOL. CCLXXIX.—58. Confession of Thomas Smythe before Lord Chief Justice.

. . . . . .

Two or three days after, Sir Jno. Scott told examinate that Capt. Bromley had moved Sir Henry Bromley about examinate's being warned beforehand by the Earl that he should not be surprised, but stand on his guard. Had no message from the Earl before that, save one from Dr. Fletcher, which did not concern these matters. (Two pages.)

VOL. CCLXXXI.—By an officer of the Tower.

. . . . . .

Mar. 2. Mr. Smythe, late Sheriff of London, was bronght there (the Tower), and the Lord Keeper, Lord Treasurer, Lord Admiral, Mr. Secretary, and Mr. Attorney went there, and examined the Earl of Rutland, Lord Sandys, Monteagle, and Cromwell, Sir Charles Danvers, Sir Gelly Merrick, and Cuffe. Mr. Waad[j] brought in a coach the same day Sir John Scott and Capt. Bromley, who were examined and sent back.

EXTRACT OF WILL OF SIR JOHN SCOTT, OF NETTLESTED AND SCOT'S HALL.

Dated 18th September, 1616.
Proved 17th January, 1617-18.

Meade, fo. 8.

I, JOHIS SCOTT, militis. } In the name of God, Amen, the 18 daye of Sept., Ao dni 1616, and in the yres of the raigne of our soveraigne Lorde K^e James of England, Scott^de, Fraunce, and Irel^de, defendo^r of the fayth, &c., that is to saye of his raigne of E^de, F^ce, and Ir^de the 14^th, and of Scot^d the 50^th.

I, Sir John Scott, of Scotshall in the pishe of Smeeth in the Co of Knt, knt, beinge sick in body but whole in mynde, and of good and perfect remembrance, thanks be given to God, therefore doe make and ordayne this my psent Test and last Will in manner and forme folig^e, that is to saye.

FFIRST and principally, I bequeathe and committ my soule unto the handes of Allmighty God the ffather, the sonne, and the holy ghoste, three persons but one only God, hopinge and assuredly trustinge by the meritts and bitter passions of Jesus Christ, the seconde person in this holy and undivided trinytye, to be mde ptaker of the everlastinge joye and eternall blesse of heaven prepared before all worldes for the ffaythfull and elect.

And as for my bodye when my soule hath left it, I commit it unto the earth, to be buryed at the charge and care of my executors hereafter named, *amongst my ancestors in the psh Church of Braborne* in plaine and decent manner, not in any costly or chargeable manner, as I have acqniainted my cosen, Mr. George Rooke, with the course I woulde have therein helde in all respects.

ALLSOE I give and beqneath unto the poore people of the psh of *Smeeth* the *sum of* 20 *poundes* to be paid and distributed unto them at the discretion of my execntors herar named. And I likewise give and bequeath unto the poore people of the *parish of Braborne* the some of 20 *marks* of lawfull money of England to be likewise paid and distribnted amongst them by my said executors.

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto the poore people of the *parishe of Nettlested*, the some of 5 *poundes* of like money, to be payde at the like discretion of my execntors.

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto the *Ladye Katherine, my deare and lovinge wife*, the use and occupation onlye of one dozen of silver plate trenches, sixe silver dishes, ffower silver saucers, 2 candlest^ks, 2 flagons, 1 greate salte, and 2 trencher saltes, 3 beere boules, 2 wine cnppes, 12 silver spoones, 1 bason and ewer of silver, and all such plate as is moste commonly used in her chamber for and dnringe all the terme of her life.

---

[j] Mr. Waad, Lieutenant of Tower of London.

Sir John Scott.

ALLSOE I give and beqneath unto her the use and occupation of all my furniture of my house *called Nettlesteade*, and of all my goodes, chattells, and moveables there that I shall not hereafter . . . . . by this my will otherwise dispose of, To have and to holde unto her for her proper use and behoofe for and duringe all the terme of her natnral life, and from and after her decease I give and bequeath my said plate, moveable goodes and furniture of house unto my goode friende *Sir R^de Smythe, of Leeds Castle* in the C^o. of Kent, knt., *Jno. Argall*, of Colchester in the countie of Essex, Esq., my lovinge cosens *Geo. Rooke, of Horton*, Gent, *Wm. Rooke, and John Rooke*, Gent^n, brothers of the sayed Geo., their ex^s, ad^s, and ass^s in such manner and forme, and soe to be ordered and upon such trusts and confidences, intents and ppses as I have by one Indenture made betw^ne me the sayde *Sr John Scott* of the one pte and the sayde *Sr Rde. Smythe, Jno. Argall, Geo. Rooke, Wm. and Jno. Rooke*, beare date the . . . . daye of Sept^r in this present yeare of the raigne of o^r sou^e Lorde K^e James of Eng^dc, &c., appointed and set doun for my goodes, householdstuffe, furniture, and utensills of householde that are in and about *my manor of Scot's Hall* in all respects.

ITEM. I have since my intermar^io w^th the sayde *Ladye Katherine*, my wife, assured and conveyed unto her my sayde house of *Nettlesteade*, and all my farmes, mess^s, landes, and ten^ts thrabouts for and duringe her naturall life, for her joynture. And since also have conveyed and assured unto her augmentation throf out of my mannor or farme of *Thevegate, als Evegate*, and the landes thrunto belon^g or apptyninge in the sayde pshe of Smethe, in the tenure and occ^n of R^dc Reader, the some of £100 by the yeare. I now by this my last Will and test^t fur^r give and beq^th unto my sayde most goode and lovinge wife the some of 500 poundes of good and lawful moy of Engl^dc, to be payde unto her by my ex^s as soone as possibly it can be raised ont of the meanes and provision that I have heretofore, and by this my will set downe and appointed for the pay^t of my debts and legacies.

AND I alsoe fur^r give unto her my beste Coache mares, and I desire her to accepte therof and of the sayde former joynture and the increase of the sayde hund^d poundes by the yeare for and in full satisfon of all suche dower wch by lawe she maye have or recover out of my other mannors and landes, to the greate disturb^ce of all my courses w^ch I have taken for payment of my debts and legacies and for the sellinge of my next heires of my inhtance to my and my heires' greate unquiet and her little good, w^ch leg^s of myne my will and mynde is, and allsoe all the benefitt of this my last will and test that my sayde wife shall loose and utterly forgoe yf she refuse her saide joynture and . . . . . ., and clayme her dower at the comon lawe. And allsoe I revoke and make voyde the sayde hund^d poundes by the yeare unto her assured and conveyed out of Thevegate afs^dc yf she refuse this my legacies and her joynture and clayme her sayde dower as is aforesayde.

ITEM. I give and bequeath nnto *Sr Thomas Smythe, of Philpot Lane, London*,[k] knte, my auncient approved and moste fayth-full frende, for a kinde remembce of my love unto him, *a Bason and Ewer of Silver of ffortye poundes.* (See p. 222.)

AND I give and beq^th unto my good and olde friende and moste lovinge brother in lawe *Sr Richard Smithe, of Leedes Castell in the Co^y of Kent, knte, my velvet flootcloth, and a bason and ower of silver* in value 40 *poundes.*

ALSOE I give and beq^th unto my good and lovinge *brother Edw^de Scott, Esq.*, one of my best horses in my stable at Halle.

ALSOE I give and beq^th unto my good nephewe, *Sr Warham Seintleger of Ulcom, in the s^de co of Knt*, one of my horses in my stable at Scot's halle at his elect^n and choyse. (See p. 228.)

AND I alsoe give nnto my nephewe *Sr Timothye Thornehill*,[l] anor of my horses.

AND to my *nephewes, Tho. Smyth and Hy Bromley*, each of them a horse; my nephewe, *Anthy Seintleger*, a horse.

ALSOE I give unto my lovinge *bro^r Robert Scotte*, my seconde beste Coach and 2 of my coach mares.

I ALSOE give unto my sayde *bro^r Robert sufficient fur^r for a chamber to be taken out of Scot's Hall and Nettlesteade*, by the appoint^t and allot^t of my sayde goode Ladye and Wife any gift or bequest of my sayde goodes and furniture hrtofore made notwithstanding.

ITEM. I give and beq^th unto my lovinge *sister in lawe, Eliz^th Scott, the widdowe of my brother, Tho^s Scott, Esq.* dec^d, as much plate, or a Ringe, as shall be worth 30 *poundes* in moy.

AND to my *sister Culpeper*, the wf of *Alex^r Culpeper, Esq^r*, as much plate or a ringe as will be worth in money 20 *poundes.*

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto my *lovinge cosen Wm Scott, of Braborne*, my best geldinge, savinge my owne saddle geldinge.

AND I give unto my lovinge *cosen, Geo. Rooke, of Horton*, my geldinge for myne owne saddle, w^th the tawney furniture belong^ge to the sayde Geldinge. And alsoe I give unto him a . . . . . blacke sattin sute, a black clothe cloake gar ded and lyned w^th sattin, a beaver Hatt, my best tawney silk stockinges.

ITEM. I give & beq^th unto *Geo. Rooke, my svt*, the somme of *tenne poundes* of lawfull moy of Eng^d, and also my tawney cloake and sute of appell to it my black sute & cloke lyned w^th plushe.

AND I give unto *Sara* the dau^r of the last named GEO. ROOKE, the some of *tenne poundes* of lawfull moy of Eng^d.

ITEM. I will and beq^th unto olde *Alx^r Lewknor* the keepinge of a Cowe in *Haule Parke* dur^ge his lyfe. And I give and beq^th unto hym 40*s.* yearly, to be payde unto him quarterly, w^ch I appoint my brother, Edward Scott, to pay duringe his life. And for defaulte of pay^t therof accord^lie it shalbe lawful for the sayde Alex^r to distrayne in and upon anie of my landes.

---

[k] Sir Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, had been Sheriff of London in 1601 during the Earl of Essex's rebellion; his wife, Sarah (witness to this Will), daughter and heir of William Blount, remarried on his death, in 1626, *Robert Sydney, Earl of Leicester.* Sir Thomas was brother of Sir Richard, of Leeds Castle (who married Elizabeth, sister of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, from whom was issue Sir John, of Leeds Castle), and of Sir John Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle, whose son was created Viscount Strangford of Ireland, and from whom the late Viscount was lineally descended.

[l] Sir Timothy Thornhill married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle, by Elizabeth (his first wife), daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Sir John Scott.

ITEM. I appointe that my bro^r Edwarde Scott shall make *James Hasarde* a lease of the howse and landes now in his tenure and occupation for 12 yeares from Mich^es next at the rent or farme he nowe paies therfore.

ITEM. I give unto *Kath^n Laine, my servt*, the some of 5 p^des of lawfull moy of Eng^de, and unto *Abigall Jervis, my svt*, 20 markes of lawfull moy of Eng^de, and unto *Hughe Willard*, Tennes poundes of like lawfull moy.

AND I give and beq^th unto my *cosen, John Rooke*, a peece of blacke sattyn.

AND I give and beq^th unto *Wm. Cobbes, of Aldington*, the blacke nagge or geldinge I had of R^de Reader with my beste blacke furniture for the furnish^ge of him. And I app^te my sayde ex^s to see him satisfied for such charges as he hath layed out aboute my businesse, and alsoe for his paines in my affaires and businesses

AND I give to *R^de Morris, my svt.*, my green silke stockings and green silk garters.

ALL w^ch sayde sev^ll legacies and all o^rs conteyned in this my Will, I will and appoint that my ex^s, and the survors or survor of them, shall well and trulye paye, discharge, deliver, and pforme acc^dge to my true intent and meaninge.

AND *I constitute, make, and ord^ne my s^de lovinge bro^r in lawe, Sr Rich^de Smythe, Thos. Brett, Esq., and my sayde lovinge cosen Mr. Geo. Rooke, of Horton, my ex^s of this my presente test^t and last will.*

AND because my sayde good freinde, *Thos. Brett*, in whom I repose great trust, is now travelled out of this Realme, my will and mynde is that my seyde other two ex^s shall excuse and doe their best endeavors to pforme this my Will, and he to execute and take the sayde exorshippe upon him w^th the others att his return if it shall seeme good untoe him soe to doe.

ALSOE I further will and bequeath unto *Sara ffarm sometymes svt unto the Ladye Smythe*, wife of the sayde *Sir Thos. Smythe*, the some of 20 p^des of lwff^l moy of Eng^de, and unto the svt^s of tha s^de Lady Smythe that are nowe att^ge on her, in consideracion of theire greate paines taken about me, I give unto them the some of 30 p^ds of lwfull moy of Eng^d, to be divided and distributed amongest them as the sayde Ledye shall think fit and conv^t.

ITEM. I give and bequeath unto *Launcelott Harrison*, nowe curate of Smethe, the some of 5 p^des of lawfull moy of Eng^de.

AND FURTHERMORE I will and bequeath unto my *niece, Eliz^th Scott*, the dau^r of my *bro^r R^de Scott*, dec^d, *the sum of* 5 *hund^d p^ds* of lwfull moy of Engl, to be p^de unto her at the end and determinacon of the . . . . . and termes of yeares of the lands, tents, and heredits w^ch I have by former convey^ces and ass^ces, and by this my last will and tes^t set out, lymitted, and appointed for the pay^t of my debts and leg^s if soe muche moy shalbe in my ex^s hands. And if there shall not then be soe muche moy in theire handes, then my mynde is the sayde Eliz^th shall have soe muche moy as shallbe then in my ex^s handes. Prov^d alwayes and my mynd is that the sayde Eliz^th Scott shall release all her righte title, claime, and dem^de of, in, and to all the mannors, mess^s, lands, tents, and heridits that at any tyme durg^e my life I was seised of, to such heire male . . . . . heires that shall be then seised of the sayed mannors, landes, and tents, before shee shall claim, have, or receive the afs^de legacie. And provi^d alwayes if my sde wife have before that tyme rec^d her joynture, and thereby lost the benefit of this my will, then this my legacie before given unto the sde Eliz. Scott shal be alsoe voyde, frustrate, and of noe effect.

NOTE.—The remaining portion of Sir John Scott's Will, consisting of recitals of deeds, etc., etc., of no general interest, is omitted. It concludes :—

This is the last Will and Testament of Sir John Scott, by him sealed up with his seal in the presence of: Sarah Smythe, Will^m Cobbes, Simon Railton, J^no Neve.

17th Jan^r, 1617. Commission yssued to Edw^d Scott, Esq., brother of the dec^d, to administer the goodes of the dec^d acc^g to the tenor of his will, in the absence of Tho^s Brett, one of the Ex^s, now dwelling beyond seas, R^d Smythe, k^nt, and Geo. Rooke, ex^ers named in the Will, renouncing the exorship.

(No. 79 in Ped.) **Elizabeth,** daughter of Sir William Stafford, of Blatherwick in Northamptonshire, by Dame Dorothy, daughter of Henry, Lord Stafford (only son of Edward, last Duke of Buckingham of that line who was beheaded in 1521), first wife of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested.[m]

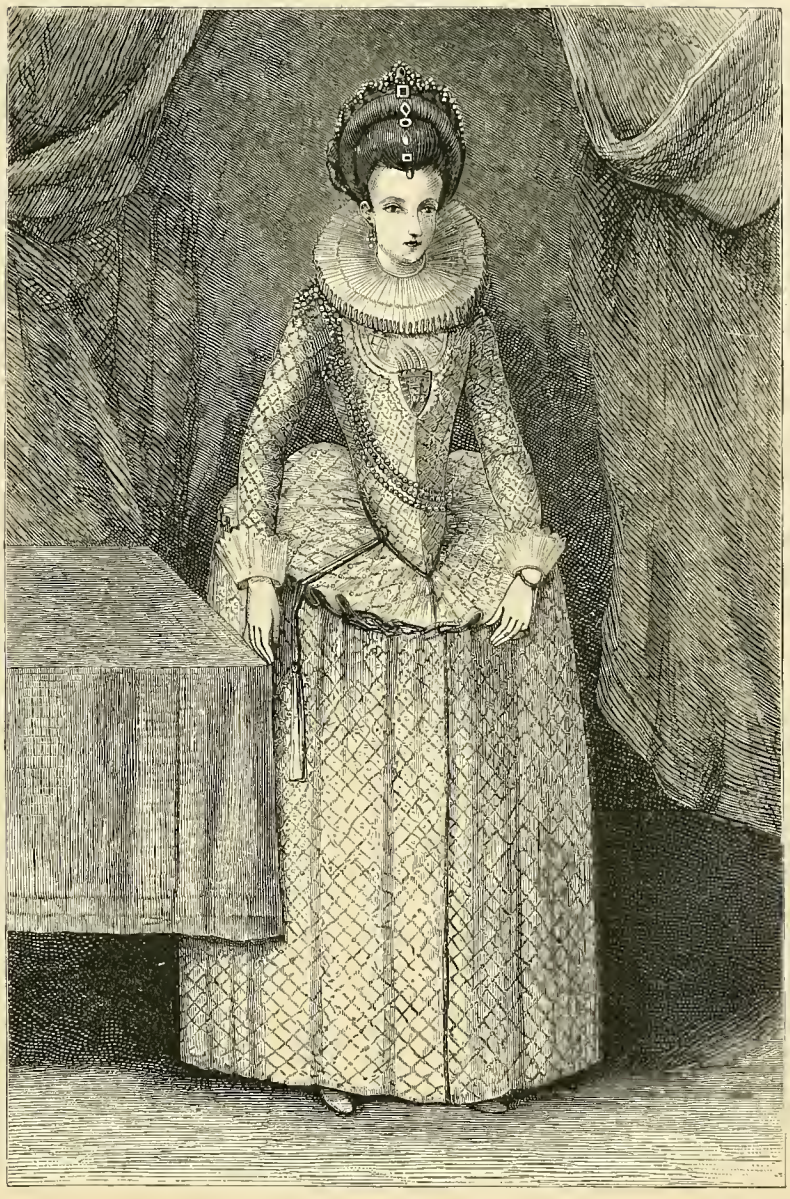
ARMS OF STAFFORD OF BLATHERWICK.—*Or, a chevron gules, a canton ermine.*

---

[m] Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, was the son of the Duke who was executed by Richard III., and fifth in descent from Edward III. For six generations the heads of this house had either been slain in battle during the desolating Wars of the Roses, or were sacrificed to party feuds and beheaded. Edward, the last Duke, Lord High

Lady Elizabeth Stafford.

Lady Elizabeth Stafford, born in 1544, lived abroad at Geneva during the troubled reign of Queen Mary, the vicissitudes of her family and the Protestant views she had embraced conducing to her voluntary banishment. She married, firstly, Sir William Drury, of Halsted, Suffolk,



* LADY ELIZABETH SCOTT. (BY ZUCCHERO.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

Constable of England, was thus sacrificed to the enmity of Wolsey for unwittingly letting fall the expression, that in the event of failure of heirs to Henry VIII., he considered himself entitled to succeed to the throne. For this he was condemned and executed for high treason, and his honours and estates forfeited. His defence was noble and manly, his fate regarded universally with sympathy, and drew from the Emperor Charles V. the expression that "a butcher's dog had killed the finest buck in England." The glories of the house of Stafford were extinguished with this man; his honours and estates were forfeited and never restored to his heirs. As exemplifying the perils and insecurity of life and property during, and at the close of the Wars of the Roses, and the widespread ruin resulting to those engaged in them and to their immediate descendants, we append an instructive abstract of descent of the Duke's issue :—

EDWARD, DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM, Lord High Constable of England, beheaded 1521. = LADY ELEANOR PERCY, daughter of Henry, Earl of Northumberland.

Ursula, daughter of Sir Richard Pole, K.G., and Mary Plantagenet, Countess of Salisbury, daughter of George, Duke of Clarence, and niece of Edward IV. and Richard III. = Henry, only surviving son, restored in blood but not in honour and estates; created *Baron Stafford*. his rent-roll amounting only to £317 13*s.* 1*d.* (*Burke's Ext. Peerage.*)

Edward, second Baron Stafford; his line failed in 1640 in male heirs of his body.

Roger. *To conceal the disgrace of his family, and from poverty, changed his name to Floyd, adopted from a servant of his maternal uncle, whose shelter he had accepted. He eventually sold his claim to the Barony to Charles I. for £800. Died unmarried* 1640.

Dorothy. = Sir William Stafford, of Blatherwick.

* Elizabeth, Lady of Bedchamber to Queen Elizabeth. = 1stly, Sir William Drury, of Hawsted, or Halsted.

= 2ndly, Sir John Scott, of Nettlested. Died *s p* 1616.

Jane, *married a joiner and had a son, a cobbler, living at Newport, Salop, in* 1637. "*Thus,*" *says Burke,* "*the great-great-grandson of Margaret Plantagenet, daughter and heiress of George, Duke of Clarence, sunk to the grade of a mender of old shoes.*"

Sir Robert Drury.

Sir Drue, of Linsted, Kent, Gentleman Usher of Privy Chamber to Queen Elizabeth, and one of the keepers of Mary, Queen of Scots, and present at her execution. (See p. 178.)

Four daughters.

William, killed in battle.

Lady Elizabeth Scott.

Lord President of Munster, Knight Marshal of Berwick, and Lord Justice of Ireland. Queen Elizabeth visited Sir William Drury in 1578 at Halsted, shortly before his death in that year.[n]

The Lady Stafford, on the death of her first husband, married, shortly after 1578, Sir John Scott, of Nettlested. She was at this period one of the Ladies of the Bedchamber to Queen Elizabeth, and was much at Court. Sir John Scott had the wardship of Sir Robert Drury and the younger children of Lady Stafford by her first husband. She died without issue by this marriage the 6th February, 1598, and was buried in Nettlested Church.[o]

MONUMENT TO LADY ELIZABETH SCOTT, IN NETTLESTED CHURCH, KENT.

[n] The portrait of Sir William Drury is still in the possession of Mrs. Fairfax Best, and was formerly in the Scot's Hall collection. Drury House, on the site of which Drury Lane Theatre now stands, was built by this gallant soldier, most of whose children, in the following generation, came to poverty.

[o] On the north side of the east wall of the chancel in Nettlested Church is an alabaster monument surmounted with the arms of Scott impaled with Stafford, each with their respective quarterings. The inscription is as follows:—"Here lyeth ye bodye of Elizabeth Stafford, daughter of Sir William Stafford, of Blatherwick, in C. of Northampton, and to Dame Dorothy Stafford, D. of Henry, Lord Stafford, eldest son of Edward, the last Duke of Buckingham. Was first married to Sir Will[m] Drury, of Halsted in C. of Suffolke, knight, by whom she had 3 sons and 4 daughters. She afterwards married Sir John Scott, of Nettlested in the county of Kent, knight. In the time of Queen Mary she lived in exile with her mother at Geneva (where her father died), and afterwards at Basle, for the Gospel's sake. At her return she was made a Lady of the Bedchamber and Privy Chamber to Queen Elizabeth. She died 6th of Feb[y], in the year of Her Redeemer 1598, in the 49[th] year of her age."

(No. 80 in Ped.) **Catherine**, daughter of Sir Thomas Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle (Customer of London), relict of Sir Rowland Hayward, Lord Mayor of London in 1570, second wife of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, and died without issue by the latter.

ARMS OF SMYTHE.—*Azure between three lions passant guardant, a chevron engrailed, or.*

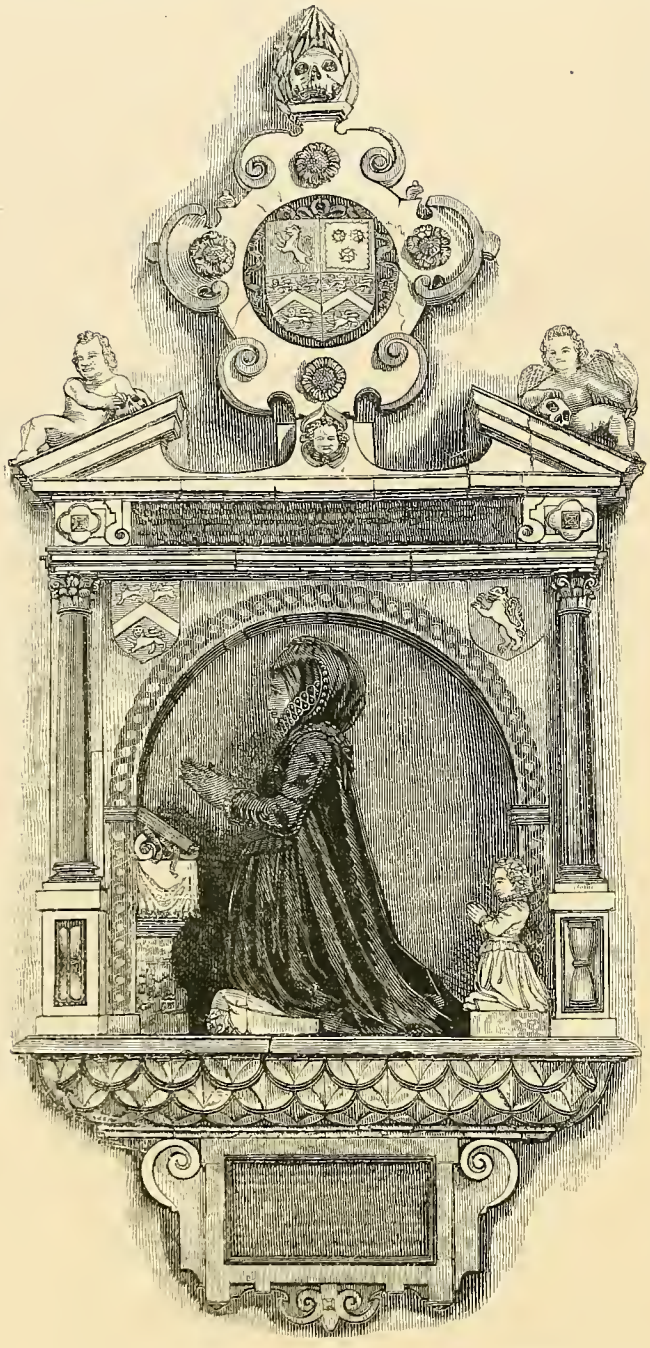
LADY (CATHERINE) SCOTT. (BY ZUCCHERO.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

This lady survived both her husbands, and died in 1636, aged fifty-six. She was buried in Nettlested Church, where a white marble monument, surmounted by the arms of Hayward

Lady (Catherine) Scott.

and Scott impaled with Smythe, still exists in a state of good preservation on the east wall of the chancel.



MONUMENT TO LADY (CATHERINE) SCOTT, NETTLESTED CHURCH.

We append an abstract from the Pedigree of the family of Smythe, at this time one of the most influential in the county :—

Sir Thomas Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle, commonly known as "Customer" Smythe, died 1591 ; *buried at Ashford.* = Alice, daughter of Sir Andrew Judde, Lord Mayor of London.

- Sir John, *eldest son*, Sheriff of Kent, 42 Elizabeth, *buried at Ashford.*
  - Sir Thomas, created Viscount Strangford, of Ireland. *A quo the late Viscount Strangford.*
- Sir Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, Kent (*second son*), Sheriff of London 1601 ; Ambassador to Russia. *Died of plague* 1625 ; *left many benefactions in Kent, administered by Skinners' Company of London.* = 3rd, Sarah, daughter and heir of William Blount. She re-married Robert Sidney, Earl of Leicester. — *A witness to the will of Sir John Scott, of Nettlested.*
  - Sir John. = Isabella, daughter of the Earl of Warwick.
- Sir Richard Smythe (*fourth son*), of Leeds Castle, Kent ; *buried at Ashford.* = Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, *widow of Richard Knatchbull.*
  - Sir Thomas, of Leeds Castle.
- Henry.

Catherine. = 1st, Sir Rowland Hayward, knt.
= 2nd, Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, died *s.p.*

- 1st, Richard Scott, of Scot's Hall ; killed in battle. = Catherine.
  - Elizabeth. = Thomas Dereham, of East Dereham, Norfolk.
  - Mary.
- 2nd, Sir Richard Sondes, of Throwley, Kent. He re-married Sarah Montague.

(No. 81 in Ped.)

Charles Scott, third son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Was Captain of 150 men, under his father, at the Camp at Northborne, 1589 and 1590. He was killed in battle abroad early in 1601. In 1591 he made a claim to be admitted as a Fellow of All Souls' College as akin to founder, a claim which was allowed on that score (see p. 184). He died without issue.

(No. 82 in Ped.) **Richard Scott,** fourth son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Was by profession a soldier, and is stated in the Scot's Hall records, like his brother Charles, to have been killed in the wars. Under date of 1625, a warrant, dated Nov. 15, and issued from Hampton Court, directs payment to Sir Harbottle Grimston and Richard Scott of the sums of £498 and £160, for fortifications of Harwich and Landguard Point.—*Calendar of State Papers* (*Domestic, Charles I.,* 1625 *to* 1636).

Date of death of Richard Scott is not known.

(No. 83* in Ped.) **Catherine,** daughter of Sir Rowland Hayward, knt., Lord Mayor of London 1570, wife of Richard Scott. (See p. 222.)

She afterwards married Sir Richard Sondes, of Throwley, father of Sir George Sondes, K.B., Earl of Faversham and Baron of Throwley, Kent. (See p. 222.)

ARMS OF HAYWARD.—*Gules, a lion rampant, argent, crowned or.*

(No. 84 in Ped.) **Robert Scott,** of Mersham, Kent, sixth son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Page extraordinary to James I. (See Pedigree, p. 225.)

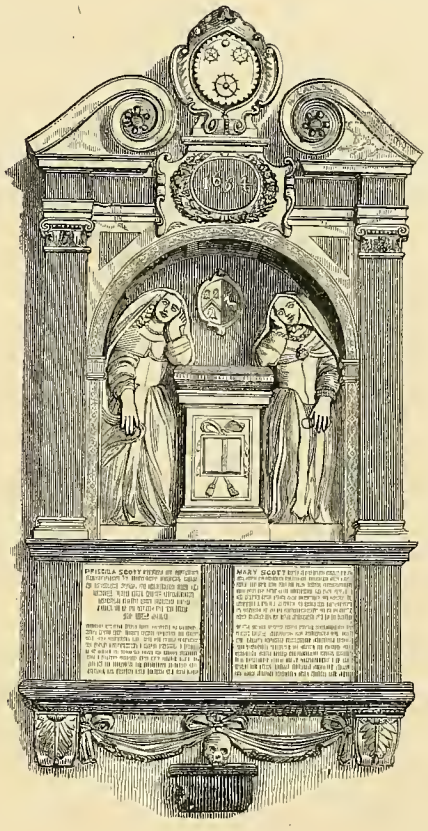
(No. 85 in Ped.) **Priscilla Honywood,** daughter of Sir Thomas Honywood, knt., first wife of Robert Scott, of Mersham, Esq. (See monumental inscription.[p])

(No. 86 in Ped.) **Mary Moyle,** daughter of John Moyle, of Buckwell, second wife to Robert Scott, of Mersham.

ARMS OF MOYLE.—*Gules, a mule within a bordure, argent.*

---

[p] In Smeeth Church, against the north wall of the chancel in the Scott chapel, is a monument in marble, with an inscription for Priscilla Scott, daughter of Sir Thomas Honywood, knt., and wife of Robert Scott, of Mersham, Esq., by whom she had nine children (she died in 1648, aged 52), and for Mary Scott, daughter of John Moyle, of Buckwell (Kent), Esq., wife of Robert Scott, Esq., ob. 1652, aged 54, which concludes as follows :—"*being formerly the wife of Richard Godfrey, Esq., of Wye, by whom she had twenty-two children, being the first who made Mary Honywood, of Charing, a great-grandmother in the fifth generation, and who lived to see* 366 *of her issue living.*" Robert Scott had no children by his second wife.



MONUMENT IN SMEETH CHURCH TO THE TWO WIVES OF ROBERT SCOTT, OF MERSHAM.

Mrs. Mary Honywood, of Charing, whose portrait by Cornelius Jansen, is from the Scot's Hall collection, was a remarkable personage. She lived latterly at Mark's Hall in Essex, and died 1620, aged 93, and saw of her own issue 16 children, 114 grandchildren, 228 great-grandchildren, and 9 great-great-grandchildren, a total of 367 descendants. In her youth she had braved the terrors of the reign of Mary Tudor, and, at the risk of fine and imprisonment, visited

the prisons, in which were confined some of the most zealous of the early Reformers. Foxe, the martyrologist, relates many pleasing anecdotes and circumstances of this truly Christian woman. She at midnight witnessed at

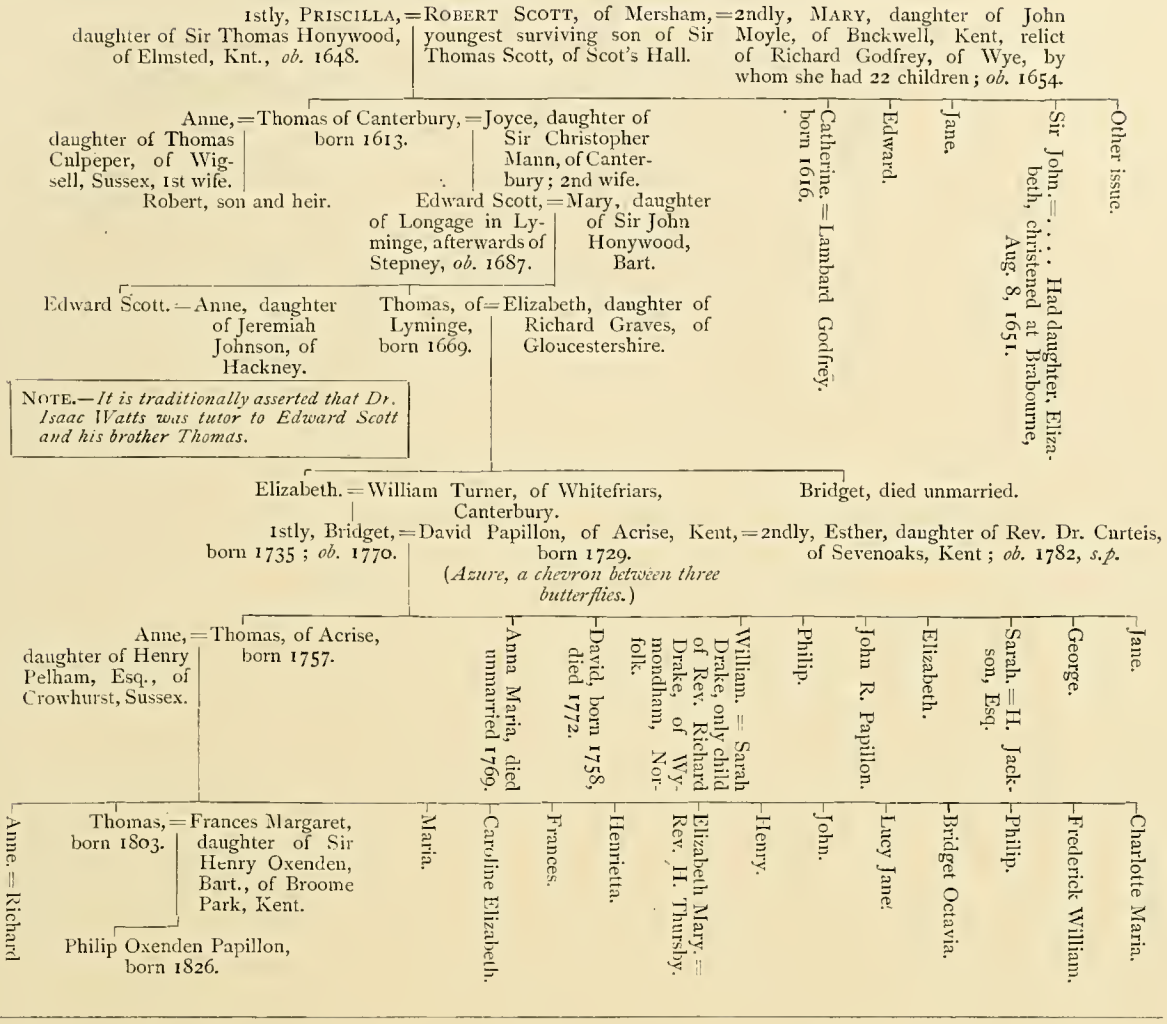
THE CELEBRATED MRS. MARY HONYWOOD. (BY CORNELIUS JANSEN.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

Newgate, the death at the stake of the saintly John Bradford, and on that occasion returned to her father's house in Crutched Friars, having lost one of her shoes in the pressure of the crowd. Later in life, being sick, as she believed, unto death, and entertaining a morbid fear as to her future state, she sent for John Foxe, who encouraged her with the hope and belief that the sickness from which she was then suffering would pass away, and prophetically

Robert Scott, of Mersham.

Pedigree of Scotts of Longage, Lyminge, Kent.


1stly, Priscilla, daughter of Sir Thomas Honywood, of Elmsted, Knt., ob. 1648.
Robert Scott, of Mersham, youngest surviving son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.
2ndly, Mary, daughter of John Moyle, of Buckwell, Kent, relict of Richard Godfrey, of Wye, by whom she had 22 children; ob. 1654.
Other issue.
Sir John, ... Had daughter, Elizabeth, christened at Brabourne, Aug. 8, 1651.
Jane.
Edward.
Catherine, born 1616, = Lambard Godfrey.
Anne, daughter of Thomas Culpeper, of Wigsell, Sussex, 1st wife.
Thomas of Canterbury, born 1613.
Joyce, daughter of Sir Christopher Mann, of Canterbury; 2nd wife.
Robert, son and heir.
Edward Scott, of Longage in Lyminge, afterwards of Stepney, ob. 1687.
Mary, daughter of Sir John Honywood, Bart.
Edward Scott.
Anne, daughter of Jeremiah Johnson, of Hackney.
Thomas, of Lyminge, born 1669.
Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Graves, of Gloucestershire.
Note.—It is traditionally asserted that Dr. Isaac Watts was tutor to Edward Scott and his brother Thomas.
Elizabeth.
William Turner, of Whitefriars, Canterbury.
Bridget, died unmarried.
1stly, Bridget, born 1735; ob. 1770.
David Papillon, of Acrise, Kent, born 1729. (Azure, a chevron between three butterflies.)
2ndly, Esther, daughter of Rev. Dr. Curteis, of Sevenoaks, Kent; ob. 1782, s.p.
Jane.
George.
Sarah, = H. Jackson, Esq.
Philip.
Elizabeth.
John R. Papillon.
Philip.
William, = Sarah Drake, only child of Rev. Richard Drake, of Wymondham, Norfolk.
David, born 1758, died 1772.
Anna Maria, died unmarried 1769.
Anne, daughter of Henry Pelham, Esq., of Crowhurst, Sussex.
Thomas, of Acrise, born 1757.
Charlotte Maria.
Frederick William.
Bridget Octavia.
Lucy Jane.
John.
Henry.
Elizabeth Mary, = Rev. H. Thursby.
Henrietta.
Frances.
Caroline Elizabeth.
Maria.
Thomas, born 1803.
Frances Margaret, daughter of Sir Henry Oxenden, Bart., of Broome Park, Kent.
Philip Oxenden Papillon, born 1826.
Anne, = Richard Hardinge, Esq.

told her that probably she would live to a great old age; whereupon Mrs. Honywood, who had at that instant a beautiful Venetian goblet in her hand, replied that she no more expected to rise from her bed of sickness than that the glass which she then threw against the wall would not be broken. The glass, however, chanced to fall against a chest, and fell to the ground without flaw or injury, and Mrs. Honywood, encouraged thereby, eventually recovered. The glass cup is still possessed by the family of Honywood at Mark's Hall, and regarded by them with appropriate veneration.

As an example of the extreme superstition which prevailed at this time, we print the following from amongst other interesting fragments from the Scot's Hall records. It is in the handwriting of Robert Scott, of Mersham, and endorsed as personally related by him :—

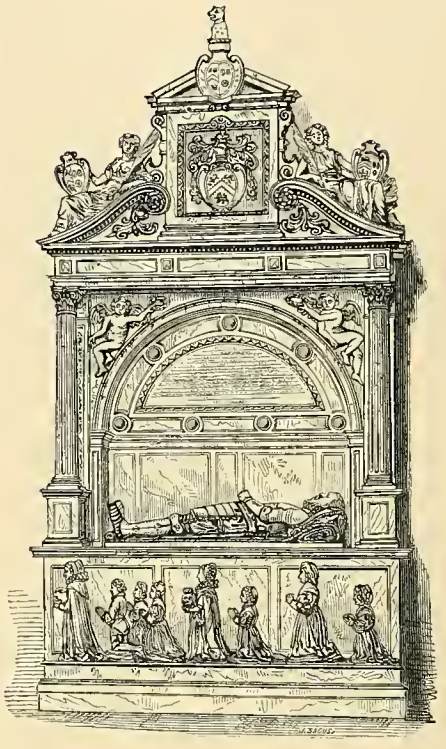
"Robert Scott, Esq., tenth (*but sixth surviving*) son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, knt., married Priscilla, one of the daughters of Sir Thomas Honywood, of Elmsmere, knt., by whom he had nine children. Remarkable accidents which happened to the said Robert Scott and Priscilla, his wife, before their marriage, at their marriage, and after their marriage, before they had children. At their marriage, which was in or about the year 1610, the said Robert Scott, having forgot his wedding-ring when they were to be married, the said Priscilla was married with a ring with death's head upon it. Within a short time after they were married the said Robert Scott and Priscilla, his wife, sojourning with Sir Edward at Austenhanger, the said Robert Scott about Bartholomewtide fell sick of a desperate malignant fever, and was given over for dead by all, in so much as that he was laid forth, the pillows pulled from

(Nos. 87, 88, and 89 in Ped.)

Elizabeth Scott, 4th daughter of Sir Thomas Scott of Scot's Hall, was the relict of John Knatchbull, (88), second son of Richard Knatchbull, of Mersham Hatch, by whom she had no issue. She married, secondly, Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle, Kent, (89), who died at Leeds Castle, July 21, 1628, *æt.* 62, by whom she had issue (see p. 222).

SMYTHE, OF LEEDS CASTLE, KENT.

ARMS.—*Azure, a chevron engrailed between three lions passant gardant.*



MONUMENT IN ASHFORD CHURCH TO SIR RICHARD SMYTHE.

The following inscription is recorded on the beautiful monument to the memory of Sir Richard Smythe, in the transept of Ashford Church :—

"Here lyeth the bodye of Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle, Kent, fourth son of Thomas Smythe, of Ostenhanger, in the County of Kent, Esquire. He married three wives who were widows, by the first of them, being a daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, he had his only son, Sir John Smythe, and two daughters, Elizabeth and Alice; and by his second wife he had his daughter Mary ; and by his last wife, who survived him, he had his daughter Margaret. He was Receiver of the Duchy of Cornwall, and Surveyor Generall and Commissioner for the revenewes assigned to Prince Charles for many years; he was a just officer in his accompts, which he effected with much contentment where he was trusted. His love to his wife and children and friends was extraordinary. He tenderly did respect them. His bounty to the poor was very great. He lived piously, and having an assured hope of a Joyefull Resurrection by a lively faith in the meritts of Jesus Christ, he rested from his labors on the 21st July, 1628, in the 63 yeare of his age."

---

under him, the curtains drawn, and the chamber windows set open, and ministers spoke to to preach the funeral service, and a book called for his funeral, that was to have been kept at Scot's Hall, where Sir John Scott, the eldest brother, then lived. At night he was watched with by his own servant, named Robins, and another servant in the house, and about midnight, they sitting together by the fire in the chamber, the said Robins said to the other, 'Methinks my master should not be dead, I will go and try,' and, presently starting up, went to the bedside where his master laid, and halloaed in his ear, and laid a feather to his nostrils, and perceived that he breathed, upon which he called them up in the house, and they warmed clothes and rubbed him, and brought him to life again. He lived afterwards to be upwards of seventy-two years of age, and to have nine children. Another remarkable passage was that his wife. Priscilla, being then very sick also, they told her that he was dead. She answered that she did not believe that God would part them so soon. The said Priscilla, when born, was laid for dead, no one minding her, but all the women went to help her mother, who was then like to die after her delivery; but at last an old woman taking the child in her arms, carried it downstairs, and, using means, brought her to life. The other women, missing the child, and hearing the old woman had carried her down to get life in her, laughed at her as thinking it impossible to bring the child to life ; but in a little time she brought it into the chamber, to the amusement of them all, and said she might live to be an old woman, and so she did to the age of fifty-two, and had nine children."

(Nos. 90 and 91 in Ped.)

Emeline, daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, married Sir Robert Edolphe (91), of Hinxhill, Knt., Sheriff of Kent 6th James I. In 1590 she was married, and died in 1592, without issue.

ARMS OF EDOLPHE.—*Ermine on a bend sable, three cinquefoils argent.*

There are many monuments to the Edolphe family in the Church of St. Mary, Hinxhill, Kent.

(Nos. 92, 93, and 94 in Ped.)

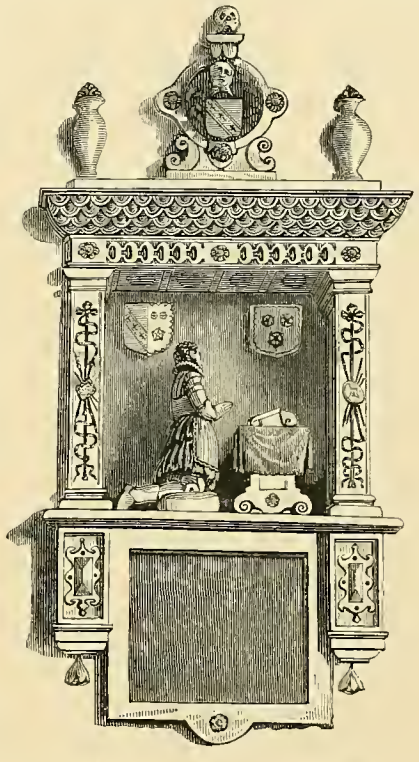
Anne, 2nd daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, married, 1stly (at Scot's Hall, in Nov., 1584), Richard Knatchbull, of Mersham, (93), (eldest son of Richard Knatchbull, of Mersham, Esq.), by whom she had issue Thomas Knatchbull.[q]

She married, 2ndly, Sir Henry Bromley, Knt., (94), son of Lord Chancellor Bromley, of Upton Severn, Worcestershire.[r] Sir Henry Bromley was implicated with his brother-in-law, Sir John Scott, and with his kinsman, Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, in Essex's alleged plot, and was imprisoned with them in the Tower of London for complicity therewith. (See p. 215.)

ARMS OF BROMLEY.—*Per fesse dancettée, quarterly, or and gules.*

---

[q] In Mersham Church is the following monumental inscription :—"Here lyeth the body of Richard Knatchbull, of Mersham, Esq., who died ye 20 Jany., 1590, being of ye age of 36 yeares. He was the eldest son of that Richard Knatchbull who lyeth at ye entrance of this chancell, who had 2 wives. The first was Joane Sheaff, by whom he had two sonnes, this Richard and John, and four daughters, Alice, Anne, Elizabeth, and Katherine. The second was Susan Greene, by whom he had four sonnes, Norton, Thomas, John, George, and two daughters, Ursula and Marie. The issue male by Joane Sheaf were thus matched—This Richard married Anne Scott, ye second daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, Knt., by whom he had Thomas Knatchbull ; and John married Elizabeth Scott, ye fourth daughter of ye said Sir Thomas Scott, who died without issue. The issue male by Susan Greene were thus matched—Norton had two wives, the 1st, Anne Wentworth, ye eldest daughter of Paul Wentworth, of Burneham, in ye County of Bucks, Esq^re. His second wife was Bridget, the second daughter of John Ashley, Esq^re., who was Master of the Jewell House and a gent of ye privie chamber to Queen Elizabeth. Thomas married Elinor, ye third daughter of ye said John Ashley, by whom he had seven sonnes, Richard, Norton, Francis, Thomas, Ashley, John, George, and foure daughters Bridget, Margaret, Susanna and Alice. John died unmarried ; George married Joane Gilbert, the daughter of Thomas Gilbert, Esq., who died without issue."



MONUMENT TO RICHARD KNATCHBULL IN MERSHAM CHURCH, KENT.

[r] On the north wall of the church at Upton-on-Severn are the arms of Bromley impaling those of Scott, and the following inscription :—"In the concave of this wall lyeth the body of Henry, son of Sir Henry Bromley, of Sharwardine Castle, in the County of Salop, not by the mother of Sir Thomas Bromley, his eldest son, but by Anne, the daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, in the County of Kent, but who, being joint purchaser of the Manor of Upton before marriage, her son Henry enjoyed it, according to the settlement."

(Nos. 95, 96, and 97 in Ped.) **Mary**, daughter of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, was twice married, 1stly, to Anthony St. Leger, of Ulcombe, Kent, (96), and, 2ndly, to Alexander Culpeper, of Wigsell, Sussex, (97).

Abstract of Pedigree of St. Leger, of Ulcombe (96).

Arms.—*Azure, a fret on a chief or.*

Sir Anthony St. Leger, Lord Deputy of Ireland, died 1599.

- Sir William, disinherited. His descendants settled in Ireland.
- Sir Warham St. Leger, Chief Governor of Munster, 1565, Knight Marshal of Munster, 1579. Killed in a duel with Hugh Maguire, Lord Fermanagh, 1599. = Ursula Neville, youngest daughter of George, Earl of Abergavenny, *ob.* 1575.
- Sir Anthony, Master of the Rolls in Ireland, and of Wierton, Kent.

other issue.

- Mary, daughter of Sir Thomas Scott. = Anthony, of Ulcombe, eldest son.
  - Mary, daughter of Sir Rowland Hayward. = Sir Warham St. Leger.
    - Numerous issue.
  - Anthony.
- Anne. = Thomas Digges, of Barham.
  - Sir Dudley Diggs, Master of the Rolls.

"Item. I give to Warham St. Leger and to Anthony St. Leger, the two sonnes of my daughter St. Leger, to each a piece of plate, price 20 nobles."—*Extract from Will of Sir Thomas Scott.*

Note.—*Sir Robert St. Leger, knt. (Sanctus Leodegarius), the companion in arms of the Conqueror, was the individual, according to family tradition, who supported that monarch with his arm when quitting the ship in which he had crossed the channel, when about to land in Sussex. This Sir Robert wrested the manor of Ulcombe from a pagan Dane, and here his descendants fixed their residence and where they lived for many centuries. They are no longer connected with the county of Kent.*

Abstract of Pedigree of Culpeper (97).

Arms.—*Argent, a bend engrailed gules.*

Agnes, daughter and eventually heir of John de Bedgebury. = John Culpeper, Sheriff of Kent, 7th Edward IV., died at Bedgebury, 1480.

Sir Alexander, of Bedgebury, Sheriff of Kent 15th and 22nd Henry VII. and 6th Henry VIII., Knight of King's Body Guard, Henry VIII.

- Thomas, eldest son.
- Alexander, of Wigsell, Sussex. = Mary Scott, daughter of Sir Thomas Scott.

Note.—*The family of Culpeper in early times was one of the most influential in the county of Kent. Members of this family more than once served the office of Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle, and frequently the office of Sheriff of the county. A Peer of the realm and a Baronet are extinct in this family, which is now no longer connected with the county of Kent.*

(No. 98 in Ped.) **Reginald Scott**, a younger son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

He was Trenchmaster at the Camp at Northbourne, under his father, on the occasion of the assembling of the Kentish Forces in 1588 and 1589, in expectation of a second invasion by Philip of Spain. He appears to have died in the lifetime of his father.

(Nos. 99 and 100 in Ped.) **Sir William Scott,** a son of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, Ambassador to Turkey and Florence, said to have married Mary, (100), daughter of Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham.

The name of William Scott does not appear in Sir Thomas Scott's will, or in the Scot's Hall Records, but an entry appears in Brabourne register, to the effect, that William Scott, son of Sir William, was buried in that church on February 3, 1612, and in the Pedigree in Brit. Mus. Add. MSS., 14,311, fo. 32, the name of William Scott is given as a son of Sir Thomas, *who had in all seventeen children*. For the accompanying pedigree of this man's issue we are indebted to the late Mr. Martin B. Scott, of Cleveland. Ohio, who copied it, many years ago, from one in the possession of the Rev. Dr. Jenks, of Boston, U.S., descended in the female line from Richard Scott, of Providence.

Thus it would appear that not only a son of Richard Scott (see Pedigree, No. 45*), but also a son of Sir William Scott, of the Scot's Hall line, emigrated to America, and respectively founded families in Long Island (New York), Massachusetts, Ohio, and Providence.

Sir William Scott. = Mary, daughter of Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham.

John Scott. = ..., daughter of Sir George Wortup. — William, buried at Brabourne 1612.

John, of "*Ashford*," Long Island. = Deborah, daughter of Thurston Raynor, of Suffolk. — Joseph. — Thomas, living 1663.

For account of this man, see petition to Charles II., set out in the "Hutchinson Papers."

John.

Note.—*This branch of the family said to be extinct.*

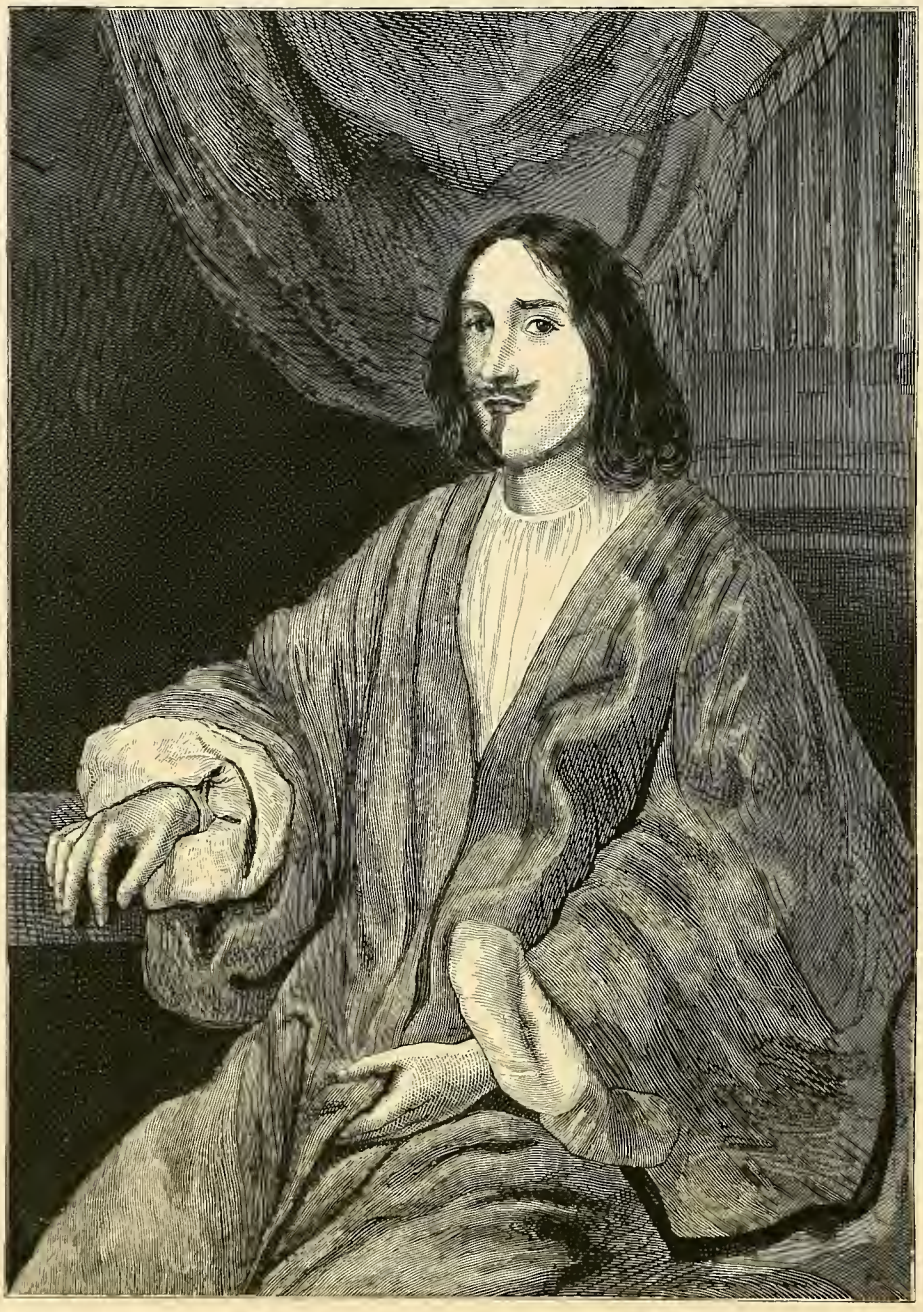
(Nos. 101, 102, & 103 in Ped.) We give the names of Joseph, (101), Anthony, (102), and Benjamin, (103), three sons of Sir Thomas Scott, as they so appear in an old pedigree, No. 14,311, fo. 32, Add. MSS. in the British Museum. Although these names do not occur either in the Scot's Hall Records or in Sir Thomas Scott's will, they may have died young, or in the lifetime of their father.

(No. 104 in Ped.) **Edward Scott,** son and heir of Sir Edward Scott, K.B., of Scot's Hall and Nettlested.

This gentleman does not appear to have been in the profession of arms, but to have devoted his time to literary pursuits. He was a Doctor of Civil Law of the University of Oxford, and one of the Committee of Safety for the Lathe of Aylesford, appointed by Parliament (1649-50) during the Civil wars. From records in existence, he does not seem to have taken much interest, or to have been actively engaged in its proceedings. It was shortly after the death of his father (a staunch Royalist) that Scot's Hall was searched for arms in the early part of the summer of 1648, on the occasion of the Kentish rising of the principal nobility and gentry in the county, on the refusal of the Parliament to permit them to present a loyal petition in favour of the King and the constitutional privileges of Lords and Commons. This search was instituted at the instance of Colonels Hamon and Hatton, Royalist leaders, on their successful march to take possession of the Castle of Dover and the Fleet in the harbour there. It may be mentioned that at this time a considerable store of arms was at Scot's Hall, accumulated since the death of Sir Thomas Scott, the Commander

Edward Scott.

in Chief of the Kentish forces. A few years later, Scot's Hall was a second time (unsuccessfully) searched for arms, at the instance of a detachment of soldiers from the Parliamentary army, under orders from Sir William Waller, and it is on the occasion of this second search that the neighbouring church of Brabourne, and Sir Thomas Scott's

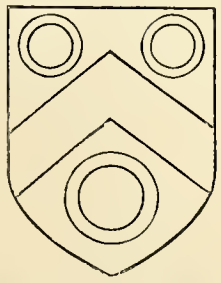


EDWARD SCOTT, ESQ., OF SCOT'S HALL, D.C.L.

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

sepulchral monument therein, were desecrated. Edward Scott married the Lady Catherine, one of the daughters of George, Baron Goring, of Hurstpierpoint, Sussex, and Earl of Norwich. He died at Scot's Hall, and was buried at Smeeth, on May 22, 1663.

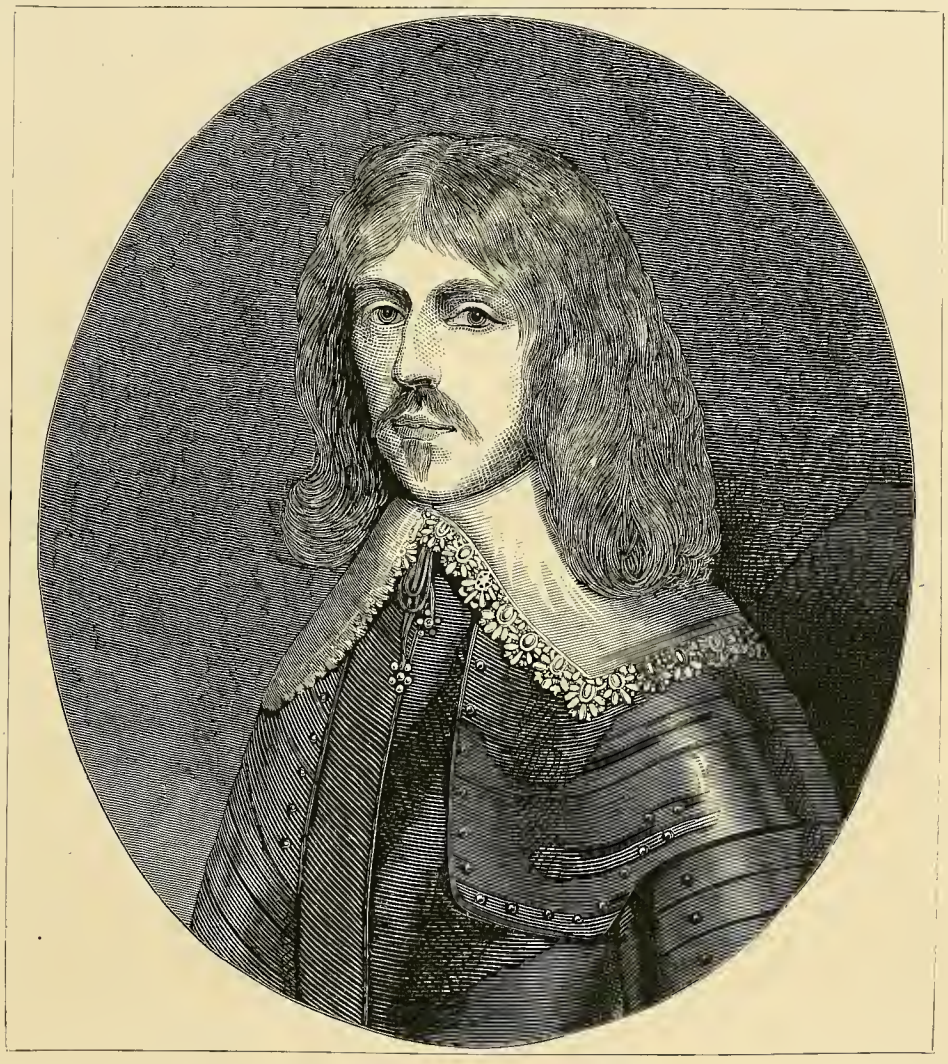
(No. 105 in Ped.) **Catherine,** third daughter of George Goring, Earl of Norwich (by Mary, daughter of Edward Neville, 6th Baron Abergavenny), and co-heir of her brother, Charles Goring, last Earl of Norwich, wife of Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, Esq.



GORING, EARL OF NORWICH.

ARMS OF GORING.—*Argent, a chevron between three annulets, gules.*

The married life of Edward Scott and Catherine Goring was infelicitous and unfortunate. Differing in their political views at a time when party



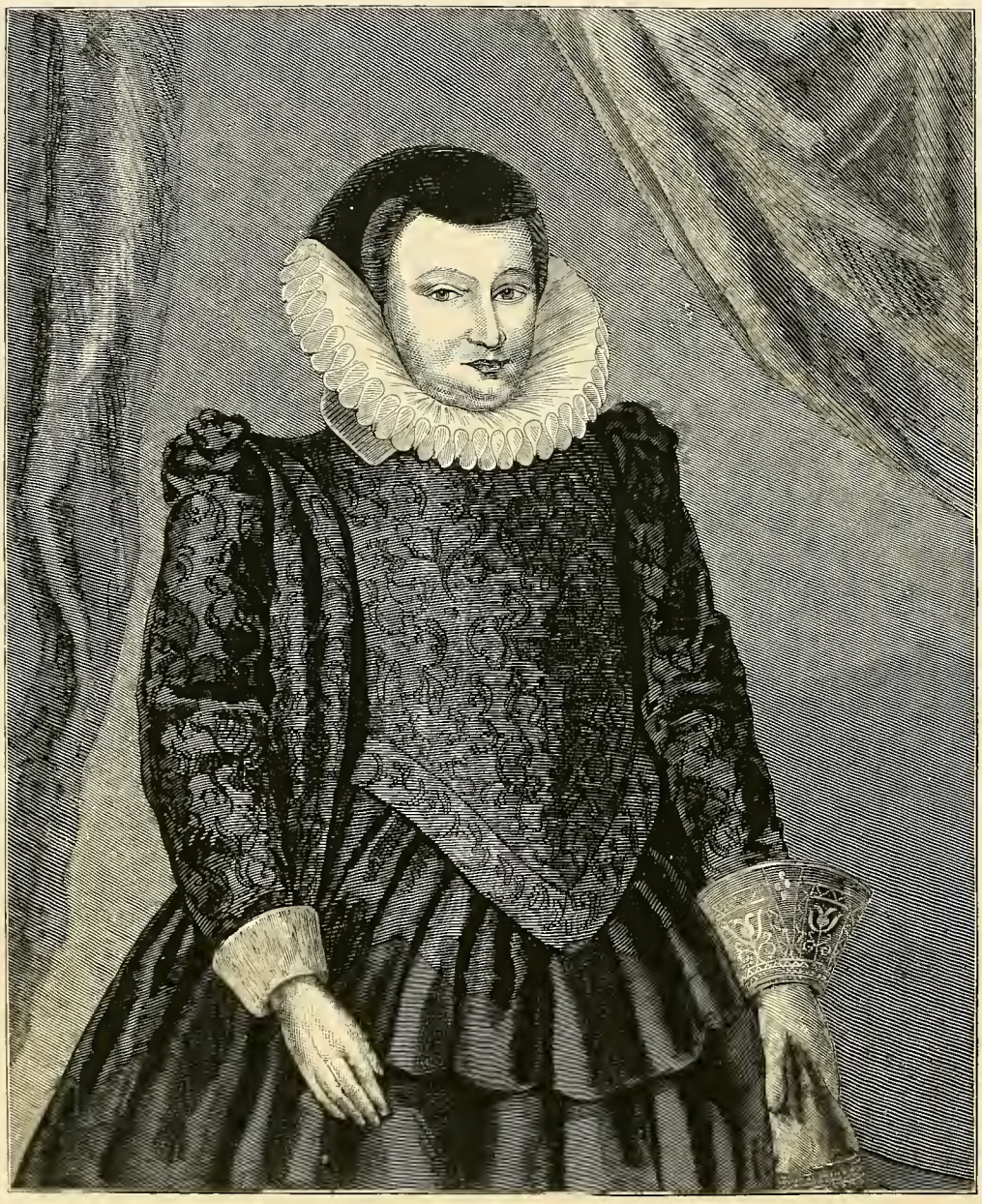
GEORGE GORING, EARL OF NORWICH, COMMANDER OF KENTISH ROYALISTS, 1648. BY CORNELIUS JANSEN.

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

feeling in favour of King or Parliament ran high, perhaps higher than during the Wars of the Roses, they appear from the first to have been unsuited by their dissimilarity of character, tastes, and pursuits. Lady Catherine Scott for twelve years lived apart from her husband, and it was during this

Edward Scott. period that suspicions arose (referred to by both Pepys and Evelyn in their Diaries), that that lady's intimacy with Prince Rupert had been of too intimate a character.

Be this, however as it may, proceedings which had been instituted by her husband in the Ecclesiastical Courts for a divorce were afterwards withdrawn, and he, before his death and in his Will,



THE COUNTESS OF NORWICH, WIFE OF GEORGE GORING, EARL OF NORWICH. BY CORNELIUS JANSEN.

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

acknowledged his son Thomas and left him heir to his estate. Lady Catherine Scott survived her husband many years, and died in 1686.[8]

[8] Lord Goring, Earl of Norwich (whose portrait, with that of his lady and their son, Colonel George Goring, we engrave from the Scot's Hall pictures), had been bred to the Court, and was early in life in the household of Henry.

Edward Scott, D.C.L.

Extract from Diurnal of the Siege of Colchester (p. 99), by the Rev. G. F. Townsend, M.A. :—

"Thursday, August 10, 1648. An affecting incident occurred to-day. The Governor, the Earl of Norwich (the Lady Norwich being newly dead), received a visit from his daughter, the Lady Catherine Scott. This lady, attended by Lady Stapleton, obtained permission from the Lord General (*Fairfax*) to pass the lines, upon condition that she did not go into the town. Lord Norwich met and

---

Prince of Wales, son of James I. At the request of Buckingham, he was by Charles I. raised to the peerage, firstly in 1629, as Baron Goring of Hurstpierpoint, and, 2ndly, in 1645 as Earl of Norwich. He was the Commander of the Kentish Royalist forces in 1648, a short account of which rising we append. His son, Colonel George Goring, was a staunch but rash supporter of the Stuarts, and fought manfully in their interests at Portsmouth, Maidstone, Colchester, and Oxford. After the surrender of Charles I. at the latter city, he retired to the Low Countries, and became Lieutenant-General to the Spanish forces there. He married Letitia, daughter of the Earl of Cork, and died without issue in 1662, just before his father. His younger brother, Charles (Earl of Norwich on the death of his father), had been bred in the unwholesome atmosphere of Charles' Court, and amidst its excitement and troubles, went into exile and died without issue, a monk in Spain, in 1670, and the Earldom of Norwich thus became extinct. Before the troubles of King and Parliament the family of Goring, Earls of Norwich, were comparatively wealthy, but on their extinction in the male line they appear to have been utterly ruined by their devotion and loyalty to Charles I. At the commencement of that monarch's career they possessed Danny Park and manor (the latter one of the largest in Sussex); Goring House, which formerly stood on the site of Buckingham Palace; the Forest House at Leyton, Essex (still in existence), and manorial residences in Brentford and in Wales; all which were alienated in two generations. Buckingham House, which succeeded Goring House, was purchased and rebuilt by George III. as a residence for Princess Charlotte, and it was said to have been cheaply erected, having been "built for a sovereign and furnished for a crown."

COLONEL GEORGE GORING, SON OF GEORGE GORING, EARL OF NORWICH.

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

Edward Scott, D.C.L.

conversed with her for two hours outside the sally-port in Head-Gate. It was to all appearance a painful interview. Lady Catherine Scott was accompanied by Quartermaster Gravener, Captain Denison, and Ensign Trower, and a guard of soldiers. These were entertained with a collation of horseflesh stewed in claret, and a bottle or two of wine, the best we could treat them with."

Extract from Diary of John Evelyn, 12th July, 1649 :—

"From Gravesend I tooke post immediately to Dover, where I arrived by 9 in the morning, and about 11 that night went on board a bark, guarded by a pinnace of 8 guns; this being the first time the packquett boate had obtained a convoy, having been several times before been pillaged. We had a good passage, tho' chased for some hours by a pyrate, but he durst not attaq (*sic*) our fregat, and we then chas[d] him till he got under the protection of the castle of Calais. It was a small privateer belonging to the Prince of Wales. Lady Catherine Scot, daughter of the Earl of Norwiche, follow[d] us in a shallop, with Mr. Arthur Slingsby, who left England incognito. At the entrance of the towne (Calais), the Lieut. Governor, being on his horse with the Guards, let us passe courteously."

Evelyn, 27th June, 1650 :—

"The next morning by 4 we sat out for Canterbury, where I met with my lady Catherine Scot, whom that very day 12 months before I met at sea going for France. She had been visiting Sir Thomas Peyton, not far off (*Peytons of Denton, near Canterbury*), and would needs carry me in her coach to Gravesend. We dined at Sittingbourne, came late to Gravesend, and so to Deptford, taking leave of my lady about 4 next morning."

It may not be considered out of place, in connection with the family of Goring and the county of Kent, to give a short account of the KENTISH RISING IN 1648.

For some time previously to the year 1648, a general discontent and uneasiness had prevailed at the arbitrary and unconstitutional measures forced upon the country by the Long Parliament. The functions of the judges had been usurped. In every county a Parliamentary Committee had been appointed, and the army served the political behests of the Parliament, and was employed by them to suppress the rising discontent of the nation, which clamoured for the rights of the King (then in custody) and the constitutional usages of Parliament.

Such a Committee was appointed in 1643 for Kent, and consisted principally of Deputy Lieutenants, who were all men of standing in the county, and at that time of moderate views, although a few years later we find some of their number on the side of the Royalists or pronounced Parliament men. This Committee of Safety consisted of Sir Thomas Walsingham, Sir Anthony Weldon, Sir John Sedley, Sir Edward Hales, Sir Humphrey Tufton, Sir Henry Heyman, Sir Michael Livesey,[f] Sir Henry Vane, Sir Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, Sir Edward Bois, Sir George Sondes, Sir John Honywood, Sir Richard Hardress, Augustine Skinner, and about 20 other gentlemen known in the county, and more or less active in the Parliament cause.

In 1647 a manifesto or "Declaration of many thousands of the City of Canterbury and of the County of Kent," was posted on the walls of Canterbury and elsewhere, which, amongst other statements, asserted that the Parliament and its Committee "have suppressed the true Protestant religion and suffered all kinds of heresies and errors in the kingdom, have imprisoned and silenced the orthodox clergy," etc., etc.

At Christmas of this year, in pursuance of the orders of that Parliament which had denied the observance of Christmas and all festivals, the Mayor of Canterbury and certain members of the committee for Kent opposed an attempt at celebrating divine service in the cathedral, and forbad the citizens to close their shops. This led to a disturbance and riot on the part of an anti-Parliament mob, who raised the cry, "For GOD, King Charles, and Kent." The mob was suppressed, the leaders being sent to Leeds Castle, at that time a prison for Royalists or malignants as they were termed. Some of the more active of the Committee of Safety removed the gates of the city, and placed the entire county in a state of siege and under proscription as malignant, and suggested that courts-martial could best deal with the disaffection that then so widely existed, and proceeded at once to sequestrate estates in all directions, charging their proprietors with treason for expressing sympathy with their unfortunate king. Such was the state of feeling in the county when, on the 11th of May following, a special assize to try delinquents was held at Canterbury, at which many of the Committee were present on the bench. The jury being empanelled, Judge Wild addressed to them a charge so furious and bloodthirsty, that the mob were ready to destroy him. The Grand Jury twice threw out the bill, and thereupon drew up a petition to Parliament expressive of their grievances as follows :—

1stly. "That their gracious Sovereign, King Charles, should at once be admitted in safety and honour to treat with both houses of Parliament for the settling of the peace of both Church and Commonwealth and of his own just rights."

2ndly. "For the disbanding of the army under Lord Fairfax."

---

[f] Sir Michael Livesey signed the warrant of execution of Charles I., and retired to the Low Countries before the Restoration, where he lived under a disguised name. He was there challenged by a Kentish gentleman (who had formerly suffered injury at his hands) to draw and defend himself in the name of the King. On repudiating his name and refusing to draw, he was cut to pieces by the Dutch mob, when informed he was one of the murderers of Charles I.

Edward Scott, D.C.L.

3rdly. "That according to the fundamental constitution of the Commonwealth, they may for the future be governed and judged by the established laws of the kingdom, and not otherwise."

This petition was signed by 200 gentlemen of Kent, and 20,000 names were attached to it in a few days. The petitioners assembled at Rochester on 29th of May, and marched at once to Westminster with petition and sword in hand, and there they were largely augmented in numbers by accessions from other counties. Fairfax refused them access to the House, and by his superior trained bands they were forced back on Greenwich and Blackheath, and eventually to Rochester. At this time the Royalists, under Edward Hales, Esq., and Colonels Hamon and Hatton, numbered about 1000 horse and 6000 foot, and they not only secured all the castles and strongholds in the county, but also Dover Castle and the Fleet, which declared for King and Parliament.

It was at this successful crisis of affairs in 1648 (the Kentish army being proscribed as traitors), that they adopted the leadership of George Goring, Earl of Norwich, a man of great courage and loyalty, but by no means equal in military tactics or strategy to his opponent, Fairfax, whose soldiers were trained and disciplined, whilst the Kentish malcontents consisted mainly of raw recruits fresh from the fields. From the moment that Lord Goring undertook the command, which he was, but not from disloyal motives, reluctant to assume, the fortunes of the Kentish men were on the wane. The policy of their leader had been to increase the number and efficiency of his band and to avoid a conflict with Fairfax and his disciplined army. Lord Goring's troops, however, made a stand at Farleigh Bridge, and a final retreat to Maidstone, already in the hands of Fairfax, and from thence in haste to Blackheath, hoping to march through the city, where the Royalists had many sympathisers; but in this they were disappointed by the precautions taken by Cromwell. Finding the presentation of the petition impossible, they crossed into Essex, no longer petitioners, but soldiers prepared to fight for their constitutional rights; and here they were closely followed by Fairfax, and after encamping at Brentwood and Chelmsford, threw themselves into the walled town of Colchester, which Lord Goring entered on the evening of the 12th of June, 1648, Fairfax making his appearance and laying siege to the town the following day. From that day until the 28th of August following, the beleaguered army, consisting of Londoners, and men from the counties of Kent, Essex, and Herts, as well as the townspeople, suffered unparalleled hardships. Cats, rats, and dogs were the shifts for food to which the besieged were reduced; 780 horses are said to have been killed and eaten, until at last not a dog was left in the famine-stricken town, nor was it until the patient but loyal inhabitants of all classes, reduced to starvation, clamoured at the quarters of the Royalist commander, that Lord Goring surrendered to General Fairfax on the 28th of August, 1648. It will always be matter of reproach that Fairfax disregarded the hitherto chivalrous law of nations, and directed that four of the leaders of the Royalists should be instantly shot within the castle walls without any sort of trial. Lords Goring, Loughborough, and Capel beseeched Fairfax to deal with them in a similar manner, deeming themselves (if at all) equally deserving of a similar fate; but to this request Fairfax turned a deaf ear, and these unfortunate and chivalrous noblemen were dealt with by the illegal Parliament that had but recently abolished the Upper House, and determined on the death of the Sovereign. Indeed, within a short time after the unconstitutional and bloody tragedy of the execution of Charles, his illustrious companions in misfortune and arms were, amidst universal execration, arraigned before the Long Parliament. The Duke of Hamilton and Lords Hotham and Capel were left without reprieve to the judgment of the court, whilst Lord Goring only saved his neck by the casting vote of the Speaker, Lenthal; but his estates were confiscated and himself and his sons, George and Charles, who were with him at Colchester, were banished the realm. He alone, however, returned after the Restoration and died in 1662 at his house at Brentford.

The hopes and fears of the whole nation were thus centred on the events passing in loyal Colchester, and in sympathy with it many pasquinades were directed against "Noll," "the Saints," and the Parliament army. "Hold out then stiffly, Colchester, and be a miracle to all posteritie, for the High Court of Rebels hath decreed that whoesoever loves their King shall bleed."

Extract from Pedigree of Goring, Earl of Norwich.

Honora Grey. = Henry Denny, of Chelston, Bucks, and Waltham Abbey, Essex.

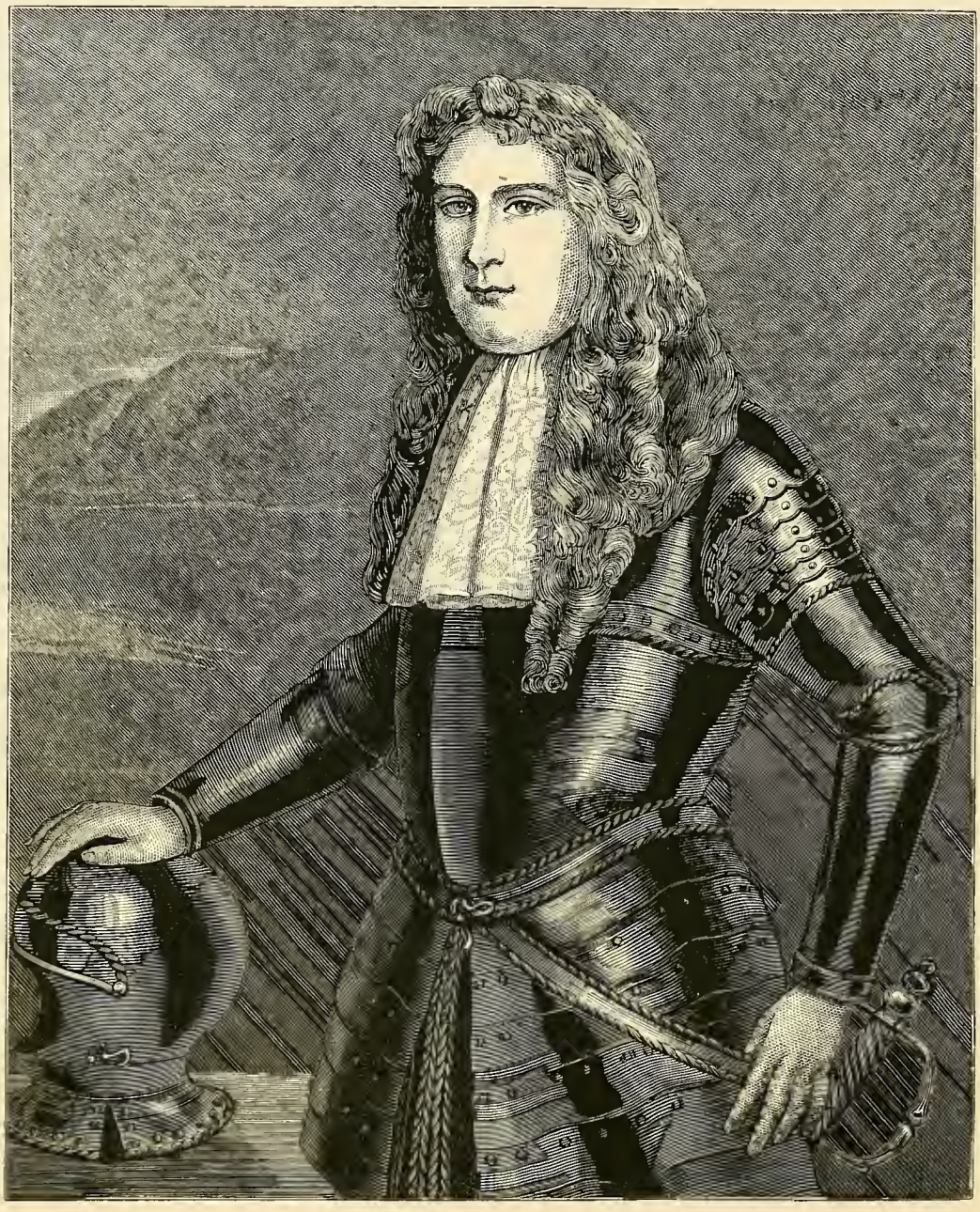
- Henry Denny, Earl of Norwich.
- Catherine. = Sir George Fleetwood.
- Anne. = George Goring, of Danny Park, Hurstpierpoint, Sussex.

Mary, daughter of Edward Neville, Baron Abergavenny. (*See portrait.*) = George, Lord Goring, Earl of Norwich, died 1662. (*See portrait.*)

- Colonel Geo. Goring, eldest son, died 1662, *s.p.* — *See portrait.* = Letitia, daughter of the Earl of Cork.
- Charles, last Earl of Norwich, died *s.p.* 1670. = A daughter of .... Leman, Esq., widow of Sir Richard Baker, of Sissinghurst, Kent.
- Lucy. = Sir Drue Dene, of Maplested, Essex.
- Elizabeth. = William, Lord Bereton, Ireland.
- Catherine. = Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall. *A quo Scot's Hall family.*
- Diana. = Thomas Covert, of Slaugham, Sussex; and, 2ndly, Sir Endymion Porter.
- Mary.

NOTE.—*The Earldom of Norwich became extinct at the death, in* 1670, *without issue, of Charles, the last Earl of the Goring and Denny line. Charles II., however, within two years, conferred the Earldom of Norwich on Henry Howard, Earl Marshal, and afterwards Duke of Norfolk, in which family it still continues.*

(No. 106 in Ped.) **Sir Thomas Scott,** of Scot's Hall, knight, only son and heir of Edward Scott, D.C.L.
Knighted in 1663.



SIR THOMAS SCOTT, KNT. (BY RILEY.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

Little is known of this gentleman, except that, like his father, he was appointed by the Council of State to represent the Committee of Safety (in 1649-50) for the Lathe of Aylesford, in Kent. He died about 1688, but where buried is not known.

Sir Thomas Scott.

STATE PAPERS.—Domestic Series, 1649—1650, p. 265.

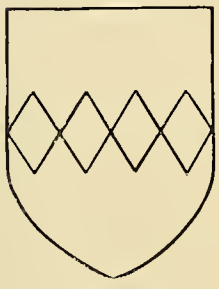
"Whitehall, Aug. 7, 1649.—The Council of State to Col. Blount, Captain Skinner, and Mr. Dixwell. According to your request we have desired the Lord General that the soldiers in your county may use all civility and pay quarters, and that he would order the Governor of Dover Castle to repair to his charge.

"We think Queenborough Castle and Ostenhanger House should be used as prisons for delinquents. We have added Mr. Scott, jun., to Sir Henry Heyman (George Hall), to Captain Augustine, and Captain William Skinner in Aylesford Lathe."

Extract from Evelyn's Diary, August 2, 1663.

"This evening I accompanied Mr. Treasurer and Vice-Chamberlayne Carteret to his lately married son-in-law, Sir Thomas Scott, to Scot's Hall. We took barge as far as Gravesend, thence by post to Rochester, whence in a coach and six horses to Scot's Hall, a right noble seat uniformly built with a handsome gallery. It stands in a park well stored with land fat and good. We were exceedingly feasted by the young knight, and in his pretty chapel heard an excellent sermon by his chaplain. In the afternoon preached the learned Sir Norton Knatchbull, who has a noble seat hard by and a plantation of stately fir-trees. In the churchyard of the parish church (Brabourne) measured an overgrown yew-tree that was 18 of my paces in compass, out of some branches of which, torn by the winds, were sawed goodly planks. We returned to Sir Norton's, whose house is likewise in a park. This gentleman is a worthy person and learned critic, especially in Greek and Hebrew."

(No. 107 in Ped.) **Caroline,** second daughter of the Right Hon. Sir George Carteret, Knt. and Bart., Vice-Chamberlain of the King's (Charles I.) Household,[u] wife to Sir Thomas Scott of Scot's Hall, by whom she had issue.



CARTERET.

Arms of Carteret.—*Gules, four fusils in fesse, argent.*

The following extracts are from Pepys' Diary (Lord Braybrook's edition):—

"30th July, 1663. To Woolwich, and there came Sir George Carteret, and then by water back to Deptford, where we dined with him at his house. I find his little daughter Betty [*Caroline—Elizabeth died unmarried*], that was in hanging sleeves but a month or two ago, and is a very little young child, married, and to whom but young Scott, son to Madame Catherine Scott that was so long in law, and at whose trial I was with her husband, he pleading that it was unlawfully got and would not own it, but it seems a little before his death he did own the child, and hath left him his estate not long since (see pp. 231 and 232). So Sir George Carteret hath struck up for a sudden match with him for his little daughter. He hath about £2000 per annum, and it seems Sir G. C. hath by this means over-reached Sir H. Bennett [*created Earl of Arlington 14th March*, 1664], who did endeavour

---

[u] Sir George Carteret was a naval officer of high reputation in the service of Charles I. He was Comptroller of the Navy and Governor of Jersey at the breaking out of the civil war. He was so much respected by all parties that the Parliament appointed him as Vice-Admiral of the fleet under the Earl of Warwick, a position he is supposed to have resigned at the express request of the King. Lord Clarendon observes, "His interest and reputation in the Navy was so great, and his diligence and dexterity in command so eminent, that it was generally believed he would, against whatsoever the Earl of Warwick could have done, have preserved the major part of the fleet in their duty to the King." He was Vice-Chamberlain to the Prince of Wales, and on his retirement from command of the fleet, retired to his patrimony in Jersey, and there afforded an asylum to the Prince, Lord Clarendon, and other refugees of distinction. He defended Jersey against the Parliamentarians, and only surrendered at the request of Charles II. He was in immediate attendance on that monarch on his triumphant entry into London, and was next day sworn of his Privy Council, and made Vice-Chamberlain of the King's Household, and Treasurer of the Navy. There are many references to this distinguished man in Evelyn and Pepys' Diaries, who, so far as their testimony is concerned, appears in the many appointments he held in connection with the State to have maintained throughout a high character for integrity, and that in a Court ruled by women and notoriously corrupt.

Lady (Caroline) Scott.

to get this gentleman for a sister of his. By this means Sir George Carteret hath married two daughters this year, both very well.".

LADY (CAROLINE) SCOTT. (BY JOHN RILEY.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

"Sept. 17th, 1665. And Mr. Sidney Montague [*brother of Edward Montagu, first Earl of Sandwich*] is sick of a desperate fever at my Lady Carteret's, at Scot's Hall." [*Sir Philip Carteret, son of Sir George, married Jemima, sister to Edward Montagu, Lord Sandwich.*]

"June 28th, 1667. Sir George Carteret did tell me that the business was done between him and my Lord Anglesey, that himself is to have the other's place of Deputy Treasurer of Ireland (which is a place of honour and great profit, being far better than the Treasurer's, my Lord of Cork's), and to give the other his of Treasurer of the Navy; that the King, at his earnest entreaty, did with much unwillingness, but with owing of great obligations to him for his faithfulness and long service to him and his father, grant his desire."

Lady Caroline Scott, on the death of her husband, about the year 1688, re-married Duncombe Abercrombie, Esq. She died at Oxford, and was buried at Brabourne, 2nd December, 1722.

Extract from Carteret Pedigree.

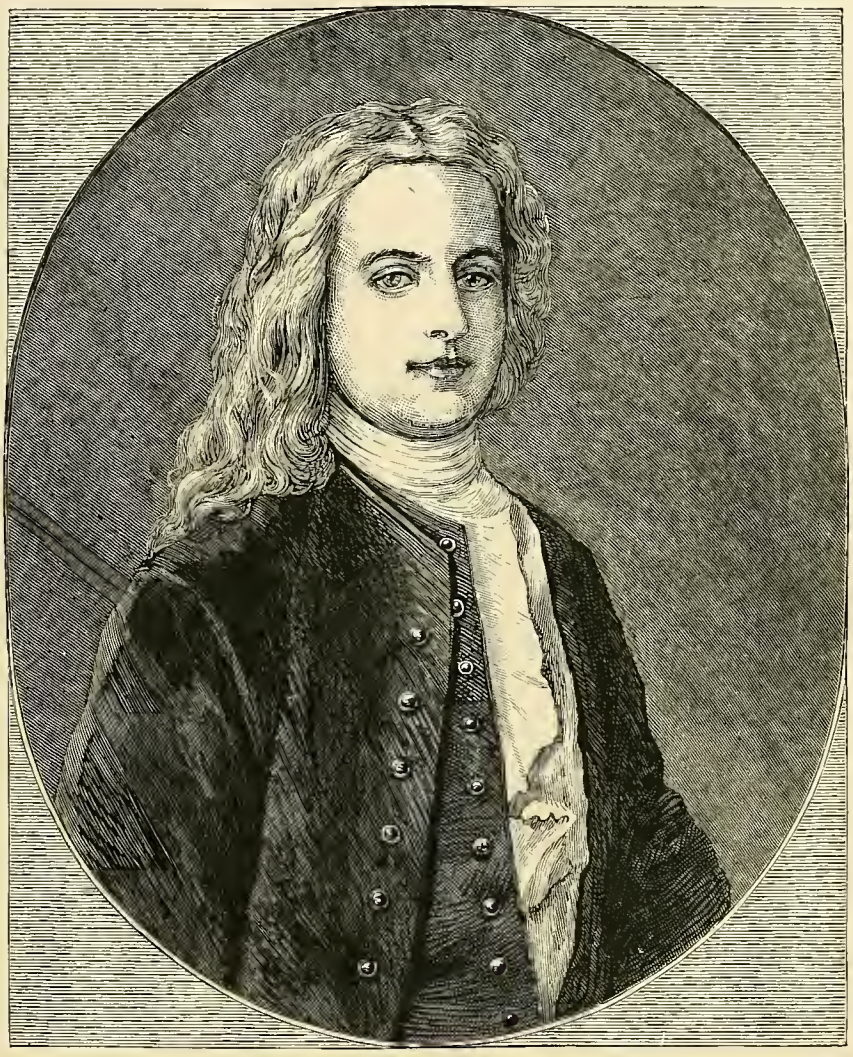
Sir George Carteret, Bart., = Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Philip Carteret, Knt., of St. Ouen, Jersey.
Vice-Chamberlain to Charles II.; M.P. for Portsmouth. Died 1679.

- Sir Philip, Bart., = Jemima, daughter of Edward Montagu, first Earl of Sandwich. — whose son, Sir George, second baronet, was created Baron Carteret, of Hawnes; *a quo* John, second Lord Carteret, Earl Granville, and the Marquis of Bath.
- James, Captain R.N.
- George.
- Anne. = Sir Nicholas Slaning, K.B.
- Caroline. = Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall. *A quo* Scot's Hall family. — She re-married Duncombe Abercromby, Esq.
- Elizabeth, died unmarried.

Sir Robert Atkins, = Louisa Margaretta.
of Sapperton, co. Gloucester.

(No. 108 in Ped.) **George Scott,** second but eldest surviving son and heir of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

Born at Scot's Hall, 10th July, 1673. Buried at Brabourne, 1st March, 1728. Was appointed in 1685 Captain of a company of foot under Heneage, Earl of Winchelsea, Lord Lieutenant of Kent in that year; and a Deputy-Lieutenant and Justice of the Peace for the Lathe of Shepway.



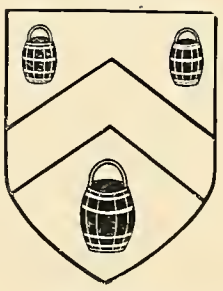
GEORGE SCOTT, ESQ., OF SCOT'S HALL. (BY KNELLER.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

The fortunes of the family at Scot's Hall had been visibly on the wane during the two generations immediately preceding the entailed occupation of that ancient mansion by the subject of our memoir. The Scott records exhibit during that period numerous instances of the alienation of manorial estates and possessions since the death of Sir Thomas Scott in 1594. There can be little doubt that the necessity for an adequate provision for his very numerous issue in the first instance, and subsequently the cost to his successor of the maintenance of his Parliamentary status, in addition to the losses attributed to the maintenance of the Royal cause during the civil wars of King and Parliament, had each in turn its influence in this direction. Edward Scott and his son, Sir Thomas, reputed wealthy, had married into noble families, who brought no addition to the family resources. It is therefore not surprising to find at the period of which we are writing, that manor after manor, including, among others, those of Sevington,[v] Nettlested, and Pympe's Court, etc., were alienated; that in 1698 (10 William III.), an Act of Parliament was passed to enable trustees to sell part of the estates of George Scott, to pay debts and settle other parts of his estates, etc.; and that subsequently, by another Act (8 Anne, cap. 22), 1709, he was enabled to sell the

[v] *The manor of Coningsbrook in Sevington (in Chart and Longbridge hundred), in which the subordinate manor of Sevington was situated, was held of the Honour of Dover by ward of the castle there. This manor, like that of*

remainder of his estates, for the payment of his debts and other purposes. It was during its occupation by this gentleman that Scot's Hall was much diminished in size, and the beautiful mansion of Nettlested Court fell into ruinous decay, its gateways and quadrangles demolished, and the materials sold. It is likewise asserted that at this time the magnificent stained glass of early fifteenth century work, that graced the windows of the church of Brabourne, and placed there by the pious munificence of his ancestor, was sold, or permitted to be sold by him, to enable the churchwardens to reglaze the windows of the church and effect other repairs to that structure.



PEMBERTON.

(No. 109 in Ped.)

Anne, eldest daughter of the Right Hon. Sir Francis Pemberton, knt., Lord Chief Justice of England, 1st wife of George Scott, Esq., of Scot's Hall, by whom she had issue. She died in childbirth, Feb. 22, 1705, and was buried in the church of Brabourne.

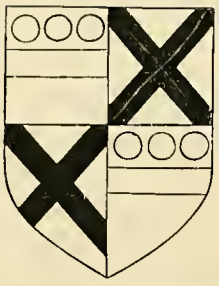
ANNE PEMBERTON, FIRST WIFE OF GEORGE SCOTT, ESQ. (KNELLER.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton Kent, Esq.

ARMS OF PEMBERTON.—*Argent, a chevron between three buckets, sable, bail and hoops or.*

Brabourne, was in the possession of Hugh de Montfort at the Domesday survey, and passed by blood descent to the powerful family of De Criols, and eventually to the Scotts of Scot's Hall, with whom it remained for many generations, until sold by George Scott, about the latter end of the reign of George I., to Sir Philip Boteler, of Teston, who subsequently likewise purchased the manor and mansion of Nettlested.

(No. 110 in Ped.)

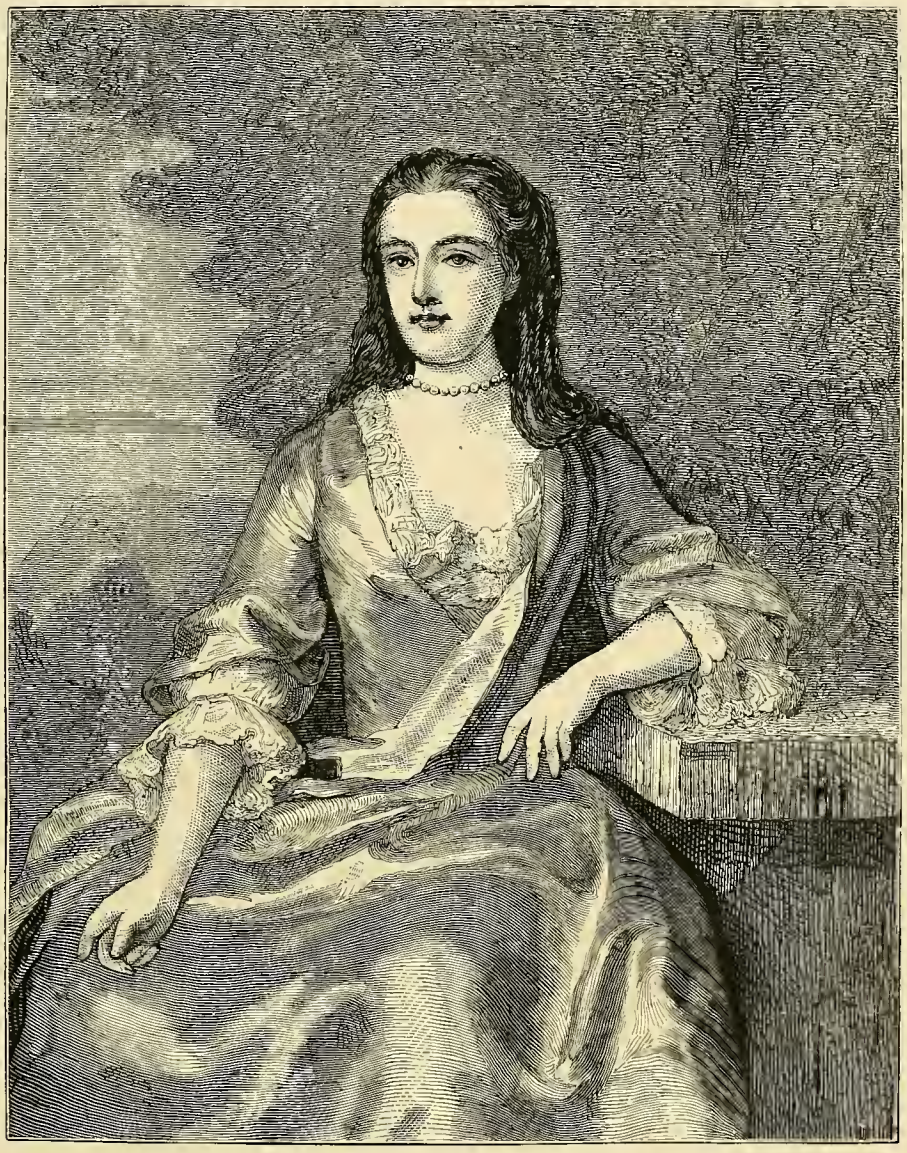


DERING OF SURRENDEN DERING.

Cecilia, only daughter of Sir Edward Dering, of Surrenden Dering, Kent, third baronet, second wife of George Scott, of Scot's Hall, and had issue.

Born *circa* 1682. Married May, 1706. Died at Canterbury 22nd June, 1764, aged 82, and buried at Brabourne 28th June, 1764.

ARMS OF DERING.—*Quarterly first and fourth, or, a fess azure in chief, three torteauxes, second and third or, a saltier sable.*



CECILIA, WIFE OF GEORGE SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL. (VANDERBANK.)

Engraved, by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

(No. 111 in Ped.) **Edward Scott,** third son of Sir Thomas Scott, born 24th July, 1764.

(No. 112 in Ped.) **Thomas Scott,** fourth son of Sir Thomas Scott, born 18th September, 1675.

This gentleman entered the navy at an early age. He was in 1704 in command of the *Mary* galley, and cruised in the Mediterranean, but with little advantage to either his fame or fortune. In 1710 he was appointed to the command of the *Romney* frigate, in which he succeeded in capturing off the coast of Portugal a large privateer, mounting twenty guns, and several other smaller and less valuable vessels. He was afterwards, in 1717, commander

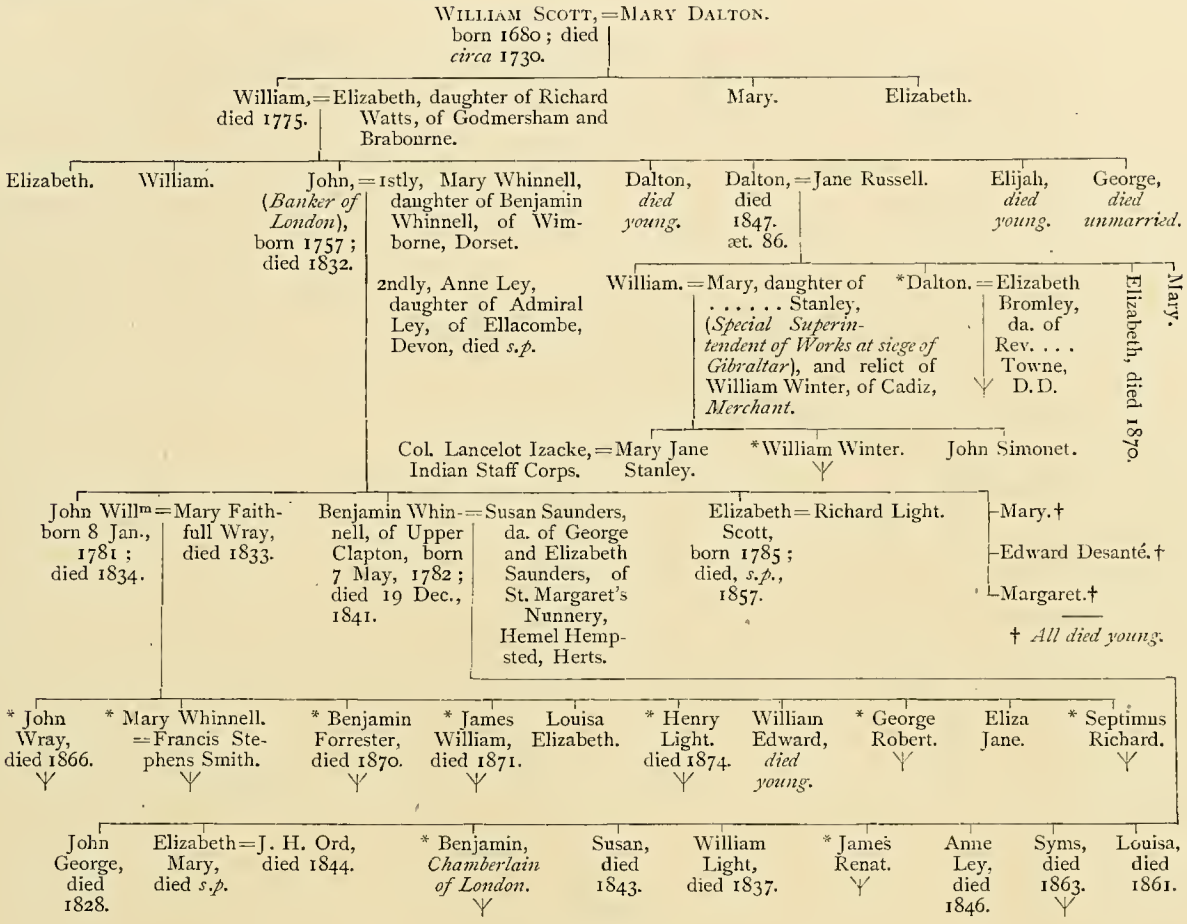
COMMODORE THOMAS SCOTT. (RICHARDSON.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

of the *Buxton*, seventy guns, at that time one of the Baltic fleet under Sir John Norris. In 1720 he was appointed Commodore of a small squadron, which cruised in the Mediterranean for the protection of trade after the withdrawal of the fleet. He died unmarried at Jamaica, having his Commodore's pendant on board the *Dragon*, 14th September, 1725.

(No. 113 in Ped.) **James Scott,** fifth son, born 19th September, 1676; buried at Brabourne 4th October, 1676.

(No. 114* in Ped.) **William Scott,** sixth son, born 12th April, 1680.


William Scott, = Mary Dalton.
born 1680; died circa 1730.
William, died 1775. = Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Watts, of Godmersham and Brabourne.
Mary.
Elizabeth.
Elizabeth.
William.
John, (Banker of London), born 1757; died 1832. = 1stly, Mary Whinnell, daughter of Benjamin Whinnell, of Wimborne, Dorset.
2ndly, Anne Ley, daughter of Admiral Ley, of Ellacombe, Devon, died s.p.
Dalton, died young.
Dalton, died 1847. æt. 86. = Jane Russell.
Elijah, died young.
George, died unmarried.
William. = Mary, daughter of ..... Stanley, (Special Superintendent of Works at siege of Gibraltar), and relict of William Winter, of Cadiz, Merchant.
*Dalton. = Elizabeth Bromley, da. of Rev. ... Towne, D.D.
Mary.
Elizabeth, died 1870.
Col. Lancelot Izacke, Indian Staff Corps. = Mary Jane Stanley.
*William Winter.
John Simonet.
John Will^m, born 8 Jan., 1781; died 1834. = Mary Faithfull Wray, died 1833.
Benjamin Whinnell, of Upper Clapton, born 7 May, 1782; died 19 Dec., 1841. = Susan Saunders, da. of George and Elizabeth Saunders, of St. Margaret's Nunnery, Hemel Hempsted, Herts.
Elizabeth Scott, born 1785; died, s.p., 1857. = Richard Light.
Mary.†
Edward Desanté.†
Margaret.†
† All died young.
* John Wray, died 1866.
* Mary Whinnell. = Francis Stephens Smith.
* Benjamin Forrester, died 1870.
* James William, died 1871.
Louisa Elizabeth.
* Henry Light. died 1874.
William Edward, died young.
* George Robert.
Eliza Jane.
* Septimus Richard.
John George, died 1828.
Elizabeth, Mary, died s.p. = J. H. Ord, died 1844.
* Benjamin, Chamberlain of London.
Susan, died 1843.
William Light, died 1837.
* James Renat.
Anne Ley, died 1846.
Syms, died 1863.
Louisa, died 1861.

* *Issue living in* 1876.

(No. 115 in Ped.) **Robert Scott,** seventh son, born 28th June, 1681.

(No. 116 in Ped.) **John Scott,** youngest son, born 3rd May, 1683, and buried at Brabourne 12th February, 1684.

(Nos. 117 and 118 in Ped.) **Caroline Scott,** second daughter, born 20th April, 1672, married ..... Floyd, of Gore Court in Otham, Kent (No. 118), son of Thomas Floyd, of Gore Court, who served the office of Sheriff of Kent during the usurpation in 1652.

(No. 119 in Ped.) **Elizabeth Scott,** eldest daughter, born 1665.

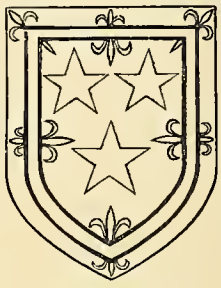
(No. 120 in Ped.) **George Scott,** eldest son, born 1669, buried at Brabourne 28th October, 1670.

(No. 121 in Ped.) **Edward Scott,** of Scot's Hall, third son but eventual heir of George Scott, Esq., of Scot's Hall, by Anne Pemberton, his first wife.

Born at Scot's Hall 28th May, 1700. Was a Justice of the Peace and Deputy Lieutenant of the County of Kent. He died at Scot's Hall 25th May, 1765.

Edward Scott was a Captain in the Army. He was taken prisoner by the Pretender at the battle of Preston Pans, and confined in Dumbarton Castle, at which place he first saw his future wife, a daughter of the then Governor and first cousin of Dr. Smollett. After their marriage this spirited lady procured an interview with Charles Stuart, at Holyrood Palace, and obtained from him the release of her husband, who returned to Scot's Hall on his parole.

(No. 122 in Ped.) **Margaret,** daughter of John Sutherland, Esq., by Christiana, one of the daughters of Robert Cunningham, of Gilberfield, near Glasgow, and of Braehead in Kintyre, wife to Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall.



SUTHERLAND OF GILBERFIELD.

MRS. EDWARD SCOTT, FOSTER-MOTHER OF GEORGE IV. AND GOVERNESS TO THE PRINCESS ROYAL, ELDEST DAUGHTER OF GEORGE III. (HUDSON.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

She was born near Dumbarton 19th August, 1725. She survived her husband many years, and was buried in Brabourne church in 1819, æt. 93.

ARMS OF SUTHERLAND.—*Gules, three mullets or, within a bordure of the last charged with a tressure of the first.*

This lady was foster-mother to the Prince of Wales (afterwards George IV.), and had the principal charge for many years of that prince. She was afterwards governess to the Princess Royal, the eldest daughter of George III. The King was very partial to Mrs. Scott, and at times would sink the dignity of the monarch in the natural impulse of the parent, and would gambol on the floor with his royal children in that lady's presence. On the approach of the Queen (at all times dignified and strict, especially with the Duke of York), His Majesty would assume a royal demeanour. The Prince of Wales always

showed marked attention and kindness to Mrs. Scott, frequently visiting her at her residence at 67, Upper Berkeley Street. On the occasion of the banquet to the Allied Sovereigns (Mrs. Scott, from her great age, being unable to be present), the Prince of Wales sent her a silver salver and dishes from his own table. Mrs. Fairfax Best still preserves these with other mementoes of Royal favour, engraved with the Royal arms and the Prince's badge of the ostrich feathers.—*Scot's Hall MSS.*

EXTRACTS FROM DR. DORAN'S "LADY OF THE LAST CENTURY," 1873.

Page 131. Extract from letter, dated 13th August, 1762, addressed to Mrs. Robinson at Rome, from Mrs. Scott, sister of Matthew, Lord Rokeby, and wife of George Louis Scott, preceptor to George III. when Prince of Wales :—

"On Thursday the Queen was brought to bed of a son, and both we are told are well. Many rejoiced, but none more than those who have been detained in town during all this hot weather to be present at the ceremony. Among them no one was more impatient than the Chancellor, who not considering any part of the affair as a point of law, thought his presence unnecessary. His Lordship and the Archbishop must have had a fatiguing office, as she was brought to bed at 7 o'clock in the morning . . . . . I wish they were not too much out of humour before the Prince was born to be able to welcome it properly . . . . . Ned Scot's wife is to suckle the Prince of Wales, an employment which in all probability will prove as good nourishment to her own family as to the Royal babe, for her numerous offspring can scarcely fail of being provided for after she has served in such an office."

Page 129. Extract of letter from Mrs. Robinson to Mrs. Scott, dated October, 1762 :—

. . . . . "I am sure my brother will be glad to hear that Mrs. Scott, of Scot's Hall, is wet nurse to our young Prince of Wales, and is much liked by our King and Royal family, so that I hope she will be able to make interest to re-establish all her children. A little of the Royal favour and protection will bring them forward in professions, and the girls may have little places in the household ; and I hope the scheme, which I forwarded to the utmost of my power, will save an ancient and honourable family from ruin. She is vastly pleased and happy in her situation, and her Royal nurseling is as fine and healthy a child as may be."

Page 261. Extract of letter from Mrs. George Louis Scott [w] to Mrs. Robinson, dated 29th December, 1779 :—

. . . . . "I am grieved to see Scot's Hall advertised to be sold. It is a pity that an ancient family should be rooted up to plant some upstart nabob in its place."

---

[w] *The George Louis Scott, who married Sarah Robinson, sister of Lord Rokeby and of Morris Robinson (see p. xlv.), of Monk's Horton, near Brabourne, Kent, was not a member of the Scot's Hall family, but that of Woolstan Hall, Chigwell in Essex, an early offshoot from the more ancient Kentish family. The intimacy between the Scot's Hall family and Mrs. Sarah Scott was on her part as a member of the Robinson family of Monk's Horton, and not on that of her husband as Dr. Doran has erroneously assumed. The Mrs. Robinson to whom so many of the letters in Dr. Doran's charming book are addressed, was the wife of Morris Robinson, of Monk's Horton and Denton Castle, Kent, uncle of Sir Leonard Robinson, Chamberlain of London, and of William Robinson, first Lord Rokeby. Sarah Scott, née Robinson, was sister of the celebrated and witty Elizabeth Montague, immortalized by the poet Cowper, who, referring to her genius, wit, philosophy, and learning, suggests :—*

" All these to Montague repair,
Ambitious of a shelter there.
She thus maintains divided sway
With yon bright regent of the day.
The plume and poet both we know,
Their lustre to his influence owe ;
And she the works of Phœbus aiding,
Both poet saves and plume from fading."

(No. 123 in Ped.) **Francis Scott,** eldest son of George Scott, by his first wife, Anne Pemberton; born 2nd November, 1692, and buried at Brabourne 21st October, 1743.

A Captain in the Royal Navy.

(No. 124 in Ped.) **Thomas Scott,** second son, born 1696; died 1728.

Was in the Royal Navy, and served on board the *Norwich* until 1712, and afterwards as Sub-Lieutenant on board the *Dartmouth*, when he appears to have left the Navy.

(No. 125 in Ped.) **John Scott,** fourth son, born 26th October, 1701; buried at Brabourne 1714.

(No. 126 in Ped.) **James Scott,** fifth son, born 2nd May, 1703; buried at Brabourne 1730.

(Nos. 127 and 128 in Ped.) **Mary,** only daughter of George Scott by Anne Pemberton, born 1705, wife to Francis Sands, M.D., of Canterbury (No. 128).

(No. 129 in Ped.) **Elizabeth Scott,** eldest daughter of George Scott, Esq., of Scot's Hall, by his second wife, Cecilia, only daughter of Sir Edward Dering, third baronet, born 1706; buried at Brabourne 30th March, 1707.

(No. 130 in Ped.) **Cecilia Scott,** second daughter, born 12th October, 1708.

She resided at Denton Court, and died at Canterbury, unmarried, 28th July, 1785, aged 77, and was buried in the chancel of Denton Church.

(Nos. 131 and 131*a* in Ped.) **Catherine Scott,** third daughter, born 10th September, 1709.

Was Maid-of-Honour to the Princess of Orange, daughter of George II. She married Charles, Count de Saumaise, Major-General of the Gronengen Guards, and Chamberlain to the Prince of Orange. She died in Holland.[x]

(No. 132 in Ped.) **Charles Scott,** eldest son, born 19th October, 1710.

Was killed, 1st June, 1731, by a fall from his horse (which reared whilst passing under the gateway leading to the stables at Scot's Hall), and was buried at Brabourne 3rd June, 1731.

(No. 133 in Ped.) **William Scott,** second son, of Bexley, Kent, afterwards of the city of Canterbury, born 21st April, 1713; ob. 1803, unmarried.

(No. 134 in Ped.) **Arthur Scott,** third son, born 21st November, 1716; died 1717. Buried at Brabourne 22nd September, 1717.

---

[x] On the occasion of the marriage of the Princess Royal, Her Royal Highness gave Miss Catherine Scott a diamond ring, engraved with the Prince of Wales' feathers encircling the letter C. This relic is now in the possession of Mrs. Fairfax Best. The ancient family of Counts de Saumaise is now extinct.

(No. 135 in Ped.) **Arthur,** born 1719, died without issue 27th February, 1756, aged 37, and was buried at Brabourne (see Mon. Insc., p. 48). He resided at Blendon Hall, Bexley.

He was Captain in the Royal Navy, under Lord Anson in 1743. In 1747 he was appointed an extra Commissioner of the Navy, and in 1754 was Resident Commissioner of the Navy at Chatham.

(Nos. 136 and 137 in Ped.) **The Hon. Lady Mary Compton,** eldest daughter of the Hon. Charles Compton, and sister of Spencer, the eighth Earl of Northampton, wife of Arthur Scott, Esq.

By special warrant she was raised to the rank of an Earl's daughter. She resided at Blendon Hall, in Bexley, Kent, which she purchased in 1763. This lady was twice married: 1st, to Richard Haddock, Esq., Comptroller of the Navy (No. 137);[y] and, secondly, in 1751, to Arthur Scott, Esq., Commissioner of the Navy, whom she survived, and died at Blendon, 8th May, 1782, without issue by him.

LADY MARY SCOTT. (RICHARDSON.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

---

[y] The historic family of Haddock requires a brief notice at our hands. It was seated at Leigh in Essex for a period of four hundred years. During the 17th and 18th centuries many of this family rose to positions of great eminence in the naval profession. Mr. H. W. King, their biographer, asserts that during that period the family of Haddock produced more celebrated Naval commanders than all the county of Essex besides. It is much to be regretted that many of their memorials and monuments were ruthlessly swept away and destroyed in 1837-8, when the church of Leigh underwent a so-called restoration. The members of this distinguished and patriotic family were buried here for upwards of 300 years. It is now extinct in the male line.

Extract from Haddock Pedigree. (*From Leigh Church Registers, etc.*)

(No. 137.)

Captain Richard Haddock, of Leigh, Essex, was in the Naval service of the Parliament. Died 22nd May, 1660, aged 79.—

- Captain William Haddock, =. . . . . Anna, died January 6th, 1688, aged 78.
  Commanded the *America*, fitted out by Parliament. Received from Cromwell a gold medal for his services. Died 22nd September, 1667, aged 60.
  - Admiral Sir Richard Haddock, = Elizabeth . . . . ., died 27th February, 1709, aged 59.
    Flag Captain to the Earl of Sandwich at Solebay, the only officer saved from the burning of his ship, the *Royal James*, which he was the last to leave. Was joint Commander-in-Chief in the expedition against Ireland in 1690; Comptroller of the Navy; M.P. for Shoreham. He died 6th January, 1714, aged 85.
    - Captain Richard Haddock, R.N., = Hon. Mary Compton. She re-married Arthur Scott, Commissioner of the Navy.
      eldest son, Comptroller of the Navy 1734 to 1749. Died 6th January, 1749-50.
      - One daughter.
    - * Admiral Nicholas Haddock, of Wrotham Place, Kent, M.P. Was Captain at 20 years of age. His services were of the most distinguished kind. His portrait is in Greenwich Hospital.
  - Captain Joseph Haddock, R.N.
  - Andrew Haddock. = 2nd son.
    - Captain Richard Haddock, R.N.

* *When Admiral Nicholas Haddock was on his death-bed, he addressed his son as follows:—"Considering my rank in life and public services for so many years, I shall leave you but a small portion, but, my boy, it is honestly got and will wear well; there are no seamen's wages or provisions, nor one single penny of dirty money in it."*

Extract from Compton (Earls of Northampton) Pedigree.

(No. 136 in Ped.)

Hon. Charles Compton. = Mary Lucy.
(Arms.—*Sable, three helmets argent.*)

- Spencer Compton, Earl of Northampton.
- Mary, = 1st, Captain Richard Haddock, R.N. eldest daughter. = 2nd, Arthur Scott, Commissioner of the Navy, died *s.p.*
- Catherine, = Earl of Egmont. Baroness Arden.
- Jane. = George Bridges Rodney.

Charles George Perceval. | Spencer Perceval, *Prime Minister. Shot on 12th May, 1812, by Bellingham in lobby of House of Commons.* | Henry. | Mary. | Anne. | Elizabeth. | Frances.

(No. 138 in Ped.) **Baliol Scott,** twin with George (No. 139), born 27th March, 1714.

(Nos. 139, 140, and 141 in Ped.) **George Scott,** of Bombay, twin with Baliol, born 27th March, 1714; died in Bombay, March 1760.

He married abroad Mary Bidwell, daughter of . . . . . Bidwell, co. Derby (No. 140), and had issue by her. She afterwards re-married William Armstrong, Esq., of Castle Armstrong, Ireland (No. 141).

1st, George Scott, died 1760. = Mary Bidwell. = 2nd, William Armstrong, of Castle Armstrong, Ireland. died 1781.

- 1st, Brice Fletcher, of Bombay, died 1776. = Cecilia.
  - Hinwood.
  - Brice.
  - Cecilia.
- Cecilia. = 2nd, Francis Talbot Scott, of Scot's Hall. See his Biography.
- George, died 21st July, 1781.
- John Baliol.
- Mary.
- Margaret. = John Weldon Tarlton.

(No. 142 in Ped.) **Cholmeley Scott,** youngest son of George Scott, of Scot's Hall, born 20th October, 1723; died at Finchley 3rd May, 1771; buried at Brabourne 9th May, 1771. (See monumental inscription, p. 48.)

He was Lieut. Col. of the 11th Regiment of Foot, and Gentleman Usher of His Majesty's most Hon. Privy Chamber.

(No. 143 in Ped.) **Louisa Scott,** born 30th October, 1711; died at Scot's Hall unmarried, and buried at Brabourne 7th May, 1735.

(No. 144 in Ped.) **Elizabeth Scott,** born May, 1715; buried at Brabourne 4th May, 1730.

(No. 145 in Ped.) **Caroline Scott,** born December, 1717; died 29th April, 1782, aged 64, and buried

CAROLINE, WIFE OF THOMAS BEST, OF CHILSTON PARK, KENT. (BY RAMSEY.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

at Boughton Malherbe, near Lenham, Kent, wife to Thomas Best, Esq.,[z] (No. 146), by whom she had no issue.

(No. 146 in Ped.) **Thomas Best,** of Chilston Park and Cowling Castle, Kent, born 1713; died 26th March, 1795, without issue, and was buried at Boughton Malherbe, Kent.

THOMAS BEST, OF CHILSTON, ESQ., M.P. (BY RAMSEY.)

Engraved by permission of Mrs. Fairfax Best, from the original painting from Scot's Hall, now a part of the collection of Family Portraits of the late Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, Esq.

This gentleman was Lieutenant Governor of Dover Castle and Member of Parliament for Canterbury from 1741 to 1754, and from 1761 to 1768.

ARMS.—*Sable, a cinquefoil pierced, in chief two cross croslets, fitchée, or.*

This lady was the favourite partner at whist of H.R.H. the Duke of Gloucester, brother to George III., who would, if present, prefer her to any other partner, and was accustomed to show her marked attention.

(No. 147 in Ped.) **Anne Scott,** youngest daughter, born 5th September, 1721; buried at Brabourne 12th September, 1721.

(No. 148 in Ped.) **Francis Talbot Scott,** of Scot's Hall and East Malling, Kent, eldest son and heir of Edward and Margaret Scott, born 1745; called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn 23rd November, 1771; died 22nd June, 1789, aged 44; buried at Brabourne 30th June, 1789. He married his cousin, Cecilia Scott (see Ped. 139*), eldest daughter of George Scott, of Bombay, and relict of Brice Fletcher.

Francis Talbot Scott was the last of many occupiers of that surname of the ancient mansion of Scot's Hall, which with the manors and lands adjoining were sold by his trustees in 1784 to Sir John Honywood, of Evington, his kinsman. These estates consisted of the manors of Brabourne (which had been for many centuries in the possession of his ancestors, and in the church of which, in direct male descent, they had been buried for sixteen generations), as well as those of Halle (Scot's Hall) and Evegate in Smeeth and Aldington, together with the mansion of Scot's Hall, and several farms, woodlands, warrens, and waste lands within these manors and in Brabourne Lees. The old mansion, or what remained of it, was pulled down in 1808. The site and rookery adjoining now alone remain a record of its once eventful family history.

This gentleman, who died in the prime of life, had received many offers of preferment in the legal profession and otherwise from ministers of state, and other influential persons, interested in his welfare, but they were one and all declined, influenced doubtless by frequent attacks of melancholia which preyed upon him, and from which he never recovered. From correspondence extant, it may be gathered that the compulsory sale of his patrimonial estates (which he survived but a few years), and the severance thereby of ancient associations connected therewith, greatly contributed to the settled melancholy which marked the closing years of his life.

(No. 149* in Ped.) **Cecilia Scott,** eldest daughter of George Scott, of Bombay (see Ped. 139*), and relict of Brice Fletcher, by whom she had issue. She afterwards married, *circa* 1777, Francis Talbot Scott, of Scot's Hall, by whom she had the following issue :—

FRANCIS TALBOT SCOTT, of Scot's Hall. = CECILIA SCOTT, relict of Brice Fletcher, of Bombay. (See Ped. 139.*)

- Rev. George Scott, LL.B. 1800, eldest son, born in Bedford Square, Middlesex, 25th May, 1778; baptized 20th June, 1778, *the Prince of Wales (George IV.) being Godfather.* Died before 1839, *s.p.*
- = Susan, daughter of the Rev. Dr. Strong. Survived her husband many years. Died at Penhelyg, near Towyn, Merionethshire, 1842; buried at Llandrinis, co. Montgomery.
- Francis Peach Scott, born at Scot's Hall 31st Dec., 1779. Died before his brother George.

(No. 150 in Ped.) **Cecilia Scott,** eldest daughter of Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, and Margaret, his wife, born 5th January, 1747; died, unmarried, at Clifton, Gloucestershire, and buried there in 1826.

(No. 151 in Ped.) **Mary,** second daughter, baptized at Smeeth 20th April, 1748; buried at Brabourne 20th August, 1748.

(No. 152 in Ped.) **Katherine,** (of Gower Street, London), born 11th October, 1749; died in London, unmarried; and buried at Brabourne 29th July, 1837, aged 88.

(No. 153 in Ped.) **Margaret** (twin with Caroline), born 3rd March, 1751; died unmarried.

(No. 154 in Ped.)

MRS. GEORGE BEST, OF CHILSTON PARK, KENT.
(A MINIATURE.)

Caroline, or **Carolina** (twin with Margaret), born 3rd March, 1751; married at Boughton Malherbe, near Lenham, Kent, 7th December, 1784, to George Best, Esq. Died at Chilston Park, 24th Oct., 1809, aged 58. Buried at Boughton Malherbe. (Mon. Insc.)

(No. 155* in Ped.)

George Best, of Chilston Park, in the parish of Boughton Malherbe, Kent, M.P. for City of Rochester from 1790 to 1796; Magistrate and Deputy Lieutenant for the County. Born at Boxley, near Maidstone, in 1760, and died at Chilston 8th September, 1818, aged 58. Buried at Boughton Malherbe. (Mon. Insc.)

BEST.

ARMS.—*Sable, a cinquefoil pierced in chief, two cross croslets, fitchée, or.*

EXTRACT FROM PEDIGREE OF BEST AND SCOTT.

MAWDISTLEY BEST, of Boxley, Kent. = ELIZABETH, da. of . . . . . Fearne, of Bourne, Kent, and Temple Belwood, Lincolnshire.

2nd, CECILIA, da. of Sir Edward Dering, 3rd Bart., of Surrenden Dering, Kent. = GEORGE SCOTT, of Scot's Hall. = 1st, ANNE PEMBERTON, da. of the Right Hon. Sir Francis Pemberton, Lord Chief Justice of England.

James Best, of Boxley, Sheriff of Kent 1751. = Frances, da. and co-heir of Richard Shelley, son of Sir John Shelley, of Michelgrove, Sussex.

Dorothy Sarah. = Robert, LORD FAIRFAX, of Leeds Castle, Kent.

Thomas Best, of Chilston and Cowling Castle, Kent, M.P. for Canterbury; Lieut. Gov. of Dover Castle. Died 1795, *s.p.* = Caroline, died 1782. (See Ped. Nos. 145 and 146.)

Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall. = Margaret Sutherland.

George Best, of Chilston and Cowling Castle, Kent, M.P. for Rochester. = Caroline Scott.

Thomas Fairfax Best, of Chilston Park and Wierton, Kent, (*1st Grenadier Guards*), J.P. and Deputy Lieutenant. = Margaret Anna, da. of Joseph George Brett, of Grove House, Old Brompton, by Isabella Christiana Maria Forbes, of the family of Forbes of Edinglassie, Aberdeenshire. (*Living in* 1876.)

Caroline. Georgiana. (*Living in* 1876.) William Mawdesley Best, eldest son of Capt. Thos. Best (26th Cameronians), of Boxley, Kent, Barrister-at-Law. Died *s.p.* Isabella Dorothy. (*Living in* 1876.) = Edward Dishrowe, son of Lawrence Kortright, Esq., of Highlands, Essex. (*Living in* 1876.) Margaret Anna. (*Living in* 1876.) Frances. = Wm. Hy. Archer, Major 16th Lancers, of the family of Barons Archer, of Umberslade.

One daughter, deceased.

Three sons and one daughter living in 1876.

Caroline, and other issue.

(Nos. 156 and 157 in Ped.) **Edward Scott,** of Bodtalog, in Towyn, Merionethshire, second son, born 3rd October, 1752.

He served for twenty-eight years in the 3rd Regiment (Buffs), and was in the American war. Was Captain of that Regiment in Jamaica in 1780. Was a Magistrate for Merionethshire, and in 1782 was Equerry to H.R.H. the Prince of Wales (George IV.). He died without issue at Bodtalog 13th March, 1842, and was buried at Towyn, aged 90. He married Louisa Maria, Countesse de Saumaise (No. 157), only daughter and heiress of William Lewis Anwyls, of Bodtalog, and widow of Louis, Viscount de Saumaise; she died 17th March, 1863, and was buried in Rochester Cathedral, where a mural tablet on the north side of the nave records that event.

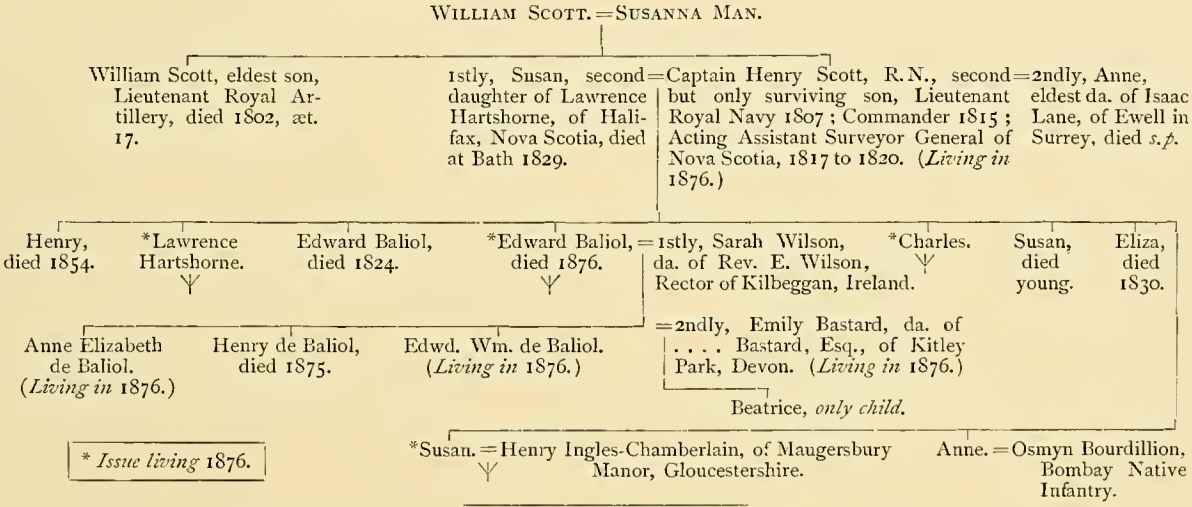
(No. 158 in Ped.) **William,** third son, died in infancy; buried at Brabourne 30th July, 1754.

(No. 159 in Ped.) **Rev. Thomas Scott, B.A.,** born 30th November, 1755.

Vicar of Bredgar, Kent, on the presentation, March 15, 1780, of Sir Edward Dering, Bart.; Vicar of Lenham, Kent, on the presentation, March 22, 1781, of Thomas Best, Esq., of Chilston; and, by dispensation, Rector of Denton, Kent, on the presentation of Mrs. Cecilia Scott, of Denton Court, in 1785. He died unmarried, and was buried at Brabourne 30th December, 1791.

(Nos. 160* and 161 in Ped.) **William Scott,** fifth son, born at Scot's Hall 6th March, 1758, Lieutenant of Royal Navy; died at Plympton St. Mary, Devon, 6th December, 1785, and was buried there.

He married, 21st July, 1783, at Plympton St. Mary, Susanna (No. 161), daughter of Elias Man, of Widdicomb on the Moor, Devon, and had the following issue:—


William Scott. = Susanna Man.
William Scott, eldest son, Lieutenant Royal Artillery, died 1802, æt. 17.
1stly, Susan, second daughter of Lawrence Hartshorne, of Halifax, Nova Scotia, died at Bath 1829.
= Captain Henry Scott, R.N., second but only surviving son, Lieutenant Royal Navy 1807; Commander 1815; Acting Assistant Surveyor General of Nova Scotia, 1817 to 1820. (Living in 1876.)
= 2ndly, Anne, eldest da. of Isaac Lane, of Ewell in Surrey, died s.p.
Henry, died 1854.
*Lawrence Hartshorne.
Edward Baliol, died 1824.
*Edward Baliol, died 1876.
= 1stly, Sarah Wilson, da. of Rev. E. Wilson, Rector of Kilbeggan, Ireland.
*Charles.
Susan, died young.
Eliza, died 1830.
= 2ndly, Emily Bastard, da. of .... Bastard, Esq., of Kitley Park, Devon. (Living in 1876.)
Anne Elizabeth de Baliol. (Living in 1876.)
Henry de Baliol, died 1875.
Edwd. Wm. de Baliol. (Living in 1876.)
Beatrice, only child.
* Issue living 1876.
*Susan. = Henry Ingles-Chamberlain, of Maugersbury Manor, Gloucestershire.
Anne. = Osmyn Bourdillion, Bombay Native Infantry.

(No. 162 in Ped.) **Rev. Tufton Charles Scott, D.C.L.,** sixth son, born 26th March, 1760; died, without issue, at Boulogne 17th July, 1832, aged 72.

Made D.C.L. of Exeter College, Oxford, in 1802; and Rector of Monckton cum Birchington, in Thanet, by Archbishop Manners-Sutton in 1829; Chaplain to H.M. Dockyard at Portsmouth, and Chaplain to His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales (George IV.)

(Nos. 163 and 164 in Ped.) **Charlotte Scott,** youngest daughter, born 17th May 1762, foster sister to King George IV.

Died at Brentford in 1847, and buried in the Parish Church. Wife to William Saxton (No. 164), of Brentford, Esq., said to have died without issue and to have outlived his wife.

PEDIGREE OF THE SCOTTS OF

SCOTT, OF SCOT'S HALL.

ANCIENT ARMS.—*Argent, three Catherine wheels sable, a bordure gules.*

(1) Sir William Baliol le Scot, youngest brother of John Baliol, King of Scotland, and of Sir Alexander (Baron Baliol), of Chilham Castle, Kent.

(2) John le Scot, of Brabourne, Kent.

(3) Sir William Scot, of Brabourne.

(4) Michael Scot. = Emma. (5)

(6) William Scot. = Matilda. (7) Alice. (8)

(9) John Scot. = Heiress of Cumbe. (10) (Brabourne.)

(12) 1stly, Joane de Orlastone. = (11) William Scotte = (13) 2ndly, Isabel Herbert, or Fynche. (*of Scot's Hall, Kent*).

(15) Sir John Scotte = (16) Agnes Beaufitz. (17) Thomas. (18) Margaret. (19) 1st, Thomas Yerde. = Joan Scotte (20) = 2nd, Sir Henry Grey. (20) (*of Scot's Hall*).

(23) Sir William Scotte = (24) Sybilla Lewknor. (*of Scot's Hall*).

(26) Isabel. = Sir Edward, Baron Poynings, K.G. (25)

(30) Sir John Scotte = (31) Anne Pympe. (*of Scot's Hall and Nettlested*).

(32*) Edward Scotte = (33) Alice Fogge. (*of the Mote, Iden*).

(34) Anne. = Sir Edward Boughton. (35)

(39) 1stly, Emeline Kempe. = (38) Sir Reginald Scott = (40*) 2ndly, Mary Tuke. (*of Scot's Hall and Nettlested*). (See p. 185.)

(41) Sir John Scott.

(42) William. = Anne Fogge. (43) (Re-married Henry Isham.)

(65) Elizabeth Baker (1st wife). = (64) Sir Thomas Scott = (66) Elizabeth Heyman (2nd wife). (*of Scot's Hall and Nettlested*). = (67) Dorothy Bere (3rd wife).

(68) Catherine. = (69) John Baker.

(70) Anne. = Walter Mayney. (71)

(73) Alice Stringer (1st wife). = (72) Sir Edward Scott, K.B. (*of Scot's Hall*). = (74*) Katherine Honywood (2nd wife). = (75) Mary Aldersey, widow of Sir Norton Knatchbull (3rd wife).

(76) Thomas. = (76*) Mary Knatchbull (1st wife). = (77) Elizabeth Honywood (2nd wife).

(78) Sir John. = (79) Lady Elizabeth Stafford, widow of Sir Wm. Drury (1st wife). = (80) Catherine Smythe, widow of Sir Rowland Hayward (2nd wife). (*of Nettlested*).

(104) Edward Scott, D.C.L. = (105) Lady Catherine Goring. (*of Scot's Hall and Nettlested*).

(106) Sir Thomas Scott = (107) Caroline Cartaret. (*of Scot's Hall and Nettlested*).

(111) Edward. (112) Thomas. (113) James. (114*) William. (See p. 243.) (115) Robert. (116) John.

(108) George Scott (*of Scot's Hall and Nettlested*). = (109) Anne Pemberton (1st wife).

(121) Edward Scott = Margaret Sutherland. (*of Scot's Hall*). (122)

= (110) Cecilia Dering (2nd wife).

Francis. (123) Thomas. (124) John. (125) James. (126)

(127) Mary. = Francis Sandys (128)

Elizabeth. (129) Cecilia. (130)

(131) Catherine. = (131*a*) Charles, Count de Soumaise.

Charles. (132) William, of Bexley. (133) Arthur. (134)

(148*) Francis Talbot Scott = (149) Cecilia Scott (*relict of Brice Fletcher*). (*the last of Scot's Hall*).

(See p. 251.)

Cecilia. (150) Mary. (151) Katherine. (152) Margaret. (153)

(154) Caroline. = (155*) George Best (*of Chilston and Cowling Castle, Kent*).

(See p. 252.)

BRABOURNE AND SCOT'S HALL, KENT.

For corresponding numbers in this Pedigree, see chapter on "Biography," pp. 83 to 253.

An asterisk (*) affixed to a number denotes a subordinate or collateral descent.

=2ndly, Sir Gervase Clifton. (13) — Sir Robert Scot. (14)

(21) Michael. — (22) William.

(27) Sir Edmund Bedingfeld, K.B. =Margaret. (28) — (29) Thomas Scotte, or Rotherham, (*Archbishop of York and Chancellor.*)

(36) Catherine. — (37) Elizabeth.

(44*) Richard. =(45) Mary Whetenal. — (46) Mildred. =1st, John Diggs. (47) — (49) Catherine. =(50) Sir Hy. Crispe. — Isabella. =Rich. Adams. (51) (52)

(45*a*) Reginald. — =2nd, Richard Keyes. (48)

Alice. (53) — Mary. =Nicholas Ballard. (54) (55) — Elizabeth. =Stephen Whitfield. (56) (57) — Sybill. =Richard Hynde. (58) (59) — Anne, =Sir . . . Pollard. (60) (61) — George. (62) — Pashley. (63)

Charles. (81) — Richard. =Catherine Hayward. (82) (83) — Robert, =Priscilla Honywood, 1st wife. (*of Mersham*). (84*) (85) (See p. 225.) =Mary Moyle, 2nd wife. (86) — Elizabeth. =1stly, John Knatchbull. (87) (88) =2ndly, Sir Richard Smythe. (89) — Emeline. =Robert Edolphe. (90) (91)

Anne. =1stly Richard Knatchbull. (92) (93) =2ndly, Sir Henry Bromley. (94) — Mary. =1stly, Anthony St. Leger. (95) (96) =2ndly, Alexander Culpeper. (97) — Reginald. (98) — Sir William. =Lady Mary Howard. (100) — Joseph. (101) — Antony. (102) — Benjamin. (103)

(117) Caroline. =(118) . . . . Floyd. — (119) Elizabeth. — (120) George.

Arthur. =Lady Mary Compton. =Captain Richard Haddock. (135) (136) (137) — Baliol. (138) — George. =Mary Bidwell. =William Armstrong. (139*) (140) (141)

Cholmeley. (142) — Louisa. (143) — Elizabeth. (144) — Caroline. =Thomas Best. (145) (146) — Anne. (147)

Edward =Louisa M. Anwyl, relict of Louis, Count de Soumaise. (156) (157) — William. (158) — Rev. Thomas Scott. (159) — Capt. Henry Scott, R.N. (160*) (*Living in* 1876.) =Susan Man. (161) — Rev. Tufton Charles, D.C.L. (162) — Charlotte. =Wm. Saxton. (163) (164)

(See p. 253.)

PEDIGREE OF THE SCOTTS OF BALLYGANNON, OTHERWISE KNOWN AS THE HOPTON SCOTTS.

NOTE.—*A Scot's Hall MS. states that the Scotts of Ballygannon, otherwise the "Hopton" Scotts, derive their descent from William Scott, of Dublin, grandson of Richard, of the Scot's Hall family (see p. 188). The register of St. Werburgh's Church, Dublin, by which this question might be set at rest, has unfortunately been burnt.*

ARMS.—*Argent, three Catherine wheels sable, within a bordure engrailed, gules.*
CREST.—*A griffin passant.* (*See Hopton Crest*)

HOPTON SCOTT, born 1653? died 1716. = RANDELIA BYRNE, born 1669; married 1692.

Sarah. = James Henly.
Hopton. d. 1721.
William, b. 1697; d. 1724 *s.p.*
Robert, b. 1705; d. 1706.
John, b. 1697: d. 1767. = Mary Pendred, d. 1772.
Edward, b. 1703.
Mary, b. 1707; d. 1774.
Martha, d. 1747?

Elizabeth, b. 1736; d. 1774.
William, b. 1737; d. 1737.
Hopton (Sir Hopton), (*of Ballygannon*). b. 1736; d. 1788. = Anne Wrightson,
John (?) d. 1739.

A child, sex not given (? George), b. 1741.
John Pendred, b. 1742; d. 1793. (Lived in India; d. at Ballygannon.) = Anne Smyth, b. 1742; d. 1788.
Catherine. d. 1817. = William Harvey, M.D. — 2 sons and 1 daughter.
Mary? b. 1747.

Hopton, b. 1774; d. 1775.
John Wrightson, b. 1772.
A son, d. 1793.
Gen. Sir Hopton Scott, Stratford, K.C.B., d. 1861. = Mary Bassett, d. 1867
Mary, d. 1860. = Rev. Thos. Stewart. — 2 sons and 3 daughters.
Louisa. d. 1864. = Andrew Gibbons. — 1 son, d. in infancy.
Anne (dead). = Sir G. Burrell.
Elizabeth, b. 1770; d. 1832.
Caroline, b. 1775; d. 1799.

Rev. John Middleton, b. 1781; d. 1818. (*Died at Ballygannon.*) = Lady Arabella Barbara Brabazon, da. of 9th Earl of Meath.
James Smyth, Q.C., b. 1782; d. 1854. = Louisa, da. of Hon. & Right Rev. Charles Brodrick, ARCHBP. OF CASHEL, sis. of 6th Viscount Middleton, b. 1793; d. 1864.
Edward William, Q.C., b. 1783; d. 1836. = Anne Knox, da. of John & Lady Mary Knox, d. 1873.
Lady Mary Knox was sister of Lady Arabella, wife of J. M. S.

Mary Anne, d. 1845.
Augusta.
Hopton Bassett. (*Lt.-Col. 9th Regt.*) = Alice Blane.
Adelaide. = Capt. Montresor. — 7 sons and 2 da.
Courtenay Harvey Saltoun (*Major India Staff Corps*), b. 1833. = Margaret Colquhoun. — 2 da.
Agnes = Major Marsh. — 7 children.
Joseph Osmund, *Late of 36th Reg.* = Julia Brown. — 7 children.
Dora. = Bickford Coham. — 1 da.
George, b. 1833. = Charlotte Pearse. — 2 children.

Hopton Arthur. Alice. Agnes. Hubert Courtney. Edward Baliol.

John Middleton, b. 1803; d. 1827.
Mary Grace, b. 1805; d. 1861.
Anne Arabella. = Henry Arthur.
Amelia Anne, b. 1807; d. 1814.
Julia Martha, b. 1807; d. 1807.
Antony Arthur, b. 1810; d. 1812.
James Edward, b. 1811. (*of Ballygannon.*) = Julia Minchin.
Maj.-Gen. Edward William Smyth, b. 1812. (*Trelydon, Welshpool.*) = Elizabeth Whish.
Arabella b. 1814; d. 1837. = Charles, 2nd LORD VIVIAN. — 2 sons.
Elizabeth Ruth, b. 1815. = William, 10th EARL OF DEVON.
Hopton, b. 1816; d. 1834
Walter Brabazon, b. 1817; d. 1823.
Henry Kearney, b. 1818; d. 1848.

John Middleton, (*Prof. of Civil Engineering Bengal College*), d. 1875. = Emily Corvan. (?) (No issue.)
Emily Jane.
Frances Elizabeth.
Cecilia.
Julia Isabella.

Rev. Charles Brodrick, D.D., b. 1825. (*Head Master of Westminster School.*) = Susan Georgina Smyth.
Rev. James George, b. 1827. (*Rector of Bray, Ireland.*) = Frances Anne Cleaver.
John William, b. 1828. (*of Delgany, co. Wicklow.*) = Caroline Louisa Whitmore.
Edward Ashley, b. 1830. (*Asst. Master of Rugby School.*) = Barbara Sneyd Kynnersley, d. 1863.
Barbara, b. 1863.
Mary Jelf. = Robert Henry, b. 1833. (*Director of Meteorological Office, F.R.S.*) = Susan Louisa Stewart.
Louisa Harriet, b. 1837.
Anne, b. 1835; d. 1836.

Mary, b. 1863; d. 1869.
Augusta Frances, b. 1865.
George Digby, b. 1866.
Charles, b. 1867.
Kathleen.

Mary Cecilia. = Robert, 1st LORD NAPIER OF MAGDALA. — 6 sons and 2 da.
William Walter. (*A.D.C. to Lord Napier of Magdala.*) = Alice de Vere Alexander.
Alfred, d. 1869.
Emily and Ellen, twin daughters.

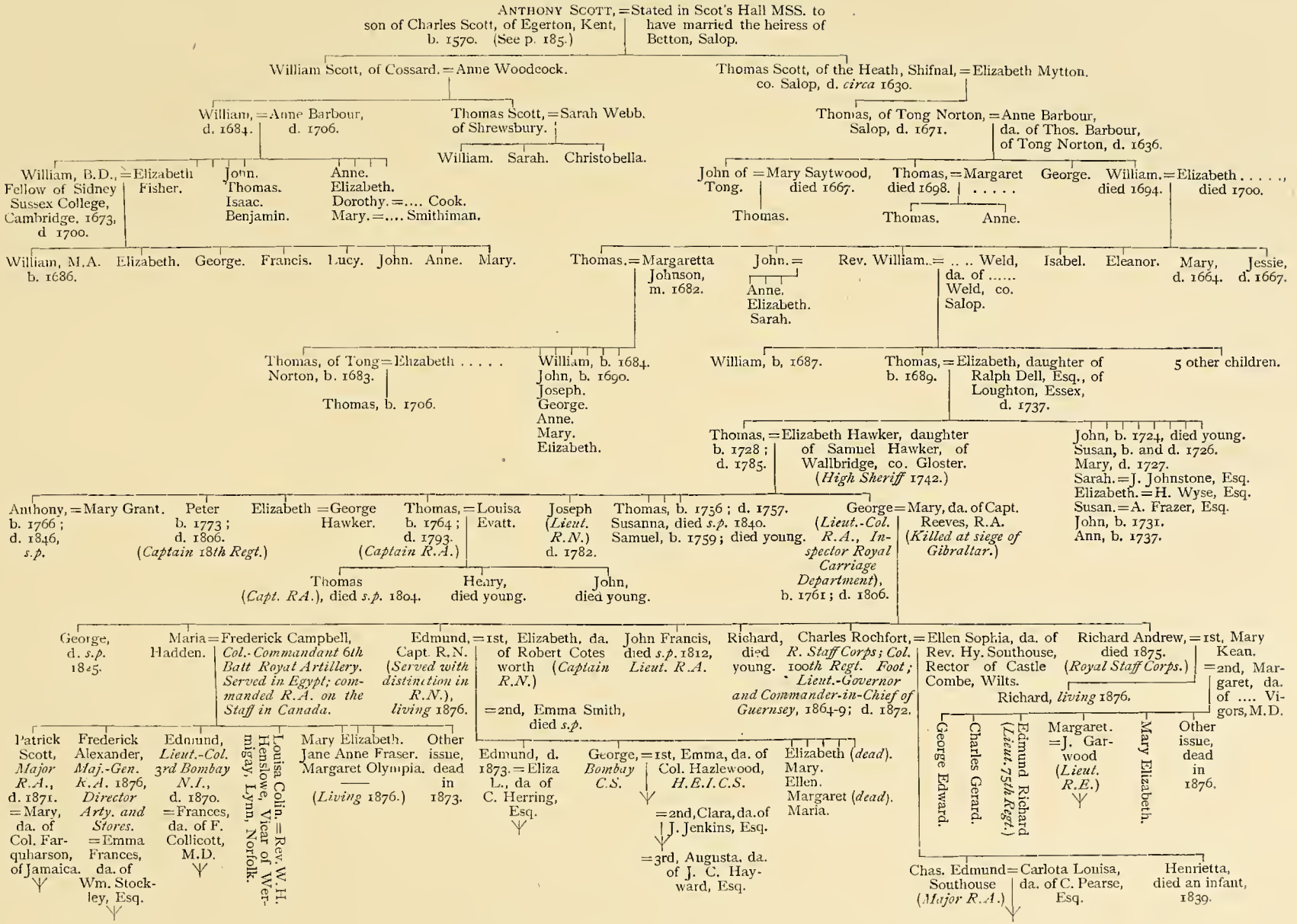
Albinia, b. 1867.
James Whitmore. b. 1869.
Mary Kathleen, b. 1871.
Alice, b. 1868.
Evelyn Louisa, b. 1874.

Rev. John Pendred, (*Rector of Stapplegrove, Taunton, Somerset.*) = Louisa Fort. — Mary Evelyn.
Henry Arthur, b. 1815. = Anne Scott.
Cecilia, d. 1832.
Melesina.
James Smyth (*of Levuka, co. Wexford.*) = Isabella Broughton.
Rev. Edward William, d. 1854.
Charles, b. 1823 (dead).
Rev. Gustavus Hopton, (*Rector of Gringley-on-the-Hill, Notts.*) = Frances Armstrong.
Antonia b. 1827. = Turner (dead).
Ellen, b. 1828; d. 1835.
William Robert, b. 1830.
Georgina b. 1834 (dead).

Talbot Brabazon, b. 1841.
Norah Alice, b. 1844. = Henry P. Hill.
Henry Alan, b. 1848.
Edward William.
Isabel.
Hopton.
2 others.

SCOTTS OF TONG NORTON AND COSSARD IN SHROPSHIRE.

ARMS.—*Argent, three Catherine wheels sable, within a bordure engrailed, gules.*
CREST.—*A griffin segreant sable, beaked and clawed, or.*


ANTHONY SCOTT, son of Charles Scott, of Egerton, Kent, b. 1570. (See p. 185.)
Stated in Scot's Hall MSS. to have married the heiress of Betton, Salop.
William Scott, of Cossard. = Anne Woodcock.
Thomas Scott, of the Heath, Shifnal, co. Salop, d. circa 1630. = Elizabeth Mytton.
William, d. 1684. = Anne Barbour, d. 1706.
Thomas Scott, of Shrewsbury. = Sarah Webb.
William. Sarah. Christobella.
Thomas, of Tong Norton, Salop, d. 1671. = Anne Barbour, da. of Thos. Barbour, of Tong Norton, d. 1636.
William, B.D., Fellow of Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge, 1673, d 1700. = Elizabeth Fisher.
John. Thomas. Isaac. Benjamin.
Anne. Elizabeth. Dorothy. = ... Cook. Mary. = ... Smithiman.
John of Tong. = Mary Saytwood, died 1667.
Thomas, died 1698. = Margaret .....
George. William, died 1694. = Elizabeth ....., died 1700.
Thomas.
Thomas. Anne.
William, M.A. b. 1686. Elizabeth. George. Francis. Lucy. John. Anne. Mary.
Thomas. = Margaretta Johnson, m. 1682.
John. = Anne. Elizabeth. Sarah.
Rev. William. = ... Weld, da. of ..... Weld, co. Salop.
Isabel. Eleanor. Mary, d. 1664. Jessie, d. 1667.
Thomas, of Tong Norton, b. 1683. = Elizabeth .....
Thomas, b. 1706.
William, b. 1684. John, b. 1690. Joseph. George. Anne. Mary. Elizabeth.
William, b. 1687.
Thomas, b. 1689. = Elizabeth, daughter of Ralph Dell, Esq., of Loughton, Essex, d. 1737.
5 other children.
Thomas, b. 1728; d. 1785. = Elizabeth Hawker, daughter of Samuel Hawker, of Wallbridge, co. Gloster. (High Sheriff 1742.)
John, b. 1724, died young. Susan, b. and d. 1726. Mary, d. 1727. Sarah. = J. Johnstone, Esq. Elizabeth. = H. Wyse, Esq. Susan. = A. Frazer, Esq. John, b. 1731. Ann, b. 1737.
Anthony, b. 1766; d. 1846, s.p. = Mary Grant.
Peter b. 1773; d. 1806. (Captain 18th Regt.)
Elizabeth = George Hawker.
Thomas, b. 1764; d. 1793. (Captain R.A.) = Louisa Evatt.
Joseph (Lieut. R.N.) d. 1782.
Thomas, b. 1756; d. 1757. Susanna, died s.p. 1840. Samuel, b. 1759; died young.
George (Lieut.-Col. R.A., Inspector Royal Carriage Department), b. 1761; d. 1806. = Mary, da. of Capt. Reeves, R.A. (Killed at siege of Gibraltar.)
Thomas (Capt. RA.), died s.p. 1804.
Henry, died young.
John, died young.
George, d. s.p. 1825.
Maria = Frederick Campbell, Col.-Commandant 6th Batt Royal Artillery. Served in Egypt; commanded R.A. on the Staff in Canada.
Edmund, Capt. R.N. (Served with distinction in R.N.), living 1876. = 1st, Elizabeth, da. of Robert Cotes worth (Captain R.N.)
=2nd, Emma Smith, died s.p.
John Francis, died s.p. 1812, Lieut. R.A.
Richard, died young.
Charles Rochfort, R. Staff Corps; Col. 100th Regt. Foot; Lieut.-Governor and Commander-in-Chief of Guernsey, 1864-9; d. 1872. = Ellen Sophia, da. of Rev. Hy. Southouse, Rector of Castle Combe, Wilts.
Richard Andrew, died 1875. (Royal Staff Corps.) = 1st, Mary Kean. =2nd, Margaret, da. of .... Vigors, M.D.
Richard, living 1876.
Patrick Scott, Major R.A., d. 1871. = Mary, da. of Col. Farquharson, of Jamaica.
Frederick Alexander, Maj.-Gen. k.A. 1876, Director Arty. and Stores. = Emma Frances, da. of Wm. Stockley, Esq.
Edmund, Lieut.-Col. 3rd Bombay N.I., d. 1870. = Frances, da. of F. Collicott, M.D.
Louisa Colin. = Rev. W. H. Henslowe, Vicar of Wermigay, Lynn, Norfolk.
Mary Elizabeth. Jane Anne Fraser. Margaret Olympia. (Living 1876.)
Other issue, dead in 1873.
Edmund, d. 1873. = Eliza L., da of C. Herring, Esq.
George, Bombay C.S. = 1st, Emma, da. of Col. Hazlewood, H.E.I.C.S.
=2nd, Clara, da. of J. Jenkins, Esq.
=3rd, Augusta, da. of J. C. Hayward, Esq.
Elizabeth (dead). Mary. Ellen. Margaret (dead). Maria.
George Edward. Charles Gerard. Edmund Richard (Lieut. 75th Regt.) Margaret. = J. Garwood (Lieut. R.E.) Mary Elizabeth. Other issue, dead in 1876.
Chas. Edmund Southouse (Major R.A.) = Carlota Louisa, da. of C. Pearse, Esq.
Henrietta, died an infant, 1839.

SCOTTS OF SHREWSBURY.

RICHARD SCOTT, of Shrewsbury, an active partizan of Charles I., great-grandson of Richard Scott, of Scot's Hall family. (See pp. 188 and 260.) = ELIZABETH, daughter of Isaac Scott, of Shrewsbury, his cousin.

Jonathan Scott, of Betton, Mayor of Shrewsbury 1689, born 1647; died 1716.

Susannah, da. and heir of John Gardner, of Shrewsbury. = Richard Scott* (Shrewsbury), born 1648; died 1693.

Jonathan Scott (Betton), born 1677; died 1746. = Anne Farmer.

Captain Richard Scott. = Elizabeth.

A quo Scotts of Betton. (See p. 260.)

Susan. = Thomas Owen.

Anne. = John Innes.

Jonathan Scott, born 1711; died 1737 *s.p.*

NOTE.*—*Richard Scott, of Shrewsbury, bore for his arms, Argent, three Catherine wheels, sable; but it does not appear that these were generally adopted by his descendants, who mostly bear the same arms plus the engrailed bordure.*

1st wife, Eliza, only child of Alexander Blackire, of Bromley, Kent.

2nd wife, Maria Hughes of Castelbridge (*No issue.*)

= John, assumed name and arms of Waring, inheriting estates of his relative, Richard Hill Waring, grandson of Adam Waring, of Woodcote, Major in the East India Company's service, distinguished in Parliament as Major Scott-Waring, M.P. for Stockbridge and West Looe. The friend and defender of Warren Hastings in his celebrated trial.

Edward Warren Hastings Scott. = Mary McClean, married in India 1803.

Charles, died in India, unmarried.

Anna Maria. = John Reade, of Ipsden Ho., Oxfordshire.

Eliza Sophia. = Rev. G. S. Faber.

John, Captain E.I.C.S. Artillery, Bombay, died unmarried.

Edward, Captain E.I.C.S.

Emma.

Henry. = ... Ager.

Caroline. = Rev. R. Powys, of Hardwicke, Oxon.

John Thurlow Reade, B.C.S., died unmarried.

George Edward, B.C.S., died at Bombay, æt. 18.

Henry Jonathan, Lieut. E.I.C.S. Cavalry, killed in action.

William Barrington Reade. = ... Murray, of Ardbennine, Perthshire.

Edward Anderson R. = . . . Bernard.

Compton Reade. = ... Walker.

Charles Reade, novelist.

Sophia Brooke Reade. = Rev. Canon Woodroofe.

Julia Susannah. = Capt. Allen Gardiner, R.N.

Ellinor Hastings, unmarried.

Charles Waring Faber, Barrister, died unmarried 1872.

William Raikes. = Mary Anne Woodroffe.

Richard Hastings Scott, born 1796, of the Bengal Civil Service; died at Rome 1842. = 1st, Grace, da. of Rev. H. Fisher, died *s.p.*

= 2nd, Elizabeth Ann, da. of James Curtis, Esq., B.C.S.

Richard Folliott Scott, M.A., Vicar of Arlesey, Beds., and J.P. 1850. = Emily Ann, 3rd da. of Charles Hammond, Esq., Newmarket.

Richard Curtis Folliott, b. 1860.

James Folliott, b. 1864; d. 1870.

Hastings Curtis Folliott, b. 1865.

Lionel Folliott, b. 1871.

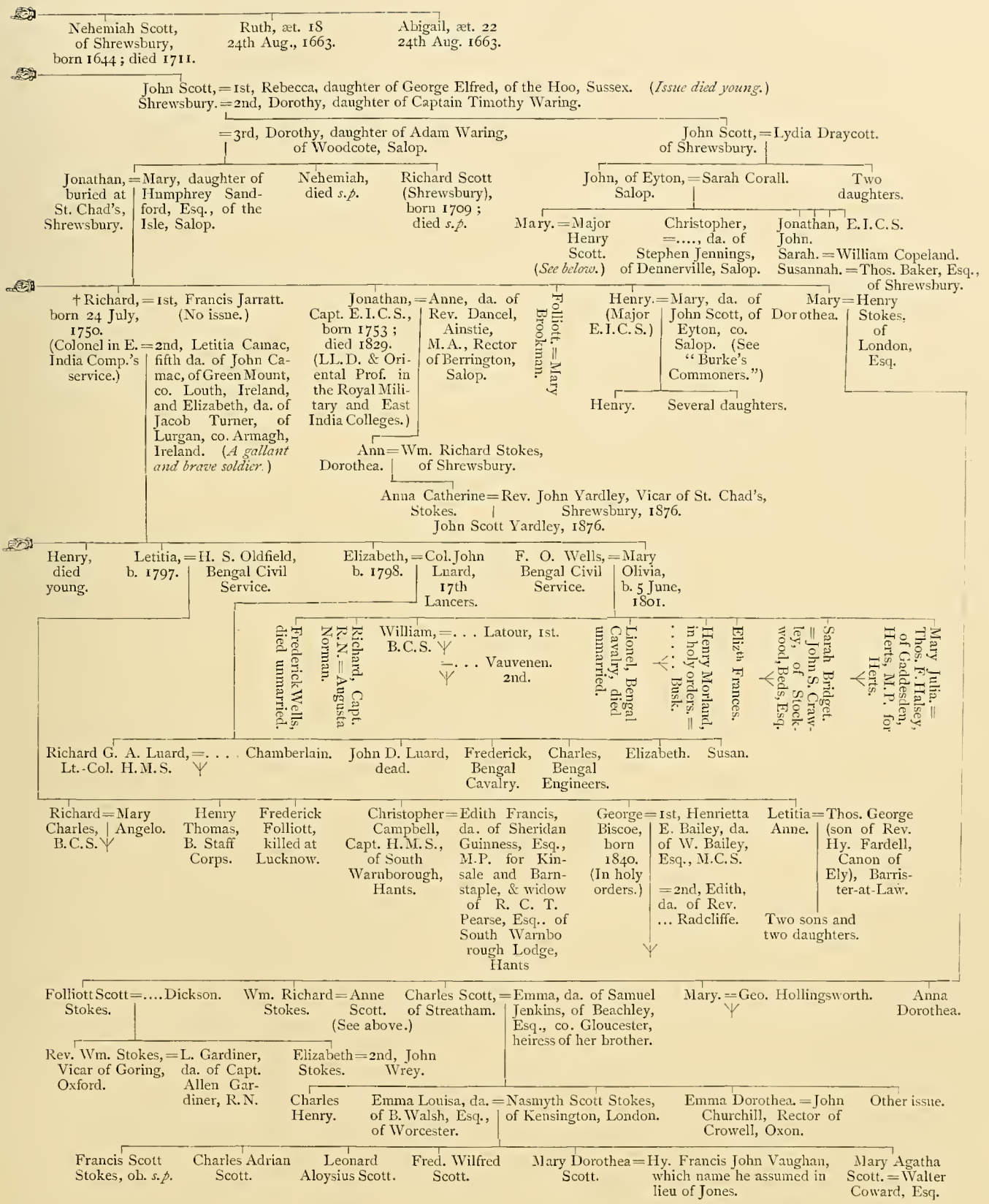
Ellen Clare.

Elizabeth Emily.

NOTE.†—*Colonel Richard Scott served under the Marquis Cornwallis, in the command of a battalion of Native Infantry, in the first war of Tippoo Sultan, and received the thanks of his chief. On the occasion of the siege of Seringapatam he received orders from head-quarters not to attack the Fort of Ootradroog in the approaches to that fortress; but seeing the panic and consternation prevailing in the Fort, he, in defiance of orders, carried the upper walls by escalade, until a practicable breach was made, and his troops effected an entry. By this successful breach of orders much expense and military stores were saved, and, humanly speaking, many British lives, and the approach to Seringapatam facilitated.*

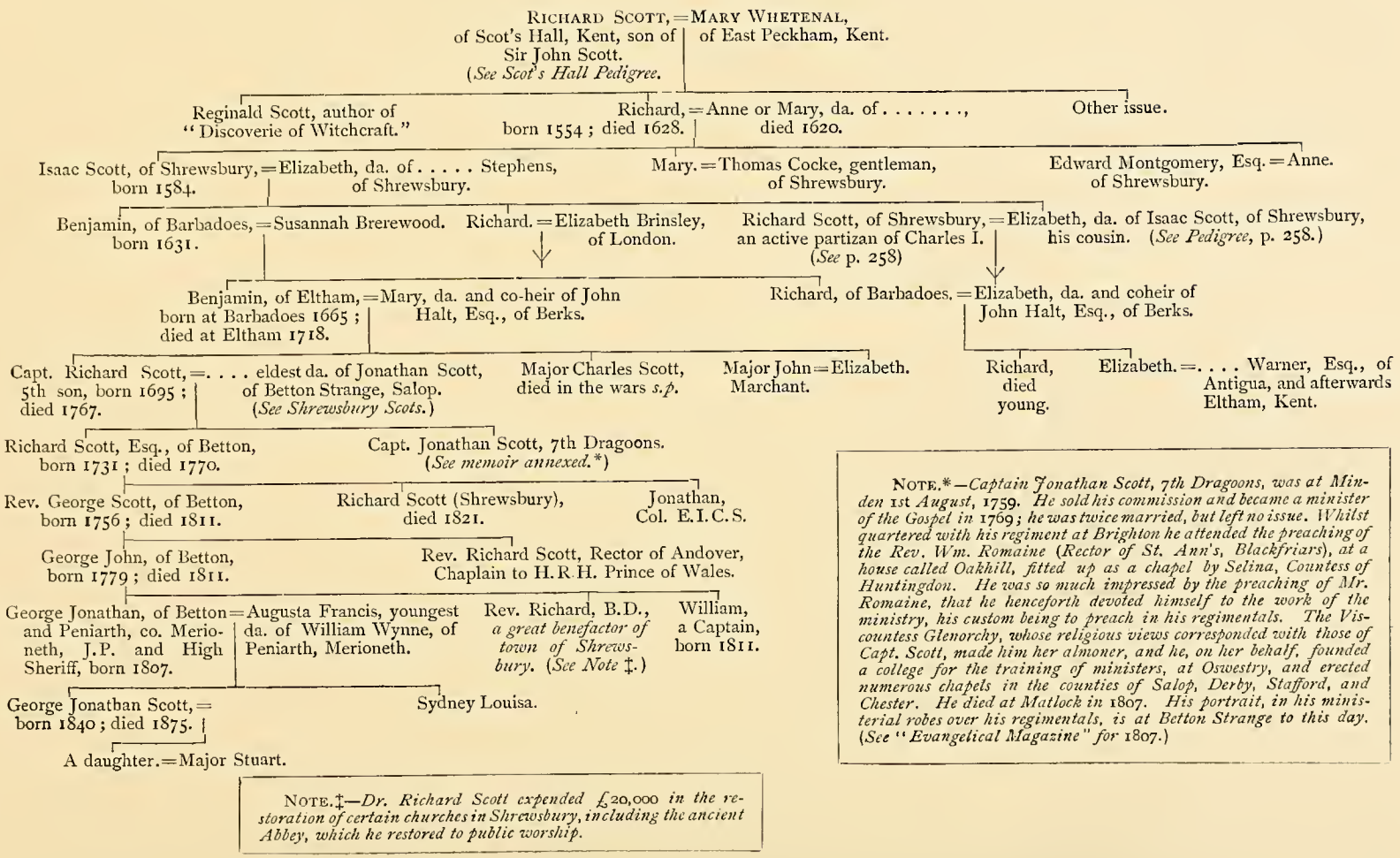
Colonel Richard Scott assumed as an augmentation to his crest (viz., a griffin segreant), a banner in the dexter claw.

FOR ARMS, SEE NOTE.*


Nehemiah Scott, of Shrewsbury, born 1644; died 1711.
Ruth, æt. 18 24th Aug., 1663.
Abigail, æt. 22 24th Aug. 1663.
John Scott, Shrewsbury. = 1st, Rebecca, daughter of George Elfred, of the Hoo, Sussex. (Issue died young.)
= 2nd, Dorothy, daughter of Captain Timothy Waring.
= 3rd, Dorothy, daughter of Adam Waring, of Woodcote, Salop.
John Scott, of Shrewsbury. = Lydia Draycott.
Jonathan, buried at St. Chad's, Shrewsbury. = Mary, daughter of Humphrey Sandford, Esq., of the Isle, Salop.
Nehemiah, died s.p.
Richard Scott (Shrewsbury), born 1709; died s.p.
John, of Eyton, Salop. = Sarah Corall.
Two daughters.
Mary. = Major Henry Scott. (See below.)
Christopher, =...., da. of Stephen Jennings, of Dennerville, Salop.
Jonathan, E.I.C.S.
John.
Sarah. = William Copeland.
Susannah. = Thos. Baker, Esq., of Shrewsbury.
† Richard, born 24 July, 1750. (Colonel in E. India Comp.'s service.) = 1st, Francis Jarratt. (No issue.)
= 2nd, Letitia Camac, fifth da. of John Camac, of Green Mount, co. Louth, Ireland, and Elizabeth, da. of Jacob Turner, of Lurgan, co. Armagh, Ireland. (A gallant and brave soldier.)
Jonathan, Capt. E.I.C.S., born 1753; died 1829. (LL.D. & Oriental Prof. in the Royal Military and East India Colleges.) = Anne, da. of Rev. Dancel, Ainstie, M.A., Rector of Berrington, Salop.
Folliott. = Mary Brookman.
Henry. (Major E.I.C.S.) = Mary, da. of John Scott, of Eyton, co. Salop. (See "Burke's Commoners.")
Mary Dorothea. = Henry Stokes, of London, Esq.
Henry.
Several daughters.
Ann Dorothea. = Wm. Richard Stokes, of Shrewsbury.
Anna Catherine Stokes. = Rev. John Yardley, Vicar of St. Chad's, Shrewsbury, 1876.
John Scott Yardley, 1876.
Henry, died young.
Letitia, b. 1797. = H. S. Oldfield, Bengal Civil Service.
Elizabeth, b. 1798. = Col. John Luard, 17th Lancers.
F. O. Wells, Bengal Civil Service. = Mary Olivia, b. 5 June, 1801.
Frederick Wells, died unmarried.
Richard, Capt. R.N. = Augusta Norman.
William, B.C.S. = ... Latour, 1st. = ... Vauvenen. 2nd.
Lionel, Bengal Cavalry, died unmarried.
Henry Morland, in holy orders. = ... Bask.
Elizth Frances.
Sarah Bridget. = John S. Crawley, of Stockwood, Beds, Esq.
Mary Julia. = Thos. F. Halsey, of Gaddesden, Herts, M.P. for Herts.
Richard G. A. Luard, Lt.-Col. H.M.S. = ... Chamberlain.
John D. Luard, dead.
Frederick, Bengal Cavalry.
Charles, Bengal Engineers.
Elizabeth.
Susan.
Richard Charles, B.C.S. = Mary Angelo.
Henry Thomas, B. Staff Corps.
Frederick Folliott, killed at Lucknow.
Christopher Campbell, Capt. H.M.S., of South Warnborough, Hants. = Edith Francis, da. of Sheridan Guinness, Esq., M.P. for Kinsale and Barnstaple, & widow of R. C. T. Pearse, Esq.. of South Warnborough Lodge, Hants
George, born 1840. (In holy orders.) = 1st, Henrietta E. Bailey, da. of W. Bailey, Esq., M.C.S.
= 2nd, Edith, da. of Rev. ... Radcliffe.
Letitia Anne. = Thos. George (son of Rev. Hy. Fardell, Canon of Ely), Barrister-at-Law.
Two sons and two daughters.
Folliott Stokes. = ...Dickson.
Wm. Richard Stokes. = Anne Scott. (See above.)
Charles Scott, of Streatham. = Emma, da. of Samuel Jenkins, of Beachley, Esq., co. Gloucester, heiress of her brother.
Mary. = Geo. Hollingsworth.
Anna Dorothea.
Rev. Wm. Stokes, Vicar of Goring, Oxford. = L. Gardiner, da. of Capt. Allen Gardiner, R.N.
Elizabeth Stokes. = 2nd, John Wrey.
Charles Henry.
Emma Louisa, da. of B. Walsh, Esq., of Worcester. = Nasmyth Scott Stokes, of Kensington, London.
Emma Dorothea. = John Churchill, Rector of Crowell, Oxon.
Other issue.
Francis Scott Stokes, ob. s.p.
Charles Adrian Scott.
Leonard Aloysius Scott.
Fred. Wilfred Scott.
Mary Dorothea Scott. = Hy. Francis John Vaughan, which name he assumed in lieu of Jones.
Mary Agatha Scott. = Walter Coward, Esq.

SCOTTS OF BETTON, AN OFFSHOOT OF THE SCOTTS OF SHREWSBURY.

ARMS.—*Argent, three Catherine wheels sable, within a bordure engrailed, gules.*


Richard Scott, of Scot's Hall, Kent, son of Sir John Scott. (See Scot's Hall Pedigree.)
Mary Whetenal, of East Peckham, Kent.
Reginald Scott, author of "Discoverie of Witchcraft."
Richard, born 1554; died 1628.
Anne or Mary, da. of . . . . . , died 1620.
Other issue.
Isaac Scott, of Shrewsbury, born 1584.
Elizabeth, da. of . . . . . Stephens, of Shrewsbury.
Mary.
Thomas Cocke, gentleman, of Shrewsbury.
Edward Montgomery, Esq.
Anne.
Benjamin, of Barbadoes, born 1631.
Susannah Brerewood.
Richard.
Elizabeth Brinsley, of London.
Richard Scott, of Shrewsbury, an active partizan of Charles I. (See p. 258)
Elizabeth, da. of Isaac Scott, of Shrewsbury, his cousin. (See Pedigree, p. 258.)
Benjamin, of Eltham, born at Barbadoes 1665; died at Eltham 1718.
Mary, da. and co-heir of John Halt, Esq., of Berks.
Richard, of Barbadoes.
Elizabeth, da. and coheir of John Halt, Esq., of Berks.
Capt. Richard Scott, 5th son, born 1695; died 1767.
. . . . eldest da. of Jonathan Scott, of Betton Strange, Salop. (See Shrewsbury Scots.)
Major Charles Scott, died in the wars s.p.
Major John
Elizabeth. Marchant.
Richard, died young.
Elizabeth.
. . . . Warner, Esq., of Antigua, and afterwards Eltham, Kent.
Richard Scott, Esq., of Betton, born 1731; died 1770.
Capt. Jonathan Scott, 7th Dragoons. (See memoir annexed.*)
Rev. George Scott, of Betton, born 1756; died 1811.
Richard Scott (Shrewsbury), died 1821.
Jonathan, Col. E.I.C.S.
George John, of Betton, born 1779; died 1811.
Rev. Richard Scott, Rector of Andover, Chaplain to H.R.H. Prince of Wales.
George Jonathan, of Betton and Peniarth, co. Merioneth, J.P. and High Sheriff, born 1807.
Augusta Francis, youngest da. of William Wynne, of Peniarth, Merioneth.
Rev. Richard, B.D., a great benefactor of town of Shrewsbury. (See Note ‡.)
William, a Captain, born 1811.
George Jonathan Scott, born 1840; died 1875.
Sydney Louisa.
A daughter.
Major Stuart.

NOTE.*—*Captain Jonathan Scott, 7th Dragoons, was at Minden 1st August, 1759. He sold his commission and became a minister of the Gospel in 1769; he was twice married, but left no issue. Whilst quartered with his regiment at Brighton he attended the preaching of the Rev. Wm. Romaine (Rector of St. Ann's, Blackfriars), at a house called Oakhill, fitted up as a chapel by Selina, Countess of Huntingdon. He was so much impressed by the preaching of Mr. Romaine, that he henceforth devoted himself to the work of the ministry, his custom being to preach in his regimentals. The Viscountess Glenorchy, whose religious views corresponded with those of Capt. Scott, made him her almoner, and he, on her behalf, founded a college for the training of ministers, at Oswestry, and erected numerous chapels in the counties of Salop, Derby, Stafford, and Chester. He died at Matlock in 1807. His portrait, in his ministerial robes over his regimentals, is at Betton Strange to this day. (See "Evangelical Magazine" for 1807.)*

NOTE.‡—*Dr. Richard Scott expended £20,000 in the restoration of certain churches in Shrewsbury, including the ancient Abbey, which he restored to public worship.*

THE PEDIGREE OF THE SCOTTS OF BALLINGARRY, CO. TIPPERARY.

ARMS.—*Argent, on a fess gules, cotized azure, three lambs between, three Catherine wheels, sable.*

The family of Scott, of Ballingarry, co. Tipperary, Ireland, claim a derivation from the Scot's Hall sept, whilst the similarity of the arms would be suggestive of such a descent. A memorandum, in the handwriting of Edward Scott, of Bodtalog, among the Scott MSS., gives the first four descents of the Ballingarry Scotts from Henry Scott, of Wigan in Lancashire, and which research in the parish registers has since fully confirmed. Whilst asserting that Henry Scott was of the Scot's Hall family, the memorandum in question fails notwithstanding to assign his appropriate place in the Scot's Hall Pedigree, although he is not unlikely to have been Henry, the youngest son of Sir Reginald Scott, of Scot's Hall. As regards the arms, which were granted in 1663, it is asserted by the present head of the family that the crest, viz., "A beacon fired proper on a green field," and the motto then adopted, viz., "Regi patriæque fidelis," were assumed in commemoration of the patriotic conduct of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, when, as Commander-in-Chief of the Kentish forces on the approach of the Spanish Armada, the beacons were fired along the south coast of England.

The family of Scott, of Great Barr in Staffordshire, Baronets, are a branch of this family, and bear the same arms.

HENRY SCOTT, of Wigan, in Lancashire.

Richard,

Jeremiah, born at Wigan 1667. Went to Ireland with William III., and settled there. Died Nov. 6, 1758. *Was present at the battle of the Boyne, and received a gold medal from King William III., now in the possession of J. J. Scott,* who was born Feb. 20, 1807. = Elizabeth Baird, married Dec. 27, 1695.

John Scott, b. St. Andrew's Day, 1696, of Ballingarry, co. Tipperary. = Mary Robinson, sister of General Andrew Robinson, in household of Prince of Wales, married Oct. 29, 1716.

Jeremiah, b. St. Andrew's Day, 1697; d. April, 1698.

Jeremiah, b. Aug. 23, 1717; d. *s.p.*

Thomas, b. Ap. 13, 1719; d. Sep. 3, 1719.

Alexander Henderson, Attorney Gen. of Jamaica. = Frances Mary, da. and heir of Thos. Brague, of Clarendon Park, Jamaica.

Frances Mary Henderson, only child, 1st wife. = John Scott, b. July 11, 1720; died at sea. Will proved 1776.

Fanny, d. unmarried, aged 19.

George, b. Sep. 10, 1722, Lieut. Gov. of Grenada and Dominica, Aide-de Camp of Gen. Wolfe. Died *s.p.*

Joseph, b. June 22, 1724.

Richard, b. Feb. 26, 1726; d. Feb. 15, 1731.

Elizabeth, b. June 23, 1728. = Joseph Baird.

Sarah, b. Nov. 9, 1730; d. Oct. 28, 1769, *s.p.* = Fred^k Drought, m. Jan. 8, 1767; d. *circa* 1807.

(She had the Ballingarry property. At her husband's death it reverted to her nephew, John, b. 1761; it was sold by his son, John James.)

Henry, b. Ap. 22, 1733.

Mary, b. Jan. 16, 1735; d. May 20, 1807. = Rev. —— Conolly.

Michael, b. 1737. = Mrs. Herbert.

Andrew Robinson, b. 1739; died same year.

Nancy, a nun at Taunton.

Emma Scott, unmarried.

Madame de Chelers. (Fanny.)

George, buried at Preston, near Faversham, Kent; monument to him there.

Robert, in Artillery, d. of cholera in India.

Alexander, married two wives.

Miss Herbert, afterwards Duchesse de Fleury.

Lucretia Favell Gregory, b. 1733; m. Dec. 28, 1760; d. Aug. 23, 1768.

Olivia, a nun, 1833.

Adele, Countess de Prunenaye.

A son, in Garde de Corps 1830.

A son, in Garde de Corps 1830.

Edward, Chamberlain to the Pope, at Aix, near St. Omer,

Ernest. = Widow of Mr. Hodges, Distiller.

Matthew.

A daughter.

A daughter.

A daughter.

Elizabeth Favell Pinnock, b. Aug. 29, 1776; d. Dec. 5, 1851. Buried Trinity Church, Marylebone. = John Scott, b. Nov. 29, 1761; d. Dec. 21, 1813, President of Council of Jamaica, and Commander-in-Chief of the Island Forces. Buried at Garboldisham, Norfolk.

Euphine Cussans. = George, b. Oct. 3, 1764; d. Oct. 3, 1844.

Mary Pinnock, m. 1799; d. Dec. 1, 1838. = Admiral Matthew Henry, b. Aug. 7, 1766; d. Oct. 31, 1836.

Euphine, buried at Brighton Old Church.

Louisa Jane Scott, d. June, 1839, 3rd da. of Adm^l. Scott. = George E., b. Jan. 21, 1797.

Agnes Ward.

Marianne, d. Dec., 1836.

John, d. in Jamaica.

Matthew, d. 1836 in Jamaica.

George Rodney, Fellow of Merton Coll., Oxon.

Walter, Scholar of Bal. Coll., Oxon.

Louisa Jane, d. 1839. = George E. Scott.

Frances Harriette Scott, 1806. = Seignelar Cuthbert, m. 1838.

George, b. Dec. 21, 1839. Louisa Arabella. Henrietta Frances.

Euphine Scott, b. Oct. 30.

Frederick G. C. Scott, Lieut. 76th Regiment 1862, d. unmarried.

Sophia A. Scott, b. Jan., 1811; m. 1845. = Thomas Chudleigh, d. 1849.

John Scott, d. Nov. 28, 1851.

Augusta Scott, m. 1841. = Edward Philips.

Elizabeth Margaret Aylmer, m. 1833; d. July 24, 1853. Buried at Lynton, Devon. = John James Scott, b. Feb. 20, 1807. = Katherine Hutton, m. Aug. 29, 1855.

Richard James Herbert, b. Feb. 8, 1857.

Robert G. Welch, R.N. m. June 5, 1834; d. 1875. = Elizabeth Scott, b. Nov. 14, 1809.

Alice Elizabeth, b. Ap. 15, 1835.

Robt. P. L., b. June 26 1836; drowned June 24, 1865.

Mary F. Dehany, m. Nov. 27, 1833; d. Ap. 27 1865. = George H. C. Scott, b. Mar. 19, 1811. = Matilda Thomas, da. of late Recorder of Swansea. = J. Wakeman Long, m. June 22, 1835. d. 1871.

Favell G. D. Scott, b. Feb. 15, 1813.

Matthew Richard, b. June 21, 1814. = Henrietta Munro, of Westbury-upon-Trim.

Mary Scott, 1800. = Sir J. T. Claridge, Recorder of Penang.

Eliz. F. Scott, d. Oct. 30, 1838. = W. K. Dehany, d. Oct. 24, 1844.

Matt. R Scott, Chaplain to Woolwich Hospital. = Mary Vivian.

J. A. H. Scott, b. Nov. 12, 1833. = Helen, da. of Rev. Ed. Elms, m. 1865.

Grace H. E. Scott, b. Mar. 30, 1835.

Frederica G. F. Scott, Sep. 29, 1836. = J. W. Rouse 1857.

Gerald L. Scott, b. Jan. 12, 1838. = Marie B. Herche, of Anhalt, Bernberg, 1862.

Philip G. Wm., b. Sep. 16, 1834. = Jane Shelton, m. Dec., 1866.

Sarah, b. 1836; d. 1839.

Matilda S. M., b. Dec. 27, 1837.

Edward J. L., b. Ap. 11, 1840.

Eliza F. E., b. Oct. 10, 1840.

Matthew H.
William A.
Douglass L.
Munro.
Kate H.
Helen M.
Cecil.
Frederick.
Jessie.

Georgina. Annette.

Francis J. W. P., = Annie Rait.

Emily U. L. Ellen L.

Fanny L. A. Favell, B.

Laura Elizabth. Blanche Edith.

SCOTTS OF YORK.

ARMS.— *Argent, three Catherine wheels sable, within a bordure engrailed, gules.*

(*Communicated by* REGINALD STEWART BODDINGTON, ESQ.)

JOSEPH SCOTT, of York, Merchant. = SARAH, sister of Sir Henry Thompson, Knt.

- Henry Scott, Surgeon, of York, born 1657; died Sept. 10, 1748. *Buried at St. Michael-le-Belfry, York.* = Jane, daughter and one of the co-heirs of William Rokeby, of Ackworth Park, York, by Emma, daughter of Sir William Bury. *Married at St. Michael's Belfrey,* March 16, 1717.
- Zachariah Scott, died March 25, 1733, *s.p.*

Rev. Rokeby Scott, M.A., Rector of Arltringworth, co. Northants, born 1696; died 1767. = Mary, daughter of Rev. William Herbert, Vicar of Normanton and Prebendary of York (*fifth son of Sir Thomas Herbert, Bart., of Tinterne and York, by Lucy, daughter of Sir Walter Alexander*).

Rokeby, Lieutenant of Marines, died Oct. 28, 1773; *buried at St. Oswald's, Chester.* = Grace, daughter of Richard Blake, of Trelogan, Cornwall, and relict of John Dade. *Married at St. Erwy, Cornwall, May,* 1764; *died* 1774.

Emma Ann, baptized at Stoke Damarel, co. Devon, Nov. 30, 1769; *married,* 1790, *at Holy Trinity Church, Chester.* = Rev. Thomas Waddock, M.A., Prebendary of Chester, *buried in Chester Cathedral Feb.* 19, 1825.

- Sir Thomas Herbert Waddock, Bart.
- Rev. H. W. Waddock.

SCOTTS OF ALDBOROUGH, CO. YORK.

ARMS.—*Vert, three stags trippant proper.* CREST.—*A stag's head erased.*

This family is evidently an offshoot from the family of Scott, of Barnes' Hall, Ecclesfield, in Yorkshire, an offshoot from the Scot's Hall family early in the sixteenth century. (*See pp.* 156 *and* 157.)

ROBERT SCOTT. = ...

Joshua Scott, of Hull. — . . . . . .

- Thomas Scott, of Aldborough Manor, and Hull. = Mary Richardson.
- Joshua.
- John Scott, of Hull. = daughter of . . . . . Ivison, *Alderman of Hull.*

2nd, Catherine, daughter of John Carne, of Newcastle. = Christopher, *Alderman of Hull.* = 1st, Anne, daughter of S. Clarke, Esq., *Alderman of York.*

- Joshua, Rector of Hilston, York.

- Sarah.
- Arabella.
- Joshua, only son, died at Acomb Jan. 18, 1780, aged 25 years.
- Catherine. = Benjamin Blades, Esq., of Hull.
- Ann. = Major Machell, of Aldborough, York.

PEDIGREE OF SCOTTS OF HALDEN AND CONGHURST, KENT.

ARMS OF SCOTTS OF HALDEN.—*Argent, a cross croslet fitchée sable.*

ARMS OF SCOTTS OF CONGHURST.—*Argent, a cross croslet sable.* (*See p.* 178.)

In the compilation of the Pedigree of the Scotts of Halden and Conghurst (*see p.* 178), *we have in addition to the resources of the Harleian MSS. and the British Museum MSS., to acknowledge the assistance of J. Jackson Howard, Esq., LL.D. and F.S.A., and of the accomplished Secretary of the Kentish Archæological Society,—the Rev. Canon W. A. Scott-Robertson.*

JOHN SCOTTE, of High Halden, died 21 Henry VI., 1442.

- Thomas Scotte, of Halden, died 1478.
  - John Scott.
  - Joan.
  - Henry of Halden, died 1521, *ancestor of the Scotts of Conghurst.*
    - Henry Scott, of Halden. = Margaret, da. and heir of . . . . . Hilles, of Benenden, Kent.
      - Stephen Scott, of Halden. = Alice, da. of John Knight, of Selling, Kent.
        - Zacchary, of Halden, *Prothonotary of Common Pleas.* = Margaret, da. of Thomas Beeston, of Stretton, Surrey.
          - Reginald, of Halden.
          - Stephen.
          - Mary.
          - Elizabeth, d. 1658. = Thomas Gates.
        - John. = Mary, da. and heir of . . . . Trearwith, co. Cornwall.
          - Mary Bennett.
          - Elizabeth.
      - John Scott. = Anne, da. and heir of George Jernigan, of Somerleyton, Suffolk. *She re-married Sigismund Brooke, of Cobham, Kent.*
        - John. Henry, Edmund, d. *s.p.*
        - Jane, da. of Cuthbert Hackett, 1st wife. = Sir Stephen, of Hayes, & Cheshunt, Herts, Sh. of Kent, 1648. = Elizabeth, da. of John Brograve, of Beckenham, Kent, 2nd wife.
          - Edmund, d. 1633.
          - Stephen, d. 1633.
          - John, of Langley, *Gentleman of King's Privy Chamber*, d. 1663; buried at Hayes, Kent.
          - Hester, da. of ..... Wright, Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry (*widow of Sir Humphery Style*).
          - Edward.
        - Anne. = Gabriel Pope, M.D.
        - Catherine. = Edw. Style.
    - Thomas, of Hawkhurst, Kent. = Mildred, da. and heir of George Congerhurst, *alias Conghurst*, of Conghurst, Kent.
      - (*The manor house he built at Conghurst is still in existence, and worth a visit.*)
      - Venicia. = John Carpenter.
      - George Scott, of CONGHURST. = Dorothy, da. of Richard Threele, of Loxwood, Sussex.
        - William Scott, of Conghurst. = Alice, da. of John Selwyn, of Frissen, Sussex.
          - George, of Conghurst. = Dorothy, da. of Sir Humphery Winch, Justice of Court of Common Pleas.
            - Humphery, b. 1614.
            - William, b. 1616.
            - Cecily.
          - Thomas.
          - Grace. = Nicholas Matthew, of Bradenham, Northants.
          - Marjory. = George Barnardiston, co. Beds.
        - George, Rector of Balcombe, Sussex. = 3 sons.
        - Thomas, of Northiam. = 3 children.
        - Elizabeth. = ... Ordiam, of Oxney, 1st hus. = Wm. Fermor, of Rotherfield, Sussex, 2nd hus.
        - Anne. = Joseph Boys.
      - Thomas, of Sevenoaks, buried in church there. (*See Mon. Ins.*) = Margery, da. of Thomas Clerk, of Ford, in Wrotham, Kent.
        - Thomas, of Sutton-at-Hone, d. 1590. = Mary, da. of ... Fardell, London.
          - Elizabeth. = Ed. Hardman, co. Worcester.
          - Edward. Philip.
          - Anne. = Christopher Pett, of Woolwich.
        - Nicholas, d *s.p.*
        - Richard, *Citizen and Grocer of London.* = Elizabeth, da. of ... Taylor, *Citizen and Grocer of London, Grocer of London.*
          - Anne. = Thomas Brace, of London.
        - George, *Citizen and Grocer of London.* = Elizabeth, da. of Sir Thomas Campbell, *Lord Mayor of London.*
          - Anne Puckering. = Sir Thomas Culpeper.
        - Edmund, *Citizen and Grocer of London.*
        - Grace.
        - Anne. = 1st, Edw. Puckering. = 2nd, Henry Bouchier. = 3rd, John Culpeper, of Foventer, Sussex. = 4th, John Hayes.
          - Frances. = Herbert Hay, of Sussex.
  - Nicholas, died *s.p.* (*In* 1464 *a feoffee of the lands of Thomas atte Hoke, of Halden.*)
- Richard Scotte, of Biddenden.
- Philip Scotte, of Tenterden.
  - Stephen, of Tenterden. = Agnes . . . . . (*Feoffee in* 1464 *of the lands of Thomas atte Hoke, etc.*)
  - Benedicta.
  - Godleve.

In concluding our Biography of the Scot's Hall family, together with the Pedigrees of that and kindred families, it may not be considered out of place, in conclusion, again to refer to the great antiquity of the source of the name, which in ancient and pre-historic times conferred its cognomen firstly on the kingdom of Ireland, and, many centuries afterwards, on that of Scotland. The name of Scotia, as applied in the third century of the Christian era, if not before, to Ireland, was doubtless derived from Iber Scot, son of Gaedhel, or Gathelus (see p. 7), who is traditionally asserted, in the chronicles of the Picts and Scots, and in the Psalter of Cashel, etc., to have been the son of Scota, an Egyptian, and with Iber Scot and his other sons, to have colonized Ireland. Thus the Irish language of the present day is almost identical with the Gaelic of the Scotch Highlands, and thus Gaedhelic, or Gaelic, is the language still spoken by the countrymen and descendants of Gathelus, which name is still perpetuated in Galloway, anciently Galgaedhel, and in Argyle=Airer-gaedhel, whilst in England the ancient Roman way from Dover and Lymne to Chester, known under the corrupted term of "Watling Street," is in all ancient maps described as the Gaethelen Strada, or Street, the equivalent of the *Irish Way*. Thus by the origin of words and names do we arrive at their historic meaning.

The ancient and historic name of Scot was known before the conquest, we have abundantly proved elsewhere, and that it was the cherished traditional name of the dynasty of Malcolm Kanmore, if not that of Kenneth McAlpin (*1st King of all Scotland*), the founder of the previous *Scottish* dynasty, which became extinct in that of Malcolm (the 2nd) in the male line, whose death is cotemporarily recorded by Marianus Scotus in 1034. He is called by that Chronicler not King of Albania, as theretofore, but of *Scotland*, this being the first time in which the name of Scotia appears to have been applied to that kingdom.

As strengthening our assertion of the traditional connection between the Scoti of Ireland, their connection with and derivation from Iber Scot, the Scythian, one of its first colonizers, and the ancient kings firstly of Ireland and afterwards of Scotland, it may be mentioned as matter of history that at the coronation at Scone in the thirteenth century, of Alexander III. (the last of the cherished race of kings of the Scoto-Saxon line), a bard, after the custom of the ancient Druids, attended and chanted his genealogy from Iber Scot and Scota, through all the intervening mazes of previous royal descents.

At the time that it is supposed the term "Scotland" was first applied to the whole of the land between the Tyne and the extreme north, the Scoti were but a small section of the population of that territory, composed of Norse, Pictish, Danish, Cumbrian-British, and Anglo-Saxon materials, and although its kings, traditionally at least and from the most ancient times, had claimed their descent from the Scoto-Irish stock of the race of Iber Scot, yet notwithstanding, as we have endeavoured to show, the name of Scotland was applied, about the tenth century, to the *whole* of North Britain, in recognition of the *tribute* imposed on the united kingdom by Canute, and hence called *Scotland*, or the land of *Tribute* (see p. 8). Be this, however, as it may, there can be no question that Malcolm Kanmore's descendants were known by the name of De Scotia, or le Scot, and gave that name to and were the royal ancestors of the very numerous families of that name, seated mostly to this day in the Lowlands of Scotland, their ancient and traditional territory.

In concluding our remarks on the common ancestry of all of the name of Scott, we append a few remarks on the historic origin of the various families as exemplified by their arms assigned to them at periods probably much later than the thirteenth century. We do not profess to give these in datal order.

JOHN LE SCOT *(circa 1230), as a member of the royal line of Scotland, and as nephew of William the Lion, King of Scots, "Argent, an inescutcheon within a double tressure flory counter flory gules." The double tressure flory counter flory gules now figuring in the royal arms of Scotland.*

John le Scot as Earl of Huntingdon (1219), "Or, three piles gules."

John le Scot as Earl of Chester (1224), "Azure, three garbs or." This coat is that now borne by the Prince of Wales as Earl of Chester, assumed originally from this man.(a)

SCOT OF SCOT'S HALL, *in Potter Newton in Yorkshire (1200), "Argent, an inescutcheon within an orle of owls, sable." John le Scot of this family was steward of the Empress Maud, daughter of Matilda le Scot, Queen of Henry I. of England. About four centuries ago it merged into the knightly family of Calverley, Yorkshire, who now bear the same arms. The orle and the inescutcheon of this coat suggest a connection with John le Scot Earl of Chester, above named and the Baliols, his representatives. The Scotts of Woodhall, co. York, who bear "Sable, an inescutcheon argent within an orle of owls, or," are doubtless of this ancient family.*

SCOT, OF BRABOURNE AND SCOT'S HALL, KENT (1310), *"Argent, three Catherine wheels sable within a bordure gules" (ancient coat). The families who claim a descent and common origin are—*

1stly. Those who bear a similarity of arms, or slightly differenced, viz., the Scotts of Betton, Shrewsbury, Staffordshire, York, and Lincoln, of Dublin and Ballygannon (Hopton Scotts), of Ballingarry and Great Barr (Baronets), and elsewhere.

2ndly, Those who have assumed different arms, but still claim a direct descent from the Scot's Hall sept, viz., the Scotts of Chigwell, Stapleford, Tany, Litchett Minster, Dorset (Baronets), of Rotherfield, Sussex, of Hulden, and Conghurst, of Hayes and Bromley in Kent, of Camberwell and Tatsfield, Surrey, besides other minor families.

We now come to the extensive and ubiquitous families sprung from the Border clan of Scot, *essentially Scotch in their descent and associations*, yet doubtless descendants of the royal family of le Scot of the Scoto-Saxon line, and thus deriving a common origin with the Kentish family of Scott, from whom so many families of English origin derive their descent. It may be stated generally that the ancestors of the Border clans early in the fourteenth century preferred their ancestral traditional nationality, *and thus threw in their lot with Bruce and the party of independence in Scotland*, and thereby retained their ancient Scottish patrimonies, in contradistinction to such of their kindred as selected England as their future home, and *gave their allegiance to Edward I. of England*, and thus laid the foundation of many families long since settled in that country, and looked upon as of English descent.

The first alphabetically of the numerous border clans of Scott (from whom so many derive a descent, as suggested by bearing a similarity of arms, differenced according to circumstances of descent), are the Scotts of ANCRUM, BALWEARIE, *and* ABBOTTSHALL. *The arms of the Scotts of Ancrum (Baronets of Roxburgh) being "Argent, three lions' heads erased gules." The sub families, who all bear in some form the "three lions' heads erased," are the Scotts of Abbottshall and Bolwearie, the family of Scott-Robertson (Bonholm, Scotland), of Hedderweck, the Scotts, Earls of Eldon, and Scott Baron Stowell, of Dunronald Forfar (Barts), of Comeston, and the families of Scott of Loggie, Rossie, Wardroperton, and many others, still settled on their patrimonial estates in Scotland.*

The Scotts of BUCCLEUCH AND OF HARDEN *are likewise a very numerous race, as suggested by the great variety of difference exhibited in the arms of those claiming descent from these comparatively ancient houses, whilst they all bear in some form the arms of* BUCCLEUCH, *viz., "Or, on a bend azure, a mullet of six points between two crescents of the field;" or those of* HARDEN, *viz., "Or, on a bend azure, a star of six points between two crescents of the field." These families consist of the Scotts of Holland, of Balmouth, Bevillaw, Elie, of Edinburgh, of Gomberry, of Harwood, of Hassendine, of Hundislope, of Scotstarvit, of Pitlochrie, of Orkney, of Spencerfield, of Thirlestane, of Toderick, of Vogry, of Whitesluid, of Whitehaugh, of Sinton, Scott Baron Polwarth, Scott of Highchester, of Raeburn (from whom Sir Walter Scott, of Abbotsford, was descended) (extinct), of Gala House Selkirk, of Clerkington and Mallany, of Scott Earl of Clonmell, of Scott-Montague (Baron Montague), of Ardross, Edinburgh, of Hadshaw, of Dryhope, of Broadmeadows, Burnhead, Gibblesdon, Horselhill, and Mangerton, all in Scotland.*

Whilst in these concluding remarks we have been compelled to rely on traditions handed down from pre-historic times, we may not unaptly here refer to the Lial-fail, or Stone of destiny, which is now one of the most interesting objects in Westminster Abbey, especially as it bears on the subject of the traditional connection and blood descent of the early Scoto-Irish, and subsequently Scoto-Pictish kings. The Lial-fail, or Coronation Stone of Scotland, is traditionally asserted to have been the stone upon which the patriarch Jacob rested his head on the occasion of his vision. It is more credibly asserted to have been carried to Ireland by the early Scythian (Scoti) colonizers, and moreover that every monarch of Scythian or Milesian race in Ireland was crowned upon it until Fergus the Great, the first King of Albania (Scotland) of the Scythian or Gadelian race, removed it to Scotland. Kenneth Mac-Alpin (*son of Alban, or Albania*), the first King of *all* Scotland, was crowned upon it at Scone.

It was in consequence of the superstitious reverence with which the Scotch people regarded this relic, believing that wherever this stone should be placed there would their ancient race be represented in the person of its monarch, that induced Edward I to remove it to Westminster. On that stone have been crowned the kings and queens of England, deriving, like the ancient Irish and Scotch kings of old, a long descent from the early Scythian colonizers of Ireland, and thus the prophetic traditional history of this remarkable relic has been vindicated.

(a) We are not aware of any family of the name of Scott who now bear the above arms.

WE had nearly terminated our labours when we received, by the kindness of Mr. W. J. C. Moens, the following curious, and to some extent interesting, extract from M. SMALLGANGE'S CRONYK VAN ZEELAND, published in *Middelburg* (Holland) in 1696. It is a literal but quaint translation from the Dutch text, a portion of which appears to have issued from the pen of Reginald Scott (author of the *Discovery of Witchcraft*, see p. 188), and if so, it at all events suggests the traditional belief he had in the origin of his family. It was written *circa* 1580.

This extract, *inter alia*, purports to refer to the ancestry, etc., of a family of the name of Schotte, then resident in Zeeland, and descendants of Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall (see p. 214), by a wife whom he married at Brabant, and of whom the Scot's Hall Records are altogether silent. The issue of this marriage appear to have settled at Middelburg, and we are informed that their descendants exist there and elsewhere in Holland to this day. Sir John Scott, who was absent for many years in the Low Countries in the service of Queen Elizabeth, may have married and had issue there, but he left no issue by either of his English wives. Be this, however, as it may, this extract from the "Cronyk Van Zeeland" appears to be a curious sixteenth century jumble of fact and surmise, and as such to a great extent unreliable, but may nevertheless close our observations on Pedigrees.

"SCHOTTE.

"The founder of this family was ABUSA, otherwise SIGHWARD, cousin of HENGISTH, Prince of the Lower Saxons. He married a daughter of LUCIUS, in the Province of Kent, now called *Newington Lucii*, anno 483. He was general of the Saxons, and drove the Scots out of Northumberland. His descendants greatly increased in power till the year 827, when their cousin BALDRID, the seventh king of Kent, lost his empire and life. By this turn Kent changed the name of a Kingdom into that of an English Province; their arms, first given by the Kings of Kent, *a white rampant horse on a field of yellow*,[b] were taken away from them, and instead thereof one of a *griffin*[c] was given to them, while they remained deprived of public offices.

"Thus they continued, till *Athelfer* swayed the sceptre over that nation, in the year 924, when *Sibrigh*, otherwise called *Giuldehelm*, General of Henston (*sic*), for whom he gained many victories against the Danes, was the head of that family. He had married Maria, daughter of *Lekinus de Burgo*, he being, as well as his son-in-law, General in that Kingdom. From this marriage issued *Muthred*, who married *Ales*, niece of the King *Athelstane*. Issue of this marriage was *Malthus*, who commanded the fleet of *Edward the Confessor*. He left England, displeased, and repaired to Holland, where he married the daughter of *Simon*, first Lord of *Teilingen*. Afterwards he returned to England, where he induced the people to drain the Romney marshes, promising that he would give to everyone his portion, according to their quota, which word is called in Englishe Scotte, from which word the book called *Domesday* testifies that this family has obtained its name. This *Malthus* is also said to have had three daughters, *Machtildes*, *Emma*, and *Ada*, who were all given in marriage to the next heirs to the Crown. The hereditary portion of this ancestral line, called *Scotshall* in the Parish of Smeth, in the Bailiwick of Bircholt, fell at last at the time of Edward the First, into the hands of a daughter, called *Anna*, who brought it on in marriage with *Robbert Baliol* (?), father of John, *Count of Athol*, who came by death anno 1307. Afterwards they acquired the name of *Baliol le Scotte*. His son *David*, being *Baron of Chilham Castle*, lived at the time of *Edward* the Second.

"This family of *Baliol* was from Scotland. And whereas the Scotch Lords carry the maternal name, they can also uphold their arms by two spinsters. Further, the manors of *Brabourn*, *Schotshall*, the which had been taken from them, were given back again, on condition that they should bear the name of Baliol no more. (*See p.* 23, *David Strabolgi=Joan Comyn.*) David had two sons, the elder of whom married *Maria*, daughter of the Count of Oxford, and the younger married *Anne* (*Joan*), heiress of the Count of Badgenoth (*see p.* 23). From the latter descended the Barons of Burley in Scotland, and several other illustrious families, and with the surname of Scotte, acknowledge the Scott of Scotshall as the heads of their family.

"It is further found that *George* (?) *Scotte*, *Baron of Chilham Castle*, commanded all the imperial troops against Malcolm, King of Scotland, as well as against the Danes at the time of King Harold. It was he who with an army of five thousand Kentish men, dared to march against William, surnamed the Conqueror, in order to obtain the ratification of the liberties and privileges of his family.[d] Since this time this family has been without public offices till the tenth year of Edward the Third; nevertheless they were of great consideration, for the historian *Summers* says, page 290, that one GEORGE SCOTTE married, in the seventh year of Henry the Second, Alice, daughter of Renaud, Count of Cornwal.

"About that time there were fifteen Knights of that house and name, five of whom remained in the so-called Holy War, and two were Knights Templars. Further, in the tenth year of the above reign lived GUILLEAUME SCOTTE, Knight, Lieutenant Criminal of England (*see p.* 90), and his brother, THOMAS SCOTTE, Field-marshall (?)

---

[b] *The White Horse of Kent, the crest of the Derings.*

[c] *The Griffin, the crest of the Scotts of Scot's Hall.*

[d] *William de Schoies, or le Scot, of Scottyshall, Dunwich in Suffolk, at the Domesday survey, held lands in Essex, Suffolk, Norfolk, and elsewhere, that had been held by his ancestor in Edward the Confessor's time. These lands must have been confirmed to William le Scot by the Conqueror, and may have been held as the result of successful resistance to that monarch, or more probably by assistance rendered on his invasion of England.*

"ROBERT SCOTTE was Lieutenant of the Tower of London, anno 1424. JOHAN SCOTTE, Knight, was Comptroller of the House, and Privy Counsellor of King Edward the Fourth; and THOMAS, his younger brother, was Chancellor of England and Privy Councillor.

"WILM SCOTTE, Knight, was Governor of the Cinque Ports of England, and Constable of the Castle of Dover. THOMAS SCOTTE, his son, held the same office after him, and his brother, JOHAN SCOTTE, Knight, who is supposed to have married Lady Alice, daughter of Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham (*see p.* 219), from whom came REINALD SCOTTE, Lieutenant of Kent for Henry the Eighth, and Governor of Dover Castle for Queen Mary. His eldest son, Sir Thomas, was Governor of Kent (*see p.* 194). GEORGE SCOTTE, Knight, WILLIAM SCOTTE, became nobleman of Venice, married the daughter of the Count of Mansfelt, leaving a son called Johan, who married Anna, daughter of Sir Pieter Ross (*qy. Roos*), Knight, and niece of the renowned Knight, Philip Sidney, by whom he had a son, JOHAN SCOTTE, Shield-bearer, Captain for the King in the West Indies against the Spaniards. But after the death of LADY ALICE, said SIR JOHAN SCOTTE married in Brabant, where he got two sons, namely, *Richard* and *Johan*, the latter of whom died young. *Richard* married with *Catharina*, daughter of Sir James Smithsby, by whom he had three sons, REYNOUD, MARINUS, and JOHAN, who after the loss of Cales came to these Netherlands.

"The present owner of the paternal estates of this House is SIR EDWARD SCOTTE, the only son of EDWARD, KNIGHT OF THE BATH, and of Lady Maria, widow of Sir Norton Knatisbal, of Muirsamhaten (*Mersham Hatch*) Of this house has been REGINALDUS, or RICHARD SCOTTE, Shield-bearer, who has described the genealogy of the family of the Scott, with its adventures, which book is still preserved in England by SIR THOMAS SCOTTE, cousin of Captain JOHAN SCOTTE. This said REGINALDUS had two sons, JAMES, the Shield-bearer (Schildknape), and MARINUS, of whom it is recorded that they settled down in Zeeland, where their descendants possessed in the island of Walcheren many considerable goods and lands, some came there to enjoy country life, but others valued more the honour of government, and made themselves of importance in the capital, Middelburg, as the highest and most important offices both of the city and the state, namely, offices of Ambassadors, etc., were by them held, meanwhile allying themselves to the principal and noblest families of the same Province, so that they may indeed carry the name of an ancient Zeeland family, bearing instead of the gold griffin as arms, only a thigh or leg of a griffin gold or yellow, wherein the descendants still continue.

"Of this family was in Zeeland the valiant chieftain, JACOB SCOT, or SCOTTE, who slew the Spaniards in the year 1574, outside Middelburg, not far from Brigdamme, where they were buried at the forks of a road, in a pit, which spot is still called the Spaniards' Pit. This Mr. Jacob Scotte was afterwards burgomaster of *Middelburg* and Auditor of the General Chamber of Accounts at the Hague, first married with N. N, afterwards with Lady N. van Thoor, by his first wife was SIMON SCOTTE, Knight, Secretary of *Middelburg*, afterwards State Councillor. By the second wife, APOLLONY SCOTTE, Pensionary of Middelburg and Administrator of the East Indian Company. These three brothers married three sisters, *Jacoba Maria* and *Cornelia van Borsselen van der Hooge*, daughters of Mr. *Jan*, Burgemester of Middelburg, and of Lady *Anna van Borsselen*, widow of Mr. van Jaersvelt. Of this generation there is still living at present the Honorable *Simon Scotte*, Colonel of a regiment infantry in the service of our country, a valiant, courageous, and brave captain, who was first married to Miss *Eugenia Rolland*, by whom he had a son, *Sir Simon Scotte*, ensign, who died a bachelor; and who afterwards was married to *Miss Anna Catharina van Heyddberg.*"

Appendix.

Correspondence, Records and Deeds.

"This, all this, was in the olden time long ago."

The following letters, commencing with the year 1487, and ending with the last century, are obtained exclusively from original sources, and now published for the first time. Of these, the great bulk are from the Scot's Hall chest; a few, however, with the kind permission of the Marquis of Salisbury, are copied from the originals in his possession, at Hatfield House, and are addressed to members of the Scot's Hall family, by his lordship's ancestors, Cecil, Burleigh, and Cobham, ministers of State in the reigns of Queen Elizabeth and James I., and there are four, from the Cottonian MSS. in the British Museum. All, however, have a distinct historic value, apart from the interest attaching to the Kentish family of Scott. They deal, *inter alia*, with the purely domestic scenes of a period long gone by, and at times, refer to matters of history, of State or County interest and importance, in relation to the defence of the sea coast from invasion, or to the troubles of King and Parliament in later times; whilst, lastly, as suggestive of the gradual decay in influence of this once proud and honourable family, we find letters from Ministers of State and others, offering to the younger branches employment in State offices, etc.—offers which it appears they were not always tardy in accepting.

To many an old Kentish family, still rooted to ancestral soil and associations, these letters will be found of interest in the revival of recollections of alliances and family connections, traditionally remembered, or well-nigh forgotten in the onward march of time.

As a rule, we have modernized the orthography and phraseology of these letters, partly to render their perusal more acceptable to non-antiquarian readers, and in part, to furnish the obvious sense and meaning, when from indistinctness of handwriting, from lapse of time, or other causes, we have experienced difficulty in deciphering accurately the meaning of a word or paragraph. For access to this valuable correspondence we again repeat our obligations to Mrs. Fairfax Best and her family, for unreservedly placing these, and every record of interest, at our disposal.

(**1**) A Letter addressed . . . . . my Cosyn S^{r} William . . ottys (Scott), date *circa* 1487.

Cosyn Schotte, Y have comenyd w^{t} Master Ponyges,[a] towtchynge the unkynd demenyng of the p^{r}or of Yorke toward yow. Y have alegged many of yo^{r} (*ca*) uses as y cowde ben the awey wyche mater he knows well ev^{ry}chone better the y know and he hyvyn ev^{ry} parte of the made me full resonable answer as me thynkethe y cowde be cotent yf the case wer toward me, not w^{t} standynge y found hy so well in myde toward yow and the seyd pōr thet he wold the mater wer yn deffere . . . . hard, and thenkes thet the p^{r}or wolde be cōtēt thet y myghte be amen betwene yow.

Cosyn, gladde wolde y be to do the thynge thet mighte be to yo^{r} plesur, and yf y^{t} so be thet you ca be cotente thet y may come betweene you and the seyd p^{r}or, ye may be sur y wyll not se your (*hu*)rte nor (*dy*)shonour, but wyll do for yow as y wolde ye schold do for me, and of y^{r} plesur heryn y praye you of Answer and the blessyd trynte kepe yow.

Yo^{r}ys,

GULDEFORDE.[b]

[a] *Edward, Lord Poynings, brother-in-law of Sir William Scott.*

[b] *Sir John Guildford, of Hemsted, Kent, was Comptroller of the Household of Edward IV., etc., in succession to Sir John Scott, father of Sir William Scott (Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports), to whom this letter is addressed. Sir John Guildford, or Guldeforde, was direct ancestor of Lord Guildford Dudley, who married Lady Jane Grey, the "eight days Queen," and of Lord Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, Queen Elizabeth's favourite minister* (*see p. 171*). *The name of Guldeforde was derived from the manor of East Guldeforde, near Rye in Sussex.*

(**2**) To Sir William Scott, knt.,[c] dated 14th February, *circa* 1513.

HENRY R. BY THE KING. Trusty and wellbeloved, we greet you well, marvelling not a little that according to our letters to you . . . . . for the preparation of a certain number of men mentioned in the same to serve us on the . . . . . thus you have not as yet satisfied us of your towardness therein, by reason whereof we verily trust that you will furnish the said number, considering that the time of the advancing of our army to the sea approaches so near, that we have no convenient leisure to provide the said number elsewhere, and therefore we will that you do *arredeye* (*sic*) and cause the said persons to be at Portsmouth the 8th day of April next coming at the furthest, there to take shipping. Send forthwith unto us with your certificate some trusty person to receive conduct money for them without any longer delay in soothing the dangers that shall be laid unto you for the non performance hereof at your peril. Given under our signet at Lambeith the 14th day of February, (no date—*circa* 1513).

(**3**) To our trusty and well beloved Sir William Scott, knight, dated 23rd of March, 1513.

BY THE KING HENRY R. Trusty and well beloved, we greet you well, and albeit that by our letters to you directed, we have commanded you to send the number of men mentioned in our said letter, to be at our Port of Southampton the 8th day of April next ensuing, yet nevertheless for certain considerations us moving, we now will that you stop the sending of the said men till the 22nd day of the aforesaid month, and in the meantime we will you send to our Council for conduct money and jackets for your said number, so that they fail not to be at our said port the 22nd day before specified, as you will answer therefore to us at your peril. Given under our signet at our City of London the 23rd day of March (*circa* 1513).

A letter (*without date—circa* 1530) from Ann . . . . . at Barllynges, addressed

(**4**) To my most worthy grandfather, Sir John Scott, knight, give these.

SIR,—I beseech you give these lines leave to represent that my respect to you which by absence I cannot perform, for my heart and mind doth always so attend you, as still remembering how much I have been bound to you for your love and favours when I was least able to deserve them. And now it has pleased God to bless me with years of understanding more fit to do you service, my fortunes have placed . . . . . as above may . . . . . I therefore hope you will accept my willingness thereto, and believe I remain

Your most faithful and obedient daughter to my power,

ANN (*illegible*)[d]

Sir, I pray remember my duty and service to my grandmother and my lady Smythe.

(**5**) Letter dated from Greenwich 27th January, 1550, addressed

TO OR LOVYNGE FFRENDE, SR REIGNOLDE SCOTTE, KNIGHTE.—After our hearty commendations. Whereas we understand that certain Wood and Coals remaining in your custody upon the dissolution of the "Mynte" at Canterbury by long lying waste and consumption,

These shall therefore as well to require you as to authorise you to make sale thereof to the King's Majesty's use by the view and of such honest and indifferent men next adjoining, as you shall think most meetest for that purpose, and to make payment of the money thereof growing to the High Treasurer of all the King's Majesty's mints to his highnesses use without any delay. And these letters shall be sufficient warrant and discharge on this behalf, and thus we bid you farewell from Greenwich this 27th January, 1550.

J. WARWICK.[e]
W. HERBERT.

Vol. CLV., p. 61.—*From the Marquis of Salisbury's Collection of MSS. at Hatfield House.*

(**6**) Thomas Scott to Sir William Cecil. 21st December, 1567.

RIGHT HONORABLE,—My duty considered these are to advertise your honour that Sir John Desmond fell sick betwixt Stowe and Litchfield, so that we had much ado to get him to Litchfield, and this present day, the 21st of Dec., we are constrained to tarry there, to see what he will do to-morrow, and if there be any halting in him we will travel towards London. The greatest lack we have is lack of money, as this bearer, Mr. Skyddy, can show your honour, to whom I pray your honour give credit in such matters as toucheth the Earl, and for money to be sent to me for the conveyance of the said Earl and others that shall attend upon him. Thus being bold to trouble your honour, I pray God to send your honour all those things that your honour's heart shall desire to his honour and your comfort. Amen.

From Litchfield this 21st of Dec., 1567. Your honour's to command,

THOMAS SCOTT.[f]

Add. To the Right Honorable Sir William Cecil, knight, Chief Secretary to the Queen's most gracious Majesty, give these with speed.

---

[c] *Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall, was at this time Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Governor of Dover Castle. This and the following letter have reference doubtless to the French war, which broke out in* 1513, *in which the Emperor Maximilian of Germany served under Henry VIII. of England against France, and during which, the celebrated Battle of the Spurs was fought, and Terouenne taken by siege.*

[d] *Probably a letter from Anne Scott, afterwards wife to Walter Mayney, of Staplehurst.*

[e] *John, Earl of Warwick, was brother of Lord Guildford Dudley, who married Lady Jane Grey, and of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, and son of John Dudley, Earl of Northumberland (beheaded). He was thus a kinsman of Sir Reginald Scott. John, Earl of Warwick, died in prison, having been condemned for high treason.* *(See p.* 171.*)*

[f] *Thomas Scott* *(see Biography, p.* 194*).* *This letter probably refers to the journey of the Earl of Shrewsbury at end of the year* 1567 *and the beginning of* 1568, *to Tutbury Castle in Staffordshire, on the occasion of the removal of Mary Queen of Scots from Bolton Castle to that place, the Earl being commissioned by the Privy Council to take charge of her at Tutbury, and Thomas Scott having charge of the escort.* *(See Note, p.* 177.*)*

(**7**) A letter dated 18th October, 1572, from the Earl of Leicester to Sir Thomas Scott, thanking him for his diligence in the Queen's service, and assuring him of his friendship.

To my very friend, Sir Thomas Scott, knt. Sir Thomas Scott,—I have received your letters, perceiving thereby the great care you have of Her Majesty's service, and particularly your earnest goodwill and affection towards me, for which as I cannot but render unto you my most hearty thanks, so do I likewise desire you to make assured account of me and my friendship, most ready always to stand you in any stead and way. And therefore pray you to use me boldly when any of your causes so require, that I may in some part requite the great goodwill you bear me. Touching that you write of for the muster, I doubt not but you shall shortly receive a commission in that behalf, according to your desire. And thus in the mean time, desirous to be in some way occasioned to pleasure you, I bid you (with my commendations) most heartily farewell, from the Court this 13th of October, 1572.

Your assured friend and cousin,[g]
R. LEYCESTER.

Vol. CLIX., fo. 82.—*From the Marquis of Salisbury's Collection of MSS. at Hatfield House.*

(**8**) Sir Thomas Scott to Lord Burghley. 10th Feb., 1573.

After my most humble duty to your good Lordship remembered, The daily raising and enhancing the price of Corn and all manner of victuals to such extremity as the like hath not in many years been seen (with the pitiful complaints of the poor, that the markets are not served, nor they elsewhere can be provided of corn, doth move me to inform your Lordship of those thinge by my private letters presently, which might better have been done by more of the Commissioners (had they not for the most part been absent at London), in doing whereof though there be nothing to be desired of your Lordship and the rest of the most honourable Council, but was long since and in good time by your honors foreseen and provided for, yet hath the execution thereof in some principal points failed, by transporting of beer, and under color thereof other victuals from Sandwich, Dover, and other ports to places beyond the seas, and by suffering corn buyers in as great numbers as almost at any time, who do not only draw corn in great quantities to places of vent and transportation, but do also forstall the markets of such corn as otherwise should serve them. And upon the bruit of a letter from the most honorable Council to the Commissioners, requiring four thousand quarters of wheat, and so much of other grain as might be spared to satisfy the necessity of the City of London, the price of wheat was suddenly raised from 12 and 13 groats to 15 and 16; and some markets almost left destitute of corn; the which quantity if it be not lessened, and certainly limited, and the other points by your honor's wisdom remedied, I see too apparant likely hood of a miserable state among the poor and many others at hand. Nevertheless if corn in the corn countries within this shire be not more conveyed away than it hath been about Ashford and these parts, by order taken in time, that such as have corn shall bring by turn a certain quantity every market day (the which for my part I have already enforced by entreaty to put in execution), the markets might conveniently be served till Whitsuntide or Midsummer. When the poor people, by the warmth of the year, the fruits of the earth, and the increase of cattle, may be sustained, hereupon what points soever else it shall please your honor by the Commissioners to reform and order, that point for the transporting out of the ports beyond the seas of beer and other victuals by speech or writing from your Lordship or the rest of the most honorable, yourselves will best take effect. And though this last point has been brought to me by divers reports and not by proofs, yet have I thought it meet to impart the same unto your honor, to whom the giver of all blessings send long life and endless comfort.

From Scot's Hall, the 10th of February, 1573.

Your Lordship's always ready at Commandment,
THOMAS SCOTT.

Add. "To the right honorable his especial good Lord the L. of Burghley, L. Treasurer of England, and one of her Majesty's most honorable Privy Council."

Endd. 10th Feb., 1573. Thomas Scott to my Lord.—Prices of corn in those parts by the transporting of beer. Holograph.

(**9**) Letter from London dated 11th Sept., 1580, addressed to our loving friend, Mr. (*sic*) Thomas Honywood, Esq.

After our hearty commendations, whereas William Scott, of Mote, near Rye in Sussex, Esquire, was of late by our order appointed not only to make his abode at your house or otherwise by your discretion, but also to have conference with you and such others well affected in religion as you should think meet to assign in that behalf, upon hope concerned that by your good persuasions he might be induced to yield his conformity in religion. At what time he gave by our order Bond to Her Majesty's use in £300 for the forthcoming and personal appearance of the said Scott, to be made before us or other our colleagues, upon warning to be given from us to him or left at your house, and to divers other effects and purposes contained in the said Bond which on his part was to be observed.

Whereas in divers points (as we are credibly informed he has since broken), And being of late by order directed to us from the LL. of Her Majesty's Privy Council sought for, doth keep himself out of the way, so that we cannot have his presence for such direction to be taken with him, as we have in charge greatly abusing the favour and lenity shewn him. We have thought good that the abode of the said Scott was appointed to be within your house or at your discretion, to pray, and require you forthwith upon receipt hereof to give notice to the said Scott that he personally appear before us or other of our colleagues resident in London, according to the tenour of his said Bond, whom hereby we also admonish and warn to appear accordingly.

And thus, not doubting of your care in this behalf, we bid you farewell from London, XI. Sept., 1580.

JOHN LONDON (Bishop of London).
OWYN HOPTON.
DANL. LEWES (Judge of the Admiralty).

---

[g] *For kinsmanship existing between Sir Thomas Scott and Robert Dudley, the celebrated Earl of Leicester, see pp.* 171 *and* 173.

[h] *No less than three of the sons of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, married into the ancient and knightly family of Honywood:—Firstly, Sir Edward Scott, K.B., of Scot's Hall, married Katherine, daughter of John Honywood, of Elmsted, Kent; secondly, Thomas Scott, married Elizabeth, daughter and sole heir of Thomas Honywood, of Henewood and Sene, Kent; and, thirdly, Robert Scott, of Mersham, married Priscilla, daughter of Sir Thomas Honywood, of Elmsted.*

[i] *William Scott, of the Mote, Iden.* (*See p.* 173.)

This letter kindly contributed by H. B. MACKESON, ESQ., F.G.S., *of Hythe.*

(**10**) A letter dated 3rd December, 1581, from Sir Thomas Scott to the Mayor, etc., of Hithe, addressed,

To my very loving friends the Mayor, Juratts, and Commonaltie of the Port and Town of Hithe.[j]

After my very hearty commendations, and forasmuch as I am certified that Mr. Bridgman is departed out of this life, I earnestly desire you to grant your favourable and friendly consent that either my brother, Charles Scott, or my eldest sonne may be chosen by you as Burgs (*sic*) for your Towne in the Parliament House in this place, In doing wherof you give me just cause to be carefull that nothing pass in the said Parliament house that may be prejudicial to the estate of your Town and any liberty you have, but that you shall find both myself and any of these two that you shall choose for your Burgs (*sic*) faithfully to deal for you by ourselves and all other good meanes we can in this behalf, and so I commend you to the Lord, from Scott's Hall this third of December, 1581.

Your very assured friend,
THOMAS SCOTT.

Vol. CLIII., f. 67.—*From the MSS of the Marquis of Salisbury at Hatfield House, Herts.*

(**11**) Letter dated December, 1584. Sir Thomas Scott and others to the Ld. Warden [Cobham]. [k]

Pondering, right honorable our very good Lord, one especial point of great moment in the instrument we received from your good Lordship, to subscribe and consign with your Lordship and others, which is to prosecute every backslider faithless, and by attestation perjured person that shall contrary to his subscription to this honorable and legal association not persevere. We for the better performance of our promises and duties herein are humble suitors to your good Lordship, that before you deliver up the same to the Lords of her Majesty's honorable Privy Council, it would please you to cause a copy of the instrument of association to be fair written with the names of all such as have subscribed thereto, and to send the same under some note of your good Lordship's hand for the better testimony of the truth thereof unto the *Custos Rotulorum*, there to remain of record, for every of us ready to have copies thereof for the better discharge of our duties touching all the points contained in the said instrument; and so with the remembrance of our very humble duties to your good Lordship, we wish you a long course of honorable and joyful days.—The — Dec., 1584.

Your Lordship's most assured to command,

THOMAS SCOTT. WILLIAM PARTHERICHE.
JAMES HALES. RAFE HEYMAN.
EDWARD BOYS. GEORGE MORTON.
THOMAS PALMER.

Add. To the Right Honorable our especial good Lord, the L. Cobham, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports. Give these.

Brit. Mus., Cotton MS., Titus, B. VII., fo. 67.

(**12**) Letter from Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, to the Right Honble. the Earl of Leicester, dated 2nd March, 1585.

To the Rt. Hon^ble^. my especiall good Lord the Earle of Leycester, lieutenaunt generall of H. Ma^ts^ forces in the Low Contreyes, and one of the most honorable privy counsell.

My moste humble duetie unto yo^r^ good Lordshippe remembred. Whereas I gave yo^r^ L. informacion that my sonne John Scott would prepare towardes a cornette of horse to serve under yo^r^ L. in the low Contreyes 25 horses, I am now to certifie yo^r^ L. that he hath in a readines 39 very good and serviceable horses, and diverse talle gentlemen of good abilitie to serve upon them, as may appere to y^r^ L. by the bill enclosed. And bycause I knowe and partly feele that it hath bin very chargeable both to him, and to the gentlemen that accompany him to furnish themselves for this service, I am bould most humbly to beseech yo^u^ my especiall good Lord to extend yo^r^ favour and good countenance towardes them, and that my sonne (*yo^r^ L. poor kinseman*) may be allowed according to y^r^ L. former purpose, to have the leading of these, and soe many more as yo^r^ L. shall thinck meete to make up a cornette of horse, w^ch^ yf it please yo^r^ L. to doe, I assure myselfe they will requite w^th^ such good service as is to be expected from such a company. And I will further yeld a supplie towardes yo^r^ L. of all such service as I can perfourme, whilest I live. My sonne alsoe hath sent over above 50 personable souldiers to increase his band of footemen (whoe have greatly charged both himselfe and mee). The burthen whereof (w^thout^ yo^r^ L. favour in allowing tymely pay for them) will lye too heavy upon him. Thus beseching the Lord of hostes to defend and strengthen y^r^ L. against all y^r^ enemies, I most humbly take my leave.—Scottes Hall, the Second of March, 1585

Y^r^ Lordshippes to command during life,
THOMAS SCOTT.

Add. To the right honorable my especiall good Lord the Earle of Leycester, lieutenaunt generall of her Ma^ts^ forces in the Low contreyes, and one of the most honorable privy counsell.

---

[j] *This letter was written on the very day of the death of Mr. Bridgman, Member for Hythe, as appears by the inscription on the brass now existing in Hythe Church to his memory. Sir Thomas Scott's son, Sir Edward Scott, K.B., eventually sat for that borough in the third year of Charles I., a stranger being chosen at the election in* 1581.

[k] *This letter refers to a Commission of a most inquisitorial and arbitrary character, issued in* 1584, *and principally directed against the Puritans, non-conforming clergy, Jesuits, and others, who declined in matters ecclesiastical to conform to the reformed religion. The arbitrary and unlimited power of this unrighteous Commission in respect to fine, imprisonment, and deprivation of office, was scarcely surpassed by its illegal and criminatory mode of obtaining evidence In short, it was an Inquisition without power of torture. It is not unlikely that the hostility exhibited by Sir Thomas Scott to this measure may have caused the known dislike of Queen Elizabeth to that distinguished man, jealous of the influence, which in this matter he exercised in his native county, in mitigation of its arbitrary procedure.*

(**13**) Letter dated 26 April, 1585, from the Lords of the Queen's Council, concerning Popish recusants, addressed, [l]

To our very loving friends, Sir Henry Cobham, Sir Thomas Scott, Sir James Hales, Sir George Harte, Sir Thomas Sondes, knights, and Thomas Fane, Esq.

After our very hearty commendations. Whereas the Queen's Majesty hath at this time found it very expedient, for divers good considerations, to have such as be known and convicted a disobedient subjects in the Realm for their refusing to come to the church and Divine service, to be unfurnished of armour until such time as shall be content to become conformable to Her Highness' laws in resorting to church, and for that purpose hath made special choice of you to have the charge thereof in that county. We think it mete that presently upon the receipt of our letters, You shall assemble yourselves together in some apt place to confer about the due execution of the contents of the same, and first upon the view of the Schedule here inclosed, containing the names of such *recusants* as hath heretofore been certified out of that county, You shall yourselves, and at one self same time to be agreed on between you, repair in person, in as great secrecy as you may, to the houses of the principal recusants within the said county, and there proceed to the demand and seizure of such armour and weapons as you shall find in the said houses or else where belonging unto them, amongst which it is meant that *Jackes* and all other *preme coates* should also be comprehended, receiving the same of the owners or such as have charge thereof, by bill indented between you and the said parties, or any other to whose custody they are committed, and letting them also understand that it is not otherwise meant by Her Majesty, but that the said armour and weapon shall be wholly restored unto them at any time when they shall dutifully conform themselves to her laws in resorting to the church. And for other recusants of the meaner sort within the said county, you shall appoint by your warrants certain honest persons apt for that purpose to repair to their houses, and there to stay, their armour and weapons in like sort which we think mete to be done at the self same time, you shall stay the rest, enjoining the said parties in Her Majesty's name, that shall be so employed, to use the execution of that service in as much secrecy as conveniently may be. But in this general disarming of the recusants, it is nevertheless thought mete that there should be left to them for the necessary defence of their houses such proportions only of Bows and arrows and Clack bills as in your discretions shall be thought convenient for that purpose. The said armour and weapons so to be staid by you, we think mete should be carried and brought from the houses where you shall find the same, and to be bestowed in your own houses, there to remain until you shall receive further directions from us for the disposing of the same. Otherwise and in case you shall suspect that any armour belonging to the said recusants be conveyed away out of their houses, We think mete you should then by oath examine the recusants themselves, if they shall be resident within the said county, and their servants, or any other that shall seem good unto you, to sift out the matter and the truth thereof. We do also think mete that you shall search and disarm any other recusant or recusants in that county not contained in this Schedule that you may have notice of it to be convicted. And if there be to your knowledge any that is indeed a recusant, though not convicted, You shall certify us thereof with your opinions what armour they may have. And lastly, Her Majesty's pleasure is that you make inquiry and certify what yearly revenue as well the recusants mentioned, or any other recusants within that county, do or may receive yearly both in their own right and in the right of their wives, as also what value their goods be. Wherein Her Highness, that no speciality be used, and that you make choice of both wise and well affected persons to be employed in the said inquiry. All which we pray you to certify with as much convenient speed as you may. So we bid you heartily farewell from Greenwich, the 26th of April, 1585.

Your very loving friends,

THO. BROMLEY,	W. BURGHLEY,	H. DERBY,
RO. LEICESTER,	GEO. SHREWSBURY,	F. KNOWLES,
HOUNSDON,	CHR. HATTON,	FRA. WALSINGHAM.

(**14**) A letter dated 24th of October, 1590, from Edward Wotton to Sir Thomas Scott, addressed,

To the right worshipful and my very loving friend and cousin, Sir Thos. Scott, Knt.

Sir,—I have received your letter, by which appears to me the laudable desire you have to increase the number of your Lances. For the better effecting whereof, in mine opinion, it were not amiss you dealt with such Knights and Gentlemen of ability in this shire as keep horses (of which sort I know there be divers), and so that you not only increase your band, but that likewise augment the number of great horses in this county. As for mine, they shall be always forthcoming to do my Prince and my country service, yet of this one thing I thought good to advertise you, that in the time of the Spanish Army it was looked for, I should have brought my horses to the course, as other Her Majesty's servants, so that in any troublesome time, unless I shall be appointed to some special charge, I think I shall be commanded to attend there, and then I know not how I may conveniently spare the use of mine own horses. Wherefore (as I think), it were a sure course for you to deal chiefly with such as are merely country gentlemen. And thus (my good Knight) wishing you as to myself, I leave you to the Lord's protection. From Boeton Malherb, where I would have been glad to have seen you, 24th October, 1590.

Your assured loving friend,

EDWARDE WOTTON. [m]

---

[l] *At the Parliament* (temp. *Q. Elizabeth*) *assembled Nov.* 23, 1584, *an Act was passed requiring that all Jesuits and Popish priests should depart the kingdom within forty days. Thus the exercise of the Roman Catholic religion, which had previously been connived at, was now totally suppressed.*

[m] *Sir Edward Wotton, of Bougon Malherbe, was Sheriff of Kent 36th Elizabeth.*

(**15**) *Circa* 1591. The answer to the points of a letter sent by the right honorable the Lord Lieutenant of this County of Kent, with a copy of a letter from the Lords of Her Majesty's most honorable privy council, concerning the return of men and armour out of France after they had served there under the charge of the Lord Willoughby.

First. It is certified under the hands of Edward Boies and Thomas Peyton, esquires, that Edward Boies, son of the said Edward Boies, esquire, carried that *waige* into France out of a part of the Lath of St. Augustine, within the said County, 135 men furnished with 75 corslets, 20 muskets, and 40 calevers, with all other weapon and furniture mete for them in their several kinds, whereof returned into England again 75 men. But of the armour and weapons there was returned very few, the certain number whereof they cannot certify, the greatest part of the soldiers, being sick and weak, threw away their armour and the pikes, and other furniture which the Captain found remaining at his coming away. For want of carriages, he caused them to be broken and spoiled, and so left there, and divers that were hired by the yeomen of the Country to serve in their places, challenge their armour and weapon as by the law of arms to be their own, because they served with them in the face of the enemy.

Upon the knowledge of me, Thomas Scott, and the certificates under the hands of William Partherich, Ralph Heyman, and Charles Scott, Esquires. There was sent out in the said service, under the charge of Captain William Moystin, 177 soldiers levied in a part of the division of Shipway and part of the Lath of St. Augustine, furnished with corslets 91, muskets 44, calevers 42, with weapon and furniture complete. Whereof returned into England soldiers which retained their pay 15, of such as were levied in the country and were discharged by the Captain before their embarking, and immediately upon their landing, and other put in their places some 10 men, but none of this last 10 returned into this country, because they were strangers of other shires. Furniture returned and left by the Captain at Rye, now remaining in the hands of one John Emder, of Eleham, in the said county, barrels of muskets without stocks or other furniture 5, barrels likewise of Calevers 2, broken pikes and holbarts 3, Cueattes 1 pair, and one pair more brought by the soldier that carried it.

(No Signatures.)[a]

Brit. Mus., Cotton MS., Galba D. VII., fol. 111. *Belgia*, 1590, *Apr.*

(**16**) The effect of the message sent from the L. Willoughby to S^{r}. John Scott by Capt^{ne}. Handbridge.

Cap^{ne}. Handbridge said that my l. Willughby had willed him to tell S^{r}. John Scott that he had busied him selfe in maters wherof he was altogeither ignorant, w^{ch} if he had done his Ll. said he had done paltrely and lyke a paltry fellow.

The true copy of S^{r}. John Scotte's lettre in answeare of the same message to my L. Willughby.

I receaved from yo^{r} L. a very strange and uncertayne message by Cap^{ne}. Handbridge whereby in generall termes yow seeme to chardge me to have busied my selfe in matters some way pertinent to yo^{r} honnur, wherof as you said I was altogeither ignorant, adding farther that if I had done any such thing I had dealt partrely and like a paltry fellow. For myne owne parte, I can judge it neyther an honorable nor orderly kynd of proceding to use any such contemptuous and disgraceful speaches towardes any gentilman (although covered wth an yf) uppon bare surmyses, not once entring into any particularity, wherein yow fynd yo^{r} selfe interested, wherfore yf yo^{r} L. shall absolutly and directly challenge me uppon any pointe that may touch me in reputacion, I will uppon my lyfe answeare the same, neyther partreley nor lyke a paltry fellow, but as becommeth an honest man, a gentleman, and a souldier. In the meane tyme I can say no more but that I earnestly expect yo^{r} reply. In hast this morning.

Yo^{r} L. as he fyndes occasion,

JOHN SCOTT.

(*Fol.* 111*b*.) The true copy of my L. answear sent in wryting to S^{r} John Scott.

It is true that his l. said S^{r} John Scott had dealt paltreyly, but he meant not any way towardes him self, for he holdeth S^{r} John Scott unworthy to dishono^{r} him, but it was spoken uppon this cause, that S^{r} John Scott had in scoffin and scorning sort wronged S^{r} Thomas Wilford behind his back, who both had commanded him and is well knowne to be a gentilman of that desert that heither to S^{r} John Scott is not off, nor yet like to be, w^{ch} his l. esteemeth an ill part and qualitye far unfitt for a gentleman of that worth that S^{r} John Scott would seeme to be of, and in case his father had heard it he woul have reproved him as much as his L. had done, for my L. him selfe he esteemethe such inequalitye betweene him selfe and S^{r} John Scott, or any way to answeare him, holding him in that behalf farr unworthye besydes that he was his soldiour and received his dignitye from him, and therefore letteth him know this much that he never trouble him selfe with any more letters or messages to his Lo.

(*Fol.* 112.) The message from S^{r} John Scott sent to S^{r} Thomas Wilfordes man, who sayd he had brought a letter from his master.

S^{r} John Scott willed S^{r} Thomas Wilfordes man to tell his m^{r} he would not receive his letter in respect of the place where he was, but if he had anything to say to him he was not to good to speake to himself, w^{ch} S^{r} John Scott said he would not refuse to do in any indifferent place.

Witnesses, Thomas Homart, Thomas Ruse.

An addicion delivered by word of mouth by Cap^{ne} Handbridge, Mr. Yaxley, and the L. Willughby's Secretary as from his L.

They saide my L. Willughby willed them to tell S^{r} John Scotte that his L. disdayned to receive any chalenge from him, or any way to answeare him, but if he would bring a noble man into the fielde wth him to encounter his L. he would fight wth him, and that he would set one of his followers to deale wth S^{r} John Scott, and there wth all that his L. saide, that if S^{r} John Scott returned any more letters or messages he would use the bringer thereof after the Italian manner.

---

[a] *Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall and Nettlested, was Captain of a troop of Lancers under Robert Devereux, the unfortunate Earl of Essex, who, together with Lord Willoughby and four thousand men, was sent to France by Queen Elizabeth in* 1590 *to assist Henry IV. against the King of Spain and his allies.*

S[r] John Scott's reply by word of mouth.

S[r] John Scott answeared that he would not seeke to draw any man into the quarrell, neyther would he do him self that injury to thincke him self unworthye to defend his reputacion against my L. Willnghby, but if any gent of creditt that followed my L. had any thing to say to him touching their own particular, he would not fayle to answeare him as become an honnest man and a gentilman.

The true copy of S[r] John Scott's last letter sent to my L. Willnghby.

Least yo[r] L. should mistake my answeare to yo[r] dishonorable message, in saying that I have dealt partrely, this therefore is directly my meaning, that no man can say truly that I have done partrelye. Touching my unworthynes to dishono[r] yow, I am worthy to do any thing that I meane to do, for to dishono[r] yow I never went abowt it, but most worthy I am to maintayne that reputacon and creditt w[ch] god and my birth hath given me, *to w[ch] I am the more tyed by that honno[r] w[ch] y[r] L. remembered so well. I received from yow.* In w[ch] respect as I confesse it not fitt to offer yo[r] L. cause of offence, so can I not thinck my self les worthy or more disabled to defend my reputacon against yo[r] self or any man, els that shall go about to blemish it, but must rather judge that yow much dishono[r] yo[r] self in seking to disgrace him *that yo[r] owne wordes and actions have declared to the world to be worthy honno[r], w[ch] as it was never sought or desyred by my self, but that my desert in her Ma[tes] service moved you to bestow it, so me thinckes yow should not thus upbraide it. And if yow gave it w[th]out any merit of myne it was yo[r] owne dishono[r] and no credit to me at all, neither can I thinck that bycause I served in the fielde under yo[r] commandement and conduction, that therefore yo[r] L. can rightly repute me yo[r] soldiour, or otherwyse take just occacon to insulte.* For yo[r] L. right well knoweth that men (although of greater experience, yet of no better quallitye than myself) have commanded yow. And I doubt not but yow can well remember that when yow first came into the warres in the Lowe Countreyes yow found me there a commander under a greater person than yo[r] self. And yet to speake properly I was not his soldior, but her Ma[tes], in whose pay and wages I was entertayned. *And seeing the howse whereof I am discended is knowne to all the world not onely to have the reputacion of auncient gentry, but likewyse honored w[th] the consanguinity and alliance of houses of nobility as great, I will not say greater, than yo[r] self,* I do not greatly weighe yo[r] disdain, w[ch] I might returne w[th] the lyke, but that I know yow would make as light accounte thereof as I have done of yours. But yf you thincke that Injuries offred in such sorte unto me as may rightly give occacon to fynd my self touched in reputacon s . . . . neverthelesse be passed over w[th] words of . . . . yo[r] disdayne, you will deceive yo[r] selfe therin . . . . greater personages than yo[r] selfe have called me . . . . meaner quality than my self to an honor as . . . . . of both their honno[rs]. And thereby you may . . . . . urges me to take such a course for the safe . . . . . of my reputacon as yo[r] L. will much misly . . . . . concerning my father's reprehensions, as he . . . . . right well knowne to be a gent of good respect, so I am most assured that he would not onely reprehend, but disavow me for his sonne if I should suffer my self to receave the least disgrace of yo[r] L., or of any man living whatsoever. And whereas yo[r] L. sendeth me word that I should trouble my self w[th] no more letters or messages unto yow, w[ch] yf I did yow said yow would use them after the Italian manner that should bring them. For my owne parte, I have dealt like a plaine honest English gent. to answar yow honestly in any thing that towcheth my creditt. And if yo[r] meaning be to send messages that touch my reputacon and receave none that I answeare in my defence thereof, I must seeke a plain English course to addresse myself to those who both may and will right any man wrongfully Injured. And thus much touching yo[r] self. For S[r] Thomas Wilford I cannot but thincke it very straunge that yo[r] L. should thus busy yo[r] self to become a partey for him who (for any thing I know) spareth to deale in the course of his owne cause, if he have any. And therfore towchinge him I will answear nothing to you, but to him I will when he shall either chardge me or challenge me of anything he conceaveth, for I confesse no Inequality betweene him and me, but am a gent as good as he, and may deserve a place as good or better than ever he held. In hast this last of Aprill, 1590.

By him that is ready to maynteyne his honnor w[th] his life,

THOMAS ARGALL. JOHN SCOTT.[o]
REYNALD ARGALL.

(**17**) A letter dated 13th November, 1590, from Anthony St. Leger to Sir Thomas Scott, Knt., addressed,

To the right worshipful Thomas Scott, Knt., give these.

SIR,—On Wednesday I sent your letter unto James Paccane, and do expect the return of his answer of the contents on Saturday now next ensuing. My cousin Anthony Mayne[p] most heartily thanketh you for your kind exceptance of his good will in following you, the which he voweth to do as forwardly as any else (to his poor . . . . .) in these parts wheresoever. I am told, Sir, to put you in mind that where at our last conference, it seemed that you were destitute of a mete officer, especially in that my cousin, Richard Fogge, refuseth the charge you offered him for the training of the Lances of the Lathe he dwelleth in, Wherefore as above said I have thought good to name unto you for that office my cousin George Wyatt,[q] as I think fit for it, and is a reasonable good horseman, and besides if he have charngde (*sic*) his old wont he hath a good horse and armour. Besides, Sir, here is in these parts one whose name is Miller, and is but a yeoman, and upon my knowledge he is better able to find a lance than your neighbour Brodnex is by great odds Wherefore it were most necessary he should not be omitted, he is, as I hear, now resident in the Isle of Sheppye. Thus with most dutiful commendations from me and my wife to your own good self and Lady, I end this 13th of November, 1590.

Your loving poor son-in-law to command,

ANTHONY ST. LEGER. [r]

---

[o] *The above letter speaks for itself. The italics are our own. It is evidently a challenge to fight a duel with Lord Willoughby, with whom Sir John Scott had been, in* 1590, *associated in France, in connection with the English contingent, sent by Elizabeth to the assistance of King Henri Quatre against the King of Spain and his allies. It was probably at the instance of Lord Willoughby, that Sir John Scott received his spurs. The witnesses are of the family of Argall, of Colchester and Walthamstow, Essex, kinsmen of Sir John Scott.*

[p] *Of the family of Mayneys, of Biddenden and Staplehurst, Kent.*

[q] *Of the family of Wyat, of Allington Castle, Kent.*

[r] *1stly, Ursula Neville, youngest da. of Geo. Neville, Earl of Abergavenny, ob.* 1575. | *=Sir Warham St. Leger, of Ulcombe, Kent. appointed Chief Governor of Munster* 1565—1579, *Knight Marshal of Munster. Killed in a duel by Hugh Maguire, Lord Fermanagh. Of this family were the Lords Doneraile, Ireland.* | *=2ndly, Elizabeth Roethe or Mac Worth.*

Anthony St. Leger, of Ulcombe=Mary, da. of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.

(**18**) A letter dated 31st March, 1591, from John Lewes to Sir Thomas Scott, Knt., addressed,

To the Right Worshipful his loving friend, Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, at Scott's Hall. Hast, hast.

Good Sir, I had before this time written to you of my proceedings in the execution of their Honor's Commandment but that I was desirous to be resolved from my L. Lieutenant upon certain doubts upon their Honor's letters.

1. Whereas the first was within 8d. the day, or o.b. (½d.) the mile should be allowed to each soldier for his conduct and for how many days that should be allowed from Gravesend to Sandw^{ch} for those that Captain Brook is to take from me, and how many days conduct for those that shall come from you to the place aforesaid.

2. This 2 doubt was what allowance should be made to Captain Brook and his officers, because the rate of his wages were not to me known and for how many days that should be.

3. This 3 was what allowance should be given for their shipping till they be landed, which seemed to me by their letters uncertain.

4. This last was my request to my L. Lieutenant to appoint some special person to receive the coat and conduct money, and to make provision of victuals at the sea side as to their allowance of money.

For answer to the first, my lord liketh well of your opinion that viijd. the day should be given to the soldiers rather than at the mile in which I did in my letters to his L. agree with your opinion.

To the 2 my lord hath referred me to receive instruction from such as have received or paid the entertainment with his promise that no fault be found for bad husbandry for her ma^{ties} profit, and that 3 dayes will be sufficient for those that have their longest march, namely, those of Gravesend that come to Sandw^{ch}.

To the 3 his Lordship hath left me as doubtful as I was at before, he only writing that he hath written to the Mayor of Sandwy^{ch}, to be assisting to such person as I should send thither for that purpose.

For the 4 his Lordship, fearing that I would be idle without his business, hath laid the charge of these payments upon me.

Now therefore, good Sir, for the conduct of your men, I take it, for those men you have appointed to be delivered to Captain Brook at Aylesford, that I may not allow above 3 days imprest, which being 51 after 2/-, the day comes to 5^{li} 2^{s}.

And for the other 51 to be delivered at Canterbury, I am fearful to exceed the allowance of 2 dayes conduct, which comes to 3^{li} 9^{s}, which sums, together with the coat money, I will take order shall be paid by my brother Manwood. However, if I have either mistaken anything, or do differ from your opinion, I am most ready to alter the said, upon the understanding of that which shall seem good to you, and if I may hear that you will be at Canterbury or Sandw^{ch} at the time of the delivery of horse, &c., I will the rather make a journey thither to see you. And so most heartily commending myself to you, I take my leave, and commit you to the protection of the Almighty . . . . . this xxxist March, 1591.

Yours most bounden,

JOHN LEWES.

Upon Saturday Capt^{n} Masterton had order for Captain Brook . . . . . at Gravesend. (*)

(**19**) Two letters to Sir Thomas Scott, dated respectively the 29th August, 1592, and 11th October, 1599, the former from Sir Thomas Fane, the latter from Mr. Robert Bing, concerning the apportionment of the charge of the Lathe of Aylesford.

Sir,—I received your letter touching the south division of Aylesford, which you say is now made equal in charges to the other two divisions of the same. But certainly heretofore it hath not been so. And the ancient proportioning of the charges of that Lathe hath been in manner, as is in your letter specified, and as Mr. Bing was wont to say concerning that matter, viz., the south division to bear one fourth part and half a fourth part of the whole charges of that Lath, and each of the other two divisions to bear a fourth part and a quarter of a fourth part. As if the whole charges were £40, the South division to bear £15. and each of the other two £xii 10s. And for my part, at the last setting down of the charges there, I signified so much unto Sir John Leveson. But through his importunacy (affirming that he could give precedents of Sir Thomas Fane, wherein the like course was taken), I was drawn to set my hand to the proportion by him set down. Howbeit, I am resolved hereafter to forbear setting my hand to any such matter, and will not fail to do the best that in me lieth to reduce the apportioning of the charges of that Lath and Limitte to the ancient order and custom. So with my very hearty commendations, I commit you to the Almighty.—Dover Castle, this 29th of August, 1591.

Your assured loving *cousin*,

THOS. FANE. (†)

If due consideration shall be had of the selected bands of the Laths of Aylesford, it will easily appear that the south limit was never chargeable with the one half of that number, as Sir John Leveson and Mr. Lambard well know, and both you and myself can testify, for proof whereof examine Sir Thos. Fane's band, Sir John Leveson's band (*) in his time, and my band in my time.

(*) *In* 1591, *Queen Elizabeth sent over on two occasions large bodies of men at arms to the assistance of Henry IV., King of France and Navarre, to assist him in expelling the Leaguers from Normandy. The young Devereux, Earl of Essex, was in command of these expeditions. The Camp at Northbourne, Dover, was at this time, as on the occasion of the panic caused by the Spanish Armada, commanded by Sir Thomas Scott.*

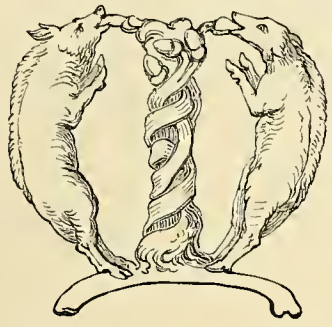
(†) *Sir Thomas Fane, of Badsell, Kent, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Governor of Dover Castle, and Sheriff of Kent* 14*th Elizabeth; married Mary Neville, Baroness Despencer, her son Francis Fane Baron Despencer, was created Baron Burghersh and Earl of Westmoreland* 29*th December*, 1624. *Sir Thomas Scott was connected with the Fane family by the marriage of his son-in-law, Anthony St. Leger, whose mother, Ursula, was daughter of George Neville, Earl of Abergavenny, a near kinsman of Sir Thomas Fane and the Earl of Westmoreland his son.* (*See note, p. vii.*)

(*) *Sir John Leverson, or Levison, Knt., Knight of the Shire* 1*st James I.*, A.D. 1603.

A few words of Mr. Robert Bing [v] in a letter (*20a*) dated the 11th of October, 1592.

At my first coming into the commission, almost 34 years now past, at such time as Sir Thos. Cotton, Mr. George Fane, old Mr. Moulton, and others were commissioners in this division, The order was that, whensoever any charge was to be levied upon this Lath, the same was always divided into four equal parts, whereof every division took one, and the fourth that was left was divided into two equal parts, whereof this our south division was charged with one of the two parts, and the other two divisions with the other part, and this was always done without any meeting together of the whole Lath, by reason that every division did know his brother.

(**20**) A letter dated Feb. 21, 1592, from Sir Robert Drury to his grandmother, Lady Stafford, concerning his father's will.
Dated from Culford to my very good lady and grandmother, the Lady Stafford, give these. [w]



adam, My Lord Treasurer having oftentimes writ unto Sir Nicholas Bacon that he would come to London and make an end of all controversies, he hath now of purpose taken his journey hither to effect the same, if possible. It may be, and I do assure myself that he would willingly consent to any reasonable agreement, so it may not be to quit everything of my estate that which your ladyship and my mother stands upon is that my sisters shall have their . . . . . given by my father's will. I . . . . . but to consider that those whom my father put in trust with the execution of his will would not take it upon them . . . . . hath not the Queen seized all the land, hath not she taken away all the goods that by my father's will was bequeathed to me, as well as to any of my sisters. Her portion, therefore, they and I must both bear with this extremity in which we have neither law nor reason for our help, all that may be done for my sisters, though as you . . . . . I know my father has not laid any charge upon me to perform it, nor need not trouble myself with it at all. Yet have I feared not to strain myself to the uttermost of my power for them, which is to give them £1500 of the money which I had with my wife, and so to make an end of all. If that will not be accepted, but that you will use other means, which is to get mr. treasurer to take a course which was never heard of before, which is to resume the lease into his own hands again and let you have it at the undervalue which it is now at, so presently to raise my sister's portion (of the which none had been due of a very long time), therefore the will had taken effect and the surplus come to the revenue of the lands. Then my Sir Nicholas Bacon, when he seeth his convenient time, useth means to get the whole sum together which is due to the Queen, and so discharge the land of the extent, which will then foister my brother Charles of his house, being a chattel which of necessity must be sold, and likewise all my money being gone, there will be no more money for my sisters to have any penny of their portion. My whole desire is that if it be possible these controversies may be made an end of, and that they may not be any means for me to want those kindnesses which any man has reason to look for to his grandmother in his chief needs. I have written likewise a letter to my mother to this very same effect, and that if there hath been any particular action wherein her Ladyship doth think that I have given her any cause of offence, I will willingly come and make her any satisfaction that she will think reasonable, and thus most humbly take my leave. From Culford, this 21st of February, 1592.

Your loving son,
R. DRURY.

(**21**) A letter from William Partheriche to Sir Thos. Scott, addressed,
To the right worshipful Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, one of the deputy Lieutenants of this county of Kent, and his very loving friend.

Sir, – I received your worship's letter since my late coming from London for a lance. Truly, Sir, as beforetime I have signified unto you, I hold myself not by law chargeable unto it. I have and do furnish a Light horse according to my charge. I would my estate were such as I were to find ten lances and all other things answerable thereunto. But for mine own part I can brag of nothing unless it were with the sale of £100 per annum. . . . . I purchased but 8 acres. I have no pleasure to plead this tale unto you as a matter I have cause to rejoice in. But to inform your worship of the truth, praying you to consider of me as the truth of the cause requireth., And that nevertheless, if the enemy shall any way appear to attempt against us, William Partheriche would show himself under Sir Thomas Scott's leading with such furniture of horses and geldings as shall much exceed any matter or charge that times shall impose upon me, and so hoping of your favou able acceptance and allowance of my lawful and honest excuse, in my humble ways I take my leave, this 15 of May, 1592.

WILLIAM PARTHERICHE. [x]

(**22**) A letter from Sir Thomas Sondes to Sir Thos. Scott, dated July 31, 1592, from Throwley, addressed,
To the right worshipful my very loving uncle, Sir Thomas Scott.

Sir,—On Friday, presently after I departed from you, I received from my Lord Lieutenant, unto us directed, 2 several letters, with copies of the Lords of the Council's letters there enclosed, which I send you herewith, in one of which said letters my Lord doth require to be certified what arms and other furniture has been sent within these 3 or 4 years out of this shire, with soldiers into foreign service, and

---

[v] *Robert Bing, of Wrotham, Esq., Sheriff of Kent 34th Elizabeth*, 1592.

[w] *This letter would appear to have been written to Lady Stafford, wife of Lord Henry, Baron Stafford, mother of Lady Elizabeth Scott, wife to Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, and relict of Sir Wm. Drury, of Halsted, Suffolk. It is rather puzzling, inasmuch as it is addressed to Robert Drury's grandmother, whilst it concludes, "Your loving son," etc., etc. It is probably from Robert Drury, son of Sir Wm. Drury* (*see p.* 219).

[x] *This is probably Wm. Partriche* (temp. *Elizabeth*), *an ironmaster in the Weald of Kent, a maker of ordnance and shot, against whom a complaint was made that he was in the habit of supplying foreigners with guns and shot. The Partriches were an old Kentish family, of yeoman extraction.—Furley's "History of the Weald of Kent," vol. ii. p.* 485.

how much thereof is returned, and the wants to be presently supplied to the Country. For answer thereof, I take it that we have already satisfied his Lordship what has gone out and how much returned before Christmas last, and have likewise made it known what furniture the soldiers sent over in Lent last under Captain Poor and Captain Johnson had out of the country, whereof I understand not that any parts are returned into our divisions. All which armour and weapons we have already given order which in these four hundreds is always performed should be supplied, and if you think that my Lord liketh to be certified again of that we have already certified, we must think hereof to do it accordingly. In the other letter my Lord writeth unto us to be certified what hath become of such armour and weapons as was seized on for Her Majesty's use from recusance within this County in Anno 1585. And though we should have care to disarm such other persons as have been found to be recusant since that time, which said letter is directed unto us two and to others to whom it may appertain, and a note of the Commissioner's names then appointed ; In this said letter set down it appeareth that Sir Henry Cobham, Sir Thos. Scott, Sir James Hales, Sir Thos. Fane, Sir George Harte, and Sir Thos. Sondes were Commissioners, whereof the other four being dead, I take it that we two alone are to execute the contents of this letter. Since the receipt of this letter I have perused the Council's letter sent unto us in Anno 1585, wherein I find not Sir Thos. Fane [y] named Commissioner, but his brother, Mr. Thos. Fane, as it may appear unto you by the copy of the said letter and the general answer of all the said Commissioners, which I send you herewith, for that I know not how ready you can find the same yourself, which I could wish Mr. Fane was made acquainted withal when you are at Dover, for that he undertook the answering of the . . . . . in the house of Sir Alexr. Culpepper.[z] If you think we shall need any conference touching any part of these letters, I will be ready to meet with you when you shall think good, otherwise I shall be ready with you to answer the same. I send you also herewithal Sir John Leverson's letter sent unto us touching this last letter. So with my right hearty commendation I take my leave. From Throwley, 31st July, 1592.

Your assured *loving nephew* and friend,

THOMAS SONDES.[a]

(**23**) A letter dated August 13, 1592, from the Lords of Council, addressed,

To our very good Lords, the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Archbishop of Rochester, the Lord Cobham, the Lord Chief Baron, and to our very loving friends Henry Cobham, Esq., Sir Thomas Scott, Sir Edward Hobey, Sir Thomas Sondes, Sir Moyle Finch,[b] Knights, and the rest of the Commissioners for recusants and seminaries, etc., or to any 6 or more of them.

After our very hearty commendations to your good Lordship and the rest. Her Majesty, perceiving the notable backwardness and defection in religion of late time grown greatly amongst her subjects in this realm, especially since the last liberty and leave granted to such principal persons as were formerly committed to Ely and Broughton to remain at their houses, etc., Hath given strict commandment unto us to signify unto you Her Highness pleasure That you fail not presently upon sight hereof to consider and make choice of the chiefest and most principal persons of the recusants within that County of Kent lately certified hither by you being of credit, for their obstinacy and livelyhood, and likewise that do hurt by their example, to be presently committed by you severally to the charge and safe keeping of some fit persons of ability and account within that county [c] that will take charge of them for their diet, bedding and otherwise at the cost of the parties so committed, not permitting any resort to be made unto them, nor to have conference but with such as may be found mete to reform them by teaching. But if haply there shall be found no such persons willing to receive them into their safe custody as is abovesaid, in this case you shall commit them to the common gaol, or to some other place of safety purposely to be thereunto appointed, with some fit persons to attend upon them for their diet and otherwise at the charge of the parties, etc. So praying your Lordships, etc., to take such extraordinary care for the due performance of the premisses according to Her Majesty's expectation and the great trust reposed in you, advertising us specially of your proceedings, we bid your Lordships, &c., very heartily farewell. From the Court at Bysham, this xiiith of August, 1592.

Your Lordship's, &c., very loving friends,

THOS. PUCKERINGS.	WM. BURGHLEY.
C. HOWARD.	WM. COBHAM.
THOS. BUCKHURST.	ROBT. CECIL.

(**24**) A letter dated Oct 26, 1592, from Lord Cobham to his Deputy Lieutenants, addressed—To my loving friends Sir Thomas Scott and Sir Thomas Sondes, my deputy Lieutenants, and the rest of the Justices of the peace within the Laths of Shipway Scray and St. Augustine.

After my very hearty commendations unto you. By this enclosed copy of a letter which I received this morning from my Lords of Her Majesty's most honorable Privy Council, you may perceive that their Lordships would have me to give direction unto you and the rest of

---

[y] *Of the family of Fanes, Earls of Westmoreland.*

[z] *Of the family of Culpeper, of Bedgebury and Wigsell, in Kent. Alexander Culpeper (son of Sir Alexander, Sheriff of Kent 15th and 22nd Henry VII.) married Mary Scott, daughter of Sir Thomas Scott of Scot's Hall, and relict of Anthony St. Leger, of Ulcombe. Walter Culpeper, brother of Sir Alexander, of Bedgebury, was ancestor of the Culpepers of Leeds Castle, Hollingbourne, etc. This fine old Kentish and Sussex family is now extinct, except in America, where a branch survives.*

[a] *Of the family of Sondes, descended from Sir Wm. Sondes, ob. 1474, and buried in Throwley Church, Kent,—Sir Richard Sands, or Sondes, son of Sir Michael, of Throwley, and brother of Sir Thomas, the writer of this letter (22), married, 1stly, Susan Montague, sister of Edward, Lord Montague, by whom Sir George Sands, created Viscount Sondes, Baron Throwley, and Earl of Faversham ; and, 2ndly, Catherine, daughter of Sir Rowland Hayward, relict of Richard Scott, fourth son of Sir Thomas Scott. Sir Thomas Sondes married Cecilia, daughter of John Tufton, Esq., brother-in-law of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.*

[b] *James I. created the Lady Elizabeth (widow of Sir Moyle Finch, Knight and Baronet), Viscountess Maidstone, and Charles I. conferred on her the title of Countess of Winchelsea, and on her heirs male that of Earls of Winchelsea.*

[c] *Wm. Scott, of the Mote in Iden, Sussex (of the Scot's Hall family), was under this order committed as a Recusant to the care of his kinsman, Thomas Honywood, that by Honywood's good example he might be brought to conform in matters of religion. As William Scott was eventually confined for his recusancy in the Compter in Southwark, it would appear that he was still a Papist. His mansion of Mote had previously been searched for arms.—Scot's Hall MSS.*

the Justices of the Peace of this County to aid and assist the bearer hereof, Thomas Bankes, to levy and take up within this Shire the number of one hundred voluntary men to be sent over to Ostend to complete certain decayed companies of that garrison at the charges of Captains, and to be defrayed by the said Bankes. Which I heartily pray you see so performed according to the tenure of their Lordship's said letters, and therein to do your good endeavours to answer their Lordship's expectations in this behalf. So fare you heartily well From my house at Oakham, the 26th of October, 1592. Your loving friend,

COBHAM.[d]

(**25**) A letter dated November 23, 1592, from Lord Cobham to Sir Thomas Scott and Sir Thomas Sondes, Knights, that Thos. Napleton and Thos. Jones be appointed to appear before the Lords of the Council to justify their complaint against the Mayor of Rye, addressed—To my loving friends, Sir Thomas Scott and Sir Thomas Sondes, Knights, my deputy Lieutenants.

After my hearty commendations unto you. Now that my Lords of Her Majesty's most honorable Privy Council have thought mete to send a messenger for this Mayor of Rye to answer his contempt, their Lordships do require that Thomas Napleton and Thomas Jones be commanded to repair to the Court, and there give their attendance to justify the complaint against the said Mayor. Wherein I pray you take order accordingly. So fare you heartily well. From my house at Cobham, the ix. of November, 1592. Your loving Friend,

COBHAM.

I pray you in any case let the parties come presently and to speak with me before they go up to the Court.

(**26**) A letter dated November 24, 1592, from Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer to Sir Nicholas Bacon, concerning the complaint of Lady Stafford and Sir Edward Stafford, in relation to the hard usage of Sir Wm. Drury's younger children.[e]

Sir,—I have lately received 2 letters from you in answer to mine touching the complaint of the Lady Stafford and Sir Edward Stafford, of your hard dealings in the matter of the younger children of Sir Wm. Drury for the payment of their portions and yearly maintenance, but neither my Lady, nor Sir Edward Stafford, nor myself, am any way satisfied with your answers. And therefore, to be plain with you, except you shall forthwith repair unto, and satisfy my Lady and Sir Edward Stafford to their reasonable contentment, I do mean and that speedily, to revoke the lease made with a meaning to have the younger children relieved thereby. And to grant the same to such others as will take more care thereof. And so I commend me to you. From Hartford Castle, this 24th of November, 1592.

Your very loving friend, BURLEIGH.

(**27**) A letter signed Wm. Cobham, dated 2nd of January, 1593, addressed—To my loving friends, Sir Thos. Scott and Sir John Leveson, Knights, my deputy Lieutenants, or to either of them.

After my hearty commendations unto you. I send you herein enclosed a copy of a letter from my Lords of Her Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Council certifying Her Majesty's pleasure touching the certificate to be made unto gentlemen's sons having gone out of this country beyond the seas for this seven years space, with such other particulars as may appear by the same more at large. All which I recommend to your cares to perform, and do heartily pray you to hasten the doing thereof as much as you may, and that nothing therein be omitted which their Lordships require to be certified unto them. And whereas by way of postscript their Lordships do leave to me to appoint such a Justice of the Peace for the exercise of this service within my charge as I shall think to be fit person for the same, I must leave the same also to your choice, and so right heartily I commend you both to God. From the Court at Hampton, this second of January, 1593. Your loving friend,

W. COBHAM.

(**28**) A letter signed Cobham, dated May 24, 1593, addressed—To my very loving friend, Sir Thos. Scott, Knt., one of my deputy Lieutenants for the County of Kent.

After my hearty commendation. Your letter of the 23rd of this present I received this morning, wherein I understand your opinion for the levying and furnishing of 300 men for the relief of Bolloigne, if need shall be, although as you do write there be not now in the parts about you such strength of men as heretofore there has been, yet I do verily think that you may find many persons out of convenant (*sic*), and such as do serve for wages exceeding the rate allowed by Statute fit for this Service, for the men that are to be levied in Canterbury, if you let me know how many may be spared from thence, I will write to the Mayor to prepare him. If you find that any fail to show and go into . . . . . do inform that they may spare any more upon notice thereof given unto me, I will write to my Lieutenant to take order for it. Although there has been a great quantity of armour sent out of the Realm, yet my hope is that, according to my former directions, that the defects are supplied within the space, and that the Country is not unfurnished of their due preparations. And whereas you are of opinion that the money to be levied for armour and weapon should be delivered to the Captains, and they to make provision of armour and weapons for that service, by common experience we find that by that means Her Majesty is not well served, nor the Country anything eased in charge, and therefore for the providing thereof if no armour be to be had in the parts in Canterbury, then you may be assured to have them either at Rochester or London, as Sir John Leverson has heretofore had, and now meaneth to have, if cause shall require, and so I bid you right heartily farewell. From my house in London, this 24th of May, 1593.

Your loving friend,

COBHAM.[f]

---

[d] *William, Lord Cobham, was Lord Lieutenant of Kent, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and a Commissioner for the defence of the Kentish Coast. The other Kentish Commissioners were Sir Thomas Kemp (of Ollantigh), Sir Thomas Wotton, Sir Thomas Scott, Thomas Guldeford of Hemstead, John Cobham, Thomas Wotton, and Robert Rudston, Esqs.*, A.D. 1569.

[e] *See previous letter on this subject, dated February* 21, 1592. *Sir Nicholas Bacon was,* temp. *Queen Elizabeth, Lord Keeper of the Privy Seal.*

[f] *This letter in the original is almost illegible.*

(**29**) This copy of a letter by the Queen to Lord Cobham, Lord Lieutenant and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, was enclosed in previous letter.

By the Queen. Right trusty and well beloved Counsellor, we greet you well. For that we have occasion to doubt that the enemy hath an attempt to besiege the town of Boulogne, And not being yet assured how it is strengthened with convenient number to defend the same, which we would be most sorry should therefore come in danger. We think it necessary to have some number of our subjects being serviceable for that purpose to be put in readiness in such parts of our County of Kent whereof you are *our Lieutenant*, as with speed if need should require, might be transported to the succour of the said town. And therefore we require you to cause the number of three hundred men to be divided into two bands, to be with speed levied, mustered, armed, and furnished in the best warlike manner that may be. And the same being chosen of the best and ablest men for this purpose, to be committed to two special Captains such as have had charge in the wars, who also may have sufficient Lieutenants. And these numbers, with their Captains, to cause to be in good readiness, to be embarked in convenient shipping at Dover or Sandwich or elsewhere, for most expedition, as cause shall require. And in the mean time we would have you command such shipping as is to be found mete for this purpose in any of our five ports to be stayed, as you shall think requisite for transporting of those numbers, for wafting also whereof in safety, Our Admiral hath charge to cause our ships of war in the narrow seas to attend upon the said Ships wherein the foresaid numbers shall be transported. And these our letters shall be your sufficient warrant and discharge in this behalf. Given under our Signet at Nonsuche, the 23 day of May, 1593, in the five and thirty of our reign.[g]

(**30**) A letter dated 24th May, 1593, from Lord Cobham to Sir Thomas Scott, endorsed—For the Queen's Majesty's Affairs.

To my very loving friend, Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, one of my deputy Lieutenants of the County of Kent.

Cobham.

Hast hast, post hast, post hast with all diligence.

Received by the post of London at 9 of the clock in the morning. Delivered at Scot's Hall the 25th of May at 6 of the clock in the morning. Dartford passed in the forenoon—Rochester passed two almost three afternoon—Sittingbourne past 5 afternoon.

After my very hearty commendations unto you. Since the writing of my letters unto you this morning by your servant, I received a letter from Her Majesty, the copy whereof I send you herewith enclosed, whereby you may perceive that Her Majesty hath thought it necessary, that the number of three hundred men should presently be levied in the County of Kent for the succour of Bullen (*Boulogne*) and to be mustered, armed, and furnished in the best warlike manner that may be, and to be in a readiness to be transported as cause shall require, as by Her Majesty's said letters may more at large appear unto you. Heartily praying and requiring you to use your best endeavours and diligence in accomplishment of her Highness pleasure therein, according to the tenure thereof, and that some day and place may be set down for a meeting to be had between Sir John Leverson and you for the better and more speedier levying, ordering, and putting of the said number of men in readiness, and so I bid you heartily farewell. From my house at London, this 24th of May, 1593.

Your loving friend, COBHAM.[h]

Sir Thomas Scott, Knight.

(**31**) A letter dated May 31, 1593, from Thomas Robartes to Sir Thomas Scott, requesting that such armours as were last provided for Britain and countermanded, may now serve for those men that shall be pressed out of the seven hundreds for Bretagne (*sic* ; *qy.*, Brittany), and addressed—

To the right worshipful Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, one of Her Majesty's Lieutenants within the County of Kent. Hast hast hast.

My humble duty remembered. It is not unknown unto you, that we of the seven hundreds were of late appointed by your directions to furnish certain corslettes towards the last expedition intended for France, which being countermanded, we are already provided of ten corslettes. My request, therefore, in the behalf of the inhabitants now is, that such corslettes as we have in a readiness may be accepted for the furnishing of our men in this service as for all other things. If it please you and Sir John Leverson to provide them, I will do my endeavour to see you satisfied. And thus I humbly take my leave. Glassenbury, the last of May, 1593.

Yours to be commanded, THOMAS ROBARTES.[i]

(**32**) A letter dated June 22, 1593, signed Raulph Hamon, addressed—

To the right Worshipful Sir Thomas Scott, Knt., at Scot's Hall.

SIR,—My brother Hamon was here on Thursday last, and we having made such inquiry as we could, found not any person, inhabiting within the Lathe of Shipway, as I think within the words of the mandate, which refers to such as are at this present beyond the seas, sent over at any time within seven years last past, nevertheless because we have one resiaunt (*resident*) now whose son has been abroad, to no good purpose, contained in their Lordships' letters that within these seven years, where he is now we know not, we agree to make certificate of him, namely, William Knatchbull,[j] son of Reynold Knatchbull, and I then hoped I should by this time have been able to come over

---

[g] *Queen Elizabeth* (A.D. 1593), *fearing that the renunciation by Henry IV. of France of the Protestant religion might lead to the rupture of the alliance between herself and that king, and thereby induce the King of Spain again to renew the hostilities set at rest by the Armada, was content to furnish to the King of France such help as she was able, and accordingly despatched men and arms to Boulogne to strengthen that town against any attack that might be made against it by the King of Spain.*

[h] *See the two following letters.*

[i] *Sir Thomas Robarte, of Glassenbury in Cranbrook, was Sheriff of Kent 20th James I., and created a Baronet 1620. This letter refers, like the previous ones, to the furnishing of men and armour to Henry IV. of France, in expectation of hostilities on the part of Spain.*

[j] *Probably a member of the family of Knatchbull, of Mersham Hatch.*

to you, but my cold has pressed me rather more and more, so that since Sunday was sennight I came not out of my chamber, but to my parlour, and I cough almost all night, and thirst all the day as one in an ague, but since I cannot come I will send to-morrow by Hamon, unto whom I pray you show what you think fit for us to certify concerning the party above, and the manner of it. So commending you to Almighty God. From Selling, this 22nd of June, 1593. Your worship's ever,

RAULPH HAMON.

(**33**) For Her Majesty's affairs. To my loving friend Sir Thomas Scott, Knt., my deputy Lieutenant, signed Cobham, from Cobham Hall, 1st August, 1593. *Haste, Poste Haste, post post Haste. Sittingbourne past 6 o'clock at night, Canterbury past 9.*

After my hearty commendations unto you. Whereas I received commandment from Her Majesty to levy within this County 131 soldiers, to be furnished with coats, armour, and weapons accordingly, and afterwards by letters from my Lords of Her Highness' Most Honourable Privy Council was required to deliver the said soldiers unto the Captain that was appointed by their Lordships' letters to receive them, the copy of which Her Majesty's letter and their Lordships heretofore sent unto you, to the intent the effect thereof might be performed, you shall now understand that upon new advertisement out of France of the state there, Her Majesty has thought it good to make stay of the said men for a season, and not to charge the Country any further with them. These shall be therefore to pray you to forbear you to make delivery to the Captain the aforesaid men, and nevertheless to give order that the money levied or charged may be in a readiness on any new warning, and that the armour, coats, and furniture provided by the Country may be kept and preserved, to be used as occasion hereafter may serve, and so I commend you to God. From Cobham, this First of August, 1593.

COBHAM.

(**34**) A letter dated December 31, 1593, from the Lords of the Privy Council to my Lord[k] . . . . . and his deputy Lieutenants, to certify what gentlemen's sons have gone over sea out of Kent under pretence to learn languages these seven years.

After our very hearty commendations. The Queen's Majesty, finding no small inconvenience to grow unto the Realm by sending out of the same the children of many gentlemen under the color of learning languages, whereby they are for the most part bred and brought up in the Popish religion and corruption of manners, to the manifest prejudice of the State here, which her Majesty desires to reform as a disorder of no small importance, hath given order that inquisition be made through the realm, what Sons of gentlemen are at this present beyond the seas conveyed over it at any time within seven years last past, and by what licence they are gone. And for such as are departed out of the Realm, if they be sons of any recusants, or of such as do conform themselves in show only to avoid the danger and penalty of the laws, it is not to be doubted, by the intention of their parents, hath been to have them brought up and instructed in Popery, and of these many do become seminary priests, jesuits, and unsound subjects, and sent hither to pervert such as are dutiful and well employed, and to practice thereby to disturb the quiet and happy government of Her Majesty. We therefore, for the better execution of her Majesty's direction in this behalf, have made special choice of you as of persons in our opinions mete for your loyalty and affection to her Majesty and good of your country, to be employed in this service, and do hereby require and authorise you and every of you jointly and severally by all good means to enquire and examine what gentlemen within that county have at this present any sons or kinsmen or other persons whose education hath been committed to their charge, or whom they do relieve or any way maintain out of the Realm, being sent over under color to learn languages, or for any other respect, not being notoriously employed in Her Majesty's martial services or trade of Merchandise as apprentices or factors to known merchants, and to send unto us a catalogue of the names as well of the fathers and parents, as of their Tutors and patrons, as of the sons and other parties so sent over or maintained, in what parts they are, and how long they have been absent. And of these fathers, parents, or other friends by whom any such have been sent out of the realm, if any of them be found to be recusants or have been evil affected, and in your knowledge are but faintly reformed, you shall cause bonds to be taken in good sums of money to Her Majesty's use for their personal appearance before us, by a certain day to be by you prefixed. And before the bonds so taken you shall by authority hereof enter and make search within their houses for Jesuits, Seminary priests, and other suspected persons, and apprehend and commit them to prison if any such shall be found, as also to open and make search, in their closets, chests, desks, and coffers (only for books, letters, and writings that may any way contain matter against the state or the religion here established), which you shall seize and send hither unto us forthwith, signifying the manner of your proceedings and your opinions of these men, and the matters appearing by your search against them. That we upon their appearance may take order with them, as well for the revocations of sons or kinsmen as for any matters that by your endeavours may be discovered against them. And if the residence of any of these shall happen to be far distant from you or any of you, then may you, by virtue of these our letters, make the choice of some one or two honest and discreet gentlemen, being Justices of the Peace and not partially affected towards them inhabiting near unto them, to whom you may give direction for the performance of the search. And for their particular warrant therein you may send unto them a copy of this our letter under your hands, which shall be unto them as sufficient as the original unto you herein, we require you to use your best and uttermost endeavours, and with as much convenient diligence as you may, to return us your orderly certificate answering the several points of these our letters, and directions. So fare you heartily farewell. From Hampton Court, the last of Dec., 1593.

Your very loving friends,

LORD KEEPER.	LORD COBHAM (*qy.* Wm.)
LORD TREASURER.	LORD BUCKHURST.
EARL OF ESSEX.	SIR ROBERT CECELL.
LORD ADMIRALL.	SIR JOHN WOLLEY.
	SIR JOHN FORTESCUE.

We leave to your Lord to appoint your deputy Lieutenants and such of the Justices of the Peace for the execution of this service within your hands as you shall think to be fit parties for the same.

---

[k] *Wm. Brooke, Lord Cobham, was at this time* (1593) *Lord Lieutenant of Kent; he was also Lord Chamberlain of the Queen's Household.*

(**35**) A letter dated May 26, 1594, from Lord Cobham, Lord Lieutenant, to Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, and Sir John Leveson, Knight, deputy Lieutenants, for the mustering of the forces, addressed—To my loving friends, Sir Thomas Scott and Sir John Leveson, Knights, my deputy Lieutenants, and to every of them.

After my hearty commendations unto you. Forasmuch as by the discontinuance of musters in Kent, since 1594, it is to be doubted that as well the horses as the foot bands trained and untrained within that shire, have some defects of men, horses, armour, or other furniture, and are not in every point so complete and furnished as formerly they were. And for that it is thought requisite the said forces should rather be increased than diminished, I have therefore thought it good to pray to you to require the particular Captains both of horse and foot, to see all defects presently supplied in their several bands, that upon any warning from you they may be mustered and found in their former strength both for men, lances, lighthorse, Carabines, Petronels, armour, or other furniture, and bettered if it may be. Which muster whether you will require to be done before Harvest or no I leave to your good considerations, so as their defects may in the mean time be supplied, and at the taking of the said muster so found, which must be afore Michaelmas next, for the effecting whereof I heartily pray your best endevours and diligences, the rather for then the like is done in Sussex, Essex, and divers other shires already. And so I commend you to God. From the Court at Greenwich, this 25 of May, 1594. Your loving friend,

COBHAM.

Sir Thomas Scott. I am to pray you to let Romney Marsh be joined with the party (as hath been accustomed for years of late), the alteration therein (which I knew not of) is much misliked.

(**36**) A letter dated July 28, 1594, from the Lords of the Council to Lord Cobham, concerning the levying of forces.

After our very hearty commendations unto your good Lord. Whereas your Lords, by Her Majesty's letters lately written unto you for the levying of the number of 300 fit and able men within that county under your Lord's Lieutenancy, was appointed to send them to the Port of Portsmouth, there to be embarked: you shall now understand Her Majesty's favourable pleasure, particularly to ease the county of that number, and therefore she is pleased you shall now levy only the number of 250, which are to be sorted with armour and weapon in this manner. One third part to be pykes, an other part muskets, and the other third part Calivers [l] And upon further consultation it is thought now mete for the furtherance of Her Majesty's service, and so we now require you to take order that they may be sent directly from the places of their levy unto Gravesend by land, under the conduction of some sufficient person, to be there by the sixth of August next, Where there shall be both victual and convenient shipping ready to receive them and to serve for their embarking. And allowance shall be made for every soldier after eightpence the day, from the time of their setting forth until they enter the said port and the Conductors ten shillings by the day, all which is to be paid by Sir Thomas Shirley, knight.[m] As direction is also given that the Coat and Conduct money shall likewise be paid by him unto such as your Lord or the Country shall appoint to receive the same, We require you to make good choice of the sufficiency of the Conductors that shall have the charge to conduct them, and to give express order unto him to deliver the said soldiers, with their several armour, weapons, and other furniture, unto such Captains as shall be there ready and authorized from Sir John Norrice to receive the same by Rolls indented, subscribed by the same Conductor and the Captain that shall receive the same, specifying the several names and surnames of the said soldiers, whereon you shall send one of the said Rolls indented hither unto us, to be inrolled according to the law in Her Majesty's Exehequer, and the other to remain in the country.

(*Not signed*), evidently a copy.

POSTSCRIPT.—If you cannot furnish the number of Musketry appointed, we require you that at the least a third part of the Shot may be for muskets.

(**37**) A letter dated August 8, 1594, from Lord Cobham to Sir John Leveson concerning the levying of soldiers, addressed—To my loving friend, Sir John Leveson, Knt., my deputy Lieutenant.

After my hearty commendations unto you. I send you here enclosed a letter from Captain Moorton to Sir John Norris, whereby you may perceive what fault he findeth with the number and setting out of these men levied in Kent. I pray advertise Sir Thomas Scott hereof, that he may understand what the complaint is, and so see that supplied that is commanded by Her Majesty's letter and the Lords if any defect be. And not to forget to indent for the soldiers and their several armours, weapons, and other furniture that shall be delivered to the Captain that, according to my Lords' letter of the *28th of July last*,[n] *the copy hereof I sent you*. In so doing they shall have no just cause to complain, whereof I would be glad. And so fare you heartily well. From the Court this 8th of August, 1594.

Your loving friend, W. COBHAM.

(**38**) A letter dated August 8, 1594, from Lord Cobham, Lord Lieutenant, to Sir John Leveson, Knt., Deputy Lieutenant, concerning the shipping of men from Gravesend.

After my hearty commendations unto you. I send you here enclosed a letter of Sir John Hawkins, Knt.,[o] to Mr. Maynard, whereby you may understand what the cause is of the stay of the coming down of shipping to transport our men from Gravesend, and what entertainment they are to look for in the meantime, which I doubt not but will be 8d. per diem, according to my Lord's letters and the Queen's allowance. The cause why I send you this letter is only to acquaint you that I do not forget the business. And so I commit you right heartily to God. From the Court at Greenwich, this 8th of August, 1594. Your loving friend,

W. COBHAM.

---

[l] "*Calivers*," *a small kind of musket, with a fixed bore or calibre, so that the shot should be available for any caliver. The musket at this time was not regulated as to the size of the bore.*

[m] *Sir Thomas Shirley, of Wiston Park, in Sussex. He was knighted by Queen Elizabeth during her progress through Kent and Sussex in August*, 1573.

[n] *See preceding copy of letter from Lords of the Council.*

[o] *The celebrated Admiral adventurer*, temp. *Queen Elizabeth.*

(**39**) A letter to our very loving friends, Sir Thomas Scott and Sir John Leverson, Knights, Deputy Lieutenants of the County of Kent, October 20th, 1594.

After a very hearty commendation. Whereas there were levied not long since, as you know, the number of 250 able men within this County for the service of Britain (Brittany), of which number divers of them are away in most lewd sort, whereby Her Majesty's forces are greatly weakened, as we do understand, by a note sent unto us from the Muster Master, containing the names of those lewd persons which we send you herewith. And do hereby require you to inform yourself out of what place they whose names are contained in the enclosed schedule, were levied, that diligent inquiry may be made for them if they be already returned to the place of their abode or to any other place in this County. And order taken that they may be apprehended and committed to prison at such time as they may be found, to receive such further punishment as their lewd behaviour doth deserve, and may serve for example to warn others for attempting the like. Wherein, praying you to take order accordingly, we bid you farewell. From the Court of Nonesuche, the 20th day of October, 1594.

Your very loving friends,

ELIZ. R.[p]

T. BUCKEHURST. T HENEAGE. JO. CANT.
JO. PUCKERIDGE. HUNSDON. RO. CECYLL.

(**40**) A letter from Percival Hinde, dated from the Temple, October 30, 1595, addressed—To the Right Worshipful my most special good master, Thomas Scott, Esq.[q]

SIR,—I doubt of the appearance of a sufficient number of the jury, and thereby am fearful lest you should lose your labour and expense, and therefore I write unto you to get Mr. Bedingfield, or some other, closely to labour the four hundreds or some three of them, not to appear that by certain knowledge had before of their making default, you might boldly have spared yourself and your money. I am informed that Cheeseman is foreman to Mr. Heardson, and that Nethersole is greatly indebted unto him, both which must thereupon be challenged. I have sent you here enclosed the names of the jury. We do want amongst all those papers the inquisition under the seal of the jurors, which Mr. Broadnax saith he delivered unto you. The thing itself, if it may be had, would be shewed in Court, but we shall not be at a loss, because Mr. Broadnax, who was foreman of the jury, remembers the matter, and is waiting to testify his knowledge. All the witnesses examined then are dead, saving Mr. William Brockman, for whom, and for Mr. Broadnax, Mr. Rooke bringeth down a subpœna, there is left a space for the name of anyone whom you shall think good to put in. Bartholomew Faulkner is in the town here and will be ready to testify what he knows, or if he come down before he will come up again without subpœna, if he understand your pleasure be to have him. Mr. Charles Scott has gone down to Oxford and so into Worcestershire, and has left his chamber to Mr. Dalton. Your maid Barbara shall be married the Sunday after your coming up. Your Counsel is Serjeant Drue, Mr. Tanfield, and Mr. Hall, which I hope will be sufficient. My Lord Buckhurst has an intent to rake your matter up, which if he will do you shall have the word with all speed. He has been ever since Sunday at the Court, and will be here this night, at which time I will not fail to wait on him to know his Lordship's pleasure. And thus remembering my duty, I most humbly take my leave. From the Temple, this 18th October, 1595.

Your lordship's dutiful servant,

PERCIVAL HINDE.

I pray you tell my Mistress that her hops are worth 50/- the hundred.

(**41**) Letter (April 29, 39th Elizabeth, 1596) and order from the Queen to Sir Thomas Wilsford, to raise Musters and Forces.

Elizabeth R. Trusty and well beloved, we greet you well. For as much as we are determined to have in readiness an Army of a convenient number of able men to serve for defence of our Realm and withstanding of our enemies, that presently are prepared to attempt some dangerous enterprise against our state and realm, And for that purpose have, with advice of our Council, made choice of sowe special numbers in sundry counties of our realm, as in the county of Kent, Whereas you are authorized by our commission to have the charge of the forces in that countie, the number of four hundred and fifty, as by letters of our council shall be certified. And yet because we desire these numbers to be well chosen and furnished for this service, We have made choice of Sir Thomas Wyllford, knight, as a man of good experience in service, whom we do authorize to repair into that county, and there by your district you to muster such a number as above is expressed, to be chosen out of the most able men in that county, as well out of the trained bands as of others, and the same to be put in readiness, to be committed to such captains as by letters of our council shall be nominated unto you, and therefore we require you, for the execution of these our determinations, to take care that the same be executed. And that the said Sir Thos. Wyllford may be assisted with all good means to execute this service. Given under our signet at our palace at Westminster, the 29th day of April, in the 39th year of our reign.[r]

---

[p] *It is evident that the Queen had commenced to sign this Order of Council. The few letters of her name so written are in her well-known handwriting. By an afterthought she may have left it incomplete.*

[q] *This letter, addressed to Thomas Scott (son of Sir Thomas Scott) is not very clear as to its intent. The Lord Buckhurst referred to at the conclusion was doubtless Thomas Sackville, 1st Earl of Dorset and Lord of Buckhurst in Sussex, brother-in-law of Sir Thomas Scott. The names of "Brockman" and "Broadnax" suggest respectively the families settled at Beachborough and Godmersham in East Kent, whilst that of "Rooke" is suggestive of the family of that name settled at Monks Horton. The "Mr. Bedingfield" was probably of the Bedingfields of Brabourne, an offshoot of the Bedingfields of Oxborough Hall in Norfolk.*

[r] *In 1596 the English, having attempted the Spanish dominions in Europe, were making preparations to repel Philip of Spain, who threatened a second invasion. It would appear from this letter that Sir Thomas Wilsford, Knight, had been appointed to the command of the Kentish forces on the death, in 1594, of Sir Thomas Scott. The Wilsfords of East Kent were at this time a family of repute.*

(**42**) A letter dated April 25, 1597, from the Lords of the Council, appointing High Sheriff, and certain Gentlemen Commissioners of the Musters and training soldiers on the decease of Lord Cobham, late Lord Lieutenant, addressed—To our very loving friends, the High Sheriff for the time being of the County of Kent, Sir John Leveson, Sir Thomas Wyllford, Knights, Thomas Fane, Thomas Walsingham, and Peter Manwood, Esquires, Commissioners for taking the Musters in the said County.(*)

After our very hearty commendations. Whereas Her Majesty hath given authority unto us of her Privy Council to appoint such men and persons of discretion and experience as we shall think good to make choice of, together with the High Sheriff, to take the musters and to view and train those soldiers that are reduced into bands in any county of the Realm where there is no Lieutenants, or where the Lieutenant shall happen to decease, And by the decease of our very good Lord, the Lord Cobham, late Lord Chamberlain to Her Majesty, there is no Lieutenant at this present in the County of Kent, By virtue of Her Majesty's Commission under the Great Seal of England, bearing date the second of December last, authorizing us the Lords and others of Her Majesty's Privy Council, to will and command you the High Sheriff of the County for the time being, and such as are joyned with you to take the charge and government for the ordering of her people in that County. First, in her highness's name we require you the High Sheriff for the time being, Sir John Leveson and Sir Thomas Wyllford, Knights, Thomas Fane, Thomas Walsingham, and Peter Manwood, Esqs., whom her Majesty upon special trust hath named for this purpose, to assemble yourselves in convenient places within that county, and to make choice of all such persons under the degrees of Lords of Parliament as heretofore have been here appointed, and that by the laws of the Realm ought to keep horses or geldings fit for service, as well in privileged places as in others, and of all such as have been appointed to be Captains of Bands, and the same to be caused to be mustered at times and places convenient, and to make choice of other mete persons to supply the defects that by you shall be found both of horse and footmen, and of Captains and other officers since the last musters made by authority of the former Lord Lieutenant, and of the same numbers both of horse and foot, being put into companies or bands, to make perfect Rolls in writing, and the same to send unto us, and generally we require you, in Her Majesty's name, to command all such orders to be kept and observed as heretofore were directed to be executed by Her Majesty's former Lieutenants or his deputy in all places within that County, for putting in readiness the forces of the same, with armour, weapons, and other necessaries, on horseback and on foot, as the same was and ought to have been for the service of Her Majesty and the Realm. And especially such former directions as have been sent from us, and for your authority and warrant to the same, we do let you understand that by Her Majesty's Commission under the Great Seal of England there is by especial words in the same sufficient warrant given both to us thus to command you in Her Majesty's name, and to you and every of you, to execute the same. And so we require you to proceed therein with that care which is fit to be used in service of this weight. So fare you heartily well. From the Court at Whitehall, the 25 of April, 1597.

Your very loving friends,

JO. CANT.	THOM. EGERTON.	W. BURGHLEY.
ESSEX.	THOS. BUCKHERST.	R. CECILL.

(**43**) Articles indented of Remembrances and agreements between Sir John Scott, knight, on the one part, and Sir Robert Drury, knight, on the other part, made May 20, 1598.

IMPRIMIS. The interest of Wardship of the body and land of Sir Rob[t] Drury to rest in Sir John Scott, and the letters patent thereof in Mr. Barber's custody, as they now do, until the said Sir John Scott be discharged in the Court of Wards of all matters touching the same, as that also Sir Rob[t] Drury do confirme my Lady his mother's jointure if need so require, and do discharge Sir John Scott of any charge touching the extent of Drury house.

ITEM. That the interest also of Mr. Markante's wardship rest in the said Sir John Scott, and the writings with the said Mr. Barber, as they do at this instant, until the said Sir John Scott have delivered him by the said Mr. Markante a bond made by Rob[t] Nunne and Thomas Bird unto the said Mr. Markante for payment of money touching the wardship.

ITEM. That Sir John Scott release to Mr. Gawdye and Parker, now in Barber's custody, rest as it doth to be delivered, when the said Mr. Gawdye and Parker release to Sir John Scott, as is already agreed upon, and redelivered Sir John Scott and Mr. Argall's bond of £2000, and such bonds or assurances as Sir John Scott doth stand bound in touching Sotherton,

ITEM. Likewise that Sir John Scott's grant or liberty to Sir Robert Drury to fell timber rest in Mr. Barber's hands until the effect of the last mentioned order be performed.

ITEM. The said Sir Rob[t] Drury is to discharge the said Sir John Scott and his lady, for blacks that were going for Sir W[m] Drury's funeral, and for all goods and chattels late Sir W[m] Drury's, that either came to Sir John Scott's or his Lady's hands.

AND, LASTLY, upon the full perfecting of the said assurances, the original articles are to be cancelled. In witness whereof to one part hereof, Sir John Scott hath subscribed his name, and to the other part hereof, the said Sir Robert Drury hath likewise subscribed.

R. DRURY.

MEM. That Sir Rob[t] Drury doth promise to enseal *on hand* (*sic*) of £500 all ready agreed on, for the performance of Covenants in a paper of Indenture between *Sir Edward Stafford* (t) and Sir John Scott, knight, on the one part, and Sir William . . . . . Anthony Gawdy, George Bacon, Esq., and Richard Braby on the other part. R. DRURY.

(*) *John Fineux, of Haws House in Hearn, Esq., was Sheriff of Kent in* 1597. *Peter Manwood* (*afterwards knighted*), *was Sheriff in* 1602. *Thomas Walsingham was son of Sir Thomas Walsingham, Knt., of Scadbury, Kent, Secretary of State, etc., etc., Sheriff* 1563.

(t) *Edward, second Baron Stafford, son of Lord Henry Stafford, and brother of Lady Elizabeth Stafford, who married, firstly, Sir William Drury, of Hawsted, and, secondly, Sir John Scott. Sir Robert and Sir Drue Drury were sons of Sir William Drury, by Elizabeth Stafford.* (*See letter* 20, *p.* ix.)

(**44**) A letter dated August 12, 1599, from Thomas Wilsford and Thomas Fane, ordering a general rendezvous of the Forces at Dartford, addressed—To all Justices of Peace, Captains of either bands, Constables, Bailiffs, and all other Her Majesty's officers appertaining within the Lath of *Shyppeway* and the hundred of . . . . . .

Whereas you lately received warrant and commandment from us to repair with all your forces, armour, horses, and furniture to Canterbury the 15th day of this instant August according to letters and directions from the Lords of the Council and of our right honorable Lord Lieutenant, forasmuch as we have since received letters from their Lordships, whereby we are straightly required to cause all our forces within our limits to repair to Dartford with all possible speed and expedition. These are therefore in her Majesty's name and according to the tenour of the said letters (the copies whereof we send herewith unto you) . . . . to cause all your bands and forces, as well of foot as horse, with all your armour, horses, and furniture presently with all speed to march and repair to Dartford, being the place now appointed by the Lords for rendezvouz, hereof fail you not as you tender Her Majesty service, and will answer for the contrary at your perils . . . . . given under our hands and seals the 12th day of August in the 48th yere of the reign our Sovereign Lady Queen Elizabeth . . . . . 1599.

THOS. FANE (*Lieut. of Dover Castle*). THOS. WILSFORD (*Colonel-Commandant of Kentish Forces*).

(**45**) A letter without date (*circa* 1600) from Henry Palmer to Sir John Scott, addressed—To my very honorable and especial good friend, Sir John Scott, knight, at Scot's Hall, give these.

Good Sir John,—I have received of late three letters from you concerning a complaint exhibited by sundry persons of our County, finding fault with the stopping of the passage of Medway river, to the great and general prejudice of the inhabitants of the parts adjoining, which complaint was delivered to me at Deptford, the presenters whereof did earnestly importune me to acquaint the Lords of her Majesty's Privy Council with the same, and especially the Lord Admiral, for that the restraining of passage (by boats) in the said river was a great hinderance to the service of her Majesty, by reason that timber plank, trenails, &c., whereof there was a good quantity, lying upon the river, could not be brought hither to Chatham, where there was great cause of present use thereof: and in kindness to you (to whom I protest I am and have been long very much affected), I staid the said complaint in my hand, and restrained the parties from making any further petition. And knowing how near you are linked to my good Lord of Buckhurst, I sent a copy of the said complaint unto his Lordship; desiring his honour to acquainte you with the contents thereof. . . . . .

There is at this instant very great want of that small quantity of timber here, especially trenails, and I do wish we had them to supply the want, so as it may not be to the wronging or prejudice of Sir John Scott. And for my part the complainants shall never have encouragement by me to deal any further in the matter, but rather seeing your reasons I will advise them to rest contented, and myself will ever rest ever at your devotion,

HENRY PALMER.[u]

(**46**) A letter, dated 1601, from R. Scott, to Mr. Thomas Scott, addressed—To my very loving brother, Thos Scott, Esq., at his house.

Sir,—My uncle received a letter yesternight from Sir John to lend him his coach, for that he purposed to be here on Friday next with my Lady, and my brother Smythe and his wife, but as his coach was in readiness this morning, he received letters to go this night or to-morrow to Dover, to meet the French Ambassador, who is Marshall Bevon. By this, as he is High Sheriff, he fears he shall be commanded to meet him, and being but weak he could not by any means spare his coach. Wherefore he desired me to certify Sir John his desire unto you, thinking that you may better at this time supply and consider his necessity than he. And so take my leave, This present Thursday, Austin Hanger, 1601.

Your very loving brother,

R. SCOTT.[v]

(**47**) Letter from Cecily, Countess of Dorset, concerning the sojourning of her daughter Sackevile with her nephew Scott. From Horsley, June 30, 1604.

My very good Nephew,—I received a letter from you yesternight, by the which as also by a letter from my daughter Sackevile, I understand that she is desirous to sojourn with you whereof for her good choice herein and of you and my cousin your wife's kind acceptation thereof, I am very glad and most heartily thank you both for the same. And so with my very loving commendation unto you both, wishing unto you all health and happiness, I commend you to the tuition of the Almighty, from Horsley this 30th day of June, 1604.

Your very loving aunt,

CECILY DORSET.[w]

I desire that I may be kindly remembered unto all my nephews and nieces with you, with all well wishing unto little Henry Bromley.

---

[u] *This letter refers to the obstruction of the River Medway at Nettlested, Kent, Sir John Scott having, about the year* 1590, *erected a foot bridge over that river at Nettlested Court. This obstruction was afterwards removed at the instance of the Commissioners appointed to render the Medway navigable from Tonbridge to Maidstone. At the commencement of the seventeenth century Nettlested Manor supplied the largest oak timber for navy purposes, and an adjoining manor* (*Lomewood*) *that for the construction of the dome of St. Paul's Cathedral. The cross beams in the tythe barn at Nettlested Court are to this day evidence of the remarkable length and bulk of this timber.*

[v] *Robert Scott, of Mersham, was Gentleman Usher,* 1610, *to James I.*

[w] *This letter, from the Countess of Dorset, is probably intended for Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall and Nettlested.*

Vol. CXIV., No. 139. *From the Cecil MSS. in the possession of the Marquis of Salisbury at Hatfield House, Herts.*

(**48**) Sir John Scott to Earl of Salisbury, 1605.

RIGHT HONORABLE,—I nothing doubt but that your Lordship will excuse me that I continue, in all humility, to seek your lawful favour, whereof I am occasioned to be the more hopeful in that your Lordship many years sithence vouchsafed me the warrant of your honorable promise for assurance of the same; and howsoever I have never had the happiness to make any actual demonstration of my desire to do your Lordship some acceptable service in performance of the obligation I stand engaged unto your Lordship, yet my own heart can truly plead my innocency for ever offering any just occasion to withdraw your honorable disposition from me.

Concerning the nature of my petition, I rest confident that your Lordship will deem it both lawful and reasonable, as containing in it nothing but the demand of a just debt due for the service of the estate, which many have in the self same kind already received, and very few now remain unsatisfied, and I doubt not but your Lordship will call to remembrance that your own particular grace hath been the best means that some of them have had for obtaining of the same.

My hope, therefore, is that what hath been adjudged reasonable for others, my case being the same (not without addition of further matter of charge than the most of them could plead in their particulars) will not be unreasonable in mine, and I beseech your Lordship to remember that it is an authentic truth, that the labourer is worthy of his hire, especially where he should earn it with so many difficulties as are incident to the life of a soldier. And thus leaving myself to be disposed by your Lordship, I humbly beseech you to esteem me among the number of those that honour you as an arch pillar whereupon the good estate of this kingdom, both for matter of policy and religion, doth mainly rest, which must cause me ever most entirely to wish your Lordship lasting happiness in this life, and everlasting in the life to come. Your Lordship in all humbleness to be commanded,

JO. SCOTT.

Holograph. Sealed. Add.—To the right honorable my especial good Lord the Earl of Salisbury.

(**49**) A letter, without date (*circa* 1605), from Sir Robert Sidney to Sir John Scott, and addressed—To the right Worshipful Sir John Scott, Knight.

. . . . . letters . . . . . yesterday . . . . . from . . . . . in answer of those which Sir C. Percy and Mr. . . . . carried. The King was then at Edinboro', and in the letter no speech of the time he is coming hither. But the former opinion remains that he was at Berwick, as on Saturday last, and there will wait some eight days, and by small journies come hitherwards. The letter was much to the effect of the former, but rather seems to be written by the King himself than the former. It sends . . . . . of the ancient forces who have carried themselves sincerely, and have promised to make more Councillors and more noblemen. The Lord of Kinloss is despatched, and is looked for herewith in a day or two. Sir R. Carey is sworn gentleman of the King's Chamber. We that are here hold not our determination as we purposed, when considering all things fit for your knowledge you shall be further advertized therein.

R. SIDNEY.[x]

Vol. CXV. Folio 67. *From the Cecil MSS. in the possession of the Marquis of Salisbury at Hatfield House, Herts.*

(**50**) Sir John Scott to Ld. Salisbury, 16th Jany., 1606.

RIGHT HONORABLE.—It hath pleased your Lordship to give me abundant occasion to bethink myself how I might yield some poor testimony of my thankfulness for your Lordship's late free and honorable favour in bestowing upon me the wardship of Burdett's heir (*John Burdett, of Odymer, Sussex*), which as it was in respect of the impossibility of merit, not only beside, but merely contrary to any hope of mine, so I must truly and ingeniously confess it proved more to me in value, not only than I expected, but more than ever I received from any person living, my father and wives excepted. But to perform this more than necessary duty in any proportionable measure, such and so great is my incapacity as I am enforced, with that one of the ten "leapers," only to return with a bare though true acknowledgment of your Lordship's undeserved favour, seriously professing, that what I am and what I have is wholly at your honor's disposition.

And now, my very good Lord, I humbly beseech you to vouchsafe me leave, not by way of intrusion upon your farther favor (and yet without your favour it cannot be), but by way of proposition to understand your Lordship's pleasure whether out of your approved wisdom you shall deem it fit for me to renew my suit to his Majesty concerning a debt due to me for my service in the Low Countries, which amounteth not to above £500, and the payment thereof to be taken out of "the Checks" by time, whereof there are divers president past, and very few left to be subsequent.

This small sum, I protest to your Lordship (if happily it be obtained), will not come clear to my purse, but groweth due to me for apparrelling my soldiers upon my own credit, not without the payment of interest, from the burthen whereof I am not freed even at this day. What hath been done herein already your Lordship hath been heretofore troubled withall, and for my after courses I will wholly leave them either to be perpetually silenced or seasonably revived, as your Lordship shall please to direct. Howsoever, as I am bound, I shall both for myself and for the Commonwealth's sake ever honor you as a main pillar of the same, beseeching the Almighty to give you long-lasting happiness in it, and everlasting in the Commonwealth of God.

And so humbly craving pardon of your Lo., I rest, most affectionate, to be commanded during my life,

JO. SCOTT.

Add.—To the right honorable my especial good Lord the Earl of Salisbury, principal Secretary to the King's Majesty.

---

[x] *Sir Robert Sidney, Knt., Lord Sidney of Penshurst, Viscount Lisle, and first Earl of Leicester, married, 2ndly, the widow of Sir Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, Kent. His mother was Mary, eldest daughter of John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, and sister of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, a kinsman of Sir John Scott* (*see p.* 171). *Sir Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, was brother of Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle, who married for his first wife Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas Scott of Scot's Hall, and had issue Sir John Smythe, of Leeds Castle, etc. See monument at Ashford Church. Thus Sir Robert Sidney was connected with the Scot's Hall family by maternal descent, and through the family of his second wife.*

(**51**) On His Majesty's service. To the Honourable Gentleman and our loving friend, Thomas Scott, Esq., at his house at Scot's Hall. Haste.

SIR,—We have received a letter from the Right Honourable the Lord Wotton, Lord Lieutenant of this County, for a general Muster to be had of all the Forces, both Horse and Foot, within the same, with special command for the re-enforcing all the Companies, and supplying the defects both of men and furniture in as ample and complete manner as they have been at any time heretofore. We pray you, therefore, to use such care and diligence in the performance thereof, touching your own particular Company, that his Lordship's letters may have their full effect, and that the same may be put in such a readiness that it may be fit to appear before the Muster Master at Cox Heath on the 15th of October next, and for your better proceeding herein we send you herewith enclosed such instructions as we think convenient to be put in effect. We desire also that you will please to take such for the Muster Master's entertainment as has been accustomed, so as the same may be done before the day of his survey, which is likewise specially required by his Lordship's letters. And thus, leaving the rest to your good discretion, we rest your very loving friend,

Dated this 28th of July, 1608. ROGER MANWOOD.

(There is a foot-note by Ro. Manwood, in his own writing apparently)

SIR,—I was absent when your brother with the rest set down the orders at the sessions, and after upon remembering your conversation unto me by Captn. Brett, I demanded of him why the remainder of the launce was forgotten; he told me they thought it unprofitable . . . . . French pistol . . . . . yet being so ancient an order they would not forbid it, but by our silence and forgetfulness . . . . . bring the others in use, yet I would wish you not altogether to forget the Launce, but absolutely to commend the French pistol well furnished. Yours, etc.,

RO. MANWOOD.[y]

(**52**) A letter dated Whitehall, July 9, 1611, addressed—

To my very loving friend Sir John Scott, Knt., one of the Deputy Lieutenants for the County of Kent.—After my very hearty commendations. Whereas the band of Lancers at this time wanteth a Commander, and out of my knowledge of your worth I have made choice of you to supply the same. These shall be to desire and authorize you to undertake that charge, preparing yourself thereunto with what convenient speed you may. I shall not need to furnish your experience with any particular directions in this behalf, but generally in whatsoever you find that Band defective and imperfect, I refer it to your good discretion to use those means which you shall think fit for advancement of His Majesty's service. So assuring myself that your care and diligence will be answerable to the importance of the business, I betake me to God's protection, and thereby rest,

Your assured loving friend, E. WOTTON (*Lord Lieutenant*).

(**53**) A letter from Sir Thomas Walsingham, Knt., to Sir John Scott, dated Scadbury, Sept. 6, 1611.

SIR,—Whereas I understand you have writ unto Sir William Roper, charging him with the launce to be mustered before you, He has been in France this twelve months, and at his going entreated me when any such charge should come to move you, that you would be pleased he might be excused until his return, when he would be ready to do so much as should be appointed him. And so, with my hearty wishes, I rest your very loving friend,

THOMAS WALSINGHAM.

(**54**) A letter, dated Dec. 8, 1611, from Sir Edward Wotton, Lord Lieutenant, to Sir John Scott and others, his Deputy Lieutenants, concerning the smallness of the loan sent up, addressed—To my very loving friends, Sir Peter Manwood, Sir John Scott, Sir John Leveson, Sir Thomas Waller, Sir Thomas Walsingham, and Sir Nicholas Tufton, knights, my deputy Lieutenants for the County of Kent, or to any of them.

After my very hearty commendations. Upon the receipt of your certificate touching the loans delivered me by Sir Nicholas Tufton, I forthwith sent up unto the Lords, who have returned it back, not without laying a great deal of blame upon me, but more particularly upon yourselves, who were the actors in that business, for the smallness of the sum, finding it so far short both of the last loan unto His Majesty, and much more of the other in the late Queen's time. As for the reasons you allege by way of excuse, they are not accepted as good payment, seeing the same are common to all other counties, and as touching the drought of the last spring, or any other such accident, the Lords do not believe that only Kent doth suffer, and yet of 37 certificates come in there is not one which hath not (notwithstanding all these exemptions) been so far from diminuation of the last, as they do all exceed Kent at the least by one quarter, and some the half, apprehending the necessity of the loan, and not looking only upon themselves. I do therefore hereby earnestly require and charge you, as you tender His Majesty's service, to assemble yourselves again about this matter with all possible speed, and therein to use your greatest care and industry to advance this service to the utmost that your pains and the County may afford, so as you may return such a certificate as may satisfy the expectation which is had of you. The which I desire may be made ready for me against my coming to London, which (God willing) shall be upon Thursday next. And for the better effecting of that which is desired herein, to deliver you my opinion there must be choice made of more lenders and better sums, concerning which point in one particular I must tell you that in this county, where there be so many knights, I cannot but wonder there be so few lenders. Wherefore I pray you cast a stricter eye upon men of that condition. And so not doubting of your industrious care herein, I betake you all to the protection of the Almighty and rest,

Your assured loving friend, that much loveth and respecteth you,

E. WOTTON.

Bocton Malherbe, this 8 of December, 1611.

---

[y] *Roger Manwood, son of Sir Roger Manwood, of Sandwich, Kent, Chief Baron of the Exchequer* temp. *Queen Elizabeth.*

(**55**) *Brit: Mus: Julius C. III., p.* 335.

SYR ROBT.,—I acknowledge my selfe muche behouldinge unto you for your favor to ward'es me in the cause of Clare Hall, and seinge that your worshippe hath beene pleased to vouchsafe so muche kindnes unto me, I humbiye beseeche you that you will adde this favor unto the reste to excuse me unto our most honorable chancellor for not makinge my personall apparence unto him, according as my dutie and the necessitie of my cause requireth, I was purposed to have come a longe with the bearer yf I coulde have gotten leave, but that beinge denyed unto me, I am forced to staye here by cause I am necessarilye to wayte upon the kinge, but so soone as I have anye leysure, I will not fayle to doo my dutie in waytinge upon my lorde, and in the mean time I hartelye praye you, that you will speake favourablye unto his ldpe in my behalfe ; and thus in haste referringe your worppe to relation of this bearer, what hathe beene done withe the kinge in this busines, I remember my love and dutie unto you, and so committ you to God.

Wyndsore, Septemb. 6, 1612. Yours at commande,

ROBERT SCOTT.

(**56**) A letter from Sir John Scott, to Sir Norton Knatchbull ; date, 1613.

GOOD BROTHER,—I received your letter this last night, and hold myself much beholden to you and the rest of my friends in these parts for their care and diligence in this business, and altho' we be not growing here to an absolute security, yet we find the opposite party so far to decline as Sir Thomas Walsingham and Sir Peter Manwood are willing to spare Shepway, Hythe, Romney Marsh, the town of Romney, Lidd, and the rest of that division as far as Ashford, which is likewise intended to be included within the limits of this dispensation. The endeavour now will be with such caution to countermand their particulars above mentioned, that the rest of the Country do not so lively take notice of it that they likewise stay at home for the better prevention thereof. The warning generally must be deferred to the last moment of time. With regard that the . . . . . parts which are those towards the sea be first sent to and assured who is the nearest to Rochester, but the last to whose knowledge I wish it should not come before Saturday, at six of the clock in the evening at the soonest, and for that Saturday is Market day there, you must be careful to make your dispatches elsewhere with such silence and secrecy that it be not carried thither before the appointed hour. The shortness of the time will not permit me to think of all particulars necessary. I pray that your circumspection may supply my omissions ; and so with my kind remembrances and best wishes to you all, I rest

Your very assured loving brother,[z]

JOHN SCOTT.

Dated London, this Thursday morning, 6 o'c. of the 17th of this present.

Sir Norton Knatchbull, I beseech you assist my brother with your good advice for the better effecting of his intention, which requireth special circumspection to answer the ends proposed.

[Attached to this letter is the answer of Sir Norton Knatchbull, which is so badly written that it is impossible to decipher it. It is dated 1613.]

---

57) A Letter, dated June 14, 1613, To our loving friend the pretended owner of the Manor of Capell in the County of Kent. (Endorsed outside—Letter from the Lords of the Council concerning His Majesty's order relating to Defective titles of Manors.)

Whereas His Majesty, out of his princely . . . . . toward his subjects, regarding their good more than his own profit, has directed unto us of His Majesty's gracious command, under his great seal in England, upon comparison to be made by us to His Majesty's use, with such as have defective titles, and if lands to secure unto them by way of . . . . . , ... all former defects, and their estates for the good of them and their posterity, and whereas through over much levity formerly showed therein that good which His Majesty expected, and which was desired has not taken any effect, but rather the whole business grown into a general neglect amongst his subjects, yet notwithstanding His Majesty, out of his clemency toward them, is pleased that before any legal course shall be taken for his . . . . . against them, that such as have not formerly received letters should by our letter be at once summoned to appear within ten days after the receipt thereof and upon appearance, forthwith either to compound, or to give satisfaction to His Majesty's Counsel at Law, to the title which shall be set down for His Majesty in that case which shall be delivered to him. And all such as shall fail in performing thereof shall be duly and strictly proceeded against according to the order given at the Court at Whitehall, the 20th day of April, 1613, which order remains in the custody of Rob[t] Tipper, Esq., at his chamber in Gray's Inn, near Holborn, London. Wherefore if you shall not repair unto the said Robert Tipper, who is now specially appointed by His Majesty, and so to bring this business within ten days after the receipt of these our letter to the place aforesaid, and upon your appearance certify unto the said Robert Tipper, as he may thereupon inform us that you will compound for his Majesty's title to the lands set down in the causes herein sent and enclosed, or else that you will give satisfaction to His Majesty's Counsel at Law to the title set down for His Majesty in the same cause, and forthwith to affirm the same, but shall neglect the favour intended you, then we give you to understand that upon affidavit made of the delivery of our letters, you may not expect any further grace, but to be proceeded against according to the said orders. And so we bid you farewell from the Court at Whitehall, the 14th day of June, 1613. Your loving friends,

H. NORTHAMPTON. GILBERT . . . . . JULIUS CÆSAR.
EDWARD . . . . . THOMAS PARRY.

---

58) A letter, dated July 4, 1614, from the Lords of the Council concerning the levying contributions for the King's service, addressed—To our very loving friends, the Sheriff, and the Justices of Peace in the County of Kent.

After our hearty commendations. You cannot be ignorant that upon the dissolving of the late begun Parliament there hath not been yielded to His Majesty such supply of his wants as in Congruity of State he might have expected from his loving subjects. Whereupon as well the Lords spiritual with many of the Clergy as the Lords and others of His Majesty's Privy Council, with many other Lords and Gentlemen of worth and quality, taking the same into serious consideration out of their dutiful love and great affection to His Majesty in

---

[z] *Two of Sir John Scott's sisters had married members of the Knatchbull family of Mersham Hatch.*

contemplation of the many blessings and happiness which we enjoy by his most gracious government, have of their own motion every one for himself with great alacrity presented and given to His Majesty plate or money or both, which example we are informed the reverend Judges for their parts, as also the gentlemen and others of ability in these adjacent shires and some cities and boroughs, have lovingly and readily resolved to follow. And therefore we very well understanding the forwardness of your affections upon all occasions and in all things tending to His Majesty's service, have thought good to make the same known unto you, wishing you to impart the same to other gentlemen and to all such within that county that you shall discern to be persons of good ability, or otherwise fit to further the service whereby to return a success thereof which will rest much in your industry, and discreet handling may carry with it a worthy demonstration, as well of your own zeal and forwardness as of the general love and good affection of that county towards His Majesty. Whatsoever shall be given, be it in money or in plate, they whom in your discretions you shall depute to have the collection and custody thereof, are to cause it to be sent to His Majesty's Jewel house in Whitehall, with a register in writing of the value of every particular gift, and the names of the several givers, that they being presented to His Majesty's view, he may be pleased to take notice of their good affections, which he will ever retain in his grateful remembrance. And it is resolved that it shall only be employed for the payment of his debts, as, namely, for Ireland, the Navy and the Cautionary Towns in the Low Countries. And so leaving the carriage of this business to your discretions and wisdoms we bid you heartily farewell from Whitehall, this 4th of July, 1614.

Your very loving friends,

G. CANT, THOS. ELLESMERE, THOS. SUFFOLKE, WILL. SHREWSBURY,
PEMBROOKE, E. EBOR, R. SOMERSET, E. ZOUCH, *pro* KNOLLES.
E. WOTTON, RALPHE WINWOOD, EDD. COOKE, JULIUS CÆSAR,
GEO. CALVERT.

---

(59) A letter dated September 12, 1614, from the Lords of the Council to Edward, Lord Wotton, concerning a general muster and arming of the Forces.

After our hearty commendations unto your Lordship. Whereas there is a great army now on foot, commanded by Marquis Spinola in Cleveland, and the parts thereabouts, that hath proceeded very far in taking in and possessing themselves of divers Towns, to the great danger of the Protestant party and the Religion that began so happily to flourish in those parts, together with the eminent peril of the States of the United provinces: Which although it be a sufficient motive in reason of State to move His Majesty to cast a vigilant and provident eye to the safety of his own dominions, Yet being withal advertised of a great fleet lately discovered upon the Coast, full of soldiers and munition, which are to take their descent either in the Low Countries or in some place more prejudicial to this Realm: His Majesty, in his high wisdom, hath commanded at this time that order be given by us for a general muster and survey to be made of such armed forces of this Realm as shall be thought meet to be prepared and had in readiness upon all occasions for the defence and safety of the Kingdom, And therefore we do hereby pray and require your Lordship, according to the authority of your Lieutenancy in that County, that presently upon the receipt of this letter (all delays and excuses set apart) you cause a general view to be taken of all the forces in that County, both horse and foot, And therein to observe that perfect notice be taken and inrolment made of all the numbers trained and untrained, but specially that the trained bands may be made complete both by supplying the rooms of such officers and other persons as are either dead, insufficient, or removed out of the county since the last muster, with sufficient and apt men to be chosen in their places, as well of those of the better quality, as of such other freeholders, farmers, owners of land, or householders as may be fit for the same, as also by causing the defects of the armour, weapons, and furniture to be with all speed sufficiently repaired and amended. And that the numbers of horse may be (if not increased as we wish them to be), yet filled up, and made as complete as at any time heretofore they have been with all arms and furniture to them and their horsemen appertaining, From which duty and service no person is to excuse himself of what degree or quality soever, excepting only those that are known to be His Majesty's ordinary servants in Court, and menial or household servants to Noblemen. At which general view it shall be likewise expedient that such of the Clergy as have been heretofore appointed to find arms and others of them that are mete in like sort to be charged, may be ordered to cause the same to be shewed and prepared in like readiness. Herein we do require your Lordship to give speedy and effectual directions, as a matter much importing His Majesty's service and the safety of Kingdom: And whereof His Majesty will expect a good account: And withal to give order for the training and exercising of the said forces, and that every soldier as well horse as foot may be prepared and had in a readiness upon a reasonable summons, at all times as occasion shall require. And where there hath been special order heretofore given that there should be a certain quantity of powder kept as a store in that County, with match bullets and provision for carriages, to be kept in readiness upon all occasions for service, We do require your Lordship that due care be had and order taken for the immediate supplying of that store (if it be wanting or defective), and the charge thereof to be levied, as heretofore hath been accustomed. And further, likewise, we hold it very expedient, and accordingly require you to take order that the Beacons within that County be also prepared and put in a readiness as is requisite. And lastly, that all other directions formerly given upon like occasion and mete to be continued, be duly observed and put in execution. Of these things we require your Lordship to have a special regard, and to certify us with all expedition of your proceedings herein. And so we bid your Lordship heartily farewell. From Whitehall, the 12th of September, 1614.

Your lordship's very loving friends,

P. CANT, T. ELLESMERE, CANC. T. SUFFOLK.
RALPH WINWOOD, JUL. CÆSAR, THO. PARRY.

Whereas by the words of this letter it is appointed that all kind of furniture should be prepared both for horse and foot, it is not to be understood that you charge the country either with providing of coats or conduct money, until you shall receive further directions in that behalf. Moreover, you are to take especial care that all Colonels, Captains, Lieutenants, and other their under officers, do dutifully performe the charges committed unto them.

(**60**) A letter dated July 7 (*circa* 1612), from . . . . . Egerton to Mr. Richard Browne, concerning the turning out Sir Thomas Smithe from the East India Company's service, addressed—To the right worshipful my approved friend, Mr. Richard Browne, at Great Chart, near Ashford.[a]

Being now shortly to go into the country, where I shall be more remote from you, and have less occasion to write unto you, I thought good by these few lines to salute you. The best news I can write you is that it pleaseth God to continue (in a gracious measure) health to our City, parish, and family. I humbly beseech him to give us grace well to improve and employ our health, and so teach us to number our days that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom. I was on Friday last, in the afternoon, at Merchant Taylor's Hall, where was a general meeting of the East Indian Company about the choice of new officers, according to their annual custom. It should seem that some thought to have made a band or canvass (as they call it in Camb.) to have turned out Sir Thomas Smythe,[b] for the balloting box was brought, and the matter like to be put to that kind of trial which is a kind of lottery. But there were present some of the Privy Council, as the Earl of Southampton, Mr. . . . . ., Sir Thomas Edmonds, besides the Lord Candish, Sir Dudley Diggs, and those signified the King's desire that there might be as little change of officers at the time as could be. Especially (the Lord Digby, as by commandment from the King) signified that His Majesty delighted not in change of his ancient officers : that he was now an old King, and loved not to have new faces repair unto him (insinuating after a sort his Majesty's affection to Sir Thomas Smythe), and besides there were now new deputies or commissioners, either come or coming over from the States to make a small conclusion about their traffic in those parts, with which commissioners and business these old officers are best acquainted and most expert, and therefore His Majesty, without prejudice to their free election, thought they should do well to continue them for this one year. This speech was seconded by Sir Thomas Edmonds and Sir Dudley Diggs, very proper and well spoken gentlemen. This request of His Majesty (as it were) seemed very reasonable (as I thought) in the ears of the most reasonable and greatest members of the assembly, which so that when it came to hands it was carried clear, by which Sir Thomas Smythe for this year, and for the next year Alderman Hallyday, is chosen. It was my hap to sit by Mr. Eldred, who gave me cold comfort, for he said he thought that the trade was decayed and would come to nothing, by reason of the excessive charges they were at, which would eat out all the gain : yet I do not hear others say so, who in reason should see as much as he into the business. I saw Mr. Carr[c] there, whom I had thought to have asked his opinion, but I think I shall not speak with him before I go into Essex. Going to Mr. . . . . house to-day, I found Mr. Rogers and him together, who both very kindly remembered you. Thus, with my very hearty salutations and my wife's, and our prayers to God for his blessing upon you and yours, I rest,

Your loving friend in the Lord much bounden,

EGERTON (*Lord Chancellor temp. James I.*)

(**61**) A General Order, dated Ashford, August 30, 1615.

Order being given for general musters, with express commandment not only for the exact supply of all defects, but for an increase and enlargement of all the Companies so far as the estate of things will well admit, especially of the horse troops, and our Lord Lieutenant being advertised that the late horse band raised in the Lathe of Shipway and the Hundreds annexed is of late greatly neglected, hath strictly required his deputy Lieutenants to take care for the present reducing and reinforcing of the same. According, therefore, to his Lordship's directions, there has been due consideration how the same might be best performed by charging such gentlemen and others as are fit to supply that service, and amongst the rest yourself, are nominated for the foundation of a light horse . . . . . which you are to provide and show before us and the Muster Master of *Braborne Leize* the 22nd of September, by 8 of the clock in the morning, and thus having certified his Lordship's peremptory directions to us and our resolution upon the same, with our best recommendations, we rest,

Your very loving friends,

NICHOLAS TUFTON. JOHN SCOTT. R. R. MANWOOD.

(**62**) A letter from Edward Scott, dated September 18 (*circa* 1615), to the Constable of the Hundred of Folkestone.

Whereas it is commanded by His Majesty to the Lords of the Privy Council, from them to our Lord Lieutenants, and from them to his deputies, that such band within this County shall be put in readiness, and if it be possible enlarged, both the number of men, furniture, and other necessaries, I am, by virtue of that command, to require and charge you that you cause all such men as have been formerly trained under Henry Heyman, Esq., lately deceased, and all that shall be found fit within your Hundred for His Majesty's service, to appear before William Nethersole, gentleman, my Lieutenant at Alkeham, which place is appointed for the County's use, on Wednesday next, being the 21st of this instant September, at 1 o'clock in the afternoon, with all their furniture, and with such or larger proportion of powder, matches, bullets, &c., than heretofore has usually been commanded, there to receive such instruction as I may command, shall be delivered unto them, and see that yourself are then there with a roll containing the names of all such as you have reserved by virtue of this precept, and because the occasion is of extraordinary importance, you are to endeavour that the appearance may be accordingly. Hereof fail not, as you tender His Majesty's service, and will answer the contrary. Dated Scott's Hall, the 18th day of September, in the twelfth year of his reign (*circa* 1615).

EDWARD SCOTT.[d]

---

[a] *Sir Richard Browne, of Shingleton House, in Great Chart, Ashford, was father of John Browne, of Shingleton, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Edward Scott, K.B., of Scot's Hall, and was father-in-law of Evelyn, of Wooton, Surrey, the Diarist,* temp. *Charles II.*

[b] *Sir Thomas Smythe, of Bidborough, Kent, brother of Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle, had been a Russian merchant, and was in* 1601 *Sheriff and Alderman of London. He was implicated with his kinsman, Sir John Scott, in Essex's plot, and in consequence dispossessed of his civic honours, and for a time imprisoned in the Tower.*

[c] *Probably Robert Carr, a great favourite of James I., and by him created Viscount Rochester.*

[d] *Sir Edward Scott, Sheriff of Kent* 1623, *18th James I.*

(**63**) A letter from the Lords of the Council, addressed—To the right worshipful our very loving friends, Sir John Scott, Sir Thomas Walsingham, and Sir Peter Manwood, Knights, and the rest of His Majesty's Justices and Compounders for the County of Kent, or to any of them.

After our hearty commendations. Forasmuch as this bearer, George Gawen, having undertaken (as it seemeth) the service of your composition lands for this year at the price of 7/6 the piece, he has well and truly performed the said service, and doth inform us that there is yet the sum of £157 10s. owing to him by the County on the said Contract made with you, We are at his suit to pray you to take present order that the said sum of £157 10s. owing to him by the County on that service may be speedily paid unto him accordingly. And so we bid yon heartily farewell. From the Court at Whitehall, this 10th of July, 1616.

Your very loving friends,

LENOX. E. WOOTTON. W. KNOWLES. MAR. DARRELL.
RICHARD COX. JO. LEIGH. THOMAS VERRYE. HENRY BELL.

(**64**) A letter signed George Fane, from Brixton, this 9th of Aug., 1616, to Sir John Scott, Knt., for his attendance at Dover on the Harbour business.

To my honourable and most worthy friend, Sir John Scott, Knt., at Scot's Hall, these.

NOBLE KNIGHT,—I send you herewith a summons for a meeting at Dover according to the request of our officers of the Harbour, where I hope you will afford us meeting . . . . . should have you haste to make more journeys . . . . . I beseech you, present my service to your virtuous lady, and the fair lady Smythe, and ever be assured in the unfeigned love of

GEORGE FANE.

(**65**) A letter, dated October 2, 1616, addressed—To the Right Honourable and my much respected friend, Mr. Edward Scott, at Scot's Hall, from Thos. Hardres, of Hardres Court.

GOOD SIR,—Being pressed with some urgent occasions in the behalf of my Lady Sackevill, for whom my credit stands somewhat injured for the payment of some monies on Thursday next, I make bold by her directions to crave your assistance, and entreating that you will withal be pleased to take it into your consideration and so grant my request.

Your very assured loving friend,

Oct. 2, 1616. THOS. HARDRES (*of Hardres Court, East Kent*).

(**66**) A letter to Edward Scott, Esq., concerning the levying of the Forces, signed by Sir Nicholas Tufton, Sir Dudley Diggs, and Sir Roger Manwood, addressed—For His Majesty's service to the Right Worshipful our loving friend, Edward Scott, Esq. These, July 16th, 1617.

SIR,—Whereas we have received letters from the right Honourable the Lord Wotton, Lord Lieutenant of this County of Kent and City of Canterbury, etc., with a copy of the Lords of His Majesty's most Honourable Privy Council, their letters, in His Majesty's name to his Lordship, bearing the date of the 13th day of this month, for a general view to be taken of all the forces in this shire, both of horse and foot, etc., all of which his Lordship has likewise by his letters commanded us his lieutenants to give order for, with all care and diligence we can. These are therefore in His Majesty's name to pray and require you, all excuses and delays set apart, to give presently order unto all those of your county to be in a readiness in the best condition and manner that may be, with their full arms and furniture very serviceable and good, with powder, match, and bullets, etc., according to former instructions, to be at Braborne Leize on Wednesday morning, the 10th of September next, by eight of the clock in the forenoon, there to be viewed and tried before us and by the Muster Master. Also for every musket there must be in store five pounds of good and serviceable powder, and three score bullets, and none to serve without his rest and vandelier with 12 Charges, in every caliver four pounds of like Powder and so many bullets, and every of them, six pounds of good matches. Those of the Clergy are . . . . . bound to . . . . . here, under . . . . and furnished as is aforesaid, at which time you must have two rolls fairly written to be delivered them: one for the right honourable our Lord Lieutenant, and the other for us. Hereof we pray yon to take such care that no manner of default may be in any thing, as you tender His Majesty's service and the good and honour of the Kingdom. And it is thought fit that at the same meeting you make ready the Muster Master's entertainment as heretofore hath been accustomed, and so we commit you to the Lord's protection, this 16th day of July, 1617.

Your very loving friends,

NICHOLAS TUFTON. DUDLEY DIGGS. ROGER MANWOOD.

P.S.—Because the preparation of the arms by the Clergy imposed by order of my Lord of Canterbury could not be set down by us, for we know not every division: therefore we desire you to send an officer of your band, who knows the certain limits of it, to some of us, and he shall bring back to you their names and what they ought to find.

(**67**) A letter dated at Scot's Hall, Oct, 28, 1617, signed Norton Knatchbull and Edward Scott, addressed—To the Constable of the Hundred of Oxnie, or to his lawful Deputy.

By reason of the great price of Lambs now for this three years past, and the continued increase of the price for dead poultry and other provisions, the County is gone in debt £250 and upwards, and the annual charge exceeds the receipts between £90 and £100, as appeareth to many of the correspondents on the 5th August last at a meeting in Rochester for that service. It was there thought fit that to bear the increase hereafter, a penny in the shilling shall be raised annually throughout the whole county, and twopence in the shilling more for this year only, to pay the debt of the shire above mentioned, and this having been published at the last Quarter Sessions holden at Canterbury, to be provided and . . . . . by the County and no exception thereunto taken by any, These are therefore to will and require you presently, upon the receipt hereof, to take order that the same be collected and gathered within your Hundred, as it was the last year, together with the increase of threepence in the shilling, and brought to Scot's Hall at or before the 20th of Nov. next, whereof tail you not at your peril. Dated at Scot's Hall, October 28, 1617.

NORTON KNATCHBULL. EDWARD SCOTT.

(**68**) Copy of the Council's Order respecting the petition of some Deputy Lieutenants and other gentlemen of Kent touching Coat and Conduct money, dated January 5, 1618. Lord Viscount Fenton, Master of the Rolls, Sir Edw. Cooke.

Whereas a petition was this day exhibited unto their Lordships by Sir Peter Manwood, Sir Thomas Walsingham, knights, deputy lieutenants of the County of Kent, Sir Richard Smith, knt., and other gentlemen of that County; showing that they the said deputy lieutenants, and the rest as heirs or executors of others late deputy lieutenants of the said County deceased, had been lately questioned by a commission procured and executed at Dartford in the said County of Kent, for the inquiry and examination of a supposed abuse, and frauds, in receiving divers sums of money allowed by the late Queen, unto the County of Kent; as to other shires of England toward the disbursement of Coat and Conduct money in setting out of Soldiers for the wars of Ireland and the Low Countries, and not repaying the same to the County nor accounting for them, but converting them to the use of the Receivers, which sums so to be discovered by this Inquisition are granted unto Sir Robt Brett, Sir James Semple, and Thomas Heatley, Esq., by letters patent under the Great Seal of England. Forasmuch as the said petitioners do find themselves much touched in their reputations and credits by such an aspersion cast upon them of deceit to the Country, and betraying the service of their sovereign, and if they be not repaired therein by some manifestation unto this board, from whence such directions and commandments, concerning service of State, have alwaitt (*sic*) and ought to proceed, and to which they therefore make appeal, that they are much wronged by this proceeding (as they undertake to make appear), they and the rest of the Gentlemen of that County shall be greatly discouraged hereafter to take upon them such employment again upon any occasion happening.

For these considerations their Lordships have been pleased to take notice of the complaint, and do order that Sir Robert Brett, Sir James Semple, and the said Thomas Heatley shall attend the Board upon Sunday, the last of this instant January, at Whitehall or elsewhere, and to bring with them their patent, and that howsoever the inquisition be already returned into the Exchequer, yet that neither they nor any other, by their appointment or procurement or otherwise, shall presume to prosecute the Petitioners or any of them thereupon, until this Table give further directions. And if any process be out already, that it shall be stayed until then.

GEO. CALVERT.

(**69**) A letter dated January 20, 1618, from Tristram Verrall to Edward Scott, addressed—To the right worshipful Mr. Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall in Kent, these be delivered.

Right Worshipful Sir,—My humble duty remembered unto you, &c. These are to signify unto you that whereas I understand that you have upon a sudden sent unto me for so much money, as you think it cometh unto for the wood called Hamell Wood, which I have always thought I had paid it to a penny, and so Mr. Bridges, the surveyor, did certify your man that there was no more coming unto you but what I have paid already, but he may be deceived in the measure of it. Yet notwithstanding, in regard of my Bond and Covenants I am willing to satisfy your worship in what is reason, I did conclude with Sir Thomas Honywood that I would pay it this next term, and he did promise me that I should have the Bond and Covenants whensoever I paid the money at Mr. Wm. Honywood's in Cheapside, this Candlemas term. And I have taken order for the payment of it there already. Therefore I entreat your good worship not to put me to charges in suit of Law, for if your man had not so suddenly come for it, I should have been provided for it ere now. And thus I humbly take my leave. From Hockleigh, this 20th January, 1618.

Your worship's to Command, TRISTRAM VERRALL.

(**70**) A letter (without date, *circa* 1620), signed Judith Poole, addressed—To my much honoured Lady, the Lady Scott, at Nettlestead, in Kent, give this, I pray.

These few words are to satisfy your Ladyship that I have received your kind letter, wherein you were pleased to invite me and my husband to Nettlestead. It has been my desire a long time to have waited upon your Ladyship, but as we could not accomplish it, but this summer I do purpose, if it please God, to wait on your Ladyship and the rest of my friends in Kent, and now wait for an opportunity. My Lady Honywood was fearful to come to London by reason of the small pox, so she put it off till another year. My Brother Hamon and my sister desire to have their humble service presented to your Ladyship and Sir Edward. Thanks be to the Lord they continue all very well. Thus, with my husband's and my best respect and service to your Ladyship and Sir Edward, I humbly take my leave, and rest,

Your ladyship's servant to command, JUDITH POOLE.(*)

(**71**) Articles of agreement made, concluded, and agreed upon the . . . . . day of April, in the 17th year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, King James of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the 57th (1620), between the right honorable Robert Lord Viscount Lisle, Earl of Leicester, ... Lord Baron of Somer Hill, Lord Viscount Tunbridge and Earl of Clanricard, Henry Lord Baron of Abergavenny, the Justices of Peace in the county of Kent, and others whose names are hereunder written, being the freeholders, tenants, and occupiers of lands lying *alongst* the river of Medway from the town of Penshurst unto the town of Maidstone, in the said county of Kent, of the one part, and Michael Cole, gentleman, of the other part, viz.

Item. The said Michael Cole doth promise and undertake at his own proper costs and charges, to cleanse and scower the said river of Medway from the town of Penshurst unto the town of Maidstone aforesaid, so that the same shall be portable and passable for boats of the burthen of three tons weight at the least. And that the said river shall be brought into that full perfection at or before the end of one year from the feast of St. John Baptist nowe next ensuing.

Item. The said Michael Cole doth covenant, promise, and undertake to disburse and lay out for the effecting and finishing of the said work, if it shall so require, the full sum of one thousand pounds of lawful English money.

(*) *This letter is probably written by a sister of Peter Heyman, of Somerfield, to Catherine, daughter of John Honywood, of Elmsted, second wife to Sir Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall.*

ITEM. The said Michael Cole, for himself and his assignees, doth covenant and agree to carry all manner of carriages from any usual part of the said river where goods may be conveniently taken in, into the Town of Maidstone or unto London, at one half of the price which is usually given at this present for land carriages unto either of the said places, And that all passengers shall pass once a week upon the Market day unto Maidstone at 4d. the pole, and for the like price back again if they please.

ITEM. All the said Lords, Justices of Peace, freeholders, and others whose names are hereunder written, do appear, consent, and allow of the undertaking by the said Michael Cole or his assignees of the works and passage by boat, and do conceive that it will be very profitable and easeful for all the inhabitants in that part of the Country, and not much harmful to any man.

ITEM. All the said Lords, Justices of Peace, freeholders, and others whose names are hereunder written, for the better effecting and perfecting of the said work, every one of them for themselves do give free liberty and leave unto the said Michael Cole and his assignees to cut down such brush and underwood that groweth over or within the banks of the said river upon any of their freeholds, and to have the same to his own use towards his charge, if that the owners of the said wood do not cut down the same within one month after notice given by the said Michael Cole or his assignees, whereof they are not to leave any stumps or *stacks* that may hinder the said passage.

ITEM. The said Lords, Justices of Peace, freeholders, and others whose names are underwritten, do every one for himself and his heirs covenant, grant, and agree to and with the said Michael Cole and his assignees that he, the said Michael Cole, shall have free licence and liberty to pass through any their lands and grounds lying along the said river, for to tow and haul his or their said boats, and not otherwise. Provided always that the said Michael Cole and his assignees shall from time to time satisfy and pay the said Lords and owners of the said lands for such trespass and damage according as shall be set down by any two Justices of the Peace near adjoining.

ITEM. The said Lords, Justices of the Peace, freeholders, and others whose names are hereunder written, do every one for himself and his heirs give full licence and power unto the said Michael Cole and his assignees to set up any locks, sluices, or other water works within the said river, for the better effecting of the said passage by boat, and to fasten the said work into the ground or side of the bank of the said river being the freehold or in the occupation of any of them.

ITEM. The said Lords, Justices of the Peace, freeholders, and others whose names are under written, do every one for himself, and his heirs and under tenants, give full licence and authority unto the said Michael Cole and his assignees to remove and alter any bridge or bridges that leadeth to any their private houses or lands, whereby the boats may pass the more easily and safely through them, so that the same bridge or bridges be left and set up as conveniently and strongly as now they are, in any other place near adjoining.

ITEM. The Lords, Justices of the Peace, freeholders, and others whose names are under written, do hereby declare that it is their free consent and allowance that the said Michael Cole and his assignees, in consideration of his *travile* and charges, to be taken and disbursed in and about the perfecting of the said work, shall have and enjoy the sale and proper use and benefit of the said passage by water upon that part of the said river for the term of . . . . years, to begin and commence from the feast of St. John Baptist now next ensuinge the date of these presents, upon the conditions and agreements before recited.

And lastly, the said Lords, Justices of the Peace, freeholders, and others whose names are hereunder written, do agree and consent that the said Michael Cole and his assignees may be a suitor unto the Hon^ble^ Court of Parliament by their Act to confirm their said grant and sole benefit of the said passage by boat unto the said Michael Cole and his assignees during the said term of . . . years, upon the said conditions before expressed, and they do every one for himself promise to be aiding and assisting unto the said Michael Cole and his assignees for the obtaining of the same.

(No signatures.)

(**72**) A letter dated August 7, 1621, from Lord Lenox to Ed. Scott, Esq., addressed—To my very loving friend, Ed. Scott, of Scot's Hall, in the County of Kent, Esquire.

BY VIRTUE of His Majesty's Commissioners and Lieutenants within the County of Kent, under the Great Seal of England, bearing date the eighth day of June, in the 18th year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, King James of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the fifty-third, to me on that behalf directed. These shall be in His Majesty's name to require you that with convenience you prepare yourself to be a Captain or Leader of a band within the . . . . . And that you do call before you, at some convenient day and place to be appointed by my Deputy Lieutenants, all such persons and furnitures as were or ought to be of that Band, to the first muster taken, to the end that on the sight and view of them you may enrol them, noting the defects, if any shall be, and for the better supplying of all such defects as shall be found in your said Band. You shall require the Justices of the Peace next adjoining to assemble and cause to be brought before you according to the time and place appointed for your musters, all such persons, with the liberties and protection of the said. . . . . as shall be thought fit not only to carry arms or furniture for the supply of your Band, so as they and every of them may be constrained to enrol their names, prepare themselves, with their furnitures, with all convenient speed to be trained amongst the rest of your Band. For the better furtherance wherein I require you to follow such directions as you shall from time receive from me or my Deputy Lieutenants appertaining to this service, desiring you to use therein that diligence and facility which in a matter of this importance is required, and which I doubt not but that His Majesty shall find in you.

Dated the 7th day of August, in the 18th year of His Majesty's Reign of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the 53rd.

LENOX.

(**73**) Commission to Sir Nicholas Tufton and others to restrain the ill behaviour of certain soldiers in and about Dover, dated December 30, 1623.

JAMES, by the Grace of God King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c.

To our trusty and well beloved, the Mayor of Dover for the time being, Sir Nicholas Tufton and Sir Edward Hales, Knts. and Barts., Sir Dudley Digges, Sir Thomas Walsingham, Sir Percival Hart, Sir Francis Barham, Sir Richard Sondes, Sir John Hippesley, Knts., and Thos. Smith, Esq., greeting.

Whereas we are given to understand that of those troops and companies of soldiers which are now come together by our commandment and met at Dover or the places thereabouts in our county of Kent, with the end to be from thence transported into parts beyond the seas with all convenient speed, that many of them are so disordered and disobedient to their commanders, as that they *perceive* (*qy.*) to commit

divers outrages, and with such violence as that the peace of our said county is much disturbed and many of our loving subjects put in fear of their lives, and have their houses and goods violently entered upon and taken away by force, We therefore, taking the same into our princely consideration, and being more desirous to keep our people from doing mischief than to have cause to punish them for doing it, out of our gracious care, to prevent the said disorders and outrages, by suppressing them in their beginning, before they go so far, have of our especial trust and confidence reposed in your approved wisdoms and fidelities, appointed you to be our commissioners. And so by these presents give unto you, or any three or more of you, full power and authority in all places within our said county of Kent, as well within the Cinque ports, or any other liberty, as without, to proceed accordingly to the Justice of Martial law, against such soldiers, within any of our lathes aforesaid, and other dissolute persons joining with them or any of them, as during such time as any of our said troops or companies of soldiers shall remain or abide there, and not be transported thence, shall within any the said places or precincts aforesaid, at any time after the publication of this our Commission, commit any robberies, felonies, mutinies, or other outrages or misdeamors (*sic*) which by the martial law should or ought to be punished with death, and by such summary course and order as is agreeable to martial law, and as is used in Armies in times of war, to proceed to the trial or condemnation of such delinquents and offenders, and them cause to be executed and put to death according to the law martial, for example of terror to others, and to keep the rest in due awe and obedience. To which purpose Our will and pleasure is, that you cause to be erected such gallows or "shebbetts" and in such places as you shall think fit, and thereupon to cause the said offenders to be executed in open view, that others may take warning thereby to demean themselves in such due order and obedience as good subjects ought to do. Straightway charging and commanding all Mayors, Sheriffs, Justices of Peace, Constables, Bailiffs, and other officers, and all other our loving subjects whatsoever, upon their allegiance unto us and our Crown, to be aiding and assisting unto you, and to such three or more of you as aforesaid, in the due execution of this our special commandment. And these presents shall be unto you and every of you a sufficient warrant and discharge for the doing and executing and causing to be done and executed all and every such act and acts, thing and things, as any three or more of you as aforesaid shall find requisite to be done concerning the premises. In witness whereof, we have caused these our letters to be made patents. Witness ourself at Westminster, the 30th day of December, in the 22nd year of our Reign of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the 58th.

ESMONDES (*Clerk of the Council*).

J . . . REGE.

This is a true Copie of his Ma^ties^ Comission remayning at Dover, and examined by us,

JO. WARD (*Mayor*).
JOHN HIPPESLEY (*Constable of Dover Castle*).
EDWD. HOLLES.

(**74**) A letter dated July 3, 1624, from John Hayward, High Sheriff, to Edward Scott, asking for venison.

GOOD SIR,—These are to signify unto you that by reason of my office of being High Sheriff for this County of Kent, I am constrained to use divers my friends to replenish my wants for venison against the next assizes, and having but few of my friends or alliance which have Parks here in Kent, I have made bold to entreat you that you would be pleased to furnish me with a Buck against this next assizes. I do acknowledge myself over bold, but by reason of the great want I shall have at the assizes in pleasuring the Judges, and divers other the Justices and Gentlemen of the Grand Jury, I hope you will excuse my boldness, and hereafter I will not trouble you in the like. But will acknowledge myself much beholden to you for the courtesy, and will ever rest ready to requite your love in any thing that I am able. And so, with my kind remembrance to you and your wife, I end.

Your loving kinsman, JOHN HAYWARD.(*f*)

POSTSCRIPT.—I understand that my uncle, Sir Richard Smithe, hath writ unto you to bestow a Buck on him, which he hath bestowed on me, as I perceive by his letter lately sent unto me. I desire your answer what you purpose to do as concerning my uncle's letter, for that he expecteth that I should certify him what is done therein.

Hollingbourne, the 3 July, 1624.

(**75**) A letter of summons, dated January 21, 1625, from the Earl of Arundel and Surrey to Mr. Edward Scott, to attend the Coronation and receive the Order of the Bath, addressed—To my very loving friend, Mr. Edward Scott, these.

After my hearty commendations. That whereas it hath pleased His Majesty to appoint the second day February next for the solemnity of his royal coronation, with that also of his dearly beloved consort the Queen, And whereas His Majesty is further graciously pleased (according to the accustomed manner used in that solemnity) to advance certain of his Nobility and prime Gentry unto the honorable order of Knighthood of the Bath, and among others hath vouchsafed to nominate you for one of that number, These are therefore in his Majesty's name to will and require you to give your attendance on his said Majesty at his Palace of Westminster the thirtieth day of this instant January, furnished and appointed as in cases appertaineth, there to receive the said order of Knighthood of the Bath at his Majesty's hand, whereof you are not to fail. And so I bid you heartily farewell.

Your very loving friend, ARUNDEL AND SURREY.

Whitehall, 21 Jan., 1625. *Should be* 1627 (*see* p. xxix.)

(**76**) A letter dated January 27, 1625, to Edward Scott, Esq., concerning his petition of undue election to the House of Commons, signed John White, and addressed—To the worthy Edward Scott, Esq., at Scot's Hall in Kent, these.

After your departure on Saturday last I delivered your petition, and Sir Dudley Digges being then present, affirmed that he knew most of the names put to it, but I could not then nor since obtain any certain time to be prefixed for the hearing of it, and there are fourteen before it, and, as I am told by many members of the house, they have made order that the petitions shall receive hearing successively as

---

(*f*) *A son of Sir Rowland Hayward, Lord Mayor of London* 1570.

they come in, and there is no means to procure this *per Saltum* to be heard before any that came in before it, but by a motion to be made in the house which may hasten it, if you can procure any friends of the House to do it. I will advertise you from time to time how the Petitions fall off as long as I remain in town, which will be till Friday next come seven nights. Mr. Hackewell I have foreborne to retain concerning your business, as your business is not yet in such forwardness as we should need him, but I am persuaded we shall be sure of him at any time. Thus, presenting my service unto you, and recommending you and yours to the Lord and the Word of His Grace, I rest,

Yours to be commanded, JOHN WHITE.

(**77**) A letter dated April 4, 1625, signed Edward Boys, and addressed—To his much honoured and respected kinsman, Edward Scott, Esq., at Scot's Hall, give these.

WORTHY SIR,—Understanding that there will be a Parliament shortly, I have spoken with divers gentlemen to bestow their voices upon you and Sir Edwin Sandys to be Knight of our Shire, who have promised me that you two shall have their voices, I have been with Sir Edwin and have made him acquainted with our resolution, and likewise the letter you wrote . . . . . who gives you many thanks for your love to him, and hath prayed to let you understand that he would rather have you to be his partner in this business than any man in the county, and saith that all that he can prevail with shall be for you. I will assure you, you have great many voices in the East part already, and I will tax all I can for you. And thus desiring you not to be backward, I commend you and the cause unto the Lord, and will ever rest,

Your loving kinsman and friend,

EDWARD BOYS (*of Betteshanger*).

I hear the Writs are out.

May, 1625.

We whose names are hereunder written do testify, and shall always be ready to verify on our oaths, that at the election of the Knights of the shire for the County of Kent, holden at Penenden Heath, May, 1625, we delivered up our names to the Clerks at the polling, to be entered by them for the persons hereunder named, which was also done accordingly, namely—

(And then follow a number of names of Parties who voted both for Sir Edwin Sandys, Knt., and Edward Scott, Esq.)

(**78**) To the Honourable House of Commons, assembled in Parliament, the humble Petition of a great multitude of Knights, Gentlemen, and Freeholders in the County of Kent, humbly shows—

That whereas, at our County Court held for the said County in the second day of this present May, by virtue of His Majesty's Writ directed unto Sir Thos. Hamon, Knight, Sheriff of the same County, a lawful election ought to have been made of Knights for the same County to serve in the present Parliament, at which time, and at the reading of the said Writ, there was assembled divers thousands of freeholders of the said County to have made a free and lawful election of their Knights as aforesaid; At the time of which election there were in name four principal persons, out of which two were to have been chosen, namely, the Earl of Burghurshe's son, and heir apparent to the Right Honble. the Earl of Westmoreland, Sir Albertus Norton, Knt., one of the principal Secretaries to His Majesty, Sir Edwin Sandys, Knight, and Edward Scott, Esq., and by reason that the voices of the freeholders were so . . . . . that there could no true judgment be made of the persons who had the plurality of them either by voice or view: thereupon the said Sheriff was of necessity persuaded by thousands of the freeholders to come to polling of them, whereunto he has assented, and accordingly (for the quicker despatch of so great a multitude), appointed 8 several clerks, divided into two several places, to tayle the voices, assisted with indifferent persons to see that right were done, and withal upon the desire of a great multitude of the said freeholders, gave orders that those who were doubted whether they were lawful freeholders or not, should be examined upon their oaths according to the Statute in that case provided, All which was done by a general consent of all the parties there present, whereby great hope groweth of a quiet and speedy election. Notwithstanding, upon partiality, as it appeareth, towards the two more eminent and honourable persons, contrary to the duty of this place and to the great wrong of the said freeholders, and of the freeholders of the same election, after that some hundreds of voices were taken and set down in writing by the clerks aforesaid, In which papers it was very apparent to the view of the said Sheriff and many others, that there were many more voices tayled for the said Sir Edwin Sandys and Mr. Edward Scott than for the foresaid honourable persons. The said Sheriff thereupon, before 12 of the clock of the aforesaid noon of the same day, on a sudden discharged the said polling, and pronounced the said Lord Burghurshe and Sir Albertus Norton to be chosen Knights of the Shire, which being understood by the opposite party, he alleged that by his view the said honourable persons had threefold more voices than the others, notwithstanding it was certified unto him and was very apparent, that in that party which he said was threefold the greater, there were some thousands who, giving their first vote to one of those honourable persons, gave their second to one or other of the two gentlemen aforesaid, which was the cause that no exact . . . . . could be taken, and notwithstanding also that there were divers hundreds of serving men attending their masters, and others not freeholders, and mixed in that party, besides a great multitude of the townsmen of the Town of Maidstone, being near adjoining, and other strangers there assembled at the fair there held, who, coming to see the said election, stood near unto the said party which was the cause that the said party seemed greater than the other, which was naturally . . . . . for the two gentlemen abovesaid. All that being done contrary to right and justice, and to the great wrong of the liberty of the said County and their election, and to the great discontent of the freeholders aforesaid, they protested against the said election pronounced by the said Sheriff as good in law, and appealed to this Honourable House of Parliament. They further show and complain to this honourable assembly that the said election in favour of those two honourable persons has been carried with a high hand, to the great prejudice of the liberty of the said Election. All which being extremely injurious in particular to the said county, and an example to the general body of this Realm, the liberty of which election for service in Parliament ought carefully to be preserved. They humbly offer the same to the consideration and judgment of this Honourable House, craving . . . . . for that which hath been unduly done in provocation of the like efforts in times ensuing.[g]

(Numerously signed by Freeholders.)

---

[g] *Sir Thomas Hamon, of Brasted, Knight, was Sheriff of Kent in the 1st year of King Charles I.*, A.D. 1625. *Sir Edwin Sandys and Sir Edward Scott, K.B., were eventually returned for East Kent.*

(**79**) A letter dated June 8, 1625, signed T. Edmonds and John Suckling, addressed—To our loving friend, Edward Scott, Esq., or to his keeper or underkeeper of his Park at Scot's Hall.

After our very hearty commendations. Whereas we sent a messenger to pray you to forbear the sending of the Brace of Bucks which His Majesty desired that you would supply him with out of your park at Scot's Hall, for the entertainment of the Queen and a great number of the nobility who are to attend him at Canterbury, till there should be more certain assurance of the Queen's Majesty's arrival, We are now to let you know that His Majesty desireth the said brace of Bucks shall be brought unto Canterbury accordingly, as was formerly appointed on Saturday next, being the eleventh of this instant, which recommending to your special care, we commend you to the protection of God. Your very loving friends,

T. EDMONDS. JOHN SUCKLING.[h]

(Dated). Dover, 8th June, 1625.

(**80**) A letter (not signed, *circa* 1625), addressed—

To the truly virtuous and my noble friend, the Lady Knatchbull, at her house at Mersham Hatch.

Good Madam, On advice from some friends from London, though contrary to Mr. Scott's desire and opinion, we are proposed, if it please God, to take our journey towards London to-morrow, and I make bold request unto your Ladyship that your good prayers may go along with us as your noble wish and endeavour has been always ready to comfort and assist us in all other occasions, which gives Mr. Scott cause often to say that he finds good Sir Norton and my Lady not only truly kind and loving, as his special friends and neighbours, but as most dear brother and sister. I beseech you, accept the thanks of a true affectionate heart for all those, whose account it is happy to be enabled to requite some part of your great favours. I purpose, with convenient opportunity, to wait upon your noble sister, whom because I have not now of a long time seen, if you should please to write one letter to her for the continuance of her wonted favour, you shall thereby add to my obligation. Concerning our new business, Mr. Walley brings us word that our Counsel continue their former opinion, but for the other matter he has heard nothing. Thus, with Mr. Scott's and my own very respected and affectionate remembrances to Sir Norton and yourself, and our hearty prayers for rest and happiness to you and yours,

I rest, (Not signed, *probably from Katherine, wife of Edward Scott*).

(**81**) A letter from Ostenhanger, dated October 29, 1625, from Thomas Smythe to Edward Scott, Esq., concerning the calling forth of his company, addressed—For His Majesty's Service. To my honoured and much respected *cousin*, Edward Scott, Esq., one of the Captains of the foot bands in the Lath of Shippwaye, at his house, Scot's Hall, these be delivered. *Hast hast, post hast hast.*

SIR,—Whereas the Lords of His Majesty's honourable Council have directed letters expressly commandatory for the defence of our country in especial of the maritime ports against the incursions of the *Dunkerkers* if upon the occasions of our late disasters happened at sea as well amongst his Majesty's ships, as those of the United States, which lay before the Haven of Dunkerke, they being as it were now set at liberty, should be so bold to make any attempt: These are therefore in his Majesty's name to entreat and require you to have in a readiness your foot band completely armed, at one hour's warning, to be applied to such occasions mentioned herein. Thus, with my hearty love remembered, I take my leave, and rest, Your very loving *cousin*,

THO. SMYTHE.[i]

Ostenhanger, 29 October, 1625.

Also I pray you to direct a sufficient watch and ward for the keeping of the Beacons of *Guestling and Streetes* (*qy.*) as in former times upon like occasions have been accustomed.

(**82**) A letter dated November 4, 1625, signed Robert Darrell, and addressed—To my much honoured friend, Sir Norton Knatchbull, at his house, Mersham Hatch, give these.

WORTHY SIR,—I cannot restrain my pen from expressing my concern on behalf of our honourable gentleman and neighbour, leaving it to your good consideration either to impart it to the parties or in silence to bury it. I had not many hours taken knowledge of this late great alteration (which God maketh prosperous unto us), but it came into my thoughts how your worthy neighbour, Mr. Edward Scott, might in some measure restore himself unto his place, from which he is now by so many degrees fallen, in recounting that if he could now obtain at the Coronation to be a Knight of the Bath, that he might by that means regain some part of his loss.[j] I could not think of a more worthy and true friend unto him than is yourself to put him and to press him to run his course therein: wherein you cannot but remember

---

[h] *T. Edmonds and Sir John Suckling were clerks to the Privy Council.*

[i] *Thomas Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle, only son of Sir John Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle, was created Viscount Strangford of Ireland, in* 1628. *He married Lady Barbara, seventh daughter of Robert, Earl of Leicester, Baron Sydney of Penshurst, Co. Kent. He was probably Lord Lieutenant of the County at this date.*

[j] *This letter probably refers to the sale by Edward Scott of some of his estates to poy the cost and charges of his recent election as Member of Parliament for the Eastern division of the County, on the unseating of Lord Burghursh's son and another gentleman, returned for that division of the shire by undue influences. Edward Scott was shortly afterwards, at the coronation of Charles I., made a Knight of the Bath (see letter No.* 75).

that delay is the destroyer of opportunities, and the age being . . . . to that future preferment, it would speedily be . . . . . if it be proved, and no means more apt, as I conceive, than is the Earl of Dorset. If my health had well assorted with my intention, I had on Saturday last imparted my mind to him, but not knowing how long it may please God to make me a prisoner in the chamber, I thought good to give my pen this liberty, though the writer be chambered, and thus commending my true love and service to yourself and Lady and Mrs. Knatchbull, I commend you to God. Your assured loving friend,

ROBT. DARRELL.

Calehill, the 4th of November, 1625.

(**83**) A letter from the Earl of Montgomerie, appointing Sir Edward Scott, K.B., to the command of a Company of Foot, dated June 16, 1626, addressed—To my loving friend, Sir Edward Scott, K.B., Captain of a Company of Foot in the County of Kent, from the Court at Whitehall.

(The letter is mostly obliterated, and concludes with—Given under my hand and seal at the Court at Whitehall, the 16 of June, 1626.)

(**84**) A letter dated February 15, 1627, from the Mayor, Jurats, and Commonalty of Hythe, and under their common Seal, entreating Sir Edward Scott to be one of their Barons in Parliament, addressed—To the right worshipful our assured friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, at his house at Scot's Hall, give these with speed.

WORTHY SIR,—May it please you, as we of late, amongst other Ports and places, have received his Majesty's writ of summons, whereby we are enjoined to make an election of two Barons or Burgesses out of our Town and Port of Hythe, one of the Cinque Ports, to appear at the next Parliament on the seventeenth day of March next following, to be held at Westminster, and therefore in obedience of His Majesty's said writ and to effect the said business according to our command, We, the Mayor, Jurats, and Commonalty of Hythe aforesaid did assemble ourselves together this instant day, and there did elect your worship and Sir Peter Hayman to be our Burgesses to the said Parliament. Knowing your worthiness and integrity both to God and the Country, and having found your special love to us, we do find you to be a very sufficient and able man for to be employed in the same business. Entreating you kindly to accept thereof, as we by and with an unfeigned love have chosen you. Entreating you also to take the pains to come to our Town and there take the oath of a freeman, as it has been thus formerly always been taken, within such convenient time as we may make return of our command to Dover Castle, before the 6th day of March next ensuing, as we are required. And so, not to trouble your Worship any further at this time in this respect, we humbly take our leaves, resting,

Your Worship's Company of poor power,

THE MAYOR, JURATS, AND COMMONALTY OF THE TOWN AND PORT OF HYTHE.

(**85**) A letter dated April 26, 1627, from J. Smythe, concerning the Lord Hayes hiring Nettlested House of the Scotts, and for his entertainment there, addressed—To my assured friend, goodman Willard, or, in his absence, to his wife at Nettlested, these deliver.

GOODMAN WILLARD,—I have thought good hereby to let you understand that my Lord Hayes (*qy. Hailes*) being in some speech with my cousin Scott to take Nettlested House, intends (as I hear) to come thither either upon Friday or within three or four days at the furthest, and to lie there one night. I know my cousin Scott will take it well if you provide the best chamber, the best spare bed and hangings, together with the great chamber, and some 3 or 4 chambers more for his Lordship's followers to lodge in, that you air his Lordship's bed-chamber with a fire, and have in a readiness in the house such provisions as pullets, mutton, rabbits, or other things as may give his Lordship content. I sent my man this bearer purposely to give you notice of his Lordship's coming, and assure myself it is my cousin Scott's meaning that he have such entertainment as the time, place, and season will afford. I have signified to my Lord that at Nettlested is none but the housekeeper, and do think he will send down a man before, to provide supper for his Lordship. Howsoever, I could wish that things may be in a readiness, and doubt but he will reward your pains therein. Thus, with my commendations to yourself and wife, I cease, and rest,

Your very loving friend, J. SMYTHE.[k]

London, 26 of April, 1627.

POSTSCRIPT.—I would desire that the great chamber and withdrawing chamber may be hanged, and that 3 or 4 of the rooms adjoining to the lower dining room may be made ready.

(**86**) A letter dated January 11, 1627, from Thomas Brett, addressed—To my much honoured friend, Mr. Edward Scott, give these at Scot's Hall.

SIR,—Concerning your Court business,[l] Sir Richard Smithe has been very careful for the dispatch thereof, and it has pleased him . . . . . and an instrument therein, I can only tell you that for the sum of £250 with much difficulty we are assured you shall have the place transferred on your hands. The charge of the fees, which as yet I am not so well instructed as to acquaint you with the particulars . . . . . And Sir Richard Smithe desires to hear speedily from you how the means may be ascertained, as also who you mean to employ for the provision of such robes and all particulars as his honour requireth, and therefore I pray send your answer with as much speed as may be. In the meantime, Sir Rich[d] Smithe and myself are very glad to hear of your good success in the county, and the rather because it has been dispatched with so little noise and so small trouble to the freeholders, and thus wishing you all health and happiness, I rest, Your unfeigned friend and servant,

THOMAS BRETT.

The Coronation holden the second of February, but the solemnity of the entry thro' London is put off till the 10th of May.

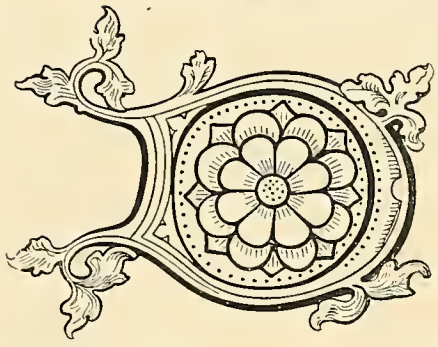
---

[k] *This letter is from Sir John Smythe of Leeds Castle, son of Sir Richard Smythe and Elizabeth Scott. The great chamber or banqueting hall still exists at Nettlested* (*see p.* 160).

[l] *This letter refers to the making Mr. Edward Scott a Knight of the Bath at the coronation of Charles I. The date of letter No.* 75 *should be* 1627.

(**87**) A letter from Westminster, dated May 4, 1627, from Michael Cole to Sir Edward Scott, addressed—

To the Right Worshipful Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, be these delivered.



Dear Sir, I have had a business for the service of your county long in agitation, and thereby conceive it fairly to be effected, the making the River of Medway navigable betwixt Tunbridge and Maidstone. And least it may be thought only a conceit, I have tendered my service of performance . . . . . unto divers the Lords and gents of your country, who gave meeting therefore at Dorsett House on Saturday last, upon the general good liking they had of the work, and the recommendation thereof by the Duke of Buckingham, Lord Admiral of England, and the Earl of Totnes, Master of his Majesty's Ordinance for his Majesty's service. Their Lordships and the rest did (as I conceive, under favour) in a *generality* resolve it was a good and fitting work, and for the such understanding thereof, to be done and confirmed without exception, they have directed two Juries upon the Commission of Sewers which is lately renewed to be summoned, the one to be at Tunbridge upon Wednesday, the 23rd of this month, and the other at Maidstone upon Friday following, and there, as I suppose, will give them some articles in charge which may further this intended work. I herewith send you the Commissioners' names, the copy of my proposition and demands, and the copy of the Lord's letter, to the end you will please to take due consideration thereof, and afford the business your favourable construction and furtherance, and to give meeting with the rest of the Commissioners those days appointed, and if any doubt may arise to your own particular, I shall be always ready to give satisfaction such as I doubt not but will gain your consent to so general a good work. which if it . . . . . none shall be prejudiced but myself: So assuring myself that nothing will sooner prevail with you than the public good, I humbly submit the thought thereof to your own resolution, remaining humbly to be,

At your commandment,

MICHAEL COLE (*see letter No. 71, p.* xxiv.).

(**88**) A letter dated June 14, 1627, from the Earl of Dorset, addressed—To the Right Worshipful my very loving *cousin*, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, these.

My very good Cousin,—I very heartily commend me unto you. I was on a commission this last summer in Kent, a service committed unto us by His Majesty, about making the River of Medway navigable from Maidstone upwards, where I thought to have met you, but understand thereof some dislike you had against the work, and since by your letters with others you have declared it plainly. The often meeting thereon was to receive every man's objection and then weighing the same to give furtherance or refusal as cause required, which was done by many honorable persons of our County as do befit as well for the benefit of His Majesty as ourselves. The manner and sort of doing it was by a joint consent of most that were present from time to time approved of, and all material objections as we conceive answered and provided for. It was thought strange you would resolve to withstand this work so well thought of, and neither offered your company as a Commissioner, nor send your reasons in disproof thereof. The consanguinity which is between us caused me to undertake a mediation with you berein, for that I would not have you returned, as was directed as one of them refractory to so good and fitting a work. It concerns me nothing in any particular, but will be as ready to hear your reasons against it as for it. I desire you, therefore, for the public good which we ought to prefer, to show cause why you single yourself from so many noble and worthy persons of our County and from His Majesty's service expressly commanding, and to be a means by a rope or barrier to withdraw others from the allegiance thereof. And I desire you that this bearer may receive from you a favourable answer to his reasons shewed for the work, and wherein you then shall rest doubtful by your meeting with some of the Commissioners, who will be in London by next term, such course may be held as may provide for every man's safety, and set forward the work. And so, good cousin, I bid you heartily farewell from Dorset House this 14th June, 1627.

Your very loving kinsman,

E. DORSET.[m]

(**89**) A letter dated June 15, 1627, from Michael Cole to Richard Browne, addressed—To the right worshipful his good friend, Richard Browne, Esq., at his house in the Blackfriars, London, be this delivered.

Sir,—Being in the proceed of a business which I have long thought of for the service of your county, tending to make a passage for boats of some good burthen from Maidstone to Tunbridge or further, which you have heard of, and especially by Sir Robert Heath, his Majesty's Attorney General, who for the furtherance of such a public work did desire your mediation with Sir Edward Scott, whom it doth concern as well in the interest of his Mansion and lands bordering upon the river,[n] as being a Commissioner for that business, that he would give his consent and furtherance to the same as most others the Lords and others the chief of the county do, wherein they are as circumspect to prevent any inconvenience as can be, and though his own lands and tenants shall not reap so ample a benefit by this passage, yet in regard of other parts of the county that shall have it, he will bear with a little intrusion upon his freehold, to suffer a footpath to be on the bank of the river in his ground, which the fishermen and others have for the most part already, upon acknowledging a right and answering a rent for the same. And in case I shall need to make any cut through his ground to make the

---

[m] *Edward, brother and heir of Richard Sackville, Earl of Dorset, who married Cicily Baker, sister to Elizabeth, wife to Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.*

[n] *At this date Nettlested Court was one of the most beautiful manorial residences on the banks of the Medway. Sir John Scott had recently, at great cost, erected a bridge, constructed an island, and laid out extensive gardens, on both banks of the river. As the Commissioners desired to remove the bridge and open a towing-path through this manorial property, it is not surprising to find both Sir John and his brother, Sir Edward Scott, opposed to Michael Cole's scheme.*

river straighter or place any work thereon for the better carriage of boats, I may have Licence at a valuable price, and therein I shall be so careful as not to desire it, but where it will cause no inconvenience, nay rather being well considered it will be gainful to him. These particulars are too long to express, and being not to be had but by favour and free consent, I do become a suitor for them, otherwise (if I go forward) I must be content with the river as it runs by nature, and, as I have ever professed, am very studious to gain every man's free assent thereto, especially this honourable person, whose predecessors suffered injury of a small passage then was, but now may fairly be prevented, and to that purpose if any particular condition may be agreed on for his security, I would willingly consent thereto, so it might not be a general example to others. And if you please that person that moved you to speak herein shall bind me to what conditions are fit whom it no otherwise concerns than as a wellwisher to the public good of that county. The days of meeting are at Tunbridge the 18th, at Maidstone the 20th, of this month, to take the return of the juries, and then I suppose the Commissioners will appoint some further day to declare what they will do herein, at which time if it would please Sir Edward Scott to be there and declare himself, I should hold it a favour, or otherwise he will make his mind known to some of the Commissioners what he wished therein. And not to trouble you further, my suit unto you is now to mediate a favourable construction of this business with this honorable person ; and to afford me a few lines thereof either at Westminster or at the *Starre* at Maidstone, where I shall often be, for which I shall desire Mr. Attorney General to give you thanks, and myself rest, as otherwise also bounden,

To do you service,

Westminster, the 15th of June, 1627. MICHAEL COLE.

---

(90) A letter (written on back of former letter) from Richard Browne to Sir Ed. Scott, addressed—To his much honoured and loving friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, at Scot's Hall in Kent, give these.

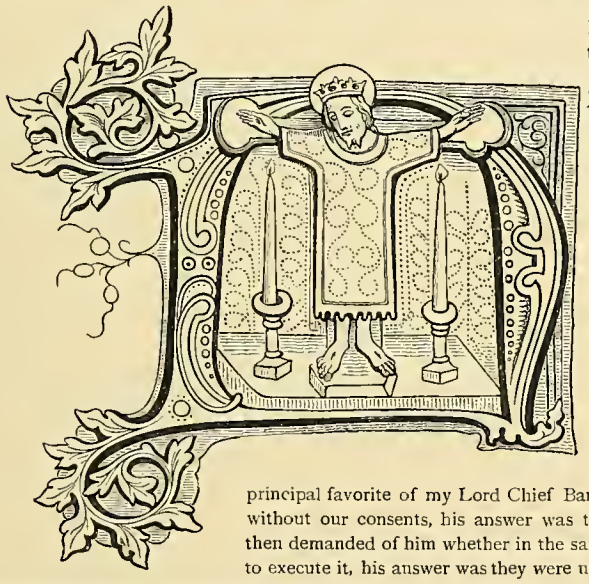
SIR,—This letter as you see is directed to me, but the contents shew that it is intended for you. I know that so far as it may in truth advance the good of the County by carrying out or in of commodities you will favour the action, providing also that your private inconveniences may be prevented, and that upon good security, wherein yourself having maturely considered all reasons can best tell what is fit. And so with loving salutations, I rest,

Yours to do you service,

Blackfriars, London, 15th June, 1627. RICHARD BROWNE.[o]

---

(91) A letter dated from Tulsham Hall the 23rd March, 1628, from Augustine Skynner to Sir Edward Scott, addressed—To his much honoured friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, at his house in the Almonry at Westminster or elsewhere, this deliver with speed.



oble Sir, My respects of service premised unto you. At the end of our assizes, a surveyor deputed by the last commission and decree of Sewers for our parts, came to acquaint me that he has received a letter from Sir Geoff . . . . . ., charging him to see the said decree executed, and to attend on Cole. Sir Thomas Style and myself went immediately and adjusted with Sargeant Henden, who is most confident of our right to the river in point of lawful inheritance, advising us to give attendance on their passage, and to forbid them on their peril, and if they offer to proceed speedily to arrest the surveyors and Cole. On Wednesday last Cole came up the river into our parts with a London wherry rowed by one man towing up his great boat wherein were 3 rowers, a man to thrust up with a staff and *sleuces*-man, and Cole himself, all of them being poor hirelings and strangers. By advice of a Counsellor then present at our house accidentally, who is the principal favorite of my Lord Chief Baron, we required to see his authority whereby he claimed to pass without our consents, his answer was that he came to execute the decree, which presently he shewed, we then demanded of him whether in the said decree either he or any of those with him were by name appointed to execute it, his answer was they were not ; hereupon we forbade him the passage, and at our weares forced him and his boats to the other side of the river, where we having no power to deny his passage, by cutting the woods, and with great labour he stole by ; hereupon we gave speedy notice to your servant Chary to do the like at your bridge, which he did with good discretion. Upon . . . . . as your servant, forbidding his passage without asking leave, which all do ever ask which pass that way by boat, either on fishing or for pleasure. He then replied he would not ask leave, but claimed it in the King's right as a navigable river. Chary then wished him to fetch one of the surveyors, they being knowing men and honest, and also appointed by the Commissioners, and then they should pass ; then went Cole and he for to bring one, but returned without any, when presently Cole commanded his men to force the way through your bridge ;[p] but Chary by the help of poles which he placed against the head of their boats, kept them off, albeit

---

[o] *This letter is from Sir Richard Browne, of Shingleton, Great Chart ; his son, John Browne, married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Edward Scott, by Katherine Honywood, his second wife.*

[p] *The bridge referred to, see note,* p. xxx.

they cut many of his poles asunder with axes and bills, but no blows passed between them, nor nothing was done by your servant but what was most warrantable and very requisite. Mr. Pattenden, John Kenward, Thomas . . . . . and divers other sufficient witnesses being present, I am bold to impart this passage more fully unto you concerning that some misinformation may come to your hearing, not doubting of your approbation of what was done, for had they passed, it had been to the great disadvantage of our cause, he intending to have cut down your bridge and to have returned down stream with his boat laden with *ordinarie*. It occasioneth much joy in our parts that we may enjoy your pleasure before long, that we may have opportunity to advise together or . . . . . for as I am certainly informed, Cole purposeth to attempt another passage this next week, which if with the surveyors we will only forbid them at their perils; if without we will again oppose them. So with the tender of my respectfull service to all yours.

I remain at your service,

Tulsham Hall, this 23 March, 1628. AUGUSTINE SKYNNER.[q]

(**92**) A letter dated from Tulsham, Lady-day, 1628, from Augustine Skynner to Sir Edward Scott, K.B., concerning the business of the Commissioners of Sewers, addressed—To his much honoured friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, at his dwelling place near Westminster, deliver these with speed.

HONORABLE SIR,—All due respects premised unto you. Sir, since the delivery of our letter unto the Lords and Gentlemen Commissioners of Sewers there hath been little working of any in our parts for to grant their consents unto the proceeding of the projects of navigation: it having made no noise in our parts until this last week, when it was published in all our parish churches bordering on the river. A large decree under the hand and seal of the Lords and some other Commissioners requiring all owners to remove all wears, shelves, logs, stones, trees, boughs, stakes, and all other annoyances which may stop the current of the water or hinder the passage of Cole's boats: All the said annoyances to be taken away before the xxth day of May next, under the penalty of paying three pounds for every wear and 10 shillings for every tree, shelf, or stone, &c., at that day not removed: except any of the said owners will give their consent to Cole's patent, giving him leave to take them away at his own cost. This decree is grounded upon the verdict of two juries, which were to view the river, and also upon the complaint of the County about Yaldinge, for the stopping . . . . . with you and us: for the one I see little colour in the presentation, and for the other I know it is untrue. In your lands the jury presented (engrossed in the Decree) these annoyances. A foot bridge, shelves, trees, and logs: and so in all the lands along accordingly. Many other articles are in the said decree which at present time permits me not to insert: it is confirmed with these hands: of Lords Dorset, Leycester, Clanricard, and Dunkillin, of Knts. Sir Geo. Fane, Sir John Sydley, Sir John Rivers, Sir Walter Roberts, Sir George Rivers, Sir Marc Dalison, Sir Edward Duke, Sir Thomas Culpeper, of Gentlemen, Serjeant Amherst, Thos. Seiyliard, Henry Dixen, John Porter, and J. Skevington. Sir William Twysden's hand is not to it, nor will he consent, as I am informed: the generality of borderers upon my knowledge are averse unto it. The last week Sir John Baker and Mr. Lowe sent over unto me, to acquaint me that Cole had laboured them for their consents, but they denied him: with Sir John Ashley I also have had conference, with whom the work is to begin, but he will neither consent nor yet remove one stick. All of them, with Sir Thomas Style and myself, are ready and willing to prosecute any course that may be safest for the County to disannul this decree: whereof I thought good to acquaint you because now you are a part of that band which must either build or ruin Cole's project: and herein I am sure your service will be very gratefully accepted by the County hereabout. Pardon me, noble Sir, if I crave a few lines of your pleasure by way of answer hereunto, and what serviceable attendance you please to impose on me in prosecuting of the business either in the County or at London I will most readily to my power perform.

So with the tender of my respectful service to yourself and your virtuous Lady, I humbly take my leave, beseeching the Lord to add his blessings to all the Godly designs of your honourable assembly (wisdom and piety being now set upon their highest trial) into whose merciful protection I recommend you, and remain,

Your most observant friend to serve you, AUGUSTINE SKYNNER, JUNIOR.

(**93**) May 12, 1628. Petition of Sir Edward Hales, Sir Edward Dering, and Robert Darrell to Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, concerning the levies raised for the King's Household, addressed—To our much respected friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Order of the Bath, these.

SIR,—The accustomed levies raised in the name of Thompson for His Majesty's Most Honourable Household are grown to that increase that shortly the Country must yield to the rate of an higher tax than formerly. Now one reason hereof being that the Treasurers do not enter early enough into this service, whereby the best time of a profitable bargain with the undertakers is lost, and contracts usually begun when the service is instant on performance, These are therefore in the country's name and ours to entreat you whose turn is now the next that you would be pleased to take advantage of the summer, and therein to make your contracts with the undertakers, and when the time shall be ready for it that you would the like notice to your successors, and thus resting,

Your most loving friends,

EDWARD HALES, EDWARD DERING, AND ROBERT DARRELL.

(**94**) A letter dated August 8, 1628, from Augustine Skynner to Sir Edward Scott, addressed—To my honorable friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, at Scot's Hall in Kent, this deliver.

HONORABLE SIR,—May it please you to understand that our river business is of late much stirred against us: Cole, the projector, with those Maidstone men which were appointed overseers of the work for removal of annoyances according unto the decree, came up the river by boat: it was my fortune casually to meet with them as they passed my land: Cole at that instant was threatening of Robert Hodges Mr. Lowe's tenant, with the payment of £3 penalty for not removing his wear, and 10s. for every tree and bush that he left standing by the river side. I hearing these words took Cole off somewhat roundly, and did in conclusion forbid him or any his abettors

---

[q] *Augustine Skynner, afterwards, in* 1645, *a member of the Parliamentary Committee of Safety for Kent.*

to set footing on my land or to cut down any of my trees, at their peril: for these words I have been questioned by some of the Commission. On Tuesday last there sat a Commission of Sewers at the Cock. I meeting with Sir George Fane the day before, inquired of him about it. His reply was, that it concerned not our river, but the river of Hedcorne; yet that night, late, by a friend, I was advertised that *the meeting to do* . . . . . (*sic.*) Whereupon Sir Thos. Style and myself repaired to the Cock, when we found a full Court of Commissioners, and the three Maidstone men returning their view of the river unto the Commissioners, where they have presented. Wherein they presented only six of us for having not removed away annoyances according to the decree, *vides*^{et}, yourself, Sir Thos. Style, Sir John Ashley, Mr. Lowe, Mr. Codd, and myself. They presented you as followeth: Sir Edward Scott hath not removed his foot bridge nor altered it, nor taken away the shelves nor islands . . . . . as far as we can perceive: they also at that time returned a complaint against me for offering to withstand them in their view. I acquainted the Court with all circumstances how the business was, but found them very indifferent judges; had not Sir Thos. Style and myself been present, out of all question the return had then been made into the Exchequer for the estreates, which now is deferred until another general meeting, whereof the Dominus fac totum (*sic*) promiseth yourself and all other Commissioners shall have notice. Many other circumstances passed, whereof at present time will not permit me to enlarge, but so soon as I return from London, whither I am this day journeying, I purpose, God willing, to wait upon you at Scot's Hall. In the interim, with the tender of my respectful service to yourself, my good lady, Mr. and Mrs. Browne, my cousin Deereham, and Mr. Edward, I take my leave, committing us all into the safe *tutale* (*sic*) of the Almighty, in whom I ever remain,

Yours in all due observance, AUGUSTINE SKYNNER.

Tulsham, this 8th of August, 1628.

(**95**) The estreats of fines imposed by Robert, Earl of Leicester, Richard, Earl of St. Albans and Clanricard, Sir George Fane, Sir Francis Barnham and others, the Commissioners of Sewers, dated 1628.

The estreats of the fines, pains, and forfeitures imposed by the right honorable Robert, Earl of Leicester, Richard, Earl of St. Albans and Clanricard, Sir George Fane, knight, Sir Francis Barnham, Sir George Rivers, Sir Edward Duke, John Skevington, Nicholas Miller, Esq^{rs}, Justices and Commissioners of Sewers of our Sovereign Lord the King, amongst others, to survey the walls, ditches, streams, and other defences by the coasts of the sea and marshe grounds being and lying within any of the limits from Milton Bridge, commonly called Gravesend Bridge, to Sheerness, and from thence along the river of Medway and the confines thereof to Penshurst in the County of Kent. At a sessions by them holden, and a decree thereupon made at Tunbridge in the said County, on the fourth day of September, A.D. 1628, by virtue of His Majesty's Commission of Sewers.

Of John Golding, tenant unto Sir John Ashley, knight, for boughs not taken away and removed out of the said river before the last day of October last, according to the force and effect of the said decree then made at the said sessions, the sum of . . . . . .

Of John Golding, tenant unto Sir John Ashley, knight, for boughs not taken away and removed out of the said river, before the last day of October last, according to the force and effect of the said decree then made at the said sessions, the sum of xls.

Of Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, for not reforming, altering, and amending the *bridge at Nettlested*, presented and found by the said decree to be annoyance according to the force and effect of the said decree, before the said last day of October, or in default thereof for not taking down and utterly removing the bridge within ten days next ensuing the said last day of October, according to the like effect of the said decree, the sum of £xx.

Sum total of the estreats, £LIJ.

(**96**) A letter, dated November 27, signed James Bush, addressed—To the Right Worshipful and the most honoured noble Lady, the Lady Scott, at Scot's Hall, these.

MADAM,—Since it was your Ladyship's pleasure to express that trust upon me for the getting of a coachman for you, if I should not do your Ladyship (as your nobleness have demerited from me) all your service therein, I haply chanced on a very honest man that will undertake the office of a coachman with your Ladyship, whose sufficiency therein your nobleness need not doubt, or for his demeanour, otherwise is so well known unto me that it doth encourage me to commend him to your Ladyship, partly in respect of your want, but principally because I doubt not (by his deserving) to purchase your thankfulness from your Ladyship. Your answer with all humility is craved by your Ladyship's humble servant,

JAMES BUSH.

Dated from London this 27th of November, from my Lord of Newbourkes, at Dudley House in the Strand.[r]

(**97**) A letter dated from Scot's Hall this 29th of March, 1629, signed Elizabeth Derham, addressed—To my approved loving Aunt, the Lady Scott, give these.

GOOD MADAM,—I desire you will be pleased to excuse my neglect in not writing to you so long a time, and not to impute it to forgetfulness in me, though I justly deserve your so thinking of me; but knowing your Ladyship is favourable in taking things well from me which I have been ever much bound to you for, it has made me the more presume at this time in neglecting you more than is fit for me. We are, I thank God, reasonable well. My cousin Rooke as yet cometh not out of his chamber, and Percy I think is not yet perfectly recovered. I am very sorry to hear you have taken so great a cold, but I hope that the fresh air will free your Ladyship of it. My cousin Edward, I hear, has well profited in his French, which I think will much delight my cousin Browne. He desires to have his name remembered to my uncle and yourself; she her duty to you both. My own I desire you will be pleased to receive with my love to my cousin Edward. I will rest,

Your niece to command,

ELIZABETH DERHAM.[s]

---

[r] *Lord Newburgh was one of the ministers and of the Privy Council early in the reign of Charles I. The letter is therefore probably addressed to Sir Edward Scott's second wife, Katherine Honywood.*

[s] *Daughter of Richard Scott, by Catherine, daughter of Sir Rowland Hayward, knt. She was wife of Thomas Dereham, of East Dereham, Norfolk.*

(**98**) A letter dated May 29, 1631, from Edward Scott to his father, Sir Edward Scott, addressed—To the right hon^ble Sir Edward Scott, at Scot's Hall, these.

Sir,—If by your bounty you had not given me leave to write unto you but at my leisure, at this present, that I have so much delayed, I should be in great grief that you might be angry with me. It has not been by any neglect, for God knows how much I remember of one so good a father, but it has been by your commandment given me leave at the present to content my affection and comforting myself in your absence by this letter, which shall assure you that I have a great desire to be acceptable to you, and for that end to profit first in the fear of God, and then in all sort of virtue and knowledge of things that are laudable. The house where we do lodge is in the midst of Paris and nearest to any palace of the city. We have here . . . . . languages, both of Spanish, Germans, Italians, and Flemings, and very good French gentlemen, Protestants, and others. It is a good thing to hear them speak of their Kings of their country, and to see the strange manners of them. We think when we shall go from hence to go to Brussels by the grace of God, and from thence to return by Calais. I know not what way we shall take, for the heat will trouble us more and more, and yet we have found it so hot already that we were constrained to be seven days from Calais to Paris. Moreover we are weary of our horses and our horses of us, but God shall counsel us. In the meantime I shall pray him for your health and prosperity, and me for all my life,

Your humble and obedient son,

EDWARD SCOTT.[t]

(**99**) A letter dated September 5, 1632, from my Lord Goring to Sir Edward Scott, about assuring £425 per annum for his daughter, addressed—For Sir Edward Scott, my worthy dear brother, at Scot's Hall in Kent.

Worthy Sir,—When this shall have inquired after your and my worthy good Lady's health, which I most heartily pray for, and those I so entirely love and honour, I shall desire you (in regard of Mr. Bland's death, which I fear did not . . . . . to insure a third part of what he was engaged for me) to let me know your resolution whether you will please for your better security to accept of £425 per annum during my daughter Kate's life out of Wales, where I think you are as safe as out of any land whatsoever; for you having therewith my statute to secure the same from all hazards, or whether you will accept of my new house (Danny Park),[u] which cost me above £6000, besides my land there (which cost me above £3000) for to secure you the constant yearly payment of the aforesaid £425 by half-yearly payments, in default whereof the house and land to be forfeited, which I am sure thereafter we will not willingly permit. And if neglect of this will satisfy whether you will take it out of my mines, which I have but for 21 years, or my collieries for 40 years' worth and so work out the five hundred per annum. I beseech you, Sir, hand me your resolution by this bearer, and acknowledge of my purpose by the beginning of this next term to despatch it, for it behoves me, both in honesty to you and care for my dear child, not to delay any more time of necessity than I must. Besides, Sir, I am not unlikely to make some rovings abroad, which makes me the more careful to settle this with the rest of my debts with all possible speed, and I beseech you trust me so far as I shall do it as firm and safe as ought in this world can be. As for buying of leases and settling by a rent charge upon land and such like when the opportunity shall be offered, you shall find me constant to your own choice, and whatsoever shall appear best for the young couple's good. And so desiring your answer with all convenient speed, I rest as I began, with my best love and service to your noble self and Lady.

Your most affectionate brother and humble servant,

London, Sept. 5th, 1632. GORING.

I pray let not my having but three lives in Wales, and Kate's now of them, divert you, for the office . . . . . that to run a hazard in not supplying what lives should fail so often as any happen so to do.

(**100**) A letter signed M. K., dated February 4, 1634, addressed to . . . . . .

You may think my ink is frozen and my respect grown cold that, having received so kind a salutation from you, have not returned a thankful acknowledgment of it before this time, a letter as full of love as lives, the true character of the kindly heart that sends it. Madam, I beseech you, be confident your affection is answered, brimful in truth, altho' it comes to you in this shallow expression. Rejoicing heartily to hear of yours and noble Sir Edward Scott's good health, and that you have a cessation from your troublesome journies this term, and enjoy your quiet with health and your family from that common contagion which now reigns, whereof we have had a taste, yet, blessed be God, with a light hand and fatherly touch on my little nephew Will only, who is now very well again, and I hope we shall all remain so. My sister Capel, from her tender affection to one of her sons that had this disease, visiting of him, brought it on herself, but both well recovered, the Lord's name be magnified therefore. Good Sir Robert Lewkner is in great heaviness for the loss of his nephew, Sir Edward Lewkner's only son, who is dead of that malignant grief, and in him that name is honoured in that county, which is Suffolk. His Lady is now at her reckoning. I pray God send her a comfortable time of it. Madam, I would feign make myself believe that Sir Edward and you will be pleased to see Scot's Hall this Lent, when I hope the ways will be good, that we may enjoy your pleasing presence, and present the thanks which is due for your many noble favours to us. I think my husband has tendered his service under his own hand. He has been ill of late of his old infirmity, but still able to come down into the parlour. He finds strawberry water to be of great use for him. My store being spent, I would be bold to send to the Hall, where I presume there

---

[t] *This letter probably refers to the marriage trip of Edward Scott and his wife, the Lady Catherine, daughter of George Goring, Earl of Norwich.* (*See p.* 231.)

[u] *Danny House, a fine Elizabethan mansion, situated at Hurstpierpoint, Sussex, on the north side of the South Downs, near Brighton. The manor of Hurstpierpoint is one of the largest in Sussex. Lord Goring, after* 1648, *was compelled to sell his estate and retire abroad.*

is plenty, by your ladyship's leave, when we need again. Madam, while I am thus discoursing with you, I do so delight myself in it that I fear I shall be troublesome to you, but craving your patience, and presenting my humble service to thrice worthy Sir Edward Scott and your sweet self and good Mr. Scott, with most endeared embracements I salute you, and remain ever,

Your ladyship's faithful and never failing friend and servant, M. K.[v]

Feb^{y} this 14th, 1634. My son Knatchbull and my daughter present their duty and service.

(**101**) A letter from Sir Norton Knatchbull, dated December 11, 1634, addressed—To my noble friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Honourable Order of the Bath, at Nettlestead, present these.

Noble Sir.—I praise God he doth enable me to write to you. Your very many favours provoke me in this manner to salute you. I very often as well in my sickness as in my health experimentally find the reality of your love to me. In the time of my illness your kind and frequent visits with your daily inquiring after my health shortly confirmed it to me. Both in sickness and in health I have fed on such kindly food by your appointment in such variety as if you endeavoured to cure me without the help of a *physic* (*sic*), and here this last excellent venison is not to be forgotten. And in all things the test of your love doth so sweetly relish with me, as a proof, I think myself to be happier, and in no thing more than to stand upright in your good opinion, and I shall be ambitious to express my thankful heart to you and to your noble lady (who in the same kind has very often extended her loving and liberal hand to me) by any service that is in my power. I joy much to hear of good success in those matters of weight that concern you. Good Sir, give me leave undoubtedly to hope, when you have settled all, we shall enjoy you constantly at Scot's Hall, notwithstanding the sad rumour we hear to the contrary, the Lord direct you in all things, and specially not to have occasion of mourning for your business from that place, which if I could believe, I should be bold to enlarge myself with strong arguments to dissuade you from it. I will now be no further troublesome, but with the tender of my very best service to you and to your virtuous Lady, that most *innocent martyr*,[w] with the same to good Mr. Scott, I rest,

Your ever faithful friend and servant,

NORTON KNATCHBULL.

(**102**) A letter dated East Dereham, July 29, 1635, signed Elizabeth Dereham, addressed—To my much honoured Aunt present these at Nettlestead in Kent.

Good Madâm,—Mr. Ives has partly promised me to convey this letter to your Ladyship at Nettlestead, where I understand you are now settled, and your great business at a final end, which we are very glad to hear of, and return Sir Edward and your Ladyship many humble thanks for your care in freeing us from any further trouble therein. We heard my cousin Scott and his Lady were to live at Scot's Hall, which good news we are very sorry is contradicted by your Ladyship's letter. We here, at Dereham Grange, thanks to God, continue in good health, and much joy to hear from you. My father presents his service to Sir Edward and your Ladyship. My husband with myself present ours to you both, and I remain.

Your ladyship's niece to be commanded, ELIZABETH DEREHAM.

My husband and self present our service to my cousin Scott.

(**103**) A letter from My Lord Keeper Coventry to Sir Ed. Scott, about settling his daughter-in-law's jointure, dated December 1, 1636.

Sir,—When I first heard of the resolution on good accord between your son and his wife, I did very much joy in it in regard of my true affection to the parents on both sides, and the good which I do most heartily wish unto both those families. They in that meeting, by God's blessing, I hope are and shall be happily joined, and now that having cohabited together and made trial of their affection each to other for a convenient space, it is meet that their friends on both sides should cherish those good beginnings by all possible means. On my Lord Goring's part I have lately understood great willingness, and I have great cause to believe no less upon yours, since I cannot forget in what sort you manifested yourself unto me heretofore, when by His Majesty's commandment I treated with you of the same matters. And therefore understand that there is no final course yet taken either concerning the portion payable to Lord Goring, nor any jointure settled on his daughter, as by the articles which his Lordship has shewed unto me there ought to be, and his Lordship offering that myself should settle any doubt or difference, if any arise thereby, I was very willing and ready to meet with any occasion of doing any good office between two that I love and wish so well unto. And therefore, perusing the articles, and finding them as concerning the jointure to have relation to an Indenture dated the 9th day of September, in the twelfth year of King James of blessed memory, between Sir John Scot on the one part and Sir Richd. Smythe and Mr. Thos. Brett on the other part, the contents whereof are unknown to the Lord Goring or his counsel, so as the view of that deed is necessary to prepare the jointure, I undertook as holding it right and reasonable to move you to permit the Lord Goring or his counsel to see that deed, and if for any reason unknown to me you shall make doubt and scruple thereof, you may send it to me that I might see what is meet to be done, and thereon prevail with you that such settlement of all things

---

[v] *This letter is from Mary Westrow, née Aldersey, third wife of Sir Norton Knatchbull, of Mersham Hatch. She was eventually the third wife of Sir Edward Scott, K.B. Her sister was married to one of the noble family of Capel, of Hadham Hall, Herts. The Westrows were of St. Margaret's, Herts.*

[w] *The expression "innocent martyr" probably refers to the scandal noted by Evelyn and Pepys in their Diaries, that the son of the Lady Catherine Scott (daughter of George Goring, Earl of Norwich) was the reputed son of Prince Rupert. Scot's Hall was for a time given up to Edward Scott and his wife, Lady Catherine, Sir Edward Scott, K.B., residing at Nettlested.*

may be made as is agreeable to justice and equity, and the true intent of those agreements which have passed between you and me, be most likely to continue.and increase that love and affection both between the parents and the children as may yield most comfort to both sides and to all their friends and well wishers, whereof as I cannot doubt, so I heartily pray you to take due consideration of, and so I rest,

Your truly loving friend,

THO. COVENTRYE (*Lord Keeper*).[a]

Dated from Copthall, this 1st of December, 1636.

(**104**) A letter dated December 3, 1636, from Katherine Scott to Lady Knatchbull.

DEAR LADY,—Mr. Scott and myself having been much affected to hear of good Sir Norton's illness and your sorrow, we are somewhat comforted upon information that his *stomach continues*, and that he resteth reasonable well; we cannot but hold ourselves bound to pray for both your healths and happiness as of two of the best friends we have in the world. The distance of places abates not my confidence of your sweet disposition and true love to your friends, which makes me use the boldness to acquaint you that yesternight, somewhat late, Mr. Scott received a letter from my noble Lord Keeper by his man, the copy whereof is enclosed, as also my husband's sudden answer. Our desire is that you would be pleased at your next opportunity of writing to your noble sister to insert a word that if a convenient messenger cannot speedily enough be procured, her honour would vouchsafe to present that excuse, and if any error should be conceived, in using no greater speed, that she would please to add that favour in her next letter, as by a word to inform your Ladyship thereof, and that you would be pleased by some messenger from Scot's Hall to give us notice thereof, by a word from yourself or any other, and Mr. Scott doth purpose then suddenly to procure such a friend as he can to convey that indenture. Your wisdom will discern the strangeness of my Lord Goring's course herein, who having hitherto failed to procure such a jointure as he covenanted to do with his daughter's portion, would have Mr. Scott, without receiving any penny of the portion, to make another jointure in his lifetime to his daughter; whereas the same ought not to be till after his death by his son. What favour your Ladyship shall afford herein must be added to the multitude which I have already received, for which we shall still say . . . . . much love and many thanks. Thus Mr. Scott and myself, presenting our affectionate services to noble Sir Norton and your worthy self, with our loving respects to your virtuous children, I rest,

Your faithful friend to serve you, KATHERINE SCOTT.[b]

Nettlestead, this 3rd of December, 1636.

(**105**) A letter dated June 28, 1637, signed Catherine Scott, addressed—To my dear Husband, Mr. Ed. Scott, present these.

DEAR MR. SCOTT,—I did very much joy to hear from you, for I must ever number it among the chiefest of my joys to live in your favour, but I could be angry with you for giving me thanks for those poor trifles that can only show my desire to write you. The more you employ me, the more you will oblige me. For my cousin Say, I have nothing of him. If you have committed anything to him he keeps it to himself, but whensoever a happy agreement shall be made for us both I am ready on a day's warning, and in the meantime you shall be heartily welcome hither, and I shall not think much of a visit to see you. Good Mr. Burrell is in haste, therefore I must conclude; but give me leave first to present my humble service unto Sir Edward and my Lady, and to you the faithful affection of your truly loving wife to serve you,

CATHERINE SCOTT.

I pray let me beg your picture which is at Scot's Hall. If you deny me I shall take it to heart.[c]

(**106**) Letter (without date, *circa* 1638) from Wm. Say to Sir Edward Scott, K.B., concerning his settling a jointure on his wife, addressed—To my much honoured friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knight of the Bath, at Scot's Hall.

WORTHY SIR,—I have received your letter by the bearer hereof, and shall expedite the business as much as I may. On Monday I went to the Lady . . . . . who it seems someway took notice of my coming about this business, who expected me not until Wednesday. After some discourse with her, she carried me to my Lord, where first having presented yours, I let him know my business. I produced your deed, which he was pleased to peruse. He referred the further consideration of it to Sir Thomas Bedingfield, with whom I have been, and upon this day resolving to deliver himself to my Lord Keeper (*Coventry*) what he conceived of it, I am afraid there will be a doubt raised upon that, that you exercised your power in making a jointure to your former Lady. If it be, you must then give some collateral security that the Lady may enjoy the intended £300 per annum, and which way you can do that I know not. What is resolving of you shall speedily hear of. In the meantime I cannot but let you know that I find both by my Lord and Lady that they approve of the business, and I believe the Lady declared herself to those here at Durham House that she was resolved to satisfy your desires, for so much I find by them. So I wish you all happiness, and will ever be,

Your much honoured WM. SAY.[d]

---

[a] *Sir Edward Scott's third wife (Mary Aldersey), relict of Sir Norton Knatchbull, of Mersham Hatch, was sister to the wife of Lord Keeper Coventry. She had in the first instance married Thomas Westrow, Sheriff of London.*

[b] *This letter is from Lady (Katherine) Scott, second wife to Sir Edward Scott, K.B., and refers to the jointure of her daughter-in-law, the Lady Katherine, daughter of Lord Goring, Earl of Norwich, the settlements concerning which would appear never to have been completed. Their non-fulfilment was a fertile source of disquiet between her husband, Edward Scott, and her family, and tended to the separation which ultimately ensued.* *(See pp.* 231 *and* 232*).*

[c] *For the picture in question, see p.* 230.

[d] *This letter has reference probably to the jointure about to be settled on the third wife of Sir Edward Scott, the widow of Sir Norton Knatchbull, of Mersham Hatch. They were married in* 1639.

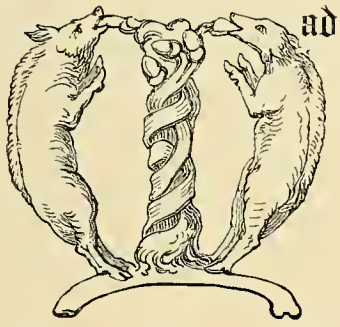
(**107**) A letter (without date, *circa* 1638) from Wm. Say, addressed—To his most honourable friend, Sir Edward Scott, Knt. of the Bath, these.

WORTHY SIR,—A doubt is made by Sir Thomas Bedingfield, to whom my Lord Keeper referred your business, whether you are enabled to make a jointure to his lady. And to take off that doubt, it has been thought fit that your son, your brother, and his son should join in the grant. At least confirm the grant when it is made. Again, the marriage must proceed before anything can be settled. If, therefore, Sir, you will peruse this draft which I here send you, and if you approve of it, send it back to me again by one of your men on Tuesday, my man shall then engross it that night, and he on Wednesday may bring it to you, and you and your son may seal it and bring it to me on Thursday, and then I will take care of it, and this being done I suppose my Lord will give directions that the marriage may go on, and the assurance afterwards may be perfect. Sir, I pray excuse that you have not heard from me before this, for truly until yesterday three of the clock I could not have a certain answer. My Lord has been to his house at Camberwell, that my cause has been more troublesome, and again he has been troubled with the gout, that I could not speak to him as often as I desired. So I shall give you a quick account, this being done.

Your very much honouring,

Sunday night. WM. SAY (*see preceding letter*).

(**108**) A letter dated January 20, 1641, from Catherine Scott to Lady Scott.



adam, Just now I did receive a letter from Mr. Scott, though not with his own hand, by reason of his late sickness, but he tells me that he is much amended, with letting blood, or else I should have been very much unsatisfied till the next opportunity of hearing from him, and pray, Madam, let me beg it of your Ladyship that some in your house will let me weekly hear of him.

Mr. Scott did please to command me in his letter to name somebody that I should think fit to bring up a petition to his Majesty from the whole county, that the laws of the land may be executed upon the Jesuits, and the privileges of Parliament maintained. I think it were fit that such a petition should be sent up, and by some discreet man, and if I may fully know Sir Edward's and your Ladyship's pleasure in it, for I grieve at the miseries that poor England hath and may endure again if now they do not seek a remedy, and for a Nobleman to countenance the petition, I know many that will be ready to do it.

The other day I was with some Parliament men, and one of them, a very discreet gentleman, told me that there was one in the house that did amiably motion it to have Sir Edward to be Lord Lieutenant of the shire, if Sir Edward have desire to be so. I will not doubt but he shall, for my brother hath many friends in the house, and I believe my father hath the same. Truly he deserves it, for never anybody did take more pains to make an agreement between the King and his people, and cursed are they that do not. This day my Lord Duke of Richmond and he do carry a very civil message from His Majesty to the Parliament, to this purpose, that he is very sorry if he has broken any privileges of Parliament, and as he hath given them many, so he will be ready to give them more rather than to break or take away any. Pray God turn his heart to his people, and away with them that wish the contrary. They now say that the Queen will go to Portsmouth, and the King will be up and down at Hampton Court and at London. I shall be very sorry if she do go to Portsmouth. My Lady Carlile, they say, shall marry my Lord Marquis Hambleton, and he will make her Queen of Scotland. The King hath sent my Lord of Newcastle to Hull, and there he was before him that the Parliament had *sent*, for they have cause to see the ports well guarded, for fear the Queen should carry the prince over with her, if she have any intention to go over. If she should go they would never let her come again, for she is much hated about the Irish business, though she protested to my father that she had nothing at all to do in it. Madam, I beseech you to let me know whether I may do your Lady and Sir Edward any service. I know you are both so careful of the good of the Commonwealth that you are ever mindful of what it hath suffered. I am but a weak instrument, but I shall be faithful in any thing that you shall think fit to employ me, for though I have not much experience, and less wisdom, yet I have a great zeal for the public good, and especially for Kent, and pray let not me have the naming of the man to present the petition, for I cannot tell of what degree he must be, but I shall be joyful to help him to an easy delivery of it. I humbly beg Sir Edward and your Ladyship's blessing for

Your most dutiful daughter and servant, CATHERINE SCOTT.

I beseech your Ladyship to present my humble service and best affection to Mr. Scott.

I hope your Ladyship will not think that I am run away with your money.

(**109**) A letter (without date, *circa* 1642) from Mrs. to the Lady Scott, to excuse a letter to her husband, and that he may travel and she with him.

MADAM,—My respects shall not do me that injury as to keep me from letting your Ladyship know how much I honour you, though they will not suffer me to do it so often as I do desire, considering the trouble that my lines must bring you, especially at this time, when by them I shall presume to make some request unto your Ladyship.

First, Madam, I do with all humility desire you to tell Sir Edward Scott that I am much grieved if anything in my first letter to my husband should make him offended with me. Truly, I did hear it from so many that Mr. Scott did despise me that I could not hold my hand from writing to him, which I hope was no sin, for I did avoid all sharpness. That, indeed, is no stranger to my disposition, yet surely if Sir Edward found any in my letter, I shall believe my unlucky fate will leave me nowhere, for nothing was so far from my intentions as to give him the least cause to except against me in that letter, which was only to breathe out the discontents of my soul to Mr. Scott alone.

And now, Madam, being most confident of your goodness, besides the near relation that you have to Mr. Scott, and through to me, your most humble servant, I do beg of your Ladyship that you will use that power which most deservedly you have of Sir Edward Scott to procure his leave that Mr. Scott may travel for a while. I will go with him myself, I will leave all my friends, and when we return again I will live where he will have me to live, for I am confident that a little sight of the world would do him so much good, that I shall not be

unwilling to obey him in any thing that he shall command me. As things now stand we are both most unhappy. This way I hope your Ladyship will like so well that you will get Sir Edward's consent to it. I know he will say that he hath but one son, but God is God everywhere, so I hope he will not be afraid to venture him. Madam, I am so tedious in my scribbling, but now I have done, for my business is in so good hands that I shall have much peace, and your Ladyship's perpetual thanks from the humblest of your servants and dutiful daughter to serve you.

CATHERINE SCOTT (*see pp.* 231, 232).

My humble duty, I beseech you, to Sir Edw. Scott, and my best affections to Mr. Scott.

I crave the favour that my best respects may be presented to your worthy daughter, Mrs. Knatchbull, and to Mr. Westrow,[e] unto whom I am obliged to for a very kind visit when he was in town.

(**110**) A letter dated February 7, 1643, from Richard Bunburie to Lady Mary Scott,[f] addressed—To his much honoured Lady, the Lady Mary Scott, at Scot's Hall, these present.

HONORED MADAM,—Your last loving letter I thankfully received, and desire often to . . . . . it, with a serious consideration and resolution to put in practice those things contained in it, and to look upon it and receive those counsels and admonitions as proceeding from your Ladyship's tender care and earnest desire of my good, which I hope will prove like *goads (qy., gourds)*, and like apples of gold and pictures of silver. And now I am sorry that I am enforced to trouble your Ladyship with my long epistles, but I am enforced unto it, in regard that I see many near you as informers of so many things, which I think they will shrink at if I were present to answer for my self. I beseech you, give me the liberty that Festus gave to Paul, that if ever God return me home I may have the liberty to answer for myself. And now, I beseech you, give me leave to express myself in answer to you in this one thing. Concerning my respect to my Captain.[g] In the first place, I love his soul, and for that let others judge what care and pains I have taken, through God's assistance, for that and for my carriage to his person, as may be most for his Honour. And for my not carrying the Colours, it is true. I think he that persuaded Sir Edward or your Ladyship that it was my place so to do, unless it be in battle, never was a soldier . . . . . saw any advance in that way. For my part, it was neither my unwillingness of the pains nor anything else moved me to leave carrying them, but the counsel of divers who knew better what belongs to it than myself. I am sure I carried them in Maidstone till I was wondered at, and when I came to London Colonel Harvey's Cornet informed me of my place, and I am sure I never saw any Cornet of the Kentish forces carry the colours, and for the boy that broke the staff (I am sure my purse paid for a new staff as soon as we came to our quarters), I must confess Jackson was at that time sent in business another way, so that I was enforced to make use of another man. It was no boy, but a soldier that was taken in at Scot's Hall, and did formerly serve under Colonel Morly in Sussex, and for our taking pay, Sir Edward never spake of taking half pay, but that we should take somewhat under until we knew what it was, and so we did until at Maidstone we were informed by Captain Skinner's clerk, who lay there at that time with the troop. Thus beseeching your Ladyship to accept of these lines as answer, and if ever I live to return, to grant me the favour as to speak with you and admit me into your favour to answer for myself. Thus with my humble duty and service to Sir Edward and your Ladyship, praying for your healths, I rest, from our quarters at Woollaveington, this 7th of Feby., 1643,

Your distracted and humble servant,

RICHARD BUNBURIE.

Since this we are discharged, and shall come homeward on Friday.

Just at the receipt of your Ladyship's letter came news to me of the death of my brother John, who hath been long sick, so that my sorrows multiply.

(**111**) A letter (without date, *circa* 1643), signed Mary Goring, addressed—To my noble friend and brother, Sir Edward Scott, at Scot's Hall.

I beseech you, receive my thanks for your noble and free entertainment I received at Scot's Hall, and above all, let me return you what a heart so full with your favours can render you for your tender love and true respect you are pleased to show unto my poor daughter. All I can say is, the great and good God above return it you sevenfold into your bosom and lengthen your days on earth, to her unknown comfort and the true contentment and joy of so many as love you and depend upon your goodness. My writing unto my Lord of my child's happiness adds to his desire of seeing you. He is at this time with the King and Queen at Tibbells (Theobolds, Cheshunt), but intends you a visit at his . . . . . The blessing of God rest upon you all and all my own . . . . . a sweet son and mine, who is begot of God by a loving mother, and your assured friend to serve you,

MARY GORING.[h]

---

[e] *Thomas Westrow was Sheriff of London, temp. Elizabeth. His widow, Mary Aldersey, to whom, as Lady Scott, this letter is addressed, was third wife of Sir Norton Knatchbull, M.P. for Hythe, and at his death became the third wife of Sir Edward Scott, K.B., father-in-law of Catherine Scott, née Goring.*

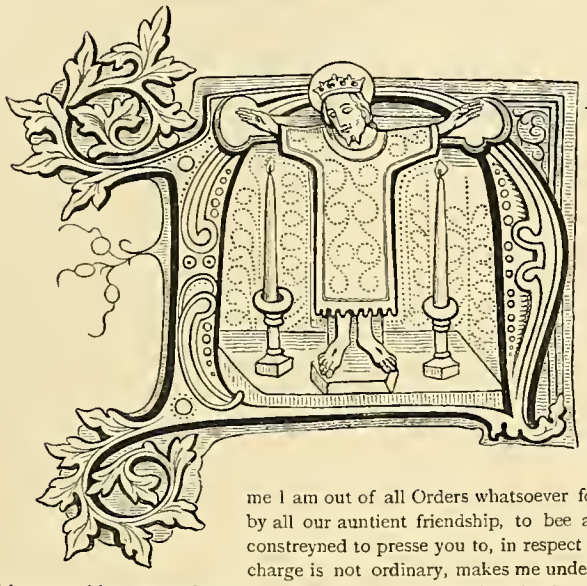
[f] *Lady Mary Scott, third wife of Sir Edward Scott, K.B., of Scot's Hall, and widow of Sir Norton Knatchbull. This letter is addressed from the Royalist camp near Chichester, which city was besieged at this time, and taken for the Parliament by Sir William Waller. It was a few years later than this that Scot's Hall was searched by the Parliamentarian army, when it is asserted that the monument of Sir Thomas Scott was destroyed in Brabourne church, etc.*

[g] *The Captain referred to was probably Captain George Goring, who was with the Royalist army at Portsmouth and Chichester. The Captain Skinner referred to was son of Augustine Skinner, of Tulsham, Kent, and in command of Royalist forces both at Maidstone and Colchester.*

[h] *This letter is from the Countess of Norwich, a daughter of Edward Neville, sixth Baron of Abergavenny.*

From Sir Roger Twysden's Journal.

(**112**) The following letter, dated November 30, 1643, addressed by Sir Roger Twysden, detained in the County Prison in Southwark, by the Committee of the House of Commons in 1643, awaiting his examination into certain charges made by Parliament against him – To his friend and kinsman, Sir Edward Scott.



oble Sir, Understanding by this bearer, he hath beene distreyned, in respect of not paying hys rent to y^e^ Parlyament; and from Chart, that one, as I remember, someway perteyning to you, did give there formerly touching y^e^ rest such warning, I am forced to have recourse to you, to desire you let me know what my offence is, deserving so sharpe a punishment as there should bee taken from me all menes, not onely of paying those trewe debts I owe, but of putting meat in my mouth, my wife and children's. That I have not beene with y^e^ King no man doubts;—That I never did any disservice to y^e^ Parlyament, is manyfest by my beeing out of y^e^ County now about a year and an half, and so disabled from meddling w^th^ ought in it, or elce where; beeing for a good part of y^t^ tyme restreyned of all liberty in prison;—That I have sent ought to Oxford no reasonable man can think, if he know I have wanted for my owne necessary occasions. So y^t^ I assure me I am out of all Orders whatsoever for malignantie or Sequestration. And therefore must entreat you, by all our auntient friendship, to bee a means of freeing my rents, w^ch^ I am, w^th^ y^e^ more earnestnesse constreyned to presse you to, in respect of y^e^ many inconvenyences y^e^ want of them in this place, while y^e^ charge is not ordinary, makes me undergoe. Sir, I have long experyence of your justice and conscience, and know nothing can make you doe what will not stand w^th^ both; by w^ch^ I hope too I shall bee ever dyrected, that am,

S^r^, your humble serv^t^, ROGER TWYSDEN.

Counter, Southwark, 30 Nov., 1643.

Dyrected—To my noble friend, S^r^ Edward Scot, at his house at Scot's Hall in Kent.

(**113**) A letter dated February 12, 1646, from the siege at Nettlestead, by Henry Line.[i]

From the siege at Nettlestead, this 12 Feb., 1646.

Sir,—I received yours, and prevented you in what you desired, for we kept back water before we received your letter, and likewise had taken the pastry into our possession. She begins to be pretty hard driven, and I think cannot continue above 3 days at the most. There is never a Justice of peace nigh us at home, else we should have scared her out of her hold before this time. I received paper from her, which I have sent here enclosed. I pray, Sir, send somebody to us between this and Monday. Many attempts have been made upon us to relieve her. The most famous of all was my Lord of Westmorland and his lady (*see* p. xl., *note k*), who sent for Thomas Charie, and gave him very sharp language, and would make him the cause of all her misery. He sent 2 bottles of sack, with 2 hens, and some other provisions, which was all returned, and divers poor women in a tumultuous way endeavour to relieve her, but all in vain. Thus, with my service to yourself, and love and respects to the rest, I take leave at present. . . . . John Cubitt and Mr. Wilmott . . . . . to do you the best, and Thomas Charie desire to present service . . . . . I can . . . . . their service to you and . . . . . the rest,

HENRY LINE.

The latter part of this extraordinary epistle is not legible.

(**114**) A letter, without date, from Cork to his Aunt, *circa* 1655.

My good Aunt,—Though I had written the day before your man's repair unto me, and had given the same to Mr. Man to be delivered unto you, yet having such convenience to write again, I thought it not amiss, albeit I had written before as much in effect as I shall write now, yet to certify you of the same again, I did write unto you how that since your man's being here before this time I talked with Simpson, and told him how inconstantly he dealt with you and so with me in all his dealings, the rather because he made me assure you that he would have gone through in the purchase of those 15 acres long before this time, and upon my report you relied. Whereby

---

[i] *This letter (without address) refers doubtless to the unfortunate disputes ending in the separation of Edward Scott, D.C.L., and the Lady Katherine, his wife. It would appear that Lady Scott, whilst living apart from her husband, had taken forcible possession of Nettlested House, and this letter discloses a not very creditable attempt (most probably on the part of her husband) to starve her out, an attempt eventually successful. Local tradition to this day, in a somewhat different guise, refers to this proceeding, but assigns the date as fifty years earlier, and Sir John Scott of Nettlested as the actor. Whilst there can be little doubt that a foundation for this tradition exists in the facts recited in this extraordinary letter, we must, in justice, acquit Sir John Scott of being in any way concerned in them. The grated window in the crypt of Nettlested Place by means of which this unfortunate lady eventually made her escape is traditionally shown to this day (see note c, p. 163, and pp. 232, 233). The noble family of Westmorland was nearly related to the Countess of Norwich, Lady Scott's mother.*

you are disappointed. He answered me that he had thought to have made money of some things long before this, but could not, howbeit now he hath made all the sum ready, only £20 excepted, which he must entreat you to forbear till Michaelmas, or the beginning of the next term, which he hath told me shall be paid upon the delivery of the next "*seysin*" to him, which he would wish might be on Wednesday next come a sevenight. Whereupon I went with him to his counsel, and showed your evidence, that thereby he might draw the Indenture of bargain and sale by, and told him that you would be contented to assure it him for anything done by you or your heirs, but further you would not warrant, which he seemed to rest contented with. After that, for more surety, I went for the paper book wherein he made the draught of the conveyance, and shewed it my brother Marshe, who thought, putting out this word (give) which is a word of general warrantize, that you might agree upon the book without any prejudice unto you, and thereupon I delivered the book again to be engrossed, appointing a time to come for the same again, at which time he was gone out of the town, leaving only the deed and the bond engrossed, to be delivered to me at my coming, forgetting to leave the paper book, which I had perused by my brother Marshe, and your evidence, which I showed him for his satisfaction how you held the same, whereby I cannot see what or how much is altered from our first agreement. Therefore as I writ unto you, you might do well to show it to Mr. Man and to take his advice therein, and if that word (give) will be much prejudicial to you, to strike it out, or anything else that may justly be excepted to, but if there be not, but that it may remain as it is, and you will be contented to pass it so, send me word when you would wish me to come down for the seeing of the writings sealed by you, and I will not be long e'er I see you, and therefore I pray you resolve thereof in as convenient speed as you can, because I have promised him by that time he shall be answered, because he is determined if he goes through with you for your part, that he will also go through with that part appointed to be sold by my brother Lathmin's will. I writ unto you also, that he is determined to pay the half year's rent at our Lady day, which he did stick at awhile till I had satisfied him, the rather that you would be contented to forbear the £20 aforesaid till the beginning of the term. Thus, having nothing else to write unto you of but of mine and my wife's well wishings unto you and my cousin Katharine, with our hearty commendations I take my leave, this first of July.

Your loving nephew to command, CORK.[j]

(**115**) A letter from the Earl of Westmoreland to . . . . . dated November 14 (*circa* 1660), from Bath.

DEAR MADAM,—I am extremely obliged to you for the good tidings you favoured me with of Lady Stapleton, which Sir Thos. likewise confirmed. It is delightful she had so good a time, which I hope will enable her to nurse the little imp. I hope also she has some skilful, clever person in the nursery, otherwise they will make sad work with it. Pray, Madam, tell Mrs. Mackintosh that I have been abroad ten evenings running, and engaged till this day fortnight, and then I hope she will be in perfect content as to my sickness both of body and mind. Indeed, the waters have been of infinite service to me, and I have a great many acquaintances here, therefore shall stay at least till they leave the place. If anything extraordinary happens in Bruton St., I am sure you will be so good as to write to me. Indeed, I shall be glad to hear how they go on, and hearing from you will always afford great pleasure to

Your most faithful humble servant, M. WESTMORELAND.[k]

(**116**) A letter dated January 7, 1664, from Anthony St. Leger to Sir Thomas Scott, addressed—These for his much honoured friend, Sir Thomas Scott, are sent.

SIR,—I have adventured to trouble you with these lines to put you in mind of your kind proffer to me the last time I saw you: which was a piece of venison. I have some friends to dine with me this next week, where I shall be joyful of your company. I hope by this that time hath put a period to all your troubles. I likewise earnestly entreat you to present me and my wife's services to your Lady and yourself. I am,

Your real loving kinsman and servant,

ANTH. ST. LEGER.

---

[j] *Colonel George Goring, son of George Goring, Earl of Norwich, the commander of the Royalist forces in Kent, had married Letitia, daughter of the Earl of Cork. Colonel Goring was brother to Katherine ("my cousin Katherine"), who was married to Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall.*

[k] *This letter from Mildmay Fane, Earl of Westmoreland, is probably addressed either to Lady Katherine Scott, daughter of George Goring, Earl of Norwich, and wife to Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall; or to her daughter-in-law, Caroline Carteret, wife of Sir Thomas Scott. It has been assumed that the Lady Stapleton mentioned in this letter, and so frequently associated with Lady Catherine Scott, was a younger daughter of Lord Goring. The annexed Pedigraic Table represents the kinsmanship of these individuals:—*

Henry Nevill, Baron Le Despencer.

Sir Thos. Fane = *Mary Nevill, Baroness Le Despencer, d. 1626.*

Sir Francis Fane, 1st Earl of Westmoreland (in 1624), Baron d'Despencer 1626, obt. 1628.

Mildmay Fane, Earl of Westmoreland, died 1665.

Edward Nevill, Baron of Abergavenny, obt. 1622. = *Elizabeth, only child and heir of Richard Beauchamp, Earl of Worcester and Baron Bergavenny.*

George Goring, Baron Goring, 1st Earl of Norwich, ob. 1662. = *Mary.*

Charles Goring, 2nd Earl of Norwich, died s.p. 1672. Earldom extinct.

Colonel Geo. Goring, died 1662, before his father (see p. 233).

Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, died 1653. = *Katherine, died 1686.*

(117) A letter, dated June 20, 1668, from Catherine Scott to her son, Sir Thomas Scott. (Not addressed, probably delivered by hand.)

For your hasty journey to London I don't wonder at it, for it is your custom to be tardy to your friends and speedy to others. My counsel you have never minded, therefore I might yet observe what I have already given, that you may have the effect of that duty, which is the only one I owe you. I shall be very happy to see your wife, but, as I wrote to her, not while I am under the frowns and neglect of her father and mother.[1] Besides, my house and provisions are not in a posture to receive her, and I keep but few servants, but I shall ever preserve a faithful heart to her service, and do return her and you my *remerciments* for that intended kindness. Pray present my true love to her, with many *baises*. My blessing to you, and the great God make you good and wise. Have a care to be true in your words and actions.

Your truly loving mother, CATHERINE SCOTT.

---

(118) A letter, signed Catherine Scott, dated November 8, 1670, and addressed to Sir George Carteret at Scot's Hall.

SIR,—I was sorry to hear you were so ill with a cold. The unwelcome news from Scot's Hall did cause or at least augment the same indisposition in me to a great height, or I had waited on my Lady to prevent her Ladyship's trouble. On Thursday next I intended for Nettlestead, and to put my rude house into the best order I may, to receive your sweet daughter and mine, hoping the change of place may a little divert her and her sad husband. The God above only knows the inclination of my heart to her . . . . . but I shall submit myself to serve her her own way. Sir, I must presume to trouble you further, to expedite my journey, to let me have £50 here, and to let my Lady Carteret receive it at Scot's Hall, and there is now due £35 since Michaelmas last of my jointure money, and there is some £100 due of the £1000, for I have not received any of that a long time. If you please to send this letter that William Hartridge may see it, I know he will be very nimble to observe it, though slower to me. Pardon this freedom from, Sir,

Your most humble servant, CATHERINE SCOTT (*see previous letter*).

The following relates to Nettlested Place, and contrasts the relative prices of labour, etc., in 1671 *and* 1871 :—

(119) A Bill for Sir Thomas Scott, September the 29th, 1671.

Imprimis—For washing of the Granary, mowing of the Court, and levelling the way coming from Kennard Lane	00	01	06
For looking to the Park in Will[m] Allen his absence with his venison to London . .	00	02	06
For looking to the Park when he went to London with venison 3 times	00	04	06
For cutting of Four load of brakes	00	04	00
For cutting of two cord of wood	00	03	00
For cutting of thirty posts	00	01	06
For making of the dikes in the Park against W[m] Allen's	00	02	00
For staking and bushing up the apple trees	00	01	00
For two days work sowing of wheat and ½ a day spreading dung	00	01	06
For 9½ doz. of Mole's killing	00	19	00
For helping of W[m] Allen to kill venison	00	04	06
For scouring of a pond	00	02	00
For a journey to Westram	00	03	00
Sum is	02	10	00

Received the full of this bill by me, Thomas Franckwell, his + mark.

---

(120) A letter dated Whitehall, August 6, 1672, signed G. Carteret.

DEAR DAUGHTER,—I desire that you will give orders that a good buck may be delivered to this bearer. God bless and keep you. Remember me to your husband, Your most affectionate father,

G. CARTERET.

---

(121) A letter dated December 5, 1672, signed G. Carteret, to his daughter.

MY DEAR CHILD,—I do give you and your husband many thanks for your venison. I hope that you have reduced your family to as small a number as you can, and that you gain much benefit by it. There is no otherwise than this to free you from the burthen of your debts, and to make you live happy in your house and family. I make no doubt but your servant Short is careful of your affairs. The man seems to be honest, and therefore I hope well of him. Pray remember me to your husband and to the children. So praying to God for his blessing to you all, I remain, Your most affectionate father,

G. CARTERET.

---

(122) A letter (*without date*) signed Elizabeth Carteret, to her daughter at Scot's Hall.

MY DEAR CHILD,—The Parliament being prorogued, we think of going out of town shortly, but I cannot guess the time when we shall come to thee, by reason that your father will be obliged to wait upon the King at Windsor some time, and then we must make a journey to Hainsford. The King doth not go to Windsor till this day sennight. You may be sure that we will come to thee as soon as we

---

[1] *Sir George and Lady Carteret, parents of Caroline, wife to Sir Thomas Scott (see pp. 237, 238).*

can possible. I have done all I can to get a French and Latin grammar, but cannot get one; I will get one from France as soon as I can. You may let the Dancing Master go away whereabout you to teach, so that it may not be a hindrance of others of their dancing every day. I am glad that your little boy is better. You will do well to give him that drink of thine. My dearest children, ... for the venison, when we come back from Windsor, we will drink their health in eating of it. Your father is now going hither to make out the lodging, and I am going with him, but we come again to-morrow, if it please God. There is a misfortune fallen on my son Atkins,[m] but I bless my good God it was not his fault in the least, and that the wounded party doth confess and ask his pardon, so that the party's friends cannot say anything to him in case the man do die, for it was in his defence what he did, and he had no quarrel with him at all, nor so much as an angry word passed ever between them. But the gentleman had received divers affronts of gentlemen in the country, and he would revenge himself on my son in a mad humour, without any anger between them, or a challenge, or any show of anger, drew on him, walking in a garden. Your brother was over the bed by him many hours after he was wounded, and the friends would say nothing to him, but desired security of him to appear, but my son came away hither, and your father has been with the King, who is very gracious, and speaks with great kindness, for indeed your brother was not in the least fault, so that no harm can come to him, by the grace of God. For all it is very troublesome to have fallen into such an accident of this kind. One would have thought that your brother's humour would have exempted him of ever falling in such trouble. My kind love to my son, and service to all.

I am, thy loving mother, ELIZ. CARTERET.

---

(123) A letter dated May 27, 1697, addressed—For George Scott, Esq., at Mr. Carteret's house at Cotes, near Cirencester, in Gloucestershire.

SIR,—I have this day had some discourse with Captn. Gordon, who seems earnest to have his debt satisfied, and after a long debate, we are come to the conclusion that he should give twenty years' purchase for the farm that Court holds, called Freelands, and the wood called Freeland Woods, if he likes it on view. The farm contains 100 acres, besides the 6 acres in the tile kiln, and the woods contain 26 acres, as Mr. South informs us. The farm and tile kiln go at £47 per annum, and three load of tiles, which we value at £3 per annum, but we must put the house in repair. Thus far I have gone, but with these conditions, that you approve of it, or else all to be void; you know the thing better than I do. I pray consider with Sir Robert Atkins what is fit to be done in it, and let me have your thoughts of it before the end of this next week, for then, if you approve of it, he is to go down and see it. He has no more money at present, so that this will produce no ready money, but he saith if he can get in any monies he shall be willing to deal for some more lands with you; but this is uncertain. Your brother, Robert Scott, was with me yesterday, and tells me that he doth not like the proposal that is made for putting him apprentice to Captain Clutterbuck. There must be £50 paid down to the Captn., and it will cost near £50 more to furnish him with necessaries for this voyage, and he must find himself with clothes during all the time of his service, which terms he is not willing to submit to. He is advised that it is better and more convenient for him to go into a man-of-war, and the charge, he saith, will be abundantly less, and he shall have more opportunity of learning and being instructed in sea affairs by being in a cruising ship, a man-of-war, than in a merchantman in a voyage for Guinea, as Captain Clutterbuck's is. He tells me he will write to you himself to have your directions, which I think it best for you to consider and give him. It is high time he were disposed of. Your wife continues pretty well, and remembers her to you. Your children, thanks be to God, are well. I am in haste going to Highgate.

Your humble servant, FRANCIS PEMBERTON.[n]

---

(124) A letter from the Earl of Thanet to Mr. G. Scott, dated February 9, 1702.

MR. SCOTT,—Though my wife endeavoured several times to find my Lady Fresheville,[o] she had not an opportunity to do it until last Saturday, and then she spoke to her at large of your family. She told her she had with difficulty got your brother a ship before this time, and expressed her good intentions towards you, and said that in time she would endeavour to obtain something for you, but that she found it very difficult, and could not say when she might succeed. I suppose whenever your own affairs bring you to town, it may be proper to mention to your Lady what you most desire, and judge what may be most proper for her to ask for you, but let not what I now mention bring you a day sooner than you intended, for by her discourse to my wife she expressed as if she would not attempt it for some time. I do hope if my Lady is hearty in it, as she is nearly related to you, she may find occasions to oblige you, in which you shall have the good wishes of Your obliged and faithful servant, THANET.

---

(125) A letter from Sir Francis Pemberton to George Scott, Esq., dated November 8, 1707.

SIR,—I heartily thank you for the kind entertainment I had at Scot's Hall. I have discoursed all your relations about your children, and I purposed getting the two eldest sons at home to two of the great schools, where they may be placed on the foundation, and your eldest daughter to be with my Lady Pemberton. And I find that Dr. Stanley and your brother Pemberton will be very ready to assist me in getting the two sons out. If you will assign in trust for the maintenance of them, I understand they can compel £20 per annum apiece, but it will not do, especially at first, until they are of the foundation. And my lady absolutely refuses to take your daughter, unless she can also be secured of something to maintain her. I advise you, as a real friend, to consider of these matters with your lady, and to

---

[m] *Louisa Margaretta, daughter of Sir George Carteret, Bart., Vice-Chamberlain to Charles II., married Sir Robert Atkins, of Saperton, Co. Gloucester.*

[n] *Letter from Sir Francis Pemberton, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench. His daughter Anne was first wife to George Scott, of Scot's Hall.*

[o] *Wife of John, Lord Freshville, Baron of Stavely. Lady Freshville was the only daughter of Sir Henry de Vic, of Guernsey, Bart., Chancellor of the Order of the Garter, and who had been resident at Brussels for many years in the household of Charles II. during his residence there.*

communicate the contents of this letter to her, for the doing of this will be one of the best things you can do for those children, and a great ease to her, who has now a great burthen and care upon her. I find that my cousin Pemberton and all his relations are for having those lands which are his taken into his hands. They are resolved upon it, and I should think it will be better for you, for then you will see what you must depend upon. I pray God to direct you for the best, and that all things may be so settled as you and your good lady may be happy together, in order to which it will be necessary to consult her in everything, which I am confident will be a great help to you. I am going on Monday down into Yorkshire, and shall be glad at any time to hear from you there, if you please to direct to me at Bedall, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, by way of London. Sir, what I have done and what I have written here is out of the tender regard I have to you and your Lady and children, and I have no reason to doubt but it will be well taken. Our most humble service waits upon her, and my hearty prayer attend you all, as being, Sir, your most affectionate kinsman and faithful servant,

FRANCIS PEMBERTON (*see letter* 123).

---

(126) A letter dated January 17, 1711, from Lord Winchelsea to , ...

London, January the 17th, 1711.

DEAR SIR,—I received the favour of yours this afternoon, and am sorry I can send you no further account of your affair since my last. The public business taking up so much of my Lord Treasurer's time, I have not been able to get an opportunity of speaking with him, but I hope all matters are likely to go on smoothly now that the long expected changes will be made. The Duke of C . . . . . all agree will be . . . . . out in a day or two, a letter being sent down to him to that purpose. By these beginnings you will judge best when to come to town, which I hope may be to your satisfaction when you do, at which no one can more heartily wish you success than

Dear Sir, your most humble and faithful servant, WINCHELSEA.

---

(127) A letter to George Scott, Esq., dated November 8, 1711, signed Winchelsea.

DEAR SIR,—You will find in the newspapers of this day the alterations in the victualling Commission, and hearing several more changes will be suddenly made, I take the liberty of acquainting you therewith, and leave it to your consideration whether it may not be a proper time for you to come to town. The Lord Treasurer does not see any company yet, but it is thought he will be abroad in a day or two. Peace still is much talked of, and the Parliament, it is thought, will be prorogued a few days in order to lay the proposals that have been made from France before it at the first opening this sessions. I ought to have been in the country this week, but am detained by business till the next. Your most obedient servant,

WINCHELSEA.

---

(128) A letter dated January 12, 1712, to G. Scott, signed Winchelsea.

DEAR SIR,—Mr. Lambert declining the thing I mentioned to you, I chose the opportunity, according to my promise, to mention you for it yesterday to my Lord Treasurer, and was answered that he had thought of something else for you, but upon my urging that this might possibly be more convenient for you, the business being chiefly to be executed in the country, he promised me to consider of it, and that I should know in a few days his resolution, which is all at present I am able to inform you of. You may depend on my utmost service in this or in any other occasion, my dear Sir, Yours most sincerely,

WINCHELSEA.

---

(129) A letter dated April 8, 1712, from Lord Winchelsea to . . . . . .

London, April the 8th, 1712.

DEAR SIR,—I am much ashamed that I have been so long in your debt for the favour of two letters I received from you since my last, which in truth I had sooner owned, but that I was in hopes of giving you some account of your affairs that might be satisfactory to you. All matters move so slowly that Tom Lambert, though he has been told at least twice a week that he was provided for, yet to this day does not know what he is to depend on, and will not quit his pretensions to the first offer of . . . . . till he knows . . . . . , is designed him, and has hindered me from being able to push that matter for you any further ; and as to the other part of your letter relating to Lord Weymouth's new office, upon the best inquiry I can make I do not find there is anything under him worth a gentleman's acceptance, but as I suppose you know that forest much better than I, if you can think of any walk or employment under the keeper or in his disposal, I shall very readily try my interest to serve you, though I fear it is very small in that family.

Last Friday the Hogshead of Wine Captain Scott has been so kind to send me up from Plymouth came very safe to town, and I doubt not but will prove excellent good. I beg the favour of you to let me know where I may convey my thanks to him.

I propose to be at Eastwell[p] some time next week, and I shall be very glad if it may be my good fortune to bring you some better news, which I assure you my best endeavours shall not be wanting to promote, being, with the greatest truth,

Dear Sir, your much obliged and humble servant, WINCHELSEA.

---

(130) A letter to Mr. George Scott, dated April 12, 1712, signed Thanet.

Having reminded my Lord Treasurer very often of his promise to me of placing you in some of the commissions, he told me this day he had put you in one of the Commissions of the wine licences, and asked me your Christian name to insert. I went this evening to the office, but found none of the clerks there, but next post will give you a perfect account if the commission is signed, for I think you may delay coming until then. Say nothing of it to any person till you see me, and believe I have not been wanting, in detaining what you so long expected from Your faithful friend, THANET.

---

[p] *Eastwell Park, East Kent, now the residence of H.R.H. the Duke of Edinburgh.*

(**131**) A letter dated October 10, 1713, to George Scott, Esq., at Surrenden.[q]

Eastwell, 10th October, 1713.

I must seem very much wanting to dear Mr. Scott and Mr. Dering, and this is to ask both your pardons that I have not waited upon you, who have been so kind in your favours to me, but indeed I have been so taken up with business more than ordinary that I have not been able to perform what I ought to have done, and which I am sure was much my inclination. On Thursday last I got to Hothfield,[r] where I dined, intending to wait upon you in the afternoon, and had sent for my coach to come to the door in order to go, but was told that you were both gone to Scot's Hall and were not expected back till night, which made me defer my visit, as I thought, to another day, but I find the shortness of my stay in the country will not admit of it, for as the former parts of my time have been a great deal taken up in farming and in business with my tenants, the remainder of it will be employed in making up accounts with the steward. I hope these things will plead my excuse to you and Mr. Dering, to whom I desire you will present my humble service, and believe that I am, Sir,

Your very affectionate *kinsman* and most obedient servant, WINCHELSEA.

My wife's with my humble service attends your Lady and yourself.

(**132**) A letter without date (*circa* 1720) from Cecilia Scott to Wm. Dering, addressed—

DEAR BROTHER,—I am continually scribbling, as you find. Sir Edward dined with me yesterday, and he said he would be in London on Wednesday night, to take with you again. I could not help laughing at him, for his restlessness; he does not know what to do; he cannot resolve to quarrel with you quite; he finds he cannot run to my Lord Chancellor as he does to me, with pray desire my uncle to give me the lease; but there is to be a long form and some swearing, and a thousand things he did not foresee, so that he will take with you again, and he is terribly afraid he shall never get a good wife, if you and he should have any difference. I did believe you would always be good friends, the family belonging to Surrenden having always been happier than any other in this respect. I hope it will not be long before you finish your affairs to come down, when we shall be all merry together. All here are at your service, and I am,

Your most affectionate sister, C. SCOTT.[s]

(**133**) A letter dated December 9, 1725, from Chas. Burchell to G. Scott.

SIR,—I send this to acquaint you that this day I received a letter from Lieut. Price on board the "Dragon," which confirms the melancholy news of the death of your brother, Commodore Scott, at Jamaica, at whose funeral both the officers of the ship and the merchants did all the honour in their power. He died without a will, and Mr. Taylor, Purser of the "Dragon," has signed (as soon as the trade (wind) we sail from the island to . . . . . with an inventory) as his creditor. This being all the account I have received, I thought it proper to acquaint you with it as soon as possible. I am, Sir,

Your most faithful and most humble servant and kinsman, CHAS. BURCHELL (*see p.* 242).

(**134**) A letter dated August 14, 1727, from H. Gray to George Scott, Esq., concerning the sale of Scot's Hall.

Denhill, August the 14th, 1727.

SIR,—I return the particular of the estate, and am very sorry I can't be the purchaser, it being set at too great a price, but if that could be accommodated, there is another difficulty which is not in either of our powers to remove, which is your estates being redeemable by your grandchildren, it puts it upon the foot of a mortgage, and the interest will not be three per cent. I heartily wish you may dispose of it to the full of what you ask, for your own sake and pretty family, to whom I wish all the happiness this world can give. Your guests all join in returning ten thousand thanks for our kind entertainment at Scot's Hall, and hope to have the favour of seeing you and Mrs. Scott at our little cottage, which will be a great honour and pleasure to,

Sir, your obliged humble servant, H. GRAY.

We all join in being Mrs. Scott's and the young gentleman's and Lady's humble servants.

(**135**) *Brit. Mus., Add. MSS.*, 15,957, *fol.* 108.

MY LORD,—The many favours I have received from your Lord^{p}, and those you so lately intended me, makes me take the Liberty to address you in y^{e} most perplexed situation I ever was in, to beg your Lord^{p} will be pleased to give me your commands how to act, and I shall look upon it as a proof I have not forfeited your good opinion, if, without any regard to what may be my way of thinking, your Lord^{p} will please to positively give me your orders which way to proceed.

S^{r} Peter Warren has order'd the Louisa to sea, and M^{r} Corbett informs me she's sail'd, and Watson has leave to come by land to Town.

S^{r} Peter, I would willingly believe, must be a stranger to his being ordered to Portsm^{h}; though he was . . . . . to my being here waiting for her. I am not conscious I have ever done anything should occasion him to declare himself my enemy. If he is so, 'tis the first officer I ever serv'd under that was.

I am told Cotes has orders to take y^{e} Louisa under his command, and is gone on a distant station from S^{r} Peter. On my hearing she was order'd to sea, I wrote to the Board to know their Lord$^{p's}$ commands for my further proceedings, and in return have ree^{d} directions to

---

[q] *Surrenden Dering, the ancient manorial residence of the Derings, Baronets, in East Kent.*

[r] *Hothfield Place, the ancestral residence in East Kent of the Tuftons, Earls of Thanet.*

[s] *Cecilia, second wife of George Scott, of Scot's Hall, only daughter of Sir Edward Dering, of Surrenden Dering, third Baronet*

follow in the Invincible. My Lord, the chance of meeting y^e^ Louisa I need not name to your Lord^p^, tho' I think it a very improbable one, especially if Cotes goes to any other station with her that's distant from S^r^ Peter.

I have not wrote to the Duke of Bedford about it, nor to no one till I have the honour to hear your Lord^p's^ sentiments of this affair, for which purpose I send my servant to your Lord^p^ with this, and beg by his return I may know in what manner to proceed. Should it be to remain till his return, I beg your Lord^p's^ favour in preventing the Duke of Bedford, or any other of them I am so much indebted to, receiving any ill impression of me, or imagine I desire to decline serving; for, my Lord, my reputation nor fortune is yet not so firmly fix'd as to suffer me to do anything that might offend those to whome I owe all I have.

And I am very well assured nothing will ever prevent my remembering with gratitude what I owe your Lord^p^, while I have the honour to be, with the most perfect regard and respect,

My Lord, your Lord^p's^ much obliged and most obed^t^ humb^le^ serv^t^, AR. SCOTT.

R^t^ Hono^r^ Lord Anson, Portsm^h^, Feb. 15, 1747-8.

P.S.—You^r^ Lord^p^ knows of Cap^t^ Holburn being a Volonteer with S^r^ Peter.

Endorsed—Ports', 15 Febry, 1747, Capt^n^ Arthur Scott.

The Princess Louisa being sail'd with M^r^ Cotes upon a separate station, would be glad of Lord Anson's direct^ns^ for his proceedings, as those from the Adm^ty^ order him to go out in the Invincible.

---

(136) A letter dated March 10, 1757, from Morris Robinson to Mrs. Cecilia Scott, of Denton.[t]

MADAM,—I this day received by Deene, our carrier, the title deeds of the Denton Estate and the lands purchased by Captn. Whorwood before his marriage, and also the deeds I sent you last week executed. Before I carry the deeds before the Master, I must not only look them over, but make a schedule of them, which must be annexed to an affidavit to be sworn to by you. The deeds of these estates are not called for in order to examine the title, because the parties entitled to those estates must take the title, be it as it will, but they are required to be brought before the Master, that they may remain there to be forthcoming for the benefit of the several persons who shall from time to time be entitled to the Estates. I imagine I shall now in a few days receive the principal money and interest due on Mr. Clement's mortgage, and as soon as I do I will acquaint you with it.

I am, Madam, your most obliged humble serv^t^.,

Clerk's Office, 10th March, 1757. MORRIS ROBINSON.[u]

---

(137)

BY VIRTUE of His Majesty's letters of Privy Seal, bearing date the eighteenth day of March, in the fifteenth year of his reign, We do hereby constitute and appoint W^m^ Scott, of Bexley, in the County of Kent, Esquire, to be his Majesty's Receiver General of the said County of Kent, and of the City and County of the City of Canterbury.

Given under our hands at the Treasury Chambers in Whitehall, the fifteenth day of June, One thousand seven hundred and seventy-five.

---

(138) A letter dated August 28, 1777, from Morris Robinson to Mrs. Cecilia Scott, of Denton.

Armagh, Aug^t^ 28, 1777.

DEAR MADAM,—I flatter myself that it will not be unpleasant to you to be informed that your old friend is safe and well, after having passed over mountains and seas. We arrived here on the 18th of this month, almost three weeks after the time of our setting out, we having made two visits of three days and a half each, and two of one day each on the road, by which the fatigue, and, indeed, almost the appearance of a long journey was avoided. We had a very good passage from Port Patrick to Donoghadee (the opposite ports of Scotland and Ireland, little more distant than Dover and Calais) in five hours. I was not at all sick. The last part of our journey before we arrived at the sea was for two days through a most miserable part of Scotland, which may have made this country appear the better to us, tho' this part of Ireland is very fertile, well cultivated, and very populous, it being that part where the Linen manufacture flourishes, so that we see nothing that is wanting to make the country as good as most parts of England, but more trees, which are but rare, except in gentlemen's plantations. The town of Armagh, when the present Primate came to the See, was a miserable town, consisting only of vile cottages, no Archbishop before having resided at it, tho' the Metropolitical town since the Reformation, they having contented themselves with receiving the money and residing at Dublin, the region of Politics and power, but our relation has not only built a noble mansion, with excellent offices and gardens, in the midst of a demesne of four hundred acres of land, at the distance of about half a mile from the town, but has pulled down great part of the old town, and has rebuilt it with very good houses and streets, and has excellent public buildings of all kinds, and amongst others a barrack. I have inquired whether Mr. Edw^d^ Scott is amongst the officers there, but find he is not. I wish he had been, as it would have given me a very good opportunity to introduce him thoroughly to the Primate, which I am afraid I shall not otherwise have an opportunity of doing, as I presume the Primate will not remove to Dublin so soon as we shall go

---

[t] *The Denton estate passed from Cecilia Scott, spinster, eventually to the Robinsons of Monks Horton, an adjoining manor to that of Brabourne in Kent.*

[u] *The writer of this letter was brother of Matthew Robinson, second Lord Rokeby, and of Sarah (wife of George Louis Scott) and the celebrated Elizabeth Montague, wife of Edward Montague, M.P. for Huntingdon. Dr. Doran, in his "Lady of the Last Century," which contains many allusions to the Scot's Hall family, has fallen into the error of supposing that George Louis Scott, who was preceptor to the Prince of Wales, son of George I., was of the Scot's Hall family. A seal attached to a letter from this gentleman reveals the fact that he was a member of the family of Scott, of Chigwell and Stapleford Tany in Essex, an offshoot, four centuries ago, of the Scot's Hall family. The families of Robinsons of Monks Horton and of Scot's Hall being so friendly and near neighbours in East Kent, doubtless conduced to Dr. Doran's error.*

thither, which we must do in little more than a fortnight, whereas the Parliament does not assemble there till the middle of October. The Primate, by procuring Acts of Parliament for rebuilding of Churches and for the Clergy, to be repaid by their successors, the money that they shall lay out in rebuilding their Parsonage houses, by enjoining the persons to whom he has given his good livings to rebuild, has caused several new churches and many parsonage houses to be rebuilt, and we are informed by everybody that Dublin is as much obliged to him as this country for public buildings. What we have seen of his doing far surpasses any conception that one can have of being compassed by one person; he is of a very easy cheerful temper, and we pass our time very agreeably, and particularly get on horseback every day, the loss of which exercise was the only thing I regretted upon our journey. I have not had any return of the complaint that attacked me before I left London, and flatter myself I shall not have it any more. It would give me great pleasure to hear at this distance that you, Mrs. Best,[v] and our friends that went to Margate, are all well. A letter wrote soon after you receive this, directed to me at the said Primate's house, or wrote a little later and directed to me at his Lordship's at Dublin, will catch me before I depart from those places, and if you can send me such information as will enable me to find Mr. Edw[d] Scott, I will see him if we come within any practicable reach of him. I hope you have been to stay at Margate, and have secured your usual benefit from that place. Morris sends his respectful compliments, and joins with me in desiring you will make our compliments to all our friends and relations that come in your way, and that you will let them know we are alive and well.

I am, dear Madam, your most obliged and faithful humble servant,

MORRIS ROBINSON.

(**139**) A letter dated March 20, 1779, from Cecilia Scott to William Scott, 15, Leicester Fields, London, with letter from F. Scott, addressed—To William Scott, Esq.

Canterbury, Mar. 20, 1779.

DEAR WILLY,—I thank you for your kind letter, and for your design of paying my quitrent that I may have no further trouble from that quarter. As you did not know what answer to make to one of the letters I enclosed, you shall have another, in so civil a style it surprises me. I gave a short answer, perhaps not so polite as expected; but it is gone—good luck go with it. I hope the correspondence will drop for some time, for your sake as well as mine, for should it not you will most certainly hear of it. I am quite sorry your man has given you warning. I believe him to be an honest, sober, civil fellow, and seemed to love his master, and has often said in the House nobody had a better. I suppose some little quarrel amongst the servants. If he repents and asks to stay again, I hope you will keep him. If he does not, and I should hear of . . . . . I will let you know. I wish you thought my poor sister Best better. I dare say she is happy you are come to town, as you are so kind to call upon her often, which must give her great pleasure. I wont fail, the first opportunity, to make your compliments at Godmersham. I make no doubt but they will be kindly received. I hope Lady Mary[w] and Miss Haddock[x] will escape cold and spend their time agreeably. My good wishes and compliments attend them.

I am, dear Willy, your affectionate sister and faithful humble servant, CI. SCOTT.

I fear I shall come into some trouble about Watts. I have had information that he was lopping and topping all the trees upon my land. I wrote to Mr. Wyborn to desire him to look over and know if the report was true. He accordingly went, and has been here to inform me that he found everything much worse than represented, that Watts has felled a great number of young oak trees and carried them off the land, and done great damage. I have always taken particular care, according to my friend Morris Robinson's directions, from the first, not to cut down a stick of timber but what was wanted for repairs; now, my tenant having done it, though without my leave, perhaps I may be called upon to account for it. I am really in a fright about it, and know not how to proceed. I sent Mr. Wyborn to Mr. Hammond, the attorney, to acquaint him of all he knew about the matter, and to send Watts proper notice to leave my land at Michaelmas next. Mr. Hammond has promised to be with me on Monday to let me know what is proper to be done in the affair. He took down in writing all Mr. Wyborn said. I am much obliged to Wyborn, for it is a very disagreeable piece of work I employed him upon. He has this moment left me. I believe him to be a very honest man. You will be good to tell me if you think anything more proper than what I have done. I am vastly vexed to be so ill used. I wrote to Watts some time ago to tell him what I had heard, and to desire him to come and settle his accounts, but could get no answer from him.

F. SCOTT.[y]

(**140**) A letter dated April 26, 1779, from M. (*qy.* Margaret) Scott to her uncle, Wm. Scott, at Blendon Hall (Bexley).

Holyhead, April 26, 1779.

MY DEAR UNCLE,—I am sorry to inform you I have been detained here since Friday by contrary winds and no likelihood of its changing, therefore know not when we shall be enabled to depart from hence. Miss Brownrigg and I have engaged our passage on board the "Hillsborough," Capt[n] Parry. This place is much crowded. We just arrived in time to secure good apartments, and are very well accommodated. All the packets are on this side; two are obliged to sail the first fair wind. At present our Captains are of opinion that we shall not sail this two or three days yet; if so I shall be a broken merchant. Living at an inn is very expensive, particularly as the place is so crowded, provisions are high. We have tolerable agreeable company here. They are strangers to Miss Brownrigg and I. We

---

[v] *Mrs. Best (née Caroline Scott), daughter of George Scott, of Scot's Hall, wife of Thomas Best, of Chilston Park and Cowling Castle, Kent, Lieutenant-Governor of Dover Castle, and M.P. for Canterbury.*

[w] *Lady Mary Scott, wife of Arthur Scott, Esq., Commissioner of the Navy, and sister of Spencer Compton, Earl of Northampton, and Catherine, married to the Earl of Egmont, father of the Hon. Spencer Percival, Prime Minister, shot by Bellingham in lobby of the House of Commons.*

[x] *Daughter of Captain Richard Haddock, Comptroller of the Navy 1749, first husband of Lady Mary Compton, and granddaughter of the celebrated Admiral, Sir Richard Haddock, who distinguished himself in the Dutch wars in the time of Charles II.*

[y] *This letter is from Francis Talbot Scott, the last occupier of Scot's Hall before its final demolition in* 1808.

never meet them but at breakfast, dinner, and tea. We went yesterday to hear a Welsh sermon. On Miss B. and I writing to the clergyman (which is frequently done here), he preached in English for us in the afternoon. My best respects to Lady Mary Scott and love to Miss Haddock. Excuse, dear Uncle, this vile writing and paper, as it is the best paper I can here procure, and pen and ink no better to be had. When, please God, I arrive in Dublin you shall hear from me. Should not have troubled you with this, but my stay has been so much longer than I expected. I could not be happy until I wrote. Wish I may have a letter soon from you to acquaint me how you and all my friends are. My best respects in Pall Mall. I wrote to cousin George Matcham on Saturday; desired he would acquaint you of my arrival here then. I did not expect to be detained till now, but I fear we shall remain some days longer. Adieu, my dear Uncle. May you enjoy many happy years is the constant and sincere prayer of

Your grateful and dutiful niece, M. SCOTT.

Wm. Scott, Esq., Blendon Hall, near Dartford, Kent.

(**141**) A letter dated June 6, 1779, from Ci. Scott to Wm. Scott, with copy of one from Edward Le Grand, addressed—To William Scott, Esq., at Blendon Hall, near Dartford, Kent, by Post 3d.

Margate, Sunday, June 6, 1779.

DEAR WILLY,—I thank you for your letter of the 3rd. It gives me great pleasure to hear all friends at Blendon Hall are well. You are right, I have an answer from the courtier, but if you had not said you expected to hear of it I am not sure I should have told you, though being a new correspondent I must be proud of it, so on the other side will send you a copy. I am diverted with the reason he gives for not inquiring after me; had he not told me I should never have guessed. I suppose there is no occasion for me to answer his letter. I conclude I shall hear again, when they have anything to say that I can be of service to them; you must tell me what is best to do, I am very tractable. The family from Denton are here come for six weeks. We are good neighbours. I know nobody else. Here is very little company except the Military; they swarm everywhere. My Lodging is convenient, and I live very quietly at present; no saying how long it may last. I have promised Lord Guilford to meet him at Canterbury, if he comes to Waldershare before he goes into Oxfordshire, provided he gives me timely notice. He was not determined what he should do when he wrote last. My kind love and compliments to Lady Mary and Miss Haddock. I am, dear Willy,

Your affectionate sister and faithful friend, CI. SCOTT.

Copy referred to in preceding letter.

DEAR MADAM,—I am this day favoured with yours, and could not avoid sending Mrs. Best Sir Patrick Hamelton's letter, as he had been often with me upon the subject, and have transmitted yours to him by this post. I am very sorry you was disappointed about your sister, as we flattered ourselves she is much mended. I often enquire after you, and believe me I should do it much oftener if the inquiry did not appear in a mercenary light; but my conscience is clear upon that article, and I can honestly say I wish you long life and health, and am, dear Madam,

Your obedient and sincere humble servant,

Spring Gardens, June 2nd, 1779. EDWARD LE GRAND.(z)

(**142**) Letter dated April 12, 1783, from Wm. Scott (of Canterbury and Blendon Hall, Bexley) to Lord Guilford.

London, April 12, 1783,

MY LORD,—Reflecting on what I had the honour of mentioning to your Lordship last Tuesday, and maturely weighing every circumstance, I cannot prevail with myself to alter my determination, tho' (I am sorry to say) seemingly contrary to your Lordship's opinion, for which I shall ever retain a most respectful deference, being truly sensible of your goodness, and I most humbly thank your Lordship for your kind attention. But, my Lord, all views of ambition in me are extinct, my health of late much impaired, my income equal to my *expence* and something to spare occasionally to a friend in want, therefore I purpose writing to His Grace of Portland the beginning of next month relinquishing all pretensions to the office of Recr Genl for Kent.

Permit me to repeat my acknowledgments of gratitude for the honour you have done me, and to request that you will believe no one can ever be with more sincerity and respect, my Lord,

Your Lordship's most obliged and most obedient humble servant, W. SCOTT.

(**143**) A letter dated April 15, 1783, from Lord Guilford, at Bath, to Wm. Scott.

Bath, April ye 15th, 1783.

DEAR SIR,—Your dislike to your employment appears to me the effect of low spirits, which disorder is seldom mended by having nothing to do. I therefore wish you to consult your friends before you come to an absolute determination, and should it in the end be to give it up I think it would be right, as you had the employment from Ld North, that you should give him a little notice before you mention it to the D. of Portland, in case he should have anybody that he may wish to recommend. I am glad this will find you at Canterbury, where you may have an opportunity of consulting Mrs. Scott, who is, I am sure, anxious for your happiness. Believe me,

Dear Sir, very sincerely yours, GUILFORD.

To William Scott, Esq.

(z) *Evidently a physician or surgeon of Spring Gardens.*

(**144**) A letter dated April 20, 1783, from Wm. Scott to Lord Guilford.

Canterbury, April 20, 1783.

My Lord,—I am honoured with your Lordship's favour of the 15th. No one will be more sensible of an obligation than I am, for the honour done me by your Lordship. My motive for troubling your Lordship with my intentions was to allow time for supporting any one your Lordship approved to be my successor. I shall not hint to any one else my determination, but will do myself the honour to give Lord North some days' notice before I attend His Grace, which I think to do about the second week in May, when the business of this Quarter will be near finished.

I am, with sincere wishes for your Lordship's health, and with great respect, my Lord,

Your Lordship's most obliged and most obedient humble servant, WM. SCOTT.

(**145**) A letter dated April 17, 1794, from Wm. Pitt to Wm. Scott.

Downing Street, April 17, 1794.

Sir,—Circumstances having hitherto delayed my appointing a person to succeed to the government of Walmer Castle on your resignation, and the appointment being now fixed, I think it right to apprise you of this circumstance, and beg at the same time to return you thanks for the manner in which you communicated to me your intention.

I am, Sir, your obedient humble servant, WM. PITT.

W. Scott, Esq.

(**146**)

Downing Street, May 10, 1794.

Mr. Pitt presents his compliments to Mr. Scott, and had the honour of receiving his letter to-day. Mr. Pitt is very sorry that the state of Mr. Scott's health will not allow him to continue in the office of Receiver General for the county of Kent.

The following letters, addressed to Captain Henry Scott, R.N. (see p. 253), are from William, Duke of Clarence, afterwards William IV.

(**147**) Bushey House, February 15, 1825.

Dear Sir,—Yours of 20th November, from New Brunswick, has given me very sincere pleasure, and I rejoice it was in my power to place you into the hands of our gracious Sovereign, who has so kindly provided for you. I am to thank you for the apples, which came very safe, and trust you will long enjoy your present post. God bless you, and ever believe me,

Yours most truly, (Signed) WILLIAM.

(**148**) Bushey House, December 23, 1826.

Dear Sir,—In answer to yours of the 17th inst., from Wales, I have to lament I could not see you when you called on me in London.

The best advice I can give is for your worthy uncle to follow up your interest with Sir William Knighton whenever anything occurs, as you are sure of the gracious intentions of the King towards yourself.

Ever believe me, yours sincerely, (Signed) WILLIAM.

Records & Deeds

The following Charters, Deeds, and Records (a selection only) are exclusively from the Scot's Hall chest, in the possession of Mrs. Thos. Fairfax Best, and relate to personal matters in connection with the descent of territorial or manorial possessions, or ancient family alliances connected therewith The perusal of some of the more early of these will afford gratification to the antiquarian and genealogist, revealing as they do interesting particulars of families long since extinct, or of localities in the County of Kent that may still in some instances be identified. The later Scot's Hall Deeds—say, those relating to the last two hundred years—we have not printed, as, in an antiquarian point of view, they are of waning interest. Abstracts only can be given in a work like this. The earlier Charters and Deeds are beautifully written, and have been wonderfully preserved from damp. These are mostly without their seals, which would appear to have been removed to enrich some collector's store. We give at page 142 a facsimile of a notarial instrument, in Monkish Latin of the time of Henry VI , and at *p. li* a similar facsimile in Norman French, of the date of 1389, as specimens of early caligraphy.

(**1**) 17 Edward I., 1289.

Grant in perpetuity from Robert de Stonlake to William, son of William de Burkinghole, of premises in Chidingston (boundaries described) in consideration of 16^{s}/ paid beforehand, and the services due for the same ; viz., 2^{d} at Michaelmas, and 1^{d} at the feast of St. Pancras. Witnesses,

THOM. DEL UNDERHILLE, ROGGO DE EADM, WILLO ET RAD ET GALFRO DE MORDENNE,
ROGGO MORKOC, GODEFRO CISSOR, THOM ET WILLO ET JOH DE CHERECOT,
MARTINO DE CHERECOT, GALFRIDO EVERHERST, et aliis.

(**2**) No date, *circa* 1289.

Grant in perpetuity from Walter, son of John de Stonlake, to Matilda, daughter of William de Burkinghole, of certain premises in Stonlake, Parish of Cheddingstone (fully described), held of the Prior of Lewes at a yearly rent of 13^{d}, Reservation of heriots, &c., according to the custom of the tenure. A clause in the Deed grants the Reversion of the premises to the said William in the event of the said Matilda's marrying without her father's consent. Witnesses,

GEOFFREY DE . . . UNDERHILLE, RALPH DE MEDHURST, REGINALD DE LA UNDERHILLE, and many others.

(**3**) Undated, *circa* A.D. 1290.

Grant in perpetuity from William de Videler to Robert [Leman] of two acres of land in Stonlake in Chidingstone (described), with licence to dispose of same in any way he may wish. A rent of 4^{d} per annum reserved, and also relief whenever the same shall happen.

Witnesses, MARTINO DE POLL. GALFRO DE MORDENNE, WILLO DE BURKINGHOLE,
GILBERTO DE CHERCOTE, GODEFRO DE CHERCOTE, RADULFO SISSORI, et multis aliis.

(**4**) 24 Edward III., 1351.

Surrender by John de Punstede, clerk, of certain premises in the vills of Horton, near Monk's Horton, and Smethe, which Henry de Copherst had enfeoffed him with upon condition that the deed of feoffment might be recalled within a year and a day of its date, without opposition on the part of him or his heirs. Witnesses,

JOHNE BERCHAM DE PUNSTED, ROBT BERCHAM, HENR ET GIRARDO FILIIS EJUSDEM HENR,
HENR SHEREEVE, ROBTO DE HALLE DE SMETHE, WILLO PIKENARS, JOHE EDM, et aliis.

(**5**) 25 Edward III., Michaelmas, 1352.

Grant in perpetuity from Peter Kempe, of Brabourne, to William Scot, of Brabourne, of a plot of a certain messuage at Colmannes, lying in the parish and the tenure of Brabourne ; also of the third part of an acre of land lying in the same parish and holding near the

Rectory of Brabourne towards the east; also of half an acre of land lying in the same parish and holding at Cotland (alias Scotland),[a] all of which were purchased by him from Thomas Stontyng; To hold the same of the Chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed. Witnesses,

JOHE DE WESBECH, Vicario de Brabourne, PETRO DE KONYNGBROKE, THOM. STONTYNGES, THOM. BAKER, JOHNE DUNKYN,[b] RADO KEMPE, WILLMO SAMPSON, et aliis.

(**6**) 26 Edward III., 1353.

Grant from John Horton, of Brahistede, to Peter Kempe, of Brabourne, of all his lands, &c., in Brabourne, for term of life, and a year after his decease to whomsoever he may appoint to hold the same.

Witnesses, PETRO KONYNGBROK, STEPHNO ANDR, THOM. STONTYNGS, GILBO WIBARN, JOHNE KEMPE, ROGOD EDMUND, JOHNE EDMUND, GALFRIDO EDMUND, et aliis.

(**7**) 35 Edward III., Tuesday, the Feast of the Purification of the Blessed Virgin Mary, 1362.

Grant in perpetuity from William Kynet, of Bonynton, to William Scot, of Brabourne, of three acres of land at Copherst and one acre of meadow called Warneres mede in Brabourne (fully described), which came to him by inheritance at the death of Juliana, his mother.

Witnesses,

JOHE KENTYS, JOHE LESSON (*qy.* Levison), THOMA. DE STONTYNGES, STEPHO ANDREW, RADHO KEMPE, JOHE LUCAS, JOHE WYNTER, RICO ELVENE, THOMA ELVENE, et aliis.

(**8**) 37 Edward III., Thursday after the Feast of St. Stephen, 1364.

Grant in perpetuity from Thomas, son of William Plog, of East Pecham, the younger, and Margery, his wife, to William de Pympe, of a house with a garden, heretofore belonging to Nicholas Godyngs, and lying between the messuage heretofore belonging to John de Barmlyngs towards the north, and the land of the same William towards the south and east, and the King's highway leading from Burneford into Halecrouche, towards the west. William Pympe gives in exchange thereof a messuage with a certain garden heretofore belonging to Richard Plogs in the town of Eastpecham.

Witnesses, ROBTO REVEKYN, JOHE MEW, junr. THOM. GODYNG, ROGERO JANEKOT, GALFR BARTOULF, WALTOD PLOG, JOHE COLT, et aliis.

(**9**) 43 Edward III., October 5, 1370.

Grant for term of life from Matilda, late the wife of Laurence Castelayn, to William Skot, of the moiety of a garden lying in Brabourne, in a place called Camolysgardyn—To hold the same of the chief lords of the fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

Witnesses, JOHNE K . . . . . THOM. HEMMYNGES, senr. RADO KEMPE, JOHNE DONEKYN, LAUR UNDYRDOWNE, JOHNE KEMPE, sen., et multis aliis.

(**10**) 49 Edward III., 1376.

A Declaration, dated Thursday before the Nativity of our Lady, 49 Edward III., testifying that Wm de Pympe, Chivaler, has enfeoffed Thomas de Cobham, Chivaler, Reginald de Cobham, Clerk, Robert de Bourne, Clerk, William Topclyve, James de Peckham, Henry Pertrich, Parson of the Church of St. Mary in Hoo, John Godiwot and John Okebourne, with all his possessions in the Counties of Kent and Sussex, and also with the advowson of the Church of Nettlestede and the Reversion of the Manor of Poldre, near Sandwich, which Dame Medeyte de Uvedale holds for term of her life, the Indenture of feoffment to take effect only in the event of his death.

Upon his death the feoffees are to grant the Manors of Nettlested, Hylthe, Pympe, and a tenement in the vill of Ealdyng, called Olyveres, and a pasture called Vyryngspiche, and 100s of rent issuing out of a Manor of Sussex to Reginald, his son, and his heirs; with reversion, in default of heirs, to William, brother of the said Reginald, and his heirs; with reversion, in default of heirs, to Richard, brother of the said William, and his heirs; with reversion, in default of heirs, to John de Frenyngham and his heirs.—Various covenants as to payment of Rents, &c.—If John de Frenyngham die without heirs, the above premises are to be sold, and the proceeds distributed in alms for the souls of Wm de Pympe and Margaret, his wife, Philip, his father, Alice, his mother, Thomas de Pympe, his brother, Thomas Malmayns, Richard de Pympe and Rose, his wife, Joane, heretofore wife of Philip de Pympe, Joane, daughter of the said William de Pympe, and for the souls of all his friends and good Christians. The Feoffees are also to enfeof his son William and his heirs with the reversion of the Manor of Poldre, with the Manor of La Case in Brenchesle, and with a tenement called La Mote; with reversion, in default of heirs, to Reginald, brother of the said William, and his heirs; with reversion, in default of heirs, to Richard, brother of the said Reginald, and his heirs; with reversion, in default of heirs, to William atte Halle and his heirs. If William atte Halle die without heirs, the Manor is to revert to the right heirs of William de Pympe, and the tenement De la Mote to Robert at Halle and his heirs, with reversion, in default of heirs, to the right heirs of Wm de Pympe, and the reversion of the said Manor of Poldre shall be sold, and the proceeds thereof distributed in alms, as before recited. A Payment of £14 per annum for 80 years is reserved out of the premises in East Peckham, and the parcel of land called Gongespiche for the support of a Chaplain to perform divine service in the church of Nettlestede, at the expiration of which period of 80 years the premises in question are to be sold, and the proceeds thereof distributed in alms, as above recited. (See Pedigree Pympe, p. 171.)

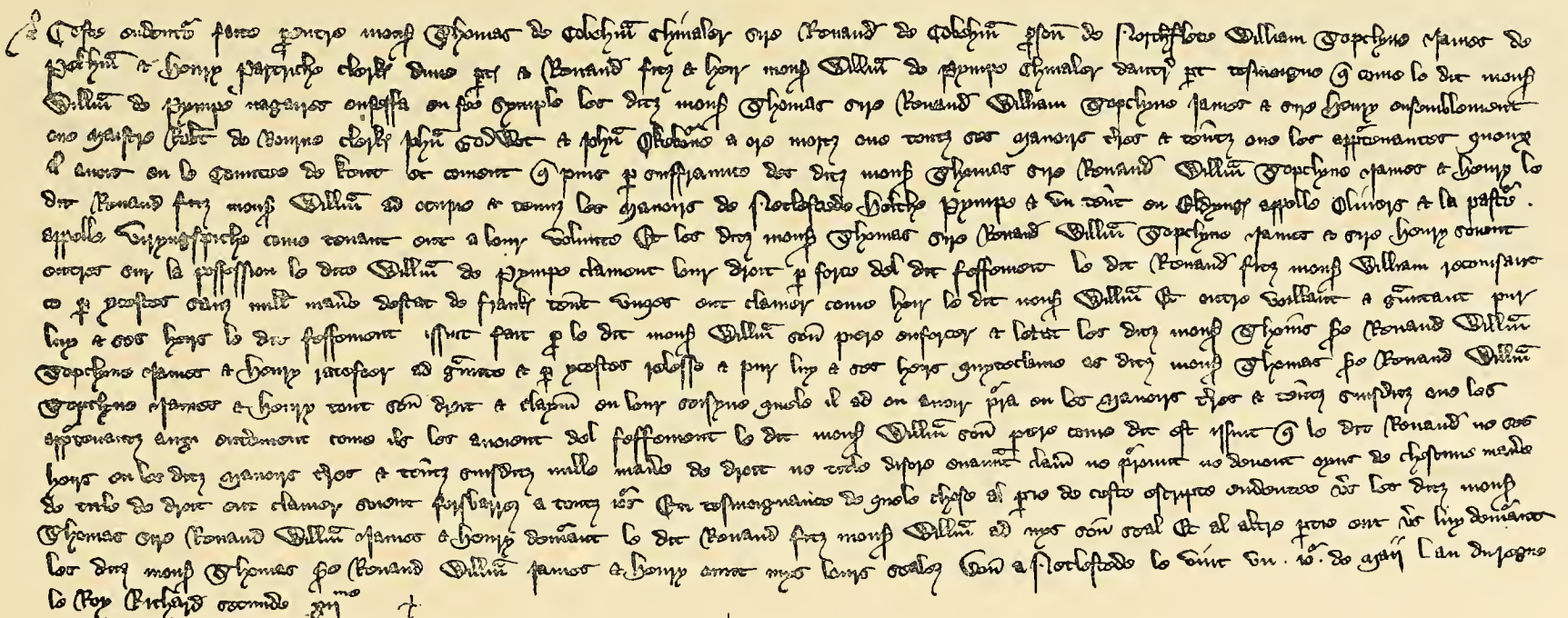
---

[a] *The term "Scotland," as applied to places in the counties of Kent and Sussex, and elsewhere, denotes land that has been tributed or scotted—that is to say, the rent of which has been appropriated time out of mind to the embankment and drainage of neighbouring low-lying lands.*

[b] *The family of Dunk now reside in the neighbourhood of Brabourne.*

FACSIMILE OF DEED OF ACKNOWLEDGMENT (NORMAN FRENCH), DATED MAY 21, 12 RICHARD II., 1389.

(See Abstract below.)



(**11**) May 21, 12th Richard II .(1389).

Acknowledgment dated 21st May, 12 Richard II., on the part of Renaud, son and heir of William de Pympe, Chivaler, that he holds the Manors of Nettlestede, Hylthe, Pympe, and a tenement in Ealdyng called Olivers, and a pasture called Viryngspicke, by the sufferance of Thomas de Cobeham, Chivaler, Sir Renaud de Cobeham, parson of Northflete, Will[m] Topclyve, James de Peckham, and Henry Partriche, clerk, as tenant at will and agreeably to the terms of an Indenture of Feoffment, whereby William Pympe his father, sometime since enfeoffed the said Thomas de Cobeham and others with all his possessions in the County of Kent.[c]

[c] *For seal of Reginald Pympe, see Facsimile of Deed.*

(**12**) 49 Edward III., 1376.

Grant whereby Thomas Cobham, Knight, Reginald Cobham, clerk, James de Pekham, William Topclive, Robert de Borne, clerk, Henry Partrich, Rector of St. Mary's Church in Hoo, John Godwot, and John Okeborne, after reciting that William de Pympe, Knight, heretofore enfeoffed them by his charter with all his lands in Eastpekham, and with a parcel of land called Gongespiche, and with a parcel of land called Wrycches, in order that they should find a chaplain to celebrate Divine Service in Nettlestede Church for the souls of William de Pympe, Knight, Margaret, his wife, Philip, father of the said William, Alice, his mother, Thomas, his brother, Thomas Malemaynes, Richard de Pympe, Rosa, his wife, Joan, wife of the said Philip de Pympe, Thomas Haryot, and of all kinsmen and benefactors of the said William and also for the souls of all the faithful deceased, do lease the said lands, &c., to John Martyn, Chaplain of the Diocese of Lincoln, for a term of 80 years, upon the same terms that the same had been granted to them, at a yearly rent of two marks. Clauses for the protection of the grantee, continuance of the services in the event of the Chaplain being ill or absenting himself, &c.

(**13**) No date, *circa* 1389.

This is a final agreement made in the Court of our Lord the King at Westminster on the morrow of the Annunciation, in the year of the reign of King Richard of England and France the . . . . . before Robert de Charlton and William Theryngod, Justices, and others of our Lord the King then being present ; between John of Lincoln, clericus, and Walter Topcliff, complainants, and Elizabeth, who was the wife of Thomas de Percy, chivaler, the younger, and John de Halsham and Phillipa, his wife, deforciants, concerning the Castle and Manor of Mitford with the Ward of the Castle of Framlington and East Aldeworth, North Mylborn with Ponteland and the hamlet of Littleland, and the townships of Calverton, Vallence, and Murdessen, members of the same manors, and of the Manor, town, and forest of Felton, and six pennyworths of rents in Mallesdon with their appurtenances in the County of Northumberland, And of the manor and soke of Dunham with its appurtenances in the county of Nottingham, And of the manor of Braborne with its appurtenances in the county of Kent, and of the manor of Colynburn Vallence with its appurtenances in the county of Wilts, and of the manors of West Lexham, Stevekey, Kerbroke, Ffylby, Possewyk, and Halkam with their appurtenances in the county of Norfolk, and of the manor of Gainsboro' with its appurtenances in the county of Lincoln : Whereupon a plea of Covenant was summoned between them in the same Court, namely, that the said Elizabeth, John de Halsham and Philippa acknowledge the said Castles and Manors of Mitford, Felton, Dunham, West Lexham, Stivekey, Kerbroke, Ffylby, Possewyk, Braborne, and Colynburn Vallence, the sokes, wards, hamlets, towns, manors, forests, and rents with their appurtenances, to be the right of the said John de Lincoln and Walter, And the said Manors of Halkham and Gainsboro' with their appurtenances to be the right of the said John de Lincoln as those which the said John and Walter have of the gift of the said Elizabeth and John de Halsham and Phillipa. And by this recognisance and final agreement the said John de Lincoln and Walter grant to the aforesaid Elizabeth the aforesaid Castles and Manors of Mitford, Felton, Dunham, and Gainsboro', the soke, wards, hamlets, towns, manors, forests, and rents with their appurtenances, and have given up the same to her in the same Court, to have and to hold to the said Elizabeth and the heirs of her body lawfully begotten, namely, the aforesaid Castle and Manors of Mitford, Felton, and Dunham, the soke, wards, hamlets, towns, manors, forests, and rents, with their appurtenances, of our Lord the King and his heirs, and the said manor of Gainsboro' with its appurtenances of the chief lords of that fee, by the service which to the said Castle, Manor, &c., belong for ever. And if it shall happen that the said Elizabeth shall die without heirs of her body begotten then after the decease of the said Elizabeth, the said Castle, Manor, &c., shall entirely remain to the lawful heirs of the said Elizabeth, to hold, namely, the aforesaid Castle, Manor of Mitford, Felton, and Dunham, the soke, ward, hamlets, townships, manors, forests, and rents, with their appurtenances, of our Lord the King and his heirs, and the said manor of Gainsboro' with its appurtenances of the chief Lords of that fee, by the services which to the said castle, manor, &c., belong for ever. And the said John de Lincoln and Walter aforesaid have granted to John de Halsham and Phillipa the aforesaid manors of West Lexham, Stivekey, Kerbroke, Ffylby, Possewyk, Braborne, Colynburn Vallence, and Halkam with their appurtenances, and have given the same to them in the same Court, to have and to hold to the said John de Halsham and Phillipa, and the heirs of the said Phillipa of her body begotten, namely, the aforesaid manors of West Lexham, Stivekey, Kerbroke, Ffylby, Possewyk, Braborne, and Colynburn Vallance, with their appurtenances of our Lord the King and his heirs, and the aforesaid manor of Halkam, with its appurtenances of the chief Lords of that fee, by the service which to that manor belongs, for ever. And if it shall happen that the said Phillipa shall die without heirs of her body begotten, then after the decease of the said John de Halsham and Phillipa the said manor and its appurtenances shall entirely remain to the right heirs of the said Phillipa, to hold, namely, the said Manors of West Lexham, Stivekey, Kerbroke, Ffylby, Possewyk, Braborne, and Colynburn Vallence with their appurtenances of our Lord the King and his heirs, and the aforesaid manor of Halkam, with its appurtenances, of the chief Lords of that fee, by the service which to that manor belongs, for ever. And this agreement as concerning the aforesaid Castle, Manor of Mitford, Felton, Dunham, West Lexham, Stivekey, Kerbroke, Ffylby, Possewyk, Braborne, and Colynburn Vallence, the soke, ward, hamlets, towns, manors, forests, and rents with their appurtenances, has been made by precept of the said Lord the King.[d] (Signatures and Seals gone.)

(**14**) 13 Richard II., April 1, 1390. A release from William Scott made to Peter Combe.

Know all men by these presents that I, William Scott, of Braborne, have demised, granted, released, and by these presents for me and my heirs have quitclaimed for ever to Peter de Combe, of the same place, his heirs and assigns, all my right and claim which I had, have, or in any manner in future may have, to four acres of land with their appurtenances in the parish and holding of Braborne, in the place called Parkmannes between the King's highway towards the east, and the land of the said Peter towards the west and north, and land of the heirs of John Donekyn (piscator) towards the south, so that neither I, the said William, nor my heirs, nor any other in my stead, may have any right or claim to the said four acres of land or to any parts or parcels thereof, nor shall be able or ought to demand or challenge any portion thereof in the future, but from all actions of right thereto by any title whatsoever we shall remain excluded for ever. In testimony whereof to these presents I have set my seal. Dated at Braborne, the first day of April, in the 13th year of the reign of King Richard the Second of England and France. Witnesses,

WM. ATTECHAMBER, JOHN KEMP (Sissor), JOHN UNDERDOWN,
WILLIAM HOLLINGBORNE, JOHN POUND (Clericus), and others.

---

[d] *For the connection and relationship of the Percys, Athols, Halshams, and Scotts, and their connection with the Manor of Brabourne, see pp. 23, 77, and 144.*

(**15**) 19 Richard II., May 12, 1396.

Grant in perpetuity from Peter Hardyman, son and heir of Simon Hardyman, of Braborne, to William Scott, of Braborne, of a messuage in the parish of Braborne, "lying between the common street toward the east, and land of the court of Braborne called Badelyande towards the south, and land of the aforesaid William towards the west, and lands of the aforesaid William and William Turner towards the north." Witnesses,

WILLIAM TURNER, JOHN KEMP (Sissor),[e] JOHN, his Son, WM. ATECHAMBERS, PETER, his Son. JOHN UNDERDOWNE, JOHN DONKIN, and many others.

(**16**) 1 Henry IV., October 25, 1400.

Grant for life to John Pympe, Esquire, of 50 marks which the Abbot, Prior, and Convent of St. Augustine's, Canterbury, heretofore compounded with King Richard II. to pay yearly to him and his successors in lieu of a larger sum being remitted to them and their successors upon each voidance of the said Abbey, which they would have been bound to pay to the Crown.

Endorsed—p ipm Regem et de dat' pdict' auctoritate Parliamenti.

(**17**) 3 Henry IV., 1402.

Grant in perpetuity from Peter de Coumbe and Alice, his wife, to William Scot, of Brabourne, of all their lands, tenements, rents, services of tenants, and a windmill, &c., in the parishes of Brabourne, Byrcholte, Wy, Hastyngleghe, and Henxhill :—with the exception of a rent of $3^s/4^d$ and a hen which John Shotwade and Peter Tannere are bound to pay to the said Peter :—the same to be held at a yearly rent of 20 marks during the lives of the same Peter and Alice, and 12 cartloads of wood for fuel are to be cut down and carried away from places most convenient in the woods and hedges belonging to the same William, at the expense of the same Peter and Alice, and 50 male sheep belonging to the same Peter and Alice are to be fed upon the sheeplands belonging to the said tenements, and are to go into the sheepfold belonging to the said William. A special covenant that in the event of the said Alice's surviving the said Peter she is to have full and bodily ease in an upper chamber at the north of the principal messuage late belonging to the said Peter in Braborne, with reasonable ease of hall and kitchen there, with freedom to disport in the gardens there, and with free ingress and egress to and from the same at all proper times during the said Alice's life :—the said chamber in all matters of expense to be kept up by the said William. Clauses of distraint, &c., in the event of the covenants not being properly carried out on the one side or the other.

Witnesses, JOHN̄E ANDREW, HEN̄R CANTEYS, JOHN̄E ARNOLD, JOHN̄E POUND, JOHN̄E SHOTWADE, THOM̄. KEMPE, et aliis multis.

In Dorso—Carta Pet̄ de Coumbe. . . . . .

(**18**) 4 Henry IV., October 20, 1403.

Inspeximus dated October 20, 4 Henry IV., of a Fine levied at Westminster on the morrow of All Souls 12 Richard II., between John de Lincoln, clerk, and Walter Topclyf, plaintiffs, and Elizabeth, late the wife of Thomas de Percy, Knt., the younger, and John de Halsham and Philippa, his wife, deforciants, touching the Castle and Manor of Mitford with the ward of the Castle of Framlington, and East Aldworth and Northmyllborn with Ponteland, and the hamlet of Liteleland, and the vills of Calverton, Valence, and Merdessen, members of the same manor, and the manor and vill and forest of Felton, and sixpennyworth of rent in Mollesdon with the appurtenances in the county of Northumberland, and the manor and soke of Dunham with the appurtenances in the county of Kent, and the manor of Colynburn Valence with the appurtenances in the county of Wilts, and the manors of Westlexham, Stivekey, Kerbroke, Filby, Possewyk, and Holkham with the appurtenances in the county of Norfolk, and the manor of Gaynesburgh with the appurtenances in the county of Lincoln ; whereby the said Elizabeth and John de Halsham and Philippa acknowledge the said manors of Mitford, Felton, Dunham, Westlexham, Stivekey, Kerbroke, Filby, Possewyk, Braburn, and Colynburn Valence, soke, ward, hamlet, vill, members, forest, and rents to be the right of the said John de Lincoln and Walter, and the said manors of Holkham and Gaynesburgh to be the right of the said John de Lincoln as of the gift of the said Elizabeth and John de Halsham and Philippa : To have and to hold to the same Elizabeth and the heirs of her body the Castle manors of Mitford, Felton, and Dunham, soke, ward, hamlet, vills, members, forest, and rent of the King and his heirs, and the manor of Gaynesburgh of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due for ever. Remainder, in case the said Elizabeth shall die without heirs of her body, to the right heirs of the same Elizabeth for ever. And John de Lincoln and Walter grant to John de Halsham and Philippa the said manors of Westlexham, Stivekeye, Kerbroke, Filby, Possewyk, Braburn, Colynburn Valence, and Holkham. To have and to hold the manors of Westlexham, Stivekeye, Kerbroke, Filby, Possewyk, Braburn, and Colynburn Valence to the said John de Halsham and Philippa and the heirs of the body of Philippa, of the Lord the King and his heirs, and the manor of Holkham of the Chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due for ever. Remainder, in case the said Philippa shall die without heirs of her body, to the right heirs of the same Philippa for ever.

(**19**) 9 Henry IV., 1408.

Grant in perpetuity from John Bendyng, Clerk, John Parc, Clerk, Robert Brokman, William Mellere, Roger de Herst, John Lushyngton, and William Hebbynge, to William Lovekyn, William Scot, and Richard Hunte, of certain premises (boundaries fully set out)

---

[e] *John Kemp, sissor (merchant tailor), probably a son of John Kemp, a celebrated Flemish clothworker, who was at the head of one of the earliest colonies of skilful weavers, fullers, and dyers who, under special and royal protection, landed in England in* 1331. *(Protection No.* 1, " *Pro Johanne Kemp, de Flandria, textore Pannorum.*" *)*

in the parish of Smethe :—which premises John Pound, of Seventon, William Kynet and John Simon, of Bircholte, heretofore granted to John Brode, Sara, his wife, John Scot, deceased, and the grantors ; and they had the same by gift and feoffment from the said John Brode. Witnesses,

WALTER ENGLISSHE, GILBERT COPHERST, JOHN COPHERST, his Brother, HENRY DYN, JOHN COPHERST, Tailor, RICHARD ATE STAPLE, JOHN WEVERE, JOHN WILKYN, and others.

(**20**) 10 Henry IV., 1409.

Grant in perpetuity from William Scot, of Brabourne, to Bartholomew Carawey, John Jurdan, Richard Propechant, the younger, of Maydestone, and John Hervy, of Brenchesle, of an annuity of £10 out of premises in the parish of Brabourne, conditional upon their being disturbed at the suit of Joan,(f) wife of the said William Scot, or their heirs, by action at law or otherwise, in the possession of certain premises in Lamberherst, granted to them by Thomas Kempe, of Wy.(g)

Witnesses, JOHN WYKERE, JOHN KYNGWODE, the younger, JOHN KYNGWODE, the elder, JOHN EPS, ROBERT WAYTE, ROBERT GILDREGGE, STEPHEN EPS, and others.

(**21**) 12 Henry IV., 1411.

Grant in perpetuity from Matilda Morys, of the parish of Merseham, to Roger atte Hele, of the same place, of premises in the parish of Brabourne (fully described, and the boundaries set out).

Witnesses, WILLIAM ATTE HELDE, WILLIAM ALEYN, WILLIAM GEFFRAY, THOMAS ATTE HOKE, THOMAS MYLYS, and many others.

(**22**) 1 Henry V., 1413.

Deed of Exchange, dated at Bircholte, on the Feast of All Saints, 1 Henry V., whereby John Vaage, of Smethe,(h) gives to William Skot, of Brabourne, all lands, tenements, rents, services, &c., belonging to him in the parish of Bircholt (the particulars fully described), to hold the same to him and his heirs for ever, in exchange of the chief Lords of the Fee for the services therefore due. William Skot, on the other hand, gives to John Vaage, of Smethe, a tenement at Throctone in the parish of Smethe, and a piece of a brook called Westbrook in the parish of Mersham, to hold the same to him and his heirs for ever in exchange of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due. A Covenant on the part of William Skot provides that if John Vaage shall at any time be removed from the premises above granted to him through legal process, without fraud or collusion on his part, owing to any superior claim not herein set forth, that then it shall be lawful for him to re-enter the premises he has granted to William Skot in Bircholte, and have his former estate in the same. A similar covenant provides for the protection of William Skot with regard to the premises above granted to him, and eight acres of land in Brabourne at Stokkesgate and Huntowne granted to John Vagge to farm.

Witnesses, WILLMO HEBBYNGE, JOHE BENGE, WILLMO ELVENE, THOMA TRNOR, WILLO ATTE BROKE, RICO ELVENE, WILLO LOVEKYN, JOHE LUSHYNGTON, ROBTO VAGGE, SIMON TRNOR, JOHE CART'E, JOHE THROCKTONE, et aliis.

(**23**) 6 Henry V., Thursday in the Feast of St. Dunstan, A.D. 1419.

Know all men by these presents that we, John Gerard, Rector of the Church of Charlton, Thomas Baker, Rector of the Church of Acrise, and Nicholas Monyn, have demised, released, and for ever from us and our heirs quitclaimed to William Scot, of Braborne, in his right and possession, being all the right and claim which we have, or in any way hereafter may have, to a piece of land called Ffreelandsdowne, with its appurtenances lying in the parish of Braborne, towards the Park of Stonting on the north, towards the land called Prioreresdowne on the east, and towards the land called Lompacre on the south, and towards the land called Admeres on the west ; which said piece of land with its appurtenances we, the said John, Thomas, Nicholas, and the aforesaid William Scot, together with Richard Sudelay, now deceased, formerly purchased together in fee simple of Roger Prince and John Hannynghurst : so that neither we, the said John Gerard, Thomas Baker, Rectors, and Nicholas, nor our heirs, nor anybody in our name, shall have any right or claim to the aforesaid piece of land with its appurtenances, nor to any parcel thereof, nor shall be able or ought to demand or challenge any part thereof in the future, but from all actions of right thereto belonging shall be excluded for ever by these presents. And I, the said Thomas Baker, Rector, and my heirs, do warrant the said piece of land called Ffreelandsdowne with its appurtenances to the said William Scot, his heirs and assigns, against all men, for ever. In testimony whereof, to this present writing I have set my seal. Dated at Braborne, Thursday in the Feast of St. Dunstan, in the sixth year of the reign of King Henry the Fifth of England, these being witnesses.

JOHN ARNOLD, PETER DODD, JOHN SHOTTWADE, JOHN HEMMING.

(f) *Joane de Orlastone, wife of William Scott, of Brabourne and Scot's Hall, Smethe.* *(See p. 104.)*

(g) *Thomas Kempe, of Olantigh, father of Cardinal Archbishop Kempe.* *(See p. 106.)*

(h) *Probably an ancestor of the Faggs, Baronets, of Mystole and Wiston, Sussex.*

24) February 1, 2 Henry VI., 1424.

Firstly—Grant in perpetuity dated February 1, 2 Henry VI., from John Passhele, Esquire, to Robert Cavendishe, Walter Bodelgate, and William Joyntour, of his manors of Thevegate, in the parish of Smethe, co. Kent, and Pashley, co. Sussex. To be held of the chief Lords of the Fee by the customs therefore due and of right accustomed.

February 1, 2 Henry VI., 1424.

Secondly—Grant, dated [Feb. 1], 2 Henry VI., whereby Robert Cavendisshe, Walter Bodolgot, and William Joyntour give to John Passhele and Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Wydeville,[i] Esq., their manors of Thevegate, in the parish of Smethe, co. Kent, and Passhele, co. Sussex, lately granted to them by the gift and feoffment of the said John Passhele: To hold the same to the said John and Elizabeth for the term of their lives . . . . without impeachment of waste; with remainder after their death to the heirs of the said John lawfully begotten of the said Elizabeth: with further remainder, in case the said John shall die without an heir thus begotten, to the right heirs of the said John for ever. To be held of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

July 26, 7 Henry VI., 1429.

Thirdly—Grant in perpetuity, dated July 26, 7 Henry VI., whereby John Passhele, Knight, gives to Richard Wodevile, William Haute, and Thomas Bodolgate, and Master Edward Clayton, Chaplain, all his manors, lands, &c., in the counties of Kent, Sussex, and Oxford. Witnesses—Robert Lord Poyninges, Roger Fynes, Knight, William Scotte, Esquire, Thomas Elys, and others.

July 26, 7 Henry VI., 1429.

Fourthly—Power of Attorney, dated July 26, 7 Henry VI., from John Passhele to William Banawa and Richard Leomynstre, to deliver seisin to Richard Wodevile, William Haute, Thomas Bodulgate, Esquires, and Edward Clayton, Chaplain, of all his manors, lands, &c., in the counties of Kent, Sussex and Oxford, to hold the same according to the tenor of a charter of concurrent date.

August 28, 9 Henry VI., 1431.

Fifthly—Deed dated August 28, 9 Henry VI., whereby Edward Wodevile, William Haute, Thomas Bodulgate, Esquires, and Edward Clayton, Clerk, grant to Nicholas Dixon, Clerk, Roger Heron, Clerk, Richard Bokeland, Esquire, and John Olney, Citizen and Mercer of the City of London, the manors of Mote Rygge and Frenshecourt, and all their lands and tenements in Bourne, co. Sussex: Except and Reserved to the same grantees to the use of John Passhele, Knight, all fees, advowsons, wardships, marriages, reliefs, heriots, and profits of court, and also all profits of woods, ponds, and fisheries in the said manors, lands, and tenements, with free ingress and egress to and from the same: To hold the same for 6 years: Paying yearly a Red Rose at the Feast of the Nativity of St. John the Baptist.

February 24, 2 Henry VI., 1424.

Sixthly—Bond dated February 24, 2 Henry VI., from John Passhele, Esquire, of the county of Sussex, to Richard Wodeville, Esquire, of the county of Northampton, for the payment of 100 marks sterling. The condition whereof is to secure the estate and possession of Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Wodeville, in the manors of Passhele, co. Sussex, and Smethe, co. Kent, to the value at farm of £40, or in other manors, lands, &c., of equal value.

July 10, 17 Henry VI., 1439.

Seventhly—Release and quitelaim, dated July 10, 17 Henry VI., from Richard Wodeville, of Maydstone, co. Kent, to Agnes and William Potyn, of all demands whatsoever in relation to any legal claims or matters of account that may be pending between them.

---

(25) 3 Henry VI., May 16, 1425.

Surrender by Thomas Seyntleger to John Tamworth of all his right in the manors and premises granted to them conjointly in the following manner:—

William Parker, and Margaret, his wife (one of the sisters and heirs of Richard de Orlaston, brother and heir of William de Orlaston, son and one of the heirs of John de Orlaston), by Fine levied at Westminster, in the Octaves of the Purification of the Virgin Mary last past, granted them a moiety of the manors of Orlaston, co. Kent, and Stonlynk, co. Sussex, and also granted that the other moieties of the same manors which William Scot, late the husband of Joan, deceased, another sister and heir of the said Richard, [j] holds for term of his life of the inheritance of the said Margaret, and which should remain to the said William Parker and Margaret, and the heirs of the same Margaret, shall remain to them and the heirs of John Tamworth for ever. William Parker and Margaret, his wife, also by Fine levied before the Mayor, Bailiff, and Jurats of Winchelsea, according to the custom of the said Town, which is of the liberty of the Cinque Ports, granted them all the lands, tenements, rents, and services which have fallen to the same Margaret, at the death of Richard de Orlaston, her brother, to hold to them and the heirs of the said John Tamworth for ever. Witnesses,

JOHE, Bishop of London, WILLO SCOT, WILLO FFYNCH, JOHE MAY,
RICO HAMYN, et aliis. (Seal undecipherable).

---

(26) 3 Henry VI., May 20, 1425.

Power of Attorney from John Tamworth to Thomas de Gore[k] to deliver seisin to William Scot of that moiety of the manor of Orlaston which William Parker and Margaret, his wife, by Fine gave to him and Thomas Seyntleger (who by deed dated May 16, 3 Hen. VI., has surrendered his portion to him) according to the terms of a charter from the same John to the same William.

---

[i] *Richard Woodville, father of Lord Rivers and grandfather of Elizabeth Woodville, Queen of Edward IV.*

[j] *For Pedigree of Orlastone, see p.* 104.

[k] *Thomas de Gore, or Gower, an ancestor of the Scotts, a supposed descendant of Sir Robert Gower, of Brabourne, who bore the same arms as Gower the poet, and asserted by Weaver to have been his ancestor. (See pp.* 58 *and* 171.*)*

(**27**) 3 Henry VI., May 20, 1425.

John Tamworth (after reciting a Fine levied at Westminster in the Octaves of the Purification of the Virgin Mary, 3 Henry VI., and a Surrender dated May 16, 3 Henry VI.) grants in perpetuity to William Scot the manor of Orlaston, co. Kent.

[The documents above recited will be found fully calendared under their respective dates.]

Witnesses, THOMA ELYS, JOHE MAY, THOMA CHAPMAN, HENRꝰ DE BONYNGTON, STEPHO WYNDEZ. JOHE CREKYNG, THOMA DE GORE (or Gower), et aliis.

(**28**) 3 Henry VI., May 24, 1425.

Grant from William Scot, of Brabourne, co. Kent (late husband of Joan, one of the sisters and heirs of Richard de Orlaston, brother and heir to William de Orlaston), to Joan, late the wife of William Orlaston, now the wife of William Burton, citizen and grocer of London, for term of her life, of an annuity of twenty marks out of the manor of Orlaston, co. Kent.

(**29**) 7 Henry VI., 1429.

Grant in perpetuity from William Copherst, of the parish of Aldyngton, to John Copherst, Tailor,[t] of the parish of Smethe, of a messuage and nine acres of land and a rood of meadow lying separate and situate in the parish and in the holding of the Court of Aldyngton. The messuage and two pieces of land adjoining thereunto contain two acres of land, and lie adjoining the King's highway on the south, towards a lane leading from the King's highway to the land of William Vag on the west, towards the lands of William Vag and John Laurens on the north, and towards the lands of John Laurens on the east. Three acres of land lie evenly, heading on the east towards the lands of the heirs of William Fostone, on the west towards the lands of Andrew Cook, on the north skirting the King's highway, and on the south towards the lands of William Scot, and two acres of land of the said nine acres. Two acres of land lie evenly, heading on the south towards the lands of Master John Passhele, Knt., on the north towards the said three acres of land, on the east skirting the lands of the said William Scot and John Copherst, and on the west towards the lands of the said Andrew Cook and William Kynet. The other two acres of lands lie evenly, heading towards the said two acres of land on the west, on the east towards a lane leading from the King's highway to a place called Wastede, on the south skirting the lands of the said John Copherst, and on the north towards the lands of William Scot and William Holyngbroke. The rood of meadow lies in Westmede, near the meadow lands of John Wybarn and John Copherst. To hold the same of the chief lords of the fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

Witnesses, (Seal gone.)

ARNOLDO ELVEVE, ANDREA COOK, WILLO KYNET,
JOHNE SHYTEFORD, JOHNE CARTER, et multis aliis.

(**30**) 11 Henry VI., 1433.

Grant by the Lord Thomas Echyngham, Lord of Echyngham, to Geoffrey Noryngton and his heirs, of six acres of land lying together by the King's highway called Hetteswall on the south, and land of the heirs of Vincent Ffynch towards the north, "et capitandꝰ ad pꝺdcam tꝺra" on the west, with its appurtenances in Lyde and "in the fee of Aldyngton" for a term of 20 years at £10 per ann., by equal portions at Easter and Michaelmas for all services and secular demands. The deed contains the usual covenants. Dated at Lyde, on the Feast of St. Michael the Archangel, 11th Henry VI.

(**31**) 12 Henry VI., 1434.

Grant in perpetuity from Alice Hadekyn, relict of John Hadekyn, of Aldyngton, to John Carter, of Aldyngton, of half an acre of land lying in the parish of Smethe and in the holding of Evegate. To hold the same of the chief lords of the fee by the services therefore due to them.

Witnesses,

EDDO PASCHELE, WILLO . . . . ., THOMA WYDON, JOHE WYDON, et multis aliis.

(**32**) 13 Henry VI., December 15, 1435.

Grant from Stephen Bettenham, John Beaufitz, Peter Colpeper, William Sybthorpe, Vicar of the Church of Ealdyngge, Henry de Bourne, Parson of the Church of Mechynge, late Parson of the Church of Akrise, William Cheyne, and Thomas Horden, to Roger Isle, kinsman and next of blood of John de Frenyngham, of Lose (viz. son of John Isle, son of Joan, sister of John de Frenyngham, father of Ralph Frenyngham, father of the said John de Frenyngham, of Lose), of the manors of Frenyngham, Cherton, Sondrissh, Bradebourne, and Tymberden, in Sevenoke, co. Kent, with lands, tenements, rents, farms, and services in the parishes of Frenyngham, Horton, Eynesford, Kyngesdon, Sondrissh, Bradstede, Chidyngstone, Hevere, Leghe, Okolte, Chyvenyngge, Sevenoke, and Otteford; also a messuage in Frenyngham held by William Hunt for life by demise from John Colpeper, of Toxenothe, William Makenade, Reginald Pympe, and William Sybthorpe, with remainder after his death to the said grantees: All which manors and premises heretofore belonged to John Frenyngham, and were granted to the present grantors by John Colpeper and Reginald Pympe: To have and to hold to Roger Isle in tail male of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services theretofore due and accustomed, they also finding two chaplains, the one in

---

[t] *The term "tailor" ("cissor" or "sissor") has here scarcely the modern acceptation of the word. Four or five centuries ago the term "tailor" applied to a maker of cloth. This trade, in East Kent, was very much in the hands of the Flemings.*

the Church of Frenyngham and the other in the Church of Sondrissh, during 80 years next ensuing, to celebrate Divine Service for the souls of John Frenyngham, of Lose, and Alice, his wife, Ralph Frenyngham, Knight, father of the said John Frenyngham, and Lady Katherine, wife of the said Ralph, mother of the said John Frenyngham, of Lose, John Frenyngham, grandfather of the said John and Agnes, consort of the same, John, grandfather of Hugh and Thomas, Earls of Stafford, and Ralph, brother of the said Thomas the Earl, and the souls of all men to whom John Frenyngham is indebted, and all the faithful deceased: paying to each priest a yearly salary of 10 marks: the salary to be continued to the priests so chosen in the event of their living through the whole term, even though they be too infirm to perform their duties: it not being incumbent, however, upon Roger Isle to find other priests to perform their duties: Remainder, in the event of Roger Isle dying without heir male, to John de Pympe, son of Reginald Pympe, in tail male, fettered with the same, conditions of tenure. Like remainders to John de Pympe, Thomas Salman, son of Thomas Salman, Knight, Ralph Salman, brother of the said Thomas Salman, Thomas de Pympe, brother of John de Pympe, with remainder, in case of failure of tail male in all these persons, to Roger Isle, his heirs and assigns, for ever, as the right heir of the said John de Frenyngham, of Lose, as above declared. The support of the two priests to cease at the expiration of the said term of 80 years. Various covenants for securing the finding and support of the above two priests.[m]

CLADICH *(Officer of Court).*

---

(33) 24 Henry VI., 1446.

Grant in perpetuity from Henry, Cardinal of England and Bishop of Winchester, John, Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Haukes, Clerk, and William Brewer, Clerk, to Joan, wife of John Lewkenore, Esquire, of the manor of Brabourne, co. Kent, with the advowsons of Churches, Priories, Knights' fees, liberties, woods, meadows, feedings, pastures, markets, waters, warrens, parks, commons, paths, ways, rents, and services thereunto belonging, and all other lands and tenements which they have in the vill of Brabourne.

Witnesses, THOMA KYRIELL, Knt.,[n] JOHE PASSHELE, Knt., WILLO SEPVANNES, Knt.,[o] GERVASIO CLYFTON, Esquire,[p] JOHE SCOT, Esquire, et multis aliis.

(Two Seals mutilated and uninteresting.)

---

(34) 26 Henry VI., December 14, 1448.

Grant in perpetuity from John Howchon and Thomas Melle, of Smethe, to John Scot, Esquire, of Brabourne, of the moiety of five acres of land lying in a piece of land called Hasdland, in the parish of Smethe, and in the holding of the court of Aldyngton, towards the land of John Scot and John Pareys towards the south and east, and towards the land of John Passhele towards the south-east, west, and north. To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

---

(35) 27 Henry VI., August 16, 1449.

Grant in perpetuity from John Lewkenore, Esquire, and Joan, his wife, to Thomas Sporiay, of half a virgate of land with a water-course, lying in the parish of Brabourne, co. Kent, towards the land of Sampson Beaute on the north, west, and south sides, and towards the land of John Mownte on the east side, at a yearly rent of 4d.

Witnesses, STEPHO ANDREWE, JOHE ALEYN, STEPHO SHOTEWADE, PETRO BAKER, WILLMO SHOTEWADE, JOHE CLARKE, PETRO WYLLOK, et multis aliis.

---

(36) 29 Henry VI., Saturday before Michaelmas, 1451.

Release from Geoffrey Wylles, of the parish of Pensherst, son of William Willes, heretofore of Alkynden, in the parish of Werehorne, and Henry Willes, his son, of the parish of Lenham, to John Scot, of the parish of Braborne, of all the estate and claim which they now or hereafter may have in the manor of Orleston, co. Kent, or in any lands and tenements, rents, farms, and services, with all their rights and appurtenances in the parishes of Orlestone, Yvechirche, Werehorne, and Snave which heretofore belonged to William Scot, father of the said John.

---

[m] *The following Pedigrees are educed from the above grant:—*

Agnes . . . . . = John de Frenyngham.

Lady Katherine. . . . = Sir Ralph.

Alice . . . . = John de Frenyngham, of Loose.

Joan de Frenyngham, sister of John. = (John) Isle or Isley.

John Isle.

Roger Isle.

John de Stafford, a quo.

Hugh, third Baronet, second Earl of Stafford, said to be son of Ralph, 2nd Baron.

Thomas, Earl of Stafford.

Ralph Stafford, murdered by John Holland, half brother of Richard II.

The arms of Stafford, Frenyngham, Isley, and Pympe are emblazoned in stained glass in the church windows of Nettlested, Kent.

[n] *Sir Thomas Keriel, the last of the renowned De Criols. For distinguished services in the French wars his arms were augmented by the supercession of the Canton to which he was entitled to another bearing the Royal arms (France and England quarterly). He was beheaded in 1461, second battle of St. Albans.*

[o] *Sir William Sepvans, Knight. See his brass in Chartham Church, Kent.*

[p] *Sir Gervase Clifton. See note, p. lix.*

(**37**) 33 Henry VI. January 8, 1455.

A Deed of Inspeximus, reciting—

1stly—A Petition to the Lord Chancellor by John Pashley, Esq., son and heir of John Pashley, Knight,[q] alleging that his father was seised in fee of the manor of Thevegate, Kent, and the manors of Pashley and Tysherst Moote (Mote), Rigge, and Ffrenchcourt, with other lands, &c., in Bourne, Sussex, and in the third part of the manor of Cheeping Norton, county of Oxford, and thereof enfeoffed Richard Wideville, now passed to God, William Haute, Thomas Bodulgate, Esqrs., and Edward Clayton, Priest, in trust to fulfil the will of Sir John Pashley, which directed that they should make estate jointly to Sir John and Elizabeth, his wife, and their heirs, of the manors, &c., in Oxford and Kent, and the manors of Pashley and Tysherst, in Sussex, and in default of issue to the right heirs of Sir John, and also should grant the manors of Moote, Rigge, and Ffrenchcourt, and lands in Bourne, Sussex, to such persons as the said Richard would name, for a term of six years, and on the expiration of that term should make estate to the said John of the manors of Moote, Rigge, and Ffrenchcourt, and lands in Bourne, Sussex, aforesaid, to him and his heirs for ever. That the suppliant was son and heir to the said Sir John and Elizabeth, his wife, and that the said manors, &c., in Oxford and Kent, and of Pashley in Sussex, ought to have descended to him as such heir, and that the residue of the said manors (Moote, Rigge, and Ffrenchcourt, and lands and tenements in Bourne, Sussex) ought to be his as son and heir of the said Sir John, and further, that both Sir John and Elizabeth had died without estate being made to them by the said feoffees of any part of the said lands. The suppliant had oftentime required them to make estate to him, according to the will of Sir John, which they refused to his final "disherison," unless remedied by the Lord Chancellor. He therefore prayed that writs might be directed to the said William, Thomas, and Edward to appear before the Court for examination and decision.

2ndly—An Indenture to the said Petition, annexed, between John Pashley, Knight, on the one part, Richard Wideville, William Haute, Thomas Bodulgate, and Edward Clayton, Priest, of the other part, dated London, the 14th July, 9th Henry VI. (1431), witnesseth that the said Richard, William, Thomas, and Edward were enfeoffed by the said John of the said recited manors in Sussex, Kent, and Oxford in trust to fulfil his will, the intent of which was that as to the lands in Oxford and Kent, and the manors of Pashley and Tysherst in Sussex, the said feoffees should enfeof jointly the said John and Elizabeth and their heirs, and in default of issue the heirs of Sir John for ever. That the said feoffees should grant the manors of Moote, Rigge, and Ffrenchcourt, and lands in Bourne, Sussex, to persons to be named by the said Richard, for six years from Easter last, with certain reservations, and that after the said term they should re-enfeof the said Sir John in the manors of Moote, Rigge, and Ffrenchcourt, and lands in Bourne, Sussex, to him and his heirs for ever.

3rdly—A Writ dated 20th May, 32 Henry VI. (1454), directed to the Prior of Christchurch, Canterbury, and the Mayor of that city, anthorizing them to examine on oath the said William Haute and such others as they should think fit, and should make a return under their seal accordingly. The endorsement thereon contains the return and certificate of Thomas Goldstone, Prior of Christchurch, and John Mullyng, Mayor of Canterbury, to the writ aforesaid, to the effect that they had examined the said William Haute, and forwarded his depositions in a schedule annexed.

4thly—An Examination of William Haute before the said Prior and Mayor, taken in Christchurch, Canterbury, on the 14th June 32 Henry VI. (1454), affirms the truth as regards the tenures of the aforesaid manors and lands by the said Sir John Pashley, and of the appointment of the feoffees before named and for the purposes before recited, and declares that Elizabeth, wife of Sir John, was the daughter of the said Richard Wideville, that notwithstanding the stipulation of the above recited Indenture of the 14th July, 9 Henry VI. (1431), the said William, Thomas, and Edward until the death of Richard Wideville always remained in possession of the lands, and further that after his death no request by Sir John or his wife was made in their lifetime to enfeof them according to the tenure of the said Indenture. Further, that the said William Haute declared on his oath that the said John Pashley was the son and heir of the said Sir John and Elizabeth, and that the said lands ought to descend to him, and he knew no other nearer heir, that he never refused to make estate, and was willing when his co-feoffees were ready to do so.

5thly—An Examination in Chancery of Edward Clayton, taken on the 5th July, 32 Henry VI. (1454), agreeing with the affirmation of William Haute before recited; also an Examination in Chancery of Thomas Bodulgate, taken on the 18th October, 33 Henry VI. (1454), to the same effect.

6thly—A Conveyance, dated at Thevegate, the 20th October, 33 Henry VI. (1455), from William Haute, Thomas Bodulgate, and Edward Clayton, a Priest, to John Pashley, Esq., of the said manors, lands &c., before recited, and to his heirs for ever, and in default of heirs to the right heirs of Sir John Pashley, Knight, for ever. Witnesses—Roger Lewknor, Knight, Thomas Echyngham, Esq., Richard Dalingrigge, Esq., John Scott, Esq., Robert Horne, Esq, and others. An appointment of Jacob Sydely and John Tregoz as their attornies follows, witnessed by the same parties.

7thly—Also a Recognizance made in Chancery by the said Haute, Bodulgate, and Clayton, to the following effect—That they, the said Haute and Bodulgate, came before the Court on the 16th November in the aforesaid year, and made acknowledgment of the aforesaid writing, and that the said Edward on the 5th December did the same.

And we (the King), at the request of the said John Pashley, Esq., have caused the tenour of Petition, Indenture, Writs, Examinations, Enrolments, Charters, Writings, and Recognizances aforesaid to be exemplified by these presents. Witness ourself at Westminster, 18 Jan^{y}, 33rd year of our reign.

Ex^{r} p Thom^{a} Kyrkeby, Ricm Wetton clic. NAYLER *(Officer of Court).*

(**38**) 35 Henry VI., November 13, 1457.

Indenture between Sir John Cheyne, Knight of the Shire of Kent,[r] and John Scott, Esq., of the same Shire, reciting that above the duties owing by the said Sir John to the said John Scott, Esq, contained in a certain obligation between them, Sir John Cheyne was indebted to John Scott, Esq., in the sum of £220, for payment whereof it was agreed that the said John Scott should have Bourne Wood, next the Manor of Orlaston, containing 200 acres, in satisfaction of £120, and 86 acres of marshland in Romney Marsh in satisfaction of

---

[q] *For connection and relationship of the Pashleys, Woodvilles, Bodulgates, and Scotts, see Pedigree, p. 170. Sir Richard Woodville, mentioned in this Deed, was grandfather of Queen of Edward IV. He was buried in Maidstone Church, Kent, and a beautiful brass of himself and Lady, with heraldic quarterings, formerly existed there.*

[r] *For relationship existing between Sir John Cheyne (or Cheney) and Sir John Scott, see Will of John Pympe, p. 169.*

the remaining £100. Sir John Cheyne and his feoffees to retain the said lands to the use of the said John Scott and his heirs, on condition that if Sir William Ffienyes, Lord Saye, should hereafter buy the manor of Crowthorne, Kent, of Sir John Cheyne, Sir John should pay to him, the said John Scott, the said £220. If any of Sir John Cheyne's children should marry any of the children of Lord Saye, so that a joint estate of the Manor of Crowthorne should be made to them, the sum of £120 to be paid to the said John Scott, and he to surrender the said wood and retain the 86 acres of marsh for the £100. If the wood should be found to be over 200 acres, the said John Scott to pay for the surplus after the rate of £120 for 200 acres. Sir John Cheyne to be at liberty to fell and carry away timber for five years. If the said John Scott refused Bourne Wood at the end of the five years or during that term, Sir John to pay him £120 by two instalments of £60 each, the first £60 one year after notice, and the residue at the expiration of another year.

(Signed) FFERMORY *(Officer of Court).*

---

(39) 35 Henry VI., November 30, 1457.

Lease for five years from John Leukenore, Lord of Brabourne, to Thomas Elvy, of the parish of Braborne, co. Kent, husbandman, of a pasture called Crowlese, within the park of Braborne. Covenants for keeping the premises in proper condition.

---

(40) 36 Henry VI., May 30, 1458.

Grant in perpetuity from Peter Atte Chambre, of Tanyngton, near Canterbury, to John Scot, Esquire, of a croft of land called Peakenfeld, containing two acres and a half of land lying in the parish and holding of Brabourne (the boundaries set out). To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

Witnesses, GERVASIO CLIFTON, Milite,[t] WILLO CRAPSOM, STEPHO MARCHALL, PETRO RYCHERE, SIMONE DOD, JOHE DOD, et multis allis.

---

(41) No date, assumed to be *circa* 1460.

Grant in perpetuity from John Cheyne, Knight, Thomas Seintnicolas, Ralph Seintleger, William Appulderfield, John Rowe, John Metheley, Ralph Josselyn, John Norton, of Borden, Thomas Fermory, William Bygge, and William Harlokynden, to John Scott, John Fogg, Knights, John Dygges and William Fynche, Esquires, of a wood called Burnwode, lying in the parishes of Orlanston, Werehorne, and Rokynge, co. Kent, of a rent of 4s/6d out of premises at Le Hamme, in the parish of Orlanston, of premises in Romney Marsh, co. Kent; of premises in Romney Marsh, near the manor of Tatenham, in the parishes of Sellynge Demecherche, Olakmanston, and St. Marycherche, co. Kent (all fully described and the boundaries set out); which same wood, rent, and premises were heretofore parcel of the manor of Crowthorn, co. Kent, and the same manor was heretofore held by the grantors with Robert Horne, deceased, and John Scott by gift and feoffment from Thomas Wynslowe, citizen and clothworker of London, and William Wynslowe, gentleman.

Witnesses, GEORGIO KNOLDANE, ROBERTO WHITE, JOHE FREND, WILLO FFOX, RICO LYNTER, et multis aliis. (Seals mostly perfect; mostly crests or devices, but no coats-of-arms.)

---

(42) 3 Edward IV., May 10, 1464.

Grant in perpetuity from Thomas Aleyn, of the parish of Brabourne, to John Scott, Knt., and William Harlakynden, of a piece of land called Newland, containing three acres and a half of land lying in the parish of Brabourne and in the holding of the court there, adjoining the land of John Scott on the north-west, the King's highway on the north-east, the land of the heirs of William Laurens on the east, and the land of the heirs of William Ivenet on the south-west. To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed. Witnesses,

THOMA IVENET, WILLO ELVENE, THOA ELVENE, SIMON ELVENE, WILLO FOX, et multis aliis.

---

(43) 4 Edward IV., February 20, 1465.

Grant in perpetuity from Gervase Clifton, Knt., John Fogge, Knt., William Godyng, and William Fynche, to John Scot, Knt., of the manors of Combe and Hayton, co Kent, and all other lands and tenements, rents and services, in the parishes of Braborne, Wye, Hastynglee, Byrcholt, Stanford, Westyngangre, and Monks Horton, co. Kent, heretofore granted to them conjointly by the said John Scot. To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

(Two seals attached to this deed, the first being that of Sir Gervase Clifton, Knt.) FFERMORY *(Officer of Court).*

---

(44) 4 Edward IV., February 20, 1465.

Power of Attorney to Thomas Ovyngton and Thomas Wakefeld from Gervase Clifton, Knt., John Fogge, Knt.,[t] William Godyng, and William Fynche,[u] to deliver up in their name and stead to John Scot, Knt., full and peaceable possession and seisin of the manors of

---

[t] *"Gervasio Clifton."—Sir Gervase Clifton had married the widow of William Scot, of Scot's Hall, and there resided. He was at the Battle of Tewkesbury in 1471, taken prisoner, and beheaded in the market place of that town, together with Edmund, Duke of Somerset, Lord St. John, Sir Thomas Gresham, and others, twelve in all.*

[t] *Sir "John Fogge," Treasurer of the Household of Edward IV., the founder of the beautiful church at Ashford, Kent, where his tomb still exists in the chancel.*

[u] *William Finch, probably a son of Vincent Fynche, of Netherfield, and ancestor of the Finches, Earls of Winchelsea. (See preceding deed.)*

Combe and Hayton, co. Kent, and all other lands and tenements, rents and services, with all their appurtenances in the parishes of Braborne, Wye, Hastynglee, Byrcholt, Stanford, Westygangre, and Monk's Horton, co. Kent, heretofore granted to them conjointly by the said John Scot, according to the tenor and form of a charter by them made to the said John Scot.

FFERMORY *(Officer of Court).*

---

(45) 5 Edward IV., 1466.

Power of Attorney whereby Ralph Botiller, Knight, Lord of Sudeley, Richard Fenys, Knight, Lord Dacre, Thomas Echyngham, Knight, Roger Lewkenore, Knight, Thomas Leukenore, Esquire, Thomas Hoo, Esquire, and Bartholomew Bolney, Esquire, appoint Thomas Wakefeld, James Kyngesmyll, and Thomas Ovyngton, their attornies, to deliver up seisin of the manor of Brabourne, co. Kent, to Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry, Earl of Essex, John, Lord Wenlok, John Scot, Knight, William Tyrrell the elder, Knight, Edward Berkle, Nicolas Husce, William Haut, Walter Hert, Clerk, Richard Forde, John Sellyng, Esquire, John Orvelle, John Goryng, Thomas Bellyngeham, Nicholas Lathell, John Fust, John Apsle, Vincent Fynche, Roger Brent, John Aldy, and Thomas Goldwell, Fishmonger. (Signed) HOO. (Seals gone.)

---

(46) 5 Edward IV., July 12, 1466.

INSPEXIMUS (at the request of John Scot (Knight), dated at Westminster, July 12, 5 Edward IV., of a Petition, Answer, Replication, Rejoinder, and Decree in Chancery, which may be briefly described in the following manner :—

1st—Petition of John Lewkenore and Jane,[v] his wife, that Ralph Botiler, Knight, Lord Sudeley, Richard Fenys, Knight, Lord Dacre, Thomas Echyngham, Knight, Roger Leukenore, Thomas Hoo, Thomas Leukenore, and Bartholomew Bolney be compelled to make an estate and feoffment of the manor of Brabourne, co. Kent, to Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, Harry, Earl of Essex, John, Lord Wenlock, William Tyrrell the elder, Knight, Edward Berkeley, Nicholas Husey, William Haut, Walter Hert, Clerk, Richd. Ford, Willm. Sellyng, Esquire, John Ernele, John Goring, Thomas Bellyngeham, Nicholas Lathell, John Fust, John Apsle, Vincent Fynche, Roger Brent, John Aldy, and Thomas Goldewell, Fishmonger, in order that they may thereby have power to carry out a settlement of the same manor in favour of John Lewkenore and Jane, his wife, in tail male, and in default of such issue to the heirs of the said Jane lawfully begotten, and in default of such issue to Sir John Scot and his heirs and assigns for evermore, according to covenants entered into for that purpose by a Deed of Feoffment, Fine, Recovery, &c., all set out.

2nd—Thomas Hoo, on behalf of himself and his fellows, answers that he is quite willing to comply with the prayer of the Petition upon being certified that Jane Lewkenore wishes that the abovementioned settlement shall be carried out.

3rd—John Leukenore and Jane, his wife, reply that they both, and in especial Jane, wish that the prayer of their Petition shall take effect.

4th—Thomas Hoo rejoins that it being now made clear to him that John Leukenore and Jane his wife wish it, he will at any time be ready to make feoffment and estate of the manor of Brabourne demanded in the above Petition.

5th—Decree in Chancery, dated June 12, 5 Edward IV., directing that Thomas Hoo do make the estate and feoffment of the manor of Brabourne as demanded in the said Petition.

Ex^{r} p. Willm Bolton and Baldwinū Hide, clīcos.

---

(47) 6 Edward IV., September 20, 1467.

Grant in perpetuity from John Cobbe, of Newcherch, to John Scott, Knt., of a certain pasture for one cow upon the commons of Hamme, heretofore granted to him by Simon White, together with William Langham, now deceased. To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

Witnesses, WILLO HARLAKYNDEN, JOHĒ COBBE, junr.,[w] WILLO COBBE,
RICŌ SEXBY, JOHĒ FFREND, et multis aliis. (Seals gone.)

---

(48) 7 Edward IV., August 4, 1468.

Grant in perpetuity from Stephen Bettenham,[x] of the parish of Cranebroke, Gentleman, and John Badmynton, of Appildare, to Thomas Godfrey,[y] George Knoldane, Thomas Elvene, William Fox, and William Knetchebole,[z] of fifteen pieces of land, meadow, and pasture called Wythonys, containing twenty-four acres of land lying together in the parish of Smethe and in the holding of the courts at Aldyngton and Thefgate, towards the lane called le Melbroklane, leading from Thefgate unto Stonestede towards the west, towards the said

---

[v] *For the connection of Sir John Lewkenore and Jane, his wife, with the family of Scott, see pp.* 23—79, 80.

[w] *The Harlackendens and Cobbs were anciently families in good repute in East Kent, the name of Cobb or Cobbe being now frequently found amongst the gentry of that county. Philipott and Kilburne, Kentish historians, state that the Harlackendens were one of the earlist families after the Norman Conquest who resided in the Weald of Kent, and further say that in the Harlackenden Chapel, in Woodchurche a memorial existed in their time* (1620 *to* 1700) *to William de Harlackenden,* A.D. 1081*; but doubts have been expressed as to whether the tomb in question had not been replaced in the time of Henry IV. or Henry V.*

[x] *Stephen Bettenham, together with Sir Thomas Culpeper, William Rykhill, Roger Ashburnham, and John Edwards were appointed Commissioners for the repair and maintenance of the sea-walls between the town of Kentbregge and Newenden, in the county of Sussex, and to act therein according to the law and custom of this realm and the custom of Romney Marsh.*

[y] *The "Godfreys," an ancient armigerous family in Romney Marsh and East Kent at an early period. In the 17th and 18th centuries members of this family occupied various positions of trust and importance in connection with the county*

[z] *"William Knetchebole," an ancestor doubtless of the present family of Knatchbulls, Baronets, of Mersham Hatch.*

lane and the land of Thomas Laurens towards the north, towards the lands of John Passhele, Esq., called Thefgate Park and Thefgate Mead, towards the east and south, heretofore granted to them by Margery Raynold, alias Chaloner, with other lands and tenements. To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed.

Witnesses, THOMA LAURENS, WILLO TURNOR, WILLO HALKE,
THOA BYGGE, THOMA FFAGG, et multis aliis. (Two seals undecipherable.)

---

(49) 11 Edward IV., July 18, 1472.

Surrender by Ralph Botiller, Knight, Lord Sudeley, Richard Fenys, Knight, Lord Dacre, Thomas Echyngham, Knight, Roger Leukenore, Knight, Thomas Hoo, Esquire, Thomas Leukenore, Esquire, and Bartholomew Bolney, to Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry, Earl of Essex, Edward Berkele, William Haut, Walter Hert, Clerk, Richard Ford, John Sellyng, Esquire, John Goryng, Thomas Bellyngeham, Nicholas Lathell, John Fust, John Apsley, Vincent Fynche, Roger Brent, John Aldy, and Thomas Goldewell, Fishmonger, of all the estate, right, title, &c., now belonging or which may belong to them in the manor of Brabourne, co. Kent.

(Seals, devices or crests ; the Bolney coat of arms mutilated.) (Signed) WODECOK.

---

(50) 11 Edward IV,, October 16, 1472.

Confirmation by Joan Leukenore, widow, late the wife of John Leukenore, Knt.,[a] deceased, of the estate and possession which Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry, Earl of Essex, Edward Berkele, William Haut, Walter Hert, Clk., Richard Ford, John Sellyng, Esquire, John Goryng, Thomas Bellyngham, Nicholas L'athell,[b] John Fust, John Apsley, Vincent Fynche, Roger Brent, John Aldys, and Thomas Goldewell, Fishmonger,[c] have through divers charters, writings, and evidences in the manor of Brabourne, co. Kent.

(Signed) WODECOK *(Officer of Court).*

---

(51) 12 Edward IV., July 6, 1473.

Grant in perpetuity from John Gough, Clk., Vicar of the parish church of Talsondarsy, co. Essex,[d] to Richd. Wydeville, Knt., Edward Wydevile,[e] Nicholas de la Hay, Gentilman, Robert Gurlyn, Gentilman, and John Ffag. yeoman, of the Manor of Evegate with the appurtenances, co. Kent, and all other lands, tenements, rents, and services, with their appurtenances, co. Kent, which the same John Gough, together with Thomas Gower, Esquire, and Walter Membbys, Gentleman, now deceased, heretofore held by the gift and enfeoffment of John Passheley, Knt. To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the customs and services therefore due and accustomed.

Witnesses, WILLO FOX, THOMA LAURENCE,[f] RICO A BARNE,[g] et multis aliis.

---

(52) 12 Edward IV., 1473.

Mandate dated July 11, 12 Edward IV., from the King to the Justices of the Common Pleas, informing them that in an Assize of novel disseisin Nicholas Sharp and Richard Palmer had recovered seisin against William Passhele of tenements in Smethe, Aldyngton, Mersham, Braborne, Wynelefberghe, Rokynge, Bylsynge, Bylsyngton, Asshetesford, Sellynge, and Kyngysnothe, and £66 were awarded to them as damages, which damages have not yet been paid. The King directs the Justices to inspect the Record and Process of the Assize which he sends to them, and to do therein what shall be right according to law and custom.

The Record and Process of the Assize held on Saturday after the Feast of St. Mary Magdalene, 11 Edward IV., is annexed, in which the finding of the Jury is that John Pashele, Esq., son and heir of John Pashele, Knight, being seised of the manor of Thevegate in his demesne

---

[a] *Sir John Lewknor, Knight, killed at Battle of Tewkesbury* 1471. *His daughter Sybilla married Sir William Scott, of Scot's Hall, and carried the manor of Brabourne to him through a distinguished descent.*

[b] *A probable descendant of the Earls of Athol (L'athcles or L'ascelles), Lords of Brabourne Manor.*

[c] *Thomas Goldewell, "Fishmonger," of the Company of Fishmongers, London, and probably a kinsman of Prior Goldewell, of Canterbury, and of Thomas Goldewell, secretary to Edward IV., afterwards Bishop of Norwich. The family of Goldewell were of Great Chart, Ashford, in Kent.*

[d] *We have always contended for a near relationship between the Gowers of Brabourne (see p.* 60*) and John Gower the poet. Here we find the Vicar of Talson Darsy (Tolleshunt Darcy), in Essex, acting as a trustee with Thomas Gower, the ancestor of the Scotts and a descendant of Sir Robert Gower, of Brabourne and Smeeth. The circumstance would not be remarkable excepting that Talson Darsy is the adjoining parish to that of Braxted in Essex, in which some seventy years previously John Gower the poet had officiated as a secular priest.*

[e] *Sir Richard Woodeville and Edward Woodville, brothers of Queen Elizabeth Woodville.*

[f] *The family of Lawrence were sometime Lords of Ostenhanger Manor and Castle in Kent.*

[g] *"Rico a Barne."—This man is doubtless the Richard Scot, of Barne's Hall, who founded the family of Scott of Barne's Hall, Ecclesfield, in Yorkshire, and who was a member of the Scot's Hall family, and whose name is mentioned in the will of Thomas Scott, Archbishop of York. Leaving Kent and taking possession of Barne's Hall (the bequest of his kinsman, the Archbishop), Richard Scott, in accordance with a not unusual custom of the times, dropped the paternal coat and assumed the arms of "Vert, three Roebucks trippant, argent attired, or," whilst his brother, or "consanguineus," dropping the name of Scot, assumed that of Rotherham—an alias of the Archbishop, from the place of his preferment in Yorkshire—and founded a family of that name, afterwards seated at Luton, in Bedfordshire. As suggestive of the close connection or relationship between Richard Scot and John Rotherham, it may be mentioned that the assumed arms of the latter—viz., "Vert, three Bucks in full course, or"—are almost identical with those of Richard Scot, of Barne's Hall. (See p.* 156*; see also Pedigree of Richard Scott, of Barne's Hall, Ecclesfield, Yorkshire, p.* 157.*)*

as of fee, did on the 11th June, 33 Henry VI., grant the same with other lands and tenements to John Olney and Robert Horne, Citizens and Aldermen of the City of London, and Nicholas Sharp and Richard Palmer: To hold the same to them and their heirs for ever, for the use and profit of Alice, late wife of John Pashele, the son, during her life (she being now wife of Richard Nansegles). That after such grant two of the grantees, John and Robert, died, and the two remaining grantees, Nicholas and Richard, after their death continued in possession of the said manor by right of survivorship until William Pashele disseised them thereof. Damages assessed at £66.

---

(53) 13 Edward IV., May 12, 1474.

Grant in perpetuity from Thomas, Bishop of London, to John Scott, Knt., of the manor of Combe, in the parishes of Braborne, Hastynglegh, Byrchold, and Wye, co. Kent, and all other manors, lands, tenements, rents, reversions, services, meadows, feedings, and pastures, with their appurtenances, co. Kent, which the said Bishop heretofore had by the gift and enfeoffment of the said John. To hold the same of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and of right accustomed. He also appoints Robert Scatergode, Henry Turnour, and William Foxe his attornies to deliver up possession and seisin thereof.

(Signed) WODECOK *(Officer of Court.)*

---

(54) 14 Edward IV., January 10, 1475.

Grant in perpetuity from William Paschele, son and heir of John Paschele, to Walter Moyle, Knt., Thomas Luccombe, and John Moyle, son of the said Walter, of the manor of Evygate and all his possessions, co. Kent.

Witnesses, PETRO TREBARWITH, JACOBO NECOTT, WILL̄O TREBARWITH, JOH̄E POLPER, et multis aliis.[h]

---

(55) 15 Edward IV., November 10, 1476.

Lease for 20 years from John Gyldford, Knight, and John Pympe, Esq., to Robert Roger, of Lynton, co. Kent, of two pieces of land called Pyrfeldes, lying in the parish of Lynton (boundaries fully set out), at a yearly rent of 10^{s}/6^{d}.

---

(56) 18 Edward IV., —, 1479.

To all Christian people to whom these present writings shall come, John, the Abbot of the monastery of the house and church of our Lady of Boxle, in the county of Kent, sendeth greeting, in our lorde everlasting. Certifying you that this Will to this my present writing annexed was the last Will of John Pympe, Esq., of Nettlystede, to me delivered to keep, by the hands of the same John Pympe, to the use and behofe of Phelipa, then hys wife, and his heirs male of his body lawfully begotten, and which Will with me hath been kept from that time of the said life unto such time as John Pympe,[i] son of the aforesaid John Pympe, Sir John Gyldeford, Knt., and the said Phelipa, his wife, sent to me for the said Will, and I, according to the intent aforesaid, sent them the said Will. In witness whereof to these presents I have s et my seal the . . . day next after the feast of Corpus Christi, the xviii year of King Edward the 4th.

---

(57) 22 Edward IV., June 6, 1483.

Fine levied at Demchurch, within Romney marsh, co. Kent, between William Wodman, plaintiff, and William Letell and Joan, his wife, daughter and heir of Joan, late the wife of William at Mede, of Ivecherch, deforciant, touching 11 acres of land in the parishes of Ivecherch and S^{t}. Martin, of Pownteney, within Romney marsh.

(A fine seal of Romney Marsh.)

---

(58) 22 Edward IV., September 10, 1483.

Grant in perpetuity from Thomas Colyn, of Rokynge, to John Scotte, Knight, and Agnes, his wife, of sixteen acres of woodland called Lyesland, lying together in the parish of Werehorne (boundaries described). Witnesses,

JOH̄E ROBERD, WILLO BROUNE, JOH̄E EDWARD, HENR̄ BOKELOND, HENR̄ POTYN, et aliis mult̄.

---

(59) 2 Henry VII., August 6, 1487.

Indenture reciting that Sir John Fogge, Knight, and John Kyriel, Esq., by Indenture dated 31st July, in the same year had granted to Gyles Daubeny, Knight, Lord Daubeny, Sir Edward Ponynges, Knight, Sir William Haut, Knight, Sir John Gyldeford, Knight, Sir Richard Gyldeford, Knight, Thomas Overton, Esq., William Monyns, John Byngham, John Aldy, Robert Vincent, Robert Perker, and William Warren, the manors of Walmer and Mongeham with their appurtenances, and all other lands, tenements, &c., in Walmer, Mongeham, and

---

[h] *The names of two of these witnesses are suggestive of possessions formerly held by Sir Richard Sergieux, of Carminow, in Cornwall, an ancestor of the Pashleys, and is likewise of the origin and source of surnames in early times. Peter de Trebarwith and John Polper evidently took their names from the manors of Trebarwith and Polperro in Cornwall, of the possessions of Sir Richard Sergieux. (See descent of the family of Pashley and Sergieux, under Anne Pympe, p. 170.)*

[i] *See Pympe Pedigree, p. 171.*

Kingsdown, Kent, formerly belonging to Sir Thomas Kyriell, Knight, or John Kyriell, Esq., his brother, deceased; and also that the said Sir John Fogge and John Kyriell, Esq., by Indenture dated 6th August, in the year aforesaid, had released the same to the said Gyles Daubeny and the others. The deed further declares that the said gift, grant, confirmation, and release was to the use of the said John Kyriell, Esq., for life, and after his decease to the use of the said John Fogge and his heirs.

---

(60) 3 Henry VII., June 26, 1488.

General Pardon to William Scotte, late of Iden, co. Sussex, Esquire, with divers aliases, of all manner of offences committed by him previously to the 7th November, 1485.[j]

MUNDES *(Officer of Court).*

---

(61) 4 Henry VII., March 18, 1489.

Lease for 9 years from Joan Lewkenor, of Barking, Essex, widow, and Sir William Haute, Knight, John Digges, of Berham, Kent, Esq., Vincent Finche, of Sandeherst, Kent, Gentleman, and John Alday, of Asshe, Kent, Merchant, Feoffees of the lands of the said Joan in the parish of Brayborne, Kent, to William Marshall, of Brayborne, Yeoman, of the "gyestment" [agistment] of Brayborne Park and the meadows therein, except the gyestment for the deer there. Rent reserved, £16 per ann. The Lessee to have sufficient tynage of woods and thorns for the enclosure of any lands he may sow with seed, and the half of every "straye," also the use of the tile-kiln and lodge in the Park, and wood and earth for the kiln.

---

(62) 7 Henry VII., 1492. (*See p.* 168.)

These be the detts that I, John Pympe, owe or ever have owed sithence the . . . . . .

ITEM. Fyrst, I owyd to my *brother Brianston* gyvy to hȳ by award ccc (mrc), wherof hī was awardid by the Arbitrour', that ys to say, Sr John Scotte, knyght, Syr Willm Hawte, knyght, Ric. Hawte, s'qer, Rogger Appulto, of Dartford, sqier, John Ffyneux, lernyd man, and John Alpphegh, lernyd man, that if my sist' Margerye Brianston wolde relese to me her tityll withyn the space of ij yers next after the award made, that the said ccc mrc shuld be full paid, and yf she so dyd not ther shuld be paid to the said Brianston but cc mrc, which cc mrc ys fully gtel (*sic*) and paid afore the makyng of this bille, wryten on Sēt Martynes day, anno viio of King Herry the viiith.

ITEM. In the tyme of my sute for the manō of Nettlisted, my *Lord Roderham*, that *tyme Bysshop of Lincoln*, [k] let me in comfort of my sute xx li, off which xx li he assigned me to pay to my brother, Raynold Pympe, as hys gyfte to hȳ that tyme, beyg hys srvraunt, which I paid hȳ by dyvers paymets. Wherof myne obligacōn restyth yet in my seid Lord's hands.

ITEM. Willm Brēt was bounde for my paymēt to the seid Brianston, and for lakk of payment was sued whē I was yn *Sēt Martynes Sentwary for the Kyngs sake* abovesaid, so that he paid to the seid Brianston in pt of paymēt of the seid cc mrc—xx mrc. Whereof paid to hȳ by John Heyrnde and Mastr Reynham of Boxley . . . . xls, and to John Tilley by the hands of the seid Herynds for issues lost by him, xs.

ITEM. Stephen Carkregges lost to Stephen trapp is as my sur'te, and paid ixli. Wherof paid by the hands of T. Coveney xls in money, and he toke John Davi and Bartilmow Bysshop for Dettours for vijli, whereof Bartilmow Bysshop hath recd ȳ whete viijli . . . . . nobyll, that ys to say, xiii qrter pr the qrtō vis viijd deliveryd by . . . . Smyth.

ITEM. To Sephen Norten of Charte for money paid to Brianston for the cause abovesaid as my sur'te, v marc. Whereof paid in Wode growyng on the border of Cokk's hethe, which he bowhte of me, iiij mrc. Wherof he paid for me to Robert Lested Smyth ȳ full paymēt of on olde debt for shoyg of oxȳ, xlt, and also ther ys dew to me for xxiij bellokks kept ȳ wyntō, xxiijs, and the next wyntō after that xvij bellokks xvijs, and a grete some of otes vis, delyveryd hȳ by my srvaunt at London vis viijd. ITEM. Ther ys dew to hȳ as executor to hys moder vijli rōstō to hys declaro vli.

ITEM. Stephen Norton, of Merden, for the same cause as my surete, v mrc, whereof paid tyle xii m and ccc of playne tyle p.c. the iijli iijs iiijd and a gten of gutter tyles p.c. viijd rōstō xxvjs.

ITEM. To Bourne Skyner, of London, in Watlyg Strete xxli, wherof payd at dyvers paymets xvli, rōstō vli.

ITEM. To *Lytton, the undertreserer of Englond*, xx marcs, wherof paid by the hond of Mastō Rydo x mrc which he rec of Weldysh, and vli which he rec by the hond of Herry Allard, and xiiijs paid to the said Mastō Ridon in bordyg of a srvat at Loose wth burden, and xxs paid by Cokks of money asscest ther, and so qte and the obligacōn cancellid.

ITEM. To Spencer Drap of London and to Stoke of the Chekker ioyntly, xli paid fully by the hond of Herry Allard to Mastō Ridon in two payments, and the obligacōn cancelled.

ITEM. To Hiham for a gylt pott, Lviijli xvijs, whereof paid by dyvers sumys by my brother Ailmer and Asshwell, Lijli, and by John Brode, iiij, remaynyth due to hȳ, v marc.

ITEM. Mast' Rydon bowhte for me cc elles of canvas of a man of London, delyveryd to John Halyche, which he was paid by money of sale of whete paid by the honds of Thos Pulter all safe xxs, which was——[l]

---

(63) 15 Henry VII., 1500.

Md that we, John Botiler, sōjaunt to the lawe, and Anne, my wyff, executrix of the Testiment of Margarete Norton, [m] have reseyved of Elizabeth Pympe, wedowe, executrix of the testiment of John Pympe, Esquir, be the hands of Willam Catelyn, a standyng coupp wh a covyng gilte, weyīng xxiiijti ouncz, and more of the goods of the said Margarete Norton, and xl. s by the hands of the said Willam Catelyn, and

---

[j] *See p.* 131, *note a.*

[k] *Thomas Scott, afterwards Archbishop of York, etc.*

[l] *The remainder of this document lost.*

[m] *See Will of John Pympe, p.* 169.

xl.$\bar{s}$ by the hands of the Churchwardens of the pische of Nettilsted bequeythed by the said John Pympe unto the said Margarete Norton, of whiche co$\bar{u}$pp and iiij^{li} the said John Botiller and Anne knowlege them selfe well and truly to be satisfiede and contente, and the said Elizabeth and her executours thereof to be clerly discharged be this p$^{\text{r}}$sent. Into witnese whereof to this p$^{\text{r}}$sent byll the said John Botiller for hym and the said Anne have put his sealle the xvij$^{\text{th}}$ day of Novembr, the yeare of the Raigne of King Henry the vij$^{\text{the}}$ the xvi$^{\text{the}}$.

BOTILLER.

(**64**) 18 Henry VII., January 16, 1503.

Grant in perpetuity from Anna Atwood, of Mersham, widow, to Robert Frognall, of Godmersham, of premises in Godmersham (the boundaries fully set out), upon the following condition, that the same Robert is to pay to her, or Elizabeth, her daughter, their heirs or assigns, £8 in three payments, viz. on the 1st Februarv, 1503, 1504, and 1505, or otherwise this grant to be void.

Witnesses,

WILL$\bar{\text{M}}$O BLECHYNDEN, Gent., ROBT$\bar{\text{O}}$ BROWNYNGE, JOH$\bar{\text{E}}$ FOGGE DE MERSH$\bar{\text{M}}$, JOH$\bar{\text{E}}$ LUTTE, ROB$\bar{\text{T}}$O AT WODDE, STEPH$\bar{\text{O}}$ WYLLYS, JACOBO GREENE, JOH$\bar{\text{E}}$ PYLCHER, THOMA COURTE.

(**65**) 22 Henry VII., May 17, 1507.

Indenture between Sir William Scott, Knight, and Thomas Cosyngton, of Aylesford, Kent, Gentleman, reciting Indenture dated 16 December, 4th Edward IV., between Sir John Scott, Knight, father of the said Sir William, and Richard Cosyngton, father of the said Thomas, whereby it was agreed that the said Richard should cause a conveyance to be made in estate tail to himself and his heirs, with immediate remainder to Sir John Scott and his heirs, of the Manors of Cosyngton, Mount, and Acres, and other lands and tenements in the parishes of Aylesford, Boxle, East Mallinge, Newton Reynham, Stehams, Okerys, and Maidstone, or elsewhere in Kent, which conveyances were duly executed. Richard Cosyngton had issue the said Thomas, and died, and Sir John Scott had issue the said Sir William, and died. Thomas Cosyngton was thereupon seised of the said manors, &c. John Rylands, nevertheless, feigning a title thereto, had filed Bills in Chancery and commenced actions at law against the said Thomas Cosyngton, the costs of which he would be unable to sustain unless aided by Sir William Scott, by reason of his interest in the remainder of the said manors, &c. The Deed thereupon provides that Thomas Cosyngton will when required suffer recovery to be made against him by persons to be named by Sir William Scott, and a conveyance of the said manors, &c., to be made to the said Thomas and his heirs, with immediate remainder to Sir William Scott and his heirs, or in default of heirs to remain further in fee tail, fee simple, or otherwise as Sir William Scott shall appoint. The Conveyance of the Estate tail to Thomas Cosyngton shall contain covenants for preventing the cutting off of the entail. Any doubts arising under the Indenture to be determined by John Gruely, Gentleman, and John Hales.

(Signature and seal gone.)

(**66**) 9 Henry VIII., June 18, 1518.

Release and Quitclaim, dated 18 June, 9 Henry VIII., from Edward Ponynges, Knight, John Copyldyke, Edward Thawytes, and Edward Brode, to William Scotte, Knight, his heirs and assigns, for ever, of all their right, title, &c., to 22 acres and a half of land, one parcel of land called Dystilleghe, one acre, a half an acre, and half a rood of wood, and the moiety of four acres of wood lying severally in Lymne, Demecherche, and Aldyngton, co. Kent (the boundaries whereof are fully set out), and of all rents and services arising out of the same: which rents Edward Ponynges heretofore purchased of John Scotte, Knight, son and heir apparent of William Scotte, and of Anne, his wife, and the same Edward Ponynges, John Copyldyke, Edward Thawytes, and Edward Brode are possessed of the same by fine levied in the Quinzaine of Easter to them and the heirs of Edward Thawytes by the acknowledgment, &c., of the said John Scotte, the son, and Anne, and the heirs of the same Anne, and the same acknowledgment, &c., was made to the use of Edward Ponynges and his heirs. And William Scotte, Knight, is seised at the present time of the lands above named to his own use in his demesne as of fee, so that neither Edward Ponynges, John Copyldyke, Edward Thawytes, and Edward Brode nor their heirs shall henceforth be able to claim any rent or service from the above mentioned tenements, or any parcel thereof, fealty alone excepted.

(Signed) EDWD. PONYNGES, JOHN COPYLDYKE, EDWD. THAWYTES.

(**67**) 12 Henry VIII., October 20, 1521.

Lease for 7 years from Elizabeth Pymp, Gentlewoman, widow of John Pymp, Esq., of Nettlested, Kent, to Thomas Fuller, of Otham, Kent, husbandman, of her manor place of Otham, with all houses, lands, meadows, and pastures thereto belonging, lately farmed by Andrew Love, except all woods, underwoods, fryths, and timber growing thereon, and all rents, releases, and other perquisites of Court to the same manor belonging. Rent reserved, Sixty shillings and eightpence per ann. The Lessor to do all repairs, and the Lessee to make good all damage done by him or his servants by fire or otherwise. The Lessee to be allowed fuel and wood for firewood, carteboote, ploughboote, and hedgeboote, but not to fell any oak, ash, elm, or crabtree.

(**68**) 13 Henry VIII., December 9, 1522.

Indenture between Sir William Scott, Knt., and William Kempe, Esq., and Alianore, his wife, widow of Thomas Fogge, Esq., and mother of Alice and Anne, daughters and heirs of the said Alianore,[n] during her widowhood, in consideration of divers sums of money

---

[n] *See Pedigree of Fogges, etc., p.* 173.

paid to John, late Lord Clinton, to whom (on account of the tenure by the said Thomas Fogge at the time of his death of the manor of Walmer, co. Kent, by Knight's services of the said Lord Clinton as of the manor of Folkestone) the custody of the children then and still under the age of 12 years had been committed, had obtained their custody and wardship, land and bodies, and granting their custody, &c., to Sir William Scott and his executors, and providing that if Edward Scott, his second son, shall marry either of them, Sir William Scott will within 6 weeks convey to Sir John Norton, Knt., William Kempe, Esq., Edward Boughton, Esq., John Hales, Esq., William Roper, son and heir-apparent of John Roper, Esq., Attorney General, Thomas Kempe, son of William Kempe, Nicholas [Boughton], son of Nicholas [Boughton], James Hales, son of John Hales, and Thomas Judde, Gent^{n}, lands and tenements in Kent of the clear annual value of £20 to his own use for his life, and after his decease to the daughter so married to his son Edward, and after her decease to the use to be declared by Sir William, or in default to his heirs. After the marriage of Edward Scott and one of the said daughters, the other to marry the eldest son of Sir John Scott, Knt., eldest son of Sir William, if he and she at her full age of 14 years shall consent. Sir William to pay £200 for the grant of their custody, £100 immediately, and £100 in Smethe Church on St. Thomas's Day, 1523. If both the daughters die without issue before the 28th March, 1526, Sir William to be released of the payment of the second £100, with other provisions, in the event of the decease before marriage of Edward Scott or the eldest son of Sir John Scott, &c.

In the event of the daughters marrying other gentlemen without the procurement of Sir W^{m} Scott having lands, &c., of the annual value of 100 marks, they to have thereout land of the yearly value of £20. Will^{m} Kempe and his wife to have the issues of the lands according to the Will of Thomas Fogge until the youngest daughter living attains the age of 15 years. Sir Will^{m} Scott to have their custody during their nonage, and be paid for their meat, drink, and clothing, &c., £10 per annum for 4 years, deducting £5 per annum, should either of them die. Edward Scott, after the death of Sir Will^{m} Scott and the lapse of a term of years to be fixed by his Will, to have the reversion of the lands, &c., to be put in feoffment to Sir John Norton and others; and other lands in Kent to the yearly value of £66 13s. 4d.

---

(69) 16 Henry VIII., August 11, 1524.

Indenture of Agreement between Sir John Scotte, Knight, son and heir-apparent of Sir William Scott, Knight, of the one part, and Edward Scotte, second son of the said Sir William Scott, of the other part, reciting the Will (dated 1st August then instant) of the said Sir William, and binding themselves and their heirs respectively to do all such things as may be necessary to give effect to the Will of Sir William Scott, their father.[o]

---

(70) 16 Henry VIII., June 1, 1525.

Lease for 7 years to Sir Henry Guldeford, Knt., Comptroller of the King's Household, from Sir John Reynesford, Knight, and Dame Winifred, his wife, sister and heir of Henry Pympe, Esq., son and heir of John Pympe, Esq., late of Netlestede, co. Kent, of the manor of Netlested, and all premises, &c., they are possessed of in the parishes of Netelstede, Wateryngbery, Marworth, East Pekham, and Yalding, co. Kent:—the advowson of the Church of Netelstede and all timber and woods growing in and upon the premises excepted and reserved:—at a yearly rent of £43. Right reserved to Sir Henry to recoup himself out of the said yearly rent for any payments he may be compelled by law to make on behalf of the grantees or for the use of the King or other person, upon his giving them due notice to that effect. Sir Henry is to keep the premises in proper repair; Sir Henry is to have fierbote, plowbote, cartebote, hedgebote, and gratebote, and timber for repairs. Sir John and Dame Winifred may hunt at their pleasure in the park of the said manor and all the premises, and keep for their own use such deer as they may kill and may give by warrant to whomsoever they please, two bucks in summer and two does in winter. Sir John and Dame Winifred, and any persons they may assign, shall have liberty to sell, fell, and carry away timber at their pleasure, so that sufficient be left for repairs. Should Sir Henry desire it, he may have a further lease of the premises for another 7 years at the expiration of the 7 years now granted, upon the same terms and under the same covenants. Provided that if Sir John and Dame Winifred should desire at the end of the first 7 years to come and reside at the said manor and premises, they shall be able to do so, whereupon none of the covenants above mentioned shall be binding upon Sir Henry.

(Signed) P *ME* HENR GULDEFORD.[p]

---

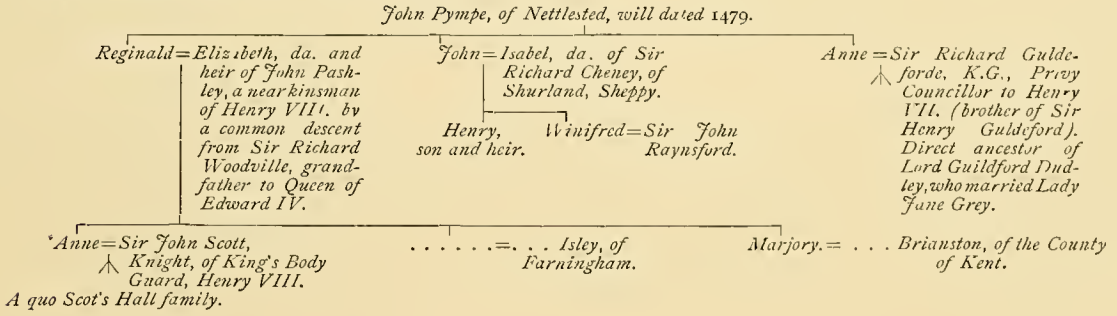
(71) 18 Henry VIII., November 4, 1527.

Indenture of Bargain and Sale from Roger Cholmeley, of London, Gentleman, to Edward Tyrrell, of Beachys, co. Essex, in consideration of £126 13s. 4d., of all his right, title, &c., to lands and marshes in the town of Southchurch in the said county, between Thorpp peet on

---

[o] *For will of Sir William Scott in extenso, vide p.* 135.

[p] *Pedigree showing relationship of individuals mentioned in this Deed:—*


John Pympe, of Nettlested, will dated 1479.
Reginald=Elizabeth, da. and heir of John Pashley, a near kinsman of Henry VIII. by a common descent from Sir Richard Woodville, grandfather to Queen of Edward IV.
John=Isabel, da. of Sir Richard Cheney, of Shurland, Sheppy.
Henry, son and heir.
Winifred=Sir John Raynsford.
Anne=Sir Richard Guldeforde, K.G., Privy Councillor to Henry VII. (brother of Sir Henry Guldeford). Direct ancestor of Lord Guildford Dudley, who married Lady Jane Grey.
Anne=Sir John Scott, Knight, of King's Body Guard, Henry VIII.
A quo Scot's Hall family.
. . . . . =. . . Isley, of Farningham.
Marjory.= . . . Brianston, of the County of Kent.

the south and the lands of the Parsonage of Southchurch and the lands late of William at Hell on the north, and a watercourse called Thorpp Brok on the west ; And in the lands called Vygorn's lands in the hamlet of Southorpp in the same parish between the lane leading from Cantyngestie towards the Chapel of Thorpp on the west, and land called Brokett's land on the east and south, and land called Sutton's land on the north ; And in lands, &c., called Brokkes in the same parish, which late were one Jesper Tyrrell's, and in 240 acres of meadow 100 of pasture, and 120 of wood land in Southchurch, Leighe, and Pritellwell called Suttons, Cockerells, and Candyshe, and of all other his lands, tenements, &c., in Southchurch, Leighe, and Pritellwell, and all deeds, evidences, &c., relating thereto. A proper conveyance to be made before the feast of the Purification of the Virgin next ensuing, and the lands to be discharged of all former bargains, sales, &c , by the said Roger, except two Leases to John Danyell, of Southchurch, and John Noble, of Estwood.

Roger Cholmeley and Christian, his wife, covenant with Edward Tyrrell to do whatever shall be advised by fine, feoffinent, recovery, &c., from the said Roger and his heirs, with warranty against the Abbot of Westminster for the further assurance of the said lands, &c.

Endorsed—This is a trew copy of an Indenture sealed, remayninge in hands of Mrs. Mary Heyman, weedow, of Kent.
18th Hen. 8th. MARY HEYMAN.

(**72**) 18 Henry VIII., January 17, 1528.

Release from Roger Cholmeley, of London, Gentleman, at the instance and request of Edward Tyrrell, Gentn, to Sir Henry Guyldford, Knight, Sir Richard Broke, Knt., Chief Baron of the Exchequer, Sir Richard Walden and Sir Edmund Walsingham, Knights, Roger Mere (Serjeant of the King's Fishery), John Shurley, junior, John Strangman, junior, and Thomas Judde, Gentn, and John Hankyn, Yeoman, of all his right, title, &c., to lands and marshes in the town of Southchurche, co. Essex, and other lands, &c. *(referred to in Indenture of Bargain and Sale—see previous Deed)*, to the use of the said Edward Tyrrell and Joan, his wife, during her life, and to the heirs of the said Edward for ever ; all which lands, &c., the said Sir H. Guyldford, &c., had of the feoffement and Deed of Confirmation of the said Edward Tyrrell, of Beches, in the county of Essex, Gentn, and John Matthew and Thomas Hasteler, to the use of the said Edward and Joan, his wife, for the term of her life and the heirs, &c., of the said Edward for ever, according to the tenor of an indenture dated 7th September, 18 Henry VIII., between the said Edward on the one part, and John Shurley, Gentn, Cofferer to the King, on the other part.

Endorsed—This is a trewe copy of a release sealed remayning in the hands of Mrs. Mary Heyman, widowe, of Kent.
(Signed) MARY HEYMAN.

(**73**) 27 Henry VIII., May 10, 1536.

Indenture of Bargain and Sale between Thomas Fagge, son of Robert Fagge, late of Hougham, deceased, and Richard Fagge, son of Thomas and cousin of Robert Fagge, of the one part, and Anthony Borne, of Smeeth, of the other part, whereby in accomplishment of the will of Robert Fagge, the said Thomas and Richard convey to the said Anthony Bourn the lands, tenements, &c., in Smeeth aforesaid, formerly belonging to Robert Fagge, brother of the said Thomas, called Laybroke, George Crofte, Agatefeld, and Lamewelhold, containing 31 acres, situate in the tenure of the Courts of Hall and Aldyngton, the said Anthony Bourn paying for the same the sum of £33. In default of payment at the times specified the Deed to be void.

Endorsed are the Memoranda of the payments in equal instalments of the said sum of £33.

(Seal of a heron holding a snake—the Fagg crest.)

(**74**) 28 Henry VIII., June 10, 1537.

Indenture between the King and Reynold Scott, Esq., reciting that a special livery had been agreed to be granted to the said Reginald of all lordships, manors, lands, &c., which had descended to him as heir to his brother William, deceased, and that he had delivered to Sir Richard Riche and Sir Thomas Nevyle, surveyors of the King's liveries, a statement of such lordships, &c., and of their yearly value. An auditor to be appointed by the King shall, at the costs of the said Reginald, search, view, and value the truth and value of the same. If any are omitted and undervalued, the King shall be answered and satisfied. The double of one year's value to be paid for such as are concealed, and the surplus profits of such as are undervalued, until the said Reginald has agreed with the surveyors of the King's liveries, and found surety for the payment of such sums as shall be set by them to the King's use.

(Signed) RICHARD RYCHE, T. NEUYLE.

Endorsed—A speciall livery granted to Raignold Scott, Esq.—28 H. 8. The King's sign manual—Henry R.

(**75**) 28 Henry VIII., September, 1537.

Lease from Raynold Scott, Esq., of Smeethe, co. Kent, to John Knatchbull, of Mersham, in the same county, yeoman, of the messuage called Merewodde and the lands thereto belonging, and a parcel of land called Foxetayles adjoining, in the parish of Newington next Hythe, in the same county, at the yearly rent of £14 3s. 4d.

(Signed) P *ME* JOHN KNATCHBOUL.(q)

(q) *John Knatchbull, an ancestor or kinsman of the present distinguished Kentish family of Knatchbull of Mersham Hatch. In the 16th century a yeoman was frequently amongst the most substantial landowners of the district, but not pretending to be armigerous was content with the term "yeoman." The following Kentish proverb, however, is suggestive of his social status :—*

"A Prince in Wales, and a Knight in Cales (Calais, or Cadiz),
And a Laird in the North Countrye,
A yeoman of Kent, with his yearly rent,
Shall buy them out all three."—Old Kentish Proverb.

(**76**) 34th Henry VIII., August 10, 1543.

An agreement for reference to arbitration to Sir Bryan Tuke, Knight, Treasurer of the King's most Honorable Chamber, of certain matters of variance respecting a certain heriot claimed by Master William Holgill, Master of the Hospital of the Savoye in the county of Middlesex, and the chaplains of the same; of Sir Reynolde Scot, Knight, for the land of the said Sir Reynolde, holden of the manors of Hastingleigh and Aldelose, in the county of Kent, and for the settlement of divers actions, suits, quarrels, debates, and demands between the said Master and chaplains and Sir Reynolde Scot.

The award confirms the claim of the Master and chaplains, and deems the land to be held of them by Sir Reynolde Scot in manner of service as heretofore accustomed.

(Seal gone.)

(**77**) 35 Henry VIII., February 12, 1544.

Exemplification, at the request of the demandants of a Recovery with a single voucher, suffered in Hilary Term, 35 Henry VIII., between Henry Warde, Gentleman, and John Ramsey, Gentleman, Demandants, and Reginald Scott, Knight, touching the manor of Orlaston and four messuages, one hundred acres of land, forty acres of meadow, two hundred acres of pasture, and three hundred acres of wood in Orlaston.

ROKEWODE *(Officer of Court)*.

(**78**) 35 Henry VIII., April 25, 1544.

Marriage settlement of Thomas Courthop, one of the sons of Wm. Courthop, of Brabourne, and Sybyl Leach, daughter of John Leach, late of Smeeth, deceased, to which Sir Reginald Scott, John Bunce, of Orlanston, and William Courthop, of Brabourne, are parties. An annuity is granted out of the lands of Thomas Sele, of Horton, &c., &c.

Endorsed—35th Hen. 8th.

(**79**) 38 Henry VIII., January 14, 1547.

Lease for 21 years from Sir Raynold Scott, Knight, to George Fogge, Esq., Deputy of the Castle of Sandgate, co. Kent, of a close in Brabourne Park, consisting of 260 acres of land, at a yearly rent of £20. Special covenants as to woods and underwoods growing upon the premises and right of way, &c.

(Signed) GEORGE FFOGGE.

(**80**) 3 Edward VI., April 7, 1550.

Settlement by Peter Heyman, of Sellinge, Kent, Gentleman, of a rent charge of £13 6s. 8d. out of his lands in Sellinge, Lymne, and West Hyth upon Mary Tyrrell for life, in consideration of their intended marriage.

WILLIAM HEYMAN.

Witnesses—BARTHOLOMEW MAY, MAURICE JONES. (Fine seal of Wm. Heyman.)

(**81**) 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, August 1, 1553-4.

Lease for 10 years from Dame Mary Scott, widow of Sir Rainold Scott, Knight, to Thomas Scott, Esq., son and heir of Sir Rainold Scott, of the manor of Thevegate, rent reserved £40 per annum, with provision that the lease shall determine upon the death of either party during the term. Covenants by Thomas Scott, reserving to Mary Evering, widow, the occupation of the chief mansion house, and the lands forming part of the manor leased to her by Dame Mary Scott, by Indenture dated 8th April, 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, and to Thomas Stokke (*sic*) lands forming part of the manor leased to him by Dame Mary Scott by Indenture of the same date.

The lease recites a Deed dated 15th February, 31 Henry VIII., whereby Sir Rainold Scott, by the name of Rainold Scott, Esq., constituted Sir Brian Tuke, Treasurer of the King's Chamber, George Tirhol, Esq., Sir Edward Boughton, Knight, Sir John Mullins, Knight, and Anthony Cooke, Esq., feoffees of the said manor to the use of the said Sir Rainold and Mary, his wife, and of his heirs male.

Witnesses, JOHN MAYNARDE, Esq., JOHN COLEPEPER, Gent., ROBERT WEEKE, and FRANCIS ODELL.

(**82**) December 23, 1559.

Letters of Administration granted to Thomas Skott, brother of Brian Skott, late of the City of London, Gentleman, deceased, of the goods, &c., of his late brother in the Province of Canterbury.

THOMAS ARGALL *(Officer of Court)*.

(**83**) 3 Elizabeth, September 20, 1561.

Deed of Bargain and Sale by Thomas Scott, Esq., of Smeeth, Kent, to Richard Best, of Hinxhill,[r] in the said county, Gentleman, for the sum of £78, of two pieces of marsh ground, estimated at 13 acres, lying together in the parish of Rucking, in the said county, and adjoining the lands of John Barrow, subject to the accustomed services due to the Lord of the fee-Scottes, hereafter yearly to be assessed according to the usage of Romney Marsh alone excepted.

(Seals and signatures gone.)

---

[r] *An ancestor of the Bests of Chilston, Wierton, and Boxley, co. Kent.*

(**84**) 4 Elizabeth, November 18, 1562.

Indenture of Bargain and Sale by Thomas Scotte, of Halle, Kent, Esq., to William Shelley, of Michellgrove, Sussex, Esq., in consideration of the sum of £15, of twelve acres of land and wood in a wood of the said William Shelley's, called Herstwood, in the parish of Herst, otherwise Fawkener's Herst, Kent.

Signed by me, WILLYAM SHELLEY.

(**85**) 8 Elizabeth, December 5, 1566.

Release and Quitclaim from George Scott, of Smethe, Kent, son of Sir Raynolde Scott, late of Smethe, to his brother, Thomas Scott, also of Smethe, in respect of gifts or bequests made to the said George Scott under the will of his father.

Witnesses—RAYNOLD SCOTT, RAYNOLD STROGULL. GEO. SCOTT.

(**86**) 10 Elizabeth, October 20, 1568.

Grant by Thomas Scott, Esquire, of the parish of Smeethe, co. Kent, to William Everynge, of Alkeham, co. Kent, Gentleman, of an annuity of £15 out of thirteen parcels of land called Arnards, otherwise Arminards, in the parish of Burmershe, in Romney marsh, co. Kent. To cease if Thomas Scott, his heirs or assigns, shall pay to William Evenynge, his executors or assigns, £150, with all existing arrears of the same annuity, in the nave of the parish church of Smeethe, co. Kent, between the hours of 1 and 3 P.M., on Michaelmas day, 1570.

(**87**) 16 Elizabeth, May 22, 1574.

Bargain and Sale, in consideration of £1000, from Edward and Georges Hylles, Gentlemen, sons and coheirs of George Hylles, late of Alkenham, co. Kent, to Charles Scott, Esquire, of Challocke, co. Kent, of the manor of Egerton and all premises, &c., belonging to them in Godmersham, Wye, Crundale, and Waltham, co. Kent, and also two parcels of land called Perry and Bables, containing 26 acres, lying in Godmersham, late purchased by Margaret, mother of the said Edward and George Hylles, and John and George Hylles, sons and heirs of Christopher Hylles (two parcels of meadow lying near Godmersham bridge, containing one acre and a half, late sold and assured by the said Edward and George Hylles to one Thomas Brodnex, excepted).

Clause covenanting to deliver up all deeds and evidences.

Clause declaring that any further assurance that may be required within five years for the securing the above property shall be executed.

EDWARD HILLES. GEORGE HILLES.

Sealed and delyvered in the presence of THOMAS SCOTT, GEORGE FOGG,
WILLYAM BEDINGFIELD, THOMAS HONYWOOD.

(**88**) 16 Elizabeth, June 25, 1574.

Deed whereby Edward Hilles and George Hilles, of Nonyngton, co. Kent, sons and heirs of George Hilles, Gentleman, deceased (in part fulfilment of the covenants and agreements specified in Indentures between the said Edward and George, of the one part, and Charles Scotte, of Challocke, co. Kent, of the other part, dated June 22, 16 Elizabeth), grant to Charles Scotte the manor of Egerton, with premises, &c., in Godmersham, Wye, Crondalle, Waltham, and Chillham. To hold to him, his heirs and assigns, for ever.

EDWARD HILLES. GEORGE HILLES.

Sealed and delivered, and full and peaceable possession and seisin thereupon delivered, in the presence of

ROḠ TWYSDEN,[s] WYLL̄ BEDYNGFELD,[t] GEORḠ WIATT.[u]
WILL̄I TYLMAN, WILL̄IMI BOYS,[v] XP̄OFERI STAMFORTH.

(**89**) 18 Elizabeth, February 17, 1575.

Deed dated 17 February, 18 Elizabeth, between Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, Charles Scott, Henry Scott, George Scott, William Scott, and Raynold Scott, of the one part, and Alexander Lewkenor and George Smyth of the other part, whereby it is agreed that a common recovery shall be had and suffered in the Common Pleas in Trinity Term next, by which Lewkenor and Smyth shall become possessed of the manors of Netelsted, Pympe, and Hilthe, and premises, &c., in Nettelsted, Hilthes, Yalding, Peckham, Brenchley, Horsemonden,

---

[s] *Sir Roger Twysden, of Roydon Hall, East Peckham, Sheriff of Kent temp. Elizabeth, had royal manor of Wye leased to him by the Abbot and Convent of Battle, 1534.*

[t] *Wm. Bedingfield, of Brabourne, of the family of Bedingfield of Oxbrough Hall, Norfolk.*

[u] *George Wiatt, of the family of Wyatt of Allington Castle, Kent.*

[v] *Wm Boys, of the family of Boys, Sandwich and Nonnington.*

Marden, Westpeckham, Merewood, Westbarmeling, and Lamberherst, co. Kent, and shall be seised of the same unto the following, and no other uses, intents, and purposes; namely, as to various premises (fully described) in Brencheley and Horsemonden to the use of Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, and Raynolde Scott, Gentleman, their heirs and assigns, for ever, so that they may dispose of the same at their will and pleasure; and as to the manors of Nettilsted, Hilthes, Yalding, Peckham, Brencheley, Marden, Westpeckham, Merewood, and Westbarmeling, co. Kent, to the use of Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, his heirs and assigns, for ever, so that he may dispose of the same at his will and pleasure. (Signed) ALEXANDER LEWKNOR, GEORGE SMYTHE.

Sealed and delivered in the presence of Thomas Honywood, Wylliam Heyman, John Stroghill, sen., Reynold Smyth, by the w^tin named Alexander Lewkenor and George Smyth, unto the w^tin named Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, Charles Scott, Henry Scott, and Raynold Scott.

---

(90) 17 Elizabeth, 1575.

Concord of a Fine whereby John Wollett and Margaret, his wife, quitclaim to Charles Scott, Esq., 30 acres of land, &c., in Godmersham.

---

(91) 18 Elizabeth, June 4, 1576.

Exemplification, at the request of the demandants, of a recovery with a single voucher suffered in Easter Term, 18th Elizabeth, between Alexander Lewckenor and George Smythe, Demandants, and Thomas Scott, Knight, Charles Scott, Henry Scott, George Scott, William Scott, and Reynald Scott, Gentlemen, touching the manors of Nettelsted, Pympe, and Hylthe, with the appurtenances and three messuages, five tofts, one dovecote, seven gardens, six hundred acres of land, two hundred acres of meadow, three hundred acres of pasture, two hundred acres of woodland, seven librates of rent with the appurtenances in Nettelsted, Hyltes, Yaldinge, Peckham, Brencheley, Horsemonden, Marden, West Peckham, Merewood, Westbarmelynge, and Lamberherst.[w]

FFORDE *(Officer of Court).*

---

(92) 20 Elizabeth, April 21, 1578.

Deed of Bargain and Sale by Sir Thomas Scott, of Smeeth, Kent, Knight, to Roger Twysden, of Wye, Kent, Esquire, in consideration of the sum of £300, of eight parcels of land and meadow, with 6 acres, 1 yard, and 12 perches, parcel of Stockenburie Wood, containing in all by estimation 58 acres of land, meadow, and wood in the parishes of East Peckham and Nettlested, Kent, adjoining:—

West—To lands of Richard Fane, Gentleman, and to lands of Robert Kenward, called Longshottes.

South—To lands of Thomas Fane, Knight, and to lands of Edmund Pelham, Gentleman.

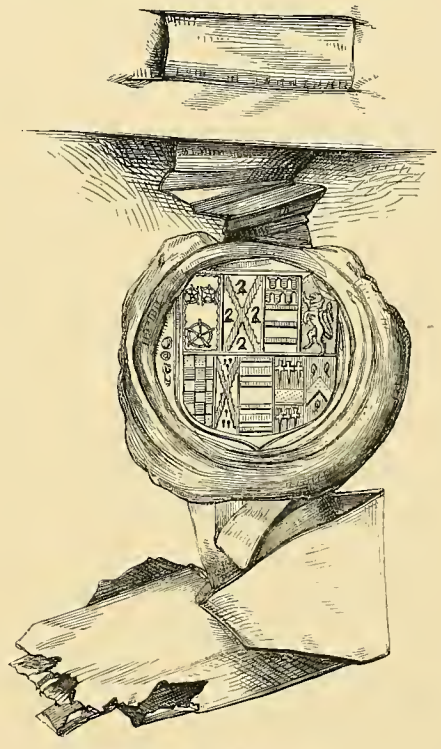
East and North—To the Queen's street and to wood of Thomas Scott, Esq., called Stockenburie Wood.

North—To lands of Dame Elizabeth Goldynge, widow.

The Deed contains the usual covenants as to title, surrender of Deeds, &c., and a proviso that Thomas Scott shall not be required to travel more than eight miles from his mansion house for the execution of any deed.

ROGER TWYSDEN.
A good seal (a cockatrice sejant) of Twysden.

Witnesses—WILLIAM HEYMAN, RAYNOLD SCOTT, WILLIAM TILMAY.



SEAL OF SIR THOMAS SCOTT.

---

(93) 29 Elizabeth, September 15, 1586.

Indenture of Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, of Smeeth, Kent, revoking and annulling Indenture tripartite of the 17th September, 17th Elizabeth, between himself and Elizabeth, his late wife, of the first part, and Sir Richard Parker, Knight, William Lovelace, Serjeant-at-Law, and Thomas Honywoode, Esquire, of the second part, in consideration of the increase of the jointure of Elizabeth, wife of his eldest son, Thomas, and of divers exchanges to be made between himself and other parties.

---

[w] *All in the county of Kent.*

(**94**) 31 Elizabeth, February 8, 1589.

Grant by William Heyman, of Brabourne, Kent, Gentleman, to Mary Heyman, widow of Peter Heyman, late of Selling, Kent, of an annuity of £10 for life out of the Rectory of Lympne or Lymyne, or the lands, &c., thereto belonging.

(Fine seal of Heyman.)

(**95**) 31 Elizabeth, September 24, 1589.

Indenture by Thomas Smyth, of Ostenhanger Castle, in the county of Kent, whereby he assigns unto Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, in the said county, Knight, and Charles Scott, Esq., their heirs and assigns, for ever, all those his messuages and lands, tenements and marshes (as well fresh as salt) that are in Lydd and Bromehill, in Kent and Sussex respectively, and all manner of court leets, view of frankpledge, waifs, strays, franchises, jurisdictions, privileges, goods of felons and of fugitives, and of felons of themselves, deodands, services, heirs, wards, marriages and releases, sulliage, anchorage, wrecks of the sea within the said limits, and all duties and profits due for Kyttlenette incident to and all fishings and fowlings in and upon the said premises. To hold of the chief Lord of the Fee by the services therefore due and accustomed. (Signed) THOMAS SMYTHE.

Witness—HENRY BARNES. (Seal perfect.)

(**96**) 32—34 Elizabeth, May 2, 1590—1592.

Discharge for the tenants of two parts of the lands and tenements of Anne Mayney, late of Highley Carre, in the parish of Winwick, co. Lanc., widow, a recusant, in the parish of Lamberherst and elsewhere, co. Kent, from a debt of 66s/8d for half a year's farm of the same land. (Signed) ALEX. WILLIAMS.

(**97**) 33 Elizabeth, February 18, 1591.

Deed whereby Thomas Scott, of Smeethe, co. Kent, Knight (in part fulfilment of certain Indentures dated the 1st inst.), grants to Robert Sackville, Esquire, son and heir apparent of the Honble. Thomas, Lord Buckherst, John Peter, Knight, Edward Stafford, Knight, Moilus Finch, Knight, Anthony St. Leger, Esquire, and Robert Drewry, Esquire, son and heir of William Drewry, late of Hausted, co. Suffolk, Knight, deceased, the manors of Nettlested, Pympe, and Hylthe, in Nettlested, Yaldinge, Brenchley, Eastbarmynge and Westbarmynge, co. Kent, together with the advowson of the parish church of Nettelsted aforesaid, and all other his lands, tenements, commons, ways, passages, easements, liberties, privileges, advantages, and hereditaments whatsoever in Nettlested, Yaldynge, Brenchley, Eastbarmynge, and Westbarmynge. To hold the same for ever, for the purpose of carrying out the uses declared and limited in the above mentioned Indentures.

(**98**) 37 Elizabeth, February 4, 1594.

Indenture tripartite between Sir John Scott, of Nettlesteed, Kent, of the first part, Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, Kent, Esq., and Charles Scott, Gentleman, brother of the said Sir John and Thomas Scott, of the second part, and Dame Dorothy, late wife of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall aforesaid, Knight, deceased, of the third part, reciting that the said Dame Dorothy had assured to her for her life, for her jointure, the site of the manor of Nettlesteed with the appurtenances, and other lands, tenements, &c., in New Watringbury, Ealdinge, and East Peckham, by her late husband. That by his will, dated 27th December, 1594, 37 Elizth, he had bequeathed to her the site of the manor of Thevegate and all his lands, &c., in Smeeth, in the occupation of Ralph Parre and Thomas Halle, and also Thevegate Mill, and lands and tenements in the occupation of Edward Harte, and 20 acres of meadow in Thevegate Mead, and also Thevegate Park, to fell thereof yearly 2 acres for her fuel, and also his marsh land called Arminardes, containing 60 acres, in the parish of East Bridge, with divers goods and chattels, in lieu and satisfaction of her jointure of the lands in Nettlesteed, &c., on condition that she should suffer his son, Sir John Scott, Knight, and Lady Elizabeth, his wife, to enjoy and possess the said lands in Nettlesteed, &c. That if Dame Dorothy refused to accept them and stood to her jointure, she should lose the benefit of his will and all the legacies therein made to her. That his son, Sir John Scott, should have all the bequests to the said Dame Dorothy during her life, and after his decease the Lady Elizabeth his wife should have £140 per annum out of Thevegate, &c., so long as Dame Dorothy should live. That Sir Thomas Scott also gave to Dame Dorothy, if she should accept his will, £40 per annum out of Halle Meade, Westcedes, Stonyfieldes, and Woodfieldes, the same if she refused, to go to Sir John Scott and Lady Elizabeth, his wife, during the life of Dame Dorothy, the said annuity Sir Thomas Scott gave to discharge the annuity he had formerly given to his son Thomas Scott, and his wife out of Thevegate as part of her jointure. That Sir Thomas Scott also, after the decease of Dame Dorothy, gave the parcel of marshland called Arminardes to Sir John Scott and his heirs male, with remainders to the heirs male of his sons Thomas and Charles successively, with other remainders as by the Will appear.

The Deed thereupon declares the acceptance by Dame Dorothy of the Will of Sir Thomas Scott, and the ratification allowance and confirmation thereof by Sir John Scott, Thomas and Charles Scott, and also contains a covenant by them to save and keep harmless the site of Thevegate Manor against all former estates, interests, &c., other than two leases to Richard Reader and Edward Harte, and the rents, &c., to the chief Lords of the Fee, and the said annuity of £40 to the said Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Scott, from which annuity, however, the lands devised to Dame Dorothy by Sir John and Thomas Scott are to be saved harmless, &c. If at any time the said lands are encumbered, Sir John and Thomas Scott to recompense Dame Dorothy, or in default she to be at liberty to enter and distrain upon the manor of Combe, Kent.

Clauses follow whereby Dame Dorothy surrenders to Sir John and Lady Elizabeth Scott and their heirs male the lands conveyed to her for her jointure.

DOROTHY SCOTT.

Witnesses, CHARLES SCOTT, RAYNOLD SCOTT, LAWRENCE ROOKE,
EDWARD PEMBERTON, CLEMENT BEER, PERCYVALL HYNDE.

* (Two seals attached—first, that of Sir Edward Scott impaling Honywood; and secondly, that of Sir Thomas Scott, used probably by his widow, Dorothy Scott.)

(**99**) 36 Elizabeth, February 16, 1594.

Indentnre of Bargain and Sale from Mary Haymon, widow of Peter Haymon, of Sellinge, Kent, Esq., to Robert Lee, of Hornchurch, Essex, Yeoman, of a moiety of three closes of land in Hockley, Essex, in the tenure of Robert Pennyfather, and containing seven and a half acres, and also a moiety of a mead, messuage, &c., in Rawreth, Essex, in the tenure of John Fance, and containing together five acres.

(**100**) 38 Elizabeth, May 6, 1595.

Indenture between Sir William Cecil, Knight, Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of the Court of Wards and Liveries, and Richard Kingsmell, Esq., surveyor of the same Liveries, on behalf of the Queen, of the first part, and Thomas Scott, Esq., son and heir of Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, deceased, witnessing that a special livery had been agreed to be granted to the said Thomas Scott of all such lordships, manors, &c., which to him descended and came into use, possession, or reversion as son and heir to the said Sir Thomas Scott. That the said Thomas Scott had delivered an indenture annexed, wherein the true yearly value of all such manors, &c., were set down. The indenture contains the usual covenants for the appointment of auditors to search, view, and valne the said manors, &c., if at any time it should be proved that any manors, &c., had been omitted or were of better value . . . .

(From this point the Deed is mutilated ; seals and signatures gone.)

(**101**) 39 Elizabeth, June 11, 1597.

An Indenture appointing trustees and attornies, viz., Thomas Scott of Smeeth, Anthony St. Leger of Ulcomb, Richard Smythe of Smeeth, Gentlemen, to act for and on the behalf of Sir John Scott, Knight, during his absence in foreign parts in the service of Her Majesty the Queen, in the management of his estates, and for the receipt and account by them of all rents, profits, commodities, &c., whatsoever, wherever situate within the realm of England.

(**102**) 39 & 40 Elizabeth, Michaelmas Term, 1597-1598.

An Order of the Court of Wards and Liveries, directing the issue of a Commission to plot, measure, and set out the bounds of certain outlands called Saltmarshes in Promehill, forming part of the manor of Jakes Court Lydd, in Romney Marsh, Kent, claimed by John Gibon, of Old Romney, Kent, Gentleman, as Committee of the body and lands of Alice Stringer, a ward of Court, daughter of William Stringer, of Lydd, deceased.[*]

(The manor of Jakes Court, together with the manor of Midley, are stated to be in possession of the Crown, by reason of the manor of Midley being held of the Queen of Knight's service.)

(**103**) 39 Elizabeth, November 20, 1597.

Indenture of Lease from Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, Kent, Knight, and the Lady Elizabeth, his wife, to Robert Davyson the younger, citizen and vintner of London, for a term of 21 years from Michaelmas last past (provided the Lady Elizabeth should so long live), of a messuage known as Great Pipers, with the lands, &c., thereto belonging, and a close of land and pasturage called Matteris, containing 12 acres, and also a close called Lawses Field, containing 40 acres, situate in Hawsted, Suffolk, all of which premises were then lately in the tenure of Robert Davyson the elder; the lease reserved to Sir John Scott and the Lady Elizabeth, their heirs, &c., the liberties of hawking, hunting, fishing, and fowling, and also all woods, underwoods, timber, &c., growing on the demised premises. Rent reserved, £35 per annum.

(**104**) May 20, 1598.

Articles indented of recommendation and agreement between Sir John Scott, Knt., on the one part, and Sir Robert Drury, Knight, on the other part, made May 20, 1598. *(See p. 219.)*

In primis, the interest of wardship of the body and land of Sir Robert Drury, to rest in Sir John Scot, and the letters patent thereof in Mr. Barber's custody, as they now do, until the said Sir John Scot be discharged in the Court of Wards of all matters touching the same, as that Sir Robert Drury did confirm my lady his mother's jointure, if need so require, and to discharge Sir John Scot of any charge touching the extent of Drury House. Item—That the interest also of Mr. Markant's wardship rests in the said Sir John Scot, and the writing with the said Mr. Barber, as they do at this instant, until the said Sir John Scot have delivered him by the said Mr. Markant a bond made by Robert Rennie and Thomas Bird unto the said Mr. Markant for the payment of money touching the wardship. Item—That Sir John Scot releases to Mr. Gawdy and Parker, now in Mr. Barber's custody rest as it doth, to be delivered when the said Mr. Gawdy and Parker releases the said Sir John Scot, as is already agreed upon, and redeliver Sir John Scot and Mr. Angell's bond of £2000 of such bonds and assurances as Sir John Scot doth stand bound in touching Southerton. Item—Likewise that Sir John Scot's grant or liberty to Sir Robert Drury to fell timber rest in Mr. Barber's hands until the effect of the last mentioned order be performed. Item—The said Sir Robert Drury is to discharge the said Sir John Scot and his lady for blacks that were owing for Sir Wm. Drury's funeral, and for all goods and chattels to Sir Wm. Drury that there came to Sir John Scot's and his lady's hands. And lastly, on the full perfecting of the said assurance, the original articles are to be cancelled. In witness hereof to one part hereof Sir John Scot has subscribed his hand, and to the other part hereof the said Robert Drury has likewise subscribed.

(Signed) R. DRURY.

MEMORANDUM. That Sir Robert Drury doth promise to enseal . . . . on land of £500 already agreed upon for the performance of covenants and a power over . . . . . between Sir Ed. Stafford and Sir John Scot, Knts., on the one part, and Sir Wm. Poeby, Anthony Gawdy, George Bacon, Esq,, and Richd. Brabone, on the other part.

(Signed) R. DRURY.

---

[*] *The manors of Jaques Court and Midley, in Romney Marsh, eventually passed to Sir Edward Scott, K.B., in right of his wife, Alice Stringer.*

(**105**) 41 Elizabeth, September 4, 1599.

Grant in perpetuity from Thomas Scott to Anthony St. Leger, of Ulcombe, Esquire, and Richard Smythe, of London, Esquire, of the manors of Nettlested, Pympe, and Hylthe, in the parishes of Nettlested, Yalding, Brenchley, Eastbarmynge and Westbarmynge, co. Kent, with the advowson of the parish church of Nettlested.

ANTHONY SENT LEGER. RICHARDE SMYTHE.

(**106**) 41 Elizabeth, September 17, 1599.

An Indenture tripartite between Anthony Sentleger, of Ulcombe, in the countie of Kent, Esq., and Richard Smythe, of the city of London,[y] Esq., of the first part; John Smythe, of Ostenhanger, in the county of Kent, Esq., and Thos. Smythe, brother of the said John Smythe, on the second part; and Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, in the said county of Kent, Knight, Thos. Scott, of Scot's Hall, in parish of Smeeth, in the said county of Kent, Esq., elder brother of the said Sir John Scott, on the third part: those of the first being seised of the fee simple of the manors of Nettlested, Pympe, and Hylthe, in Nettlested, Yaldynge, Brenchley, Eastbarmynge and Westbarmynge, in the said countie of Kent, together with the advowson of the parish church of Nettlested, &c., late in the possession of the late Sir Thomas Scott, father of the said Sir John Scott and Thos. Scott, in Nettlested, &c. The manors are to go for the use of the heirs male of the said Sir John and Dame Katherine,[z] his wife, and in default of heirs male to Thomas Scott, his heirs male, and in default of heirs male to Charles Scott, Richard, Edward, and Robert, sons of the said Sir Thomas Scott, successively, and in default of heirs male to either of them to the heirs male of Charles Scott, deceased, brother of the said Sir Thomas, and in default to the right heirs of the said Sir Thomas. Sealed and delivered in the presence of William Gull, George Pattenden, Clemont Edmondes, and James Caryes.

(Signed) ANTHONY SENTLEGER, JOHN SMYTHE, RICHD. SMYTHE.

(**107**) 43 Elizabeth, June 13, 1601.

Indenture of Agreement between Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, in Kent, Esq., and Alice, his wife, daughter and heir of Wm. Stringer, late of Old Romney, deceased, on the one part, and Henry Marshe and Hamden Egerton, both of Smeeth, Gentlemen, on the other part, whereby a fine is levied in due form of law in respect of the manors of Jaques Court and Medley, and sundry messuages, lands, tenements and hereditaments, &c., in the parishes of Lydd, Medley, Old Romney, and St. Mary's, in the said county, to the use of the said Edward Scott and Alice, his wife, and to the heirs of their bodies, and of which manors, &c., they do stand seised at this present time in right of the said Alice. (Seals and signatures missing.)

(**108**) 44 Elizabeth, July 8, 1602.

Release from John Gibbon, of Bishopsbourne, Kent, Gentleman (formerly the Committee of the lands and body of Alice Stringer, afterwards wife of Edward Scott), to Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, Kent, Esq., and Alice, his wife, and their heirs.

JOHN GIBBON.

Witnesses, THOS. SCOTT, ALEX. HAMON, THOS. HONYWOOD.

(**109**) 44 Elizabeth, July 14, 1602.

Deed dated 14th July, 44th Elizabeth, whereby Thomas Scott, of Smethe, co. Kent, Esquire, Sheriff of Kent (in consideration of a marriage solemnized between Edward Scott, his natural brother, and Alicia, his wife, only daughter and heir of William Stringer, deceased, and to provide a jointure for the said Alicia, and on account of the natural love and affection he bears to the said Edward Scott and Alicia, his wife), grants and confirms to Thomas Honywood, of Elmsted, co. Kent, Esq., and John Gybbon, of Bishoppsborne, co. Kent, Gentleman, a tenement with the appurtenances, and two small crofts thereunto adjoining, and fourteen acres of land of Southdowne, and a ffeld of land called The Hillye fielde, containing by estimation three acres of land and one virgate, with all its appurtenances, lying in the parish of Braborne, co. Kent, now or late in the tenure or occupation of Anthony Reader or his assigns, and another tenement with the appurtenances, and a piece of land being a hemplande, and five acres of land called or known by the name of Butts with all their appurtenances, lying and being in the parish of Braborne, co. Kent, and now in the tenure or occupation of John Dunkyn or his assigns, and all that house or messuage called or known by the name of the Parke Lodge of Braborne, with all buildings to the same belonging, and with all other its appurtenances lying and being in the parish of Braborne now or late in the tenure or occupation of Alexander Buckhurst or his assigns, and also other three hundred acres of meadow, pasture, and land, be the same more or less, lying in several parcels, and heretofore parcels of the *late* park of Braborne lying in the parish of Braborne, now or late in the tenure or occupation of Anthony Reader, John Dunkyn, Alexander Buckhurst, Edmund Smith, Averus Frende, John Horton, Symon Fagge, Thomas Pellande, John Horne, and William Norman, and their assigns. To have and to hold to the said Thomas Honywood and John Gybbon, their heirs and assigns, to the sole use and behoof of Edward Scott and his assigns during his natural life, without impeachment of waste, and immediately after the death of the said Edward Scott to the sole use and behoof of Alice, now wife of the said Edward and her assigns, during her life, for her jointure. And after the death of the said Alice, then to the use and behoof of the said Thomas Scott, his heirs and assigns, for ever. To be held of the chief Lords of the Fee by the services therefore due and accustomed.

---

[y] *Sir Richard Smythe, sometime Sheriff of London, of Philpot Lane, London.*

[z] *Catherine, daughter of Sir Thomas Smythe, of Ostenhanger Castle, and relict of Sir Rowland Hayward; second wife of Sir John Scott of Nettlested, whose previous wife, Elizabeth, died February 6, 1598.* *(See pp. 220—222.)*

(110) 44 Elizabeth, September 29, 1602.

Lease for 21 years from Edward Scott, Esq. (son of Sir Thomas Scott, late of Scot's Hall), and Alice, his wife, to Thomas Scott, Esq., eldest son and heir of the said Sir Thomas Scott, of the manors, &c., undermentioned, and at the rents stated, viz. :—

Description.	Parish.	Tenants.	Rents.
Jaques Court, and 78 acres of land adjoining . .	Lydd, Kent.	William Wilcocke	£40
Myddle and 127 acres of land	Myddle, and Old Romney, Kent.	Walter Netter, Peter Curtise, and Thos. Knight.	56
A messuage and 26 acres of land	Old Romney.	Thos. Waters.	16
A messuage, with barn, stable, and orchard, and half an acre of land	Old Romney.	Kenelme Dygbe, Clerk.	3
76 acres of land	Lydd.	Wm. Biges, Vincent Puckle, Joseph Bartlett.	30
			£145

THOMAS SCOTT.

Witnesses, ROBERT SCOTT, PERCIVAL HYNDE. (Fine quartered seal of Sir Thomas Scott, deceased.)

---

(111) 4 James I., February 4, 1607.

An Indenture of Agreement between Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, Kent, and Margaret Burdett, of Udymer, in Sussex, widow, on the one part, and Thomas Burdett, of Ockham, Surrey, Gentleman, and Robert Kenward, of Yalding, in Kent, Yeoman, on the other part, as executors of John Burdett, of Udymer, deceased, whereby certain lands in Udymer are assigned to Sir John Scott, as having the wardship of William Burdett, son and heir of John aforesaid, during the minority of the said William.

(Signed) THOMAS BURDETT. The mark *R* of Robt. Kenward.

---

(112) 5 James I., July 30, 1607.

Surrender by Edward Lewknor, of Aldington, Kent, Gentleman, John Reader, Christopher Elvye, John Knight, William Page, Edward Brooke, Richard Ford, and John Wyles, of Aldington, Yeomen, Ann Hawkes, of Aldington, widow, Richard Reader, Robert Cheesman, and Edmund Smith, of Smeeth, Kent, Yeomen, Thomas Redsole, of Lyme, Kent, Yeoman, William Hall, of Smeeth, Yeoman, Samuel Bayliss and Thomas Shoet (*qy.* Short), of Sellinge, Kent, Yeomen, John Fordred and Thomas Fordred, of Elmsted, Kent, Yeomen ; to Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, Kent, Knight, of all their estate, right, title, interest, and term of years in Aldington Park and the lodge therein, and in any other lands, tenements, or hereditaments which Sir John Scott had by virtue of letters patent of the 9th December, 6th Elizabeth, heretofore granted to Richard Scott and Edward Scott, sons of Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, deceased, and by them assigned to Sir John Scott.

Witnesses, FRANCIS SADLER, ROBERT STEEDE, WILLIAM WARDMAN.

---

(113) 7 James I., August 3, 1609.

Surrender by Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, co. Kent, Knight, to the King, of a lease for 21 years of the great Park of Aldington with all its appurtenances, and a house called The Lodge, which now or late were parcel of the manor of Aldington, and parcel of the lands and possessions of King Edward VI., had in exchange from John, Earl of Warwick, and before that were parcel of the possessions of the Archbishopric of Canterbury. By letters patent dated 9 December, 40 Elizabeth, the same were granted by the Queen to Richard Scott and Edward Scott, sons of Thomas Scott, Knight, deceased, for a term of 21 years, who afterwards granted their letters patent to the same Sir John Scott, Knight. These letters patent are now surrendered.

G. NEWMAN *(A Master in Chancery).*

Sealed, subscribed, and delivered to the use of o^r^ Soueraigne Lord the Kinge's Maiesty, in ye p^r^sence of ANTHONY SCOTTE, FRANCYS SADLER.

(Signed) JO. SCOTT.

(Sir John Scott's seal in good preservation.)

---

(114) 7 James I., November 6, 1609.

Indenture between Thomas Scott, of Egerton, Godmersham, Kent, Esq., and William Scott, of Godmersham, Gentleman, of the one part, and Ralph Ward, of Godmersham, Yeoman, of the other part, whereby the said Thomas and William Scott agree to acknowledge a Fine to Ralph Ward of three pieces of pasture, meadow, and marshland in Newington next Hythe, Kent, known as Foxetayles, Thistletighe, and Springfield, and containing 30 acres, and of two pieces of land in Godmersham known as Great and Little Hempsted, containing 35 acres, to the use of the said Thomas Scott and his assigns for ever.

(Signed) The mark + of Ralph Ward.

Witnesses, JOHN KNATCHBULL, RICHD. KNATCHBULL, THOMAS PAYNE, THOMAS BRODNAX, THOMAS GODFREY, WM. HAMON, WM. HEYMAN.

(115) 8 James I., January 26, 1611.

Grant in perpetuity from John Scott, of Scot's Hall, co. Kent, Knight, to John Rooke, of Horton, co. Kent, Gentleman, and Robert Steede, of Smeethe, co. Kent, Yeoman (in consideration of the payment of a sum of money) of the manors or lordships of Nettlesteede, Pympe, Hylthe, Orlaston, Hamme, Brensett, Braborne, Stephens, Combe, Stretchland otherwise Foreland, Sevington, Thevegate Hall, Henden, and Capel, co. Kent, and all his lands, tenements, meadows, feedings, pastures, commons, woods, underwoods, rents, reversions services, fisheries, fishings, waters, wastes, waste grounds, marshes and heaths, profits, commodities, advantages, emoluments, and hereditaments whatsoever in the towns, fields, parishes, hamlets, and territories of Nettlested, Pympe, Hylthe, Yaldinge, East Peckham, Waterinbury, Brenchley, Orlaston, Brabourne, Birchehoult, Shadoxhurst, Hastingleigh, Warehorne, Ruckinge, Woodchurch, Mersham, Smeethe, Meade, Aldington, Sellindge juxta Horton, Combe, Stretcheland or Forland, Hammes, Brenzett, Sevington, Thevegate Hall, Henden, and Capelle, co. Kent, &c., &c. Thomas Bedingfield, of Smeethe, co. Kent, Gentleman, and Richard Reader, of the same, Yeoman, are appointed his attornies to deliver up possession of the premises to the grantees.

---

(116) 9 James I., October 6, 1611.

Indenture between Sir John Scott, of Nettlested, Kent, of the one part, and Sir Richard Smyth, of Bromley, Kent, and John Argall, of East Sutton, Kent, Esq., of the other part, whereby Sir John Scott, for the advancement and preferment of the heirs male of his brothers Edward and Robert Scott and their heirs male, and Thomas Scott, of Egerton, Esq., son and heir to Charles Scott, Esq., uncle to Sir John Scott, and his heirs male, and Thomas and John, his sons, and their heirs male, and William Scott and Anthony Scott, other sons of Charles Scott, and their heirs male; and for the continuance of the manors, messuages, &c., in the blood, kindred, and surname of the said Sir John Scott, covenants with the said Sir Richard Smyth and John Argall, and their heirs, that they shall be seised of the manors of Braborne, Coumbe, Forland, Orlastone, Ham, Brensett, Sevington, and all his lands, &c., in Kent, with their appurtenances, to the use of Sir John Scott and his heirs, and in default of heirs to Edward Scott and his heirs male in succession; and in default of heirs of Edward Scott, to the heirs male of Robert Scott and his heirs male; and in default of heirs male, to Thomas Scott of Egerton and to Thomas, his son, and his heirs male in succession; and in default of heirs male to John, second son of Thomas Scott, of Egerton, and his heirs male in succession; and for default of heirs male, to the other sons of Thomas Scott of Egerton and their heirs male in succession; and in default to William Scott and his heirs male in succession; and in default to Anthony Scott and his heirs male. The deed provides that Sir John may at any time cancel it in the presence of two or more witnesses.

---

(117) 9 James I., December 3, 1611.

A grant of an annuity of £100 per annum by Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, secured on the revenues of the several manors of Orlaston, Capel, Brenzet, in the county of Kent, to the use of Robert Scott, his brother, during his life, and afterwards to the use of Priscilla, his wife, daughter of Sir Thomas Honywood, of Elmsted, Kent, and under certain eventualities to heirs male of the bodies of Robert and Priscilla.

Sir Richard Smythe, of the city of London (Philpot Lane), and Sir Thomas Smythe, of Mottingham, in Kent, trustees for purposes recited. (Signed) THOMAS HONYWOOD.

Witnesses, GEORGE ROOKE, ROBERT SCOTT, JOHN ROOKE.

---

(118) 10 James I., April 20, 1612.

Agreement between Katharine Honywood, of Elmsted, Kent, Gentlewoman, and Sir Thomas Honywood, Knight, of Elmsted, her brother, for the taking out of a writ of entry, and obtaining by Sir Thomas a recovery against her of lands called Hammell, Godfreys, Candisshes, Hammell Wood, Cockrelle's Wood or Cockrell's Springe, and lands on either side of the highway from Thundersley to Pritelwell, in the parishes of Leigh, Pritelwell, and Eastwood, in the county of Essex. Sir Thomas and his heirs to be seised of the lands to the use of the said Katharine and her heirs for ever.

Witness, HENRY JOHNSON. THO. HONYWOOD.

---

(119) 13 James I., September 9, 1615.

Indenture between Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, Kent, Knight, of the one part, and Sir Richard Smyth, of Bromley, Kent, Knight, John Argall, of Colchester, Essex, and John Knatchbull, of Mersham, Kent, Esquires, and George and William Rooke, of Horton, Kent, Gentlemen, reciting that by Deed of the same date Sir John Scott had appointed the use of divers lands therein mentioned to the said Sir Richard Smyth, &c., for divers terms of years;—that he was in possession of Aldington Park, parcel of the manor of Aldington, by lease from the King for a term unexpired, and witnessing that the said lands, &c., and term of years in Aldington Park had been conveyed to the said Sir Richard Smythe, &c., in trust, in the event of the death of Sir John Scott without male issue before Elizabeth, daughter of his brother Richard, should attain the age of 18 or marry, to pay her £2000 in satisfaction of a legacy of that amount left to her by the will of Thomas Scott, Esq., deceased. If the rents, &c., of Aldington Park and the other lands limited by the Deed to 15 years should not suffice to pay the same at the time specified, the money to be procured and she to be paid without fail, and the money so procured to be satisfied out of the said rents, &c. The trustees to pay all his debts due at the time of his death, and such legacies, gifts, &c., as he shall by will bequeath, and if the same shall be discharged before the expiration of the terms of years, the lands to be surrendered to the next in immediate remainder or reversion. The trustees to perform the covenants of the lease of Aldington Park to such persons as Sir John Scott by his will shall direct, or in default of appointment, to Robert Scott his brother, if then living, or if deceased, to the next in remainder or reversion. The Deed provides that Sir John Scott may in his lifetime, on payment of 10/-, make the same void. The rents of Aldington Park to be taken by Sir John Scott during his life. As to the other lands mentioned in the said Indenture, on the decease of Sir John Scott without male issue a sum of £240 per annum for life shall be paid to Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Scott, Esq., in discharge of any rent charges assured to her out of the said lands. To Robert Scott and his heirs male for 15 years, if they shall not previously have obtained possession of the said lands, £100 per annum. To Priscilla, wife of Robert, after the decease of her husband, for the remainder of the term of 15 years, 100 marks per annum for the maintenance of the eldest son of Robert Scott, this allowance to be in satisfaction of a former annuity granted out of some of the lands mentioned in the said Indenture. To George Rooke, son of Thomas Rooke, of

Mersham, Gentleman, and Sarah, his wife, for 50 years, or for their lives, or for the benefit of their children, £20 per annum. To Dame Katharine, wife of Sir John Scott, for 50 years, if she shall so long live, £100 per annum, on the surrender of her right to dower. The Deed contains covenants for the appointment of new trustees, and for the payment of the surplus profits to the person seised, in actual possession, or reversion of the said manors, lands, &c.

---

(120) 13 James I., February 12, 1616.

Sir Dudley Digges, Knight, of Chilham Castle in Kent, son and heir of Thomas Digges, of Chepsted, in said county, for good consideration, perpetually quitclaims unto Sir Warham St. Leger, of Ulcombe, in the county of Kent, and his heirs, all his right, title, interest, &c., in certain marshlands commonly called Digges' Marsh, otherwise Slayhils, and Breuills, in Halstow, Iwade, and Upchurch, in the said county. (Signed) DUDLEY DIGGES.

Witnesses, THOS. ROOKE, JOHN WORTLEY. (Seal gone.)

---

(121) 14 James I., April 1, 1616.

Deed of Bargain and Sale by Sir John Scott, of Scot's Hall, Kent, Knight, to William Cobbes, of Aldington, Esq., and George Rooke, of Smeeth, Gentleman, of his manors or lordships of Evegate, alias Thevegate, and Stevens, with their appurtenances, and also Thevegate Mill, and 1 messuage, 220 acres of arable land, 100 of meadow, 100 of pasture, 60 acres of woodland, in the occupation of Richard Reader, Edward Hart, James Harford, William Harle, or Richard Cheesman, situate in the pastures of Smeeth, Aldington, Bircholt, or Braborne, Kent, and all other the manors, messuages, lands, &c., of Sir John Scott, heretofore conveyed in jointure to Lady Dorothy Scott, deceased, widow of Sir Thomas Scott, his father, and also of all other manors, messuages, lands, &c., surrendered to him by Elizabeth Scott, widow of Thomas Scott, Esq., brother of the said Sir John Scott, situate in the same parishes. JOHN SCOTT.

Witnesses, RICHARD MORRIS, RICHARD BRAMBLEY. (Seal gone.)

---

(122) 14 James I., April 11, 1616.

Deed of Surrender by Elizabeth Scott,[a] of Segne (Sene), Kent, widow of Thomas Scott, late of Scot's Hall, Esq., to Sir John Scott, Knight, of Scot's Hall aforesaid, of her life interest in the manor of Stevens, and 14 acres of arable land, 6 of pasture, and 2 of woodland thereto belonging, in the tenure of Thomas Cheesman, and situate in the parishes of Bircholt or Brabourne, upon payment of £7 per annum to her or her assignes for her life. ELIZABETH SCOTT.

Witnesses, EDWARD BURKE, THOMAS POOLE. (Seal illegible.)

---

(123) 9 Charles I., September 16, 1633.

Deed between Thomas Scott, Esq., of Canterbury, of the one part, and Sir Edward Scott, Knight, of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, Kent, K.B., Sir Norton Knatchbull, of Mersham, Knight, Sir Peter Heyman, of Sellinge next Monckes Horton, Knight, and Sir Timothy Thornhill, of Olantigh, Wye, all in the county of Kent, of the other part, reciting the Deed of Bargain and Sale dated 11th September inst., by the said Thomas Scott to the said Sir Edward Scott and the others, of three pieces of fresh marsh, containing 54 acres, in Newington next Hythe, Kent, and called Willow Field, the twenty acres and the eighteen acres, containing covenants to keep the purchasers harmless against all former gifts, grants, jointures, &c., &c., and from the jointure and dower of Mary, the wife of the said Thomas Scott, or any other charges or incumbrances made or suffered by the said Thomas Scott, or Charles Scott, his father, deceased, except as under.

Lease from Thomas Scott to Robert Steede, of part of the premises expiring Michaelmas, 1634. Rent reserved, £40, to be paid after Michaelmas ensuing, to Sir Edward Scott and the others. Lease from Thomas Scott to William Court, of residue of the premises for 10 years. Rent (with other property), £120, £20 whereof to be paid after Michaelmas ensuing to Sir Edward Scott.

The Deed contains clauses as to warranty, &c., and the production of title deeds (a schedule of which is annexed), and a covenant granting a right of way to the premises over other lands of the said Thomas Scott for a term of nine years.

Deed A. Sealed and delivered by the within named Sir Edward Scott, in the presence of Robert Scott, John Best, senior, Thomas Scott, Timothy Rooke. EDWARD SCOTT.

(Seal of Edward Scott impaled with arms of his wife, Alice Stringer.)

Deed B. Sealed and delivered by the within named Sir Peter Heyman, in the presence of Robert Steede, Thomas Sharpe. PET. HEYMAN.

(A good seal, a man with a stick, and carrying a pack on his back, with motto, "Facti Coria.")

Deed C. Sealed and delivered by the within named Sir Tymothie Thornhill, in the presence of Peter Pyarde, Edward Pyarde. TYMOTHYE THORNHILL. (Seal gone.)

Deed D. Sealed and delivered by the within named Sir Norton Knatchbull, in the presence of John Holgate, Geo. . . . . NORTON KNATCHBULL.

(Good seal of Sir Norton Knatchbull, of Mersham Hatch.)

---

(124) 11 Charles I., September 1, 1635.

Enfeoffment by Jonathan Dunkin, one of the sons and coheirs of James Dunkin, late of Canterbury, to Katharine Scott, daughter of Thomas Scott, Esq., late of the same city, of all his part and property in certain parcels of arable pasture and woodland called Hempsted and Combe, containing by estimation 35 acres, in the parishes of Godmersham and Waltham, Kent.

(Signed) JONATHAN DUNKIN.

---

[a] *Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Honywood, of Sene.*

(125) 14 Charles I., April 19, 1638.

Grant from Sir Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, to George Rooke, of Monks Horton, of the advowson of the church of Nettlested, co. Kent, with power of redemption in case he shall pay 6d. at Christmas next to make this deed void. A Memorandum declares that the 6d. was paid.

---

(126) 22 Charles I., December 2, 1646.

Mortgage by Edward Scott, Esq., of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, Kent, in consideration of the sum of £300 to Thomas Rooke, of Scot's Hall aforesaid, Gentleman, of three pieces of pasture land in the parish of Lympe, Kent, containing 23 acres, and known as Beavefields, Browne's Close, and Upper Stone Wall. THOMAS ROOKE.

Witnesses, TIMOTHY ROOKE, LANCELOT HARRISON, WILLIAM GILBERT, JOHN ADDISON.

---

(127) 24 Charles I., September 24, 1648.

Indenture between George Rooke, of Monks Horton, Kent, Gentleman, on the one part, and John Brown, of Scot's Hall, Smeeth, Esq., Thomas Gibbons, of Westcliffe, Gentleman, Thomas Rooke, of Scot's Hall aforesaid, Gentleman, Wm. Rooke, of Monks Horton aforesaid, Gentleman, and Peter Bedingfield, of Smeeth aforesaid, Gentleman, of the other part, reciting that Sir John Scott, by his last will dated 18th September, 14th James I., had bequeathed to Lady Katherine, his wife, for life, the use and occupation of his plate and furniture of Nettlested, and the goods and chattels there not otherwise disposed of, and after her decease to Sir Richard Smythe, of Leeds Castle, Knight, John Argall, of Colchester, Essex, Esq., George Rooke, Gentleman, William and John Rooke, Gentlemen, brothers of the said George, their executors, &c., upon trusts appointed by Sir John Scott by deed dated . . . . September, 14th James I., whereby he assigned all his goods and chattels, armoury, &c., at Scot's Hall to the said Richard Smythe, &c., for ever, with power of ingress and egress into Scot's Hall, viz., 1st, to the use of Sir John Scott for life, and after his decease to Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, Esq., his brother, and after his decease to other persons therein mentioned.

The deed recites that Sir John Scott and Dame Elizabeth, his wife, are dead, and Edward Scott, Esq., afterwards K.B., is also dead, and Edward Scott, his son and heir, is living, and that George Rooke is the only survivor of the said trustees, and thereupon assigns to the said John Browne, &c., all the said goods and chattels, &c., at the mansion house at Nettlested, to the use of the said Edward Scott for life, and after his decease to his heirs male and to such other persons for life as are specified in an Indenture between Sir John Scott of the first part, Sir Richard Smythe and Thomas Brett, Esq., of London, of the other part, dated 9 September, 12 James I.

The deed then assigns to the said John Browne, &c., the said trusts, and contains a proviso that none of the said goods and chattels are to be removed or carried away from the mansion house of Nettlested. GEO. ROOKE.

Sealed and delivered in the presence of LAURENCE ROOKE, WM. GIBBONS, JOHN GORHAM.

---

(128) 15 Charles II., April 1, 1663.

Articles of Agreement between Edward Scott, of Scot's Hall, Kent, Esq., of the first part, Sackvile Crow, Esq., eldest son, and John Crow, younger son of Sir Sackvile Crow, Baronet, trustees for the Lady Catharine Scott, wife of the said Edward Scott, of the second part, and the Lady Catharine Scott of the third part.

---

(129) 4 William and Mary, May 31, 1692.

Indenture quadrupartite between Sir Samuel Grimston, of Gorhambury, Herts, Baronet, son and heir and executor of Sir Harbottle Grimston, Baronet, deceased, of the first part, William, Earl of Bedford, K.G., of the second part, Sir Robert Atkins, of Saperton, Gloucester, Knight,[b] and John Fox, of Richmond, Surrey, of the third part, and Sir Francis Pemberton, Knight, Serjeant-at-law, and George Scott, of Scot's Hall, Kent, Esq., of the fourth part, whereby in consideration of £7000 paid by the Earl of Bedford, and of £960 paid by Sir Robert Atkins and John Fox, Esq., being the same amounts as are mentioned in an Indenture quadrupartite of concurrent date between Sir Samuel Grimston, Paul Bowes, Esq., of the Middle Temple, and James Bennett, Esq., of Lincoln's Inn, of the first part, the Earl of Bedford of the second part, Sir Robert Atkins and John Fox, Esq., of the third part, and Sir Francis Pemberton and George Scott, Esq., of the fourth part, the said Sir Samuel Grimston assigns for the remainder of the term of 500 years to Sir Robert Atkins and John Fox in trust for the Earl of Bedford, his executors, &c., Combe Farm and other lands, and also assigns to them the Manors of Hall, Smeeth, and Thevegate, the messuage of Scot's Hall with its appurtenances, and Scot's Hall Park with the manors of Orlaston, Capell, Henden, Ham, Sevington, and Brensett, with the appurtenances, and Orlaston Wood, containing by estimation 1100 acres, for the remainder of a term of 99 years, if Lady Caroline Scott shall so long live.

In this Indenture the following Deeds are recited :—

Indenture of 17th March, 17 Charles II., between Sir Thomas Scott, Knight, Charles, Earl of Norwich, Francis, Lord Hawley, Sir George Carteret, Knight and Baronet, and Philip Carteret, Esq., of the first part, and Henry, Lord Arundel of Wardour, John, Lord Bellasis, and Sir Charles Waldegrave, Bart., of the other part, whereby Combe Farm and other lands are conveyed to Lords Arundel, &c., for 500 years, subject to a proviso of redemption on payment of £1700 with interest.

Indenture of 1st July, 1679, between the above mentioned Lords Arundel of Wardour and Bellasis, Sir Charles Waldegrave and Lewis Richardye, Esq., and the Honorable Lady Francis, his wife, of the first part, Sir Thomas Scott of the second part, and John Searle, Esq., of the third part, whereby the remainder of the term of 500 years is assigned to the said Sir John Searle, his executors, &c.

Indenture of 9th March, 1681, between Sir Thomas Scott and Dame Carolina, his wife, of the first part, and the said John Searle of the other part, whereby they demise to the said John Searle the manors of Hall, Smeeth, and Thevegate, alias Evegate, and other manors, &c., therein mentioned, for 99 years, or for the life of Sir Thomas Scott and Lady Caroline, his wife.

Indenture of 31st July, 1684, after the death of Sir Thomas Scott and John Searle, between Anne Searle, widow and sole executrix of John Searle, of the first part, and Sir Harbottle Grimston of the other part, whereby Combe Farm and other premises are conveyed for the remainder of the term of 500 years to Sir Harbottle Grimston, and also the manors mentioned in the above Indenture of the 9th March, 1681, for the residue of the term of 99 years.

---

[b] *Sir Robert Atkins, of Saperton, son-in-law of Sir George Carteret, Bart., Chamberlain of Household of Charles II., and brother-in-law of Lady (Caroline) Scott, wife of Sir Thomas Scott, of Scot's Hall.*

Index.

ABERGAVENNY, Lord, xxxvii.
Adams, Richard, 192.
Alan of Galloway, 12, 20.
Aldersey, Mary and John, 212.
Aldington, *Manor and Park*, 213.
Alexander, *King of Scots*, 14, 20, 88.
Altar Tomb, *Brabourne Church*, 41.
Anson, Lord, xlv.
Appleyard, *family of Norfolk*, 129, 173.
Appulderfeld, William, lix.
Argall, Richard, etc., 185; John, 217; Thomas, vii, lxvii; Reynald, vii.
Armada, Spanish, 202.
Arundel and Surrey, *Earl of*, xxvii.
Ashford, *Brass of Countess of Athol*, 76.
,, College, 132.
Athol, *Earls of* (see Strabolgi); *Countess of Athol*, 71, 76, 105, lii.
Aynho, 28.

BADDLESMERE, Sir Bartholomew, 171.
Baker, Right Hon. Sir John, *of Sissinghurst Castle*, 180; Elizabeth, 206, 207; John, 208.
Baldwin de Betun, *Earl of Albemarle, Lord of Brabourne Manor*, 20, 65.
Baliol, Ada, 23; Alexander, *of Chilham, Kent*, 12, 20, 21, 31; Sir Alexander, 15, 16, 55, 70, 105.
,, Alexander, 22, 23; Alexander, *of Cavers*, 23.
,, Cicely, 23, 27.
,, David Strabolgi, or Baliol, 23.
,, Devorgilda, 12, 20, 53.
,, Edward, *King of Scots*, 12, 22, 57.
,, Hugh, 16, 22, 70, 82.
,, John, *King of Scots*, 11, 16, 20, 56.
,, John, of Barnard Castle (*founder of Balliol College, Oxford*), 20, 22, 53.
,, Margaret, 23.
,, Mary, 14, 23.
,, Thomas (le Scot), 22, 55.
,, William (le Scot), 11, 18, 23, 31, 55, 70, 82, 87. (See le Scot).
Ballard, Nicholas, 192, 193.
Ballieul in France, 56.
Ballingarry, *Scotts of*, 257.
Balliol College, 18, 20, 30, 31, 54, 56, 57.
Ballygannon, *Scotts of*, 256.
Barham, Sir Francis, xxv.
Barnes, Richard ("Rico-a-Barne"), lxi.
Barton, Elizabeth (Holy Maid of Kent), 101.
Beaufitz, Agnes, William, 22, 37; Elizabeth, 111; William and Elizabeth, 121, 123; John, lvi; Pedigree, 124.
Beddingfeld (of Oxburgh Hall), Sir Edmund, K.G., 122; John, Elizabeth, Marie, Agnes, 125; Sir Edmund, 150; William, lxviii.
Bennett, Sir Henry (*Lord Arlington*), 237.
Bere, Dorothy, 186, 208; Clement, lxx.
Best, Thomas, 250; George, 251; *Pedigree of* Best, 251; Mrs., xlvi; Mrs. Fairfax, i, xlix; Richard, xvii.
Bettenham, Stephen, lvi, lx.
Blechynden, William, lxiv.
Bloxam, Dr. *Vicar of Beeding*, 67.
Bodiam Castle, Sussex, 131, 133.
Bodulgate, John, 171; Walter Bodelgate, lv; Thomas, lviii.
Bolney, Bartholomew, lx.
Boughton, Sir Edward, 145, 176; Nicholas, lxv.
Bourdillion, Osmyn, 253.
Boys, Edward, vi, xxvii; William, lxviii.
Brabourne (*Royal Manor of*), 16, 20, 21, 32, 62, 63, 89, li, lii.
Brett, Sir Robert, xxiv; Thomas, xxix.
Brianston, ..., lxiii.
Bridgeman, Mr., M.P. *Hythe*, iv.
Brokman, Robert, liii.
Bromley, Sir Henry, 215, 227; Edward, 216; Lord Chancellor Bromley, 227; Sir Thomas, 227.
Brooke, William, *Lord Cobham*. (*See Cobham.*)
Brothers, Rev. James, *late Rector of Brabourne*, 43.
Browne, Sir Richard, xxii, xxx, xxxi; John, xxii.
Bruce, Robert, *King of Scotland*, 16, 71.
,, Robert, 20.
Brun, le, Hugh, *Earl of Marche*, 21.
Buckhurst, Thomas, Lord, lxx.
Buckingham, *Duke of*, 47; Edward, *Duke of*, 159.
Bunburie, Richard, xxxviii.
Burchell, Charles, xliv.
Burgh, Hubert de, 65.
Burghursh, Lord, xxvii, xxviii.
Burgoyne, My Lady of, 125.
Burgundy, Duke of, 125.
Burkinghole, William de, xlix; Matilda, xlix.
Burleigh, *The Earl of*, xxi.

CALAIS, Scunage of, 121.
Calverley, 84.
Camolys garden, l.
Canewdon, 27, 28.
Canmore, Malcolm, *King of Scots*, 19, 20.
Carey, Sir R., xviii.
Carmelite Friars *in Sandwich*, 103.
Carr, Robert, xxii.
Carteret, Sir George, 237, xli, xlii; Caroline, 237, xli; Pedigree, extract, 238; Philip, 238; Elizabeth, xli; Louisa Margaretta, xlii.
Castile, Eleanor de, 77.
Catherine, St., 29, 31, 89.
Catherine wheel, 54, 84, 85, 89, 151, 158.

Cavendishe, Robert, lv.
Caxtune, Thomas, 109.
Cecil, Sir William, ii, lxxi.
Chamberlain-Ingles, Henry, 253.
Chapel, *Horne's Place, Appledore*, 132.
Charlton, Robert de, lii.
Chastillon, Guy de, *Count de St. Paul*, 70, 71; Margaret, *wife of Prince Alexander of Scotland*, 71; Mary de St. Paul, 71.
Chene or Cheney, Sir John of Shurland, K.G., 111, 169, lviii, lix; Lord Cheyney, 169; Sir Richard, 171; Sir Thomas, 173.
Chericot, Martin de, Thomas, William, John, Gilbert, Godfrey, xlix.
Chester, *Earl of* (see John le Scot), 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21. (Also *Earl of Huntingdon*, and *Lord of Strathbolgie.*)
Chichester, *Siege of*, xxxviii.
Chilham (*Honour and Castle of*), 31; Isabel de, 55; Richard de, 76; Bailiff of, 110.
Cholmeley, Roger, *of London*, lxv, lxvi.
Christiana, wife of William de Fortibus, *Earl of Albemarle*, niece of John le Scot. *Earl of Huntingdon*, 28.
Clare, Elizabeth de, her seal, 77.
Clifton, Isabel, Lady, 44; Sir Gervase, 51, 105, lvii, lix.
Cluniac, *Monastery of Monk's Horton*, 57.
Cobb, William, 61; John of Newcherche, lx.
Cobham, Sir Henry, xv; Cobham (*Lord Warden*), iv, x, xi; William (*Lord Lieutenant*), x, xi, xii, xiii, xiv; John Cobham, xi; Thomas de, Reginald de, Chivalers, l, li, lii.
Colchester, *Siege of*, 232.
Cole, Michael, xxiv, xxv, xxx, xxxi, xxxii.
Comyn, *Lords of Badenoch and Strathbolgie*, 14; John *the Black*, 14, 16, 71; John *the Red*, 71; Dornagilla, 23; Elizabeth, 23; Marian, 71, 72; Joan, 23, 71; John, 23, 71, 87, 88; William, 23.
Conqueror, William the, 21; Gundrada, daughter of, 21.
Conghurst, Scotts of, 84.
Cooke, Sir Edward, xxiv.
Copildyke, John, 110, lxiv; Thomas, 111.
Cork, *Earl of*, 238, xxxix, xv.
Cossard and Tong, Scotts of, 257.
Cossington, *of Aylesford*, Thomas and Richard, lxiv.
Cotton, Sir Thomas, ix.
Courthop, Thomas, *of Brabourne*, lxvii.
Criols, De, 132. (*See Keriel.*)
Crispe, Sir Henry, *of Quex*, 191.
Culpeper, Alexander, 228; Pedigree of, 228; Sir Alexander, x; Sir Thomas, xxxii.
Cumbes, *De Cumbe, or Coombe*, 42, 66, 67; William de, 92; Heiress of, 23; Peter de Combe, liii.
Cunningham, Robert, 244.

DALISON, Sir Marc, xxxii.
D'Angouleme, Isabel, 16, 21.
Darrell, Robert, xxviii, xxix, xxxii.
David, *King of Scots*, 14, 20.
,, *Earl of Huntingdon and Strathbolgie*, 14, 20; Ada, daughter of, 71.
Denton Court, xlv.
Derham, Elizabeth, xxxiii, xxxv.
Dering, Sir Edward, *of Surrenden*, 241, xxxii; Cecilia Dering, 241; William Dering, xliv.
Devereux, Robert, *Earl of Essex*, vi, viii.
Devorgilda Baliol. (*See Baliol.*)
Diggs (or Dygges), John, 191, lix; Sir Dudley, xxiii, xxv; John, *of Berham*, lxiii.
Domesday Book, 24.
Domus Dei of Dover, 103, 121.
Doran, Dr., 245, xlv.
Dorset, Cecily, *Countess of*, xvii; The Earl of, xxx.
Douglas, Archibald, 23.
Dover Castle, *Constable of*, 107, 130.
Dover Haven, 195, 199, 200, etc.
Drury, Sir William, 47, 163, 219, 220, xvi, xl, lxxi; Sir Robert, ix, xvi, lxx, lxxi.
Dudley, Lord Guildford, 109, 171; Lord Robert (*Earl of Leicester*), 129, 171.
Dulce Cor Abbey, *Dumfries*, 53, 54.

EARLS of Essex, De Mandevilles, 28; Henry of Essex, 64.
East and West Tilbury, Essex, 121.
Echingham, *Thomas, Lord of*, lvi.
Edolphe, Sir Robert, *of Hinxshill*, 227.
Egerton, Lord, xxii.
Empress Maude, *daughter of Matilda de Scotia, or le Scot, Queen of Henry I. of England*, 21, 28.
Eps. John and Stephen, liv.
Essex, Henry de, *Lord of Brabourne Manor*, 20, 27, 28, 64.
Evelyn, *Diarist*, 61, 93.
Everynge, William, lxviii.

FAGG, Ffaagge, Vaagge. Thomas Ffagg, lxi; John, lxi; Thomas, Robert, and Richard, lxvi.
Fane, Thomas, v; Sir Thomas, viii, x; Francis, *Baron D'Espencer*, viii, xvi, xvii, xl; George, xxiii; Sir George, xxxii, xl; Mildmay, *Earl of Westmoreland*, xl; Richard and Thomas, lxix.
Felton *Castle and Manor*, lii; *Forest and town of*, lii.
Fenton, Viscount, xxiv.
Fletcher, Brice, 251.
Ferrers, Isabel de, *Countess of Athol*, 23, 132.
Finch (Herbert, or Fynche), Isabel, Vincent, 23, 104; Dyonysia, 51, 61, 121; of Nethersfield, 61; Pedigree of, 105; Vincent, 116, lvi, lx; Sir Moyle, x; William, lix.
Fitzalan, Edmund, *Earl of Arundel*, 171.
Float, Scot's, 122.
Fogge, Sir John, 108, 132, 153, 159, lix, lxii, lxiii; Alice, 173, 174, 187; Thomas, *Sergeant Porter of Calais*, 173, 187, lxiv, lxv; *Pedigree of family*, 175; *account of*, 174; John, *of Mersham*, lxiv; George, lxvii.
Fortibus, William De, *Earl of Albemarle*, 21.
Fotheringhay, 19, 20.
Framlington, *Castle of*, lii.
Frenyngham, John de, l, lvi; Ralph, Joan, lvi.

GAINSBOROUGH, *the Manor of*, lii.
Gernyngham, or Jerningham. (*See Fernyngham.*)
George IV., 243.
Godfrey, Thomas, *of Lidd*, 187.
Goldwell, Thomas, 113, lx, lxi.
Gower, or Gore, Sir Robert, 58; John, the poet, 57, 58; Gowers *of Clapham*, 58; Thomas Gower, 58, lxi; Barony of Gower, 58; Katherine Gower, 59; Joan Gower, 59; John *of Clapham*, 59; Thomas de Gore, lv, lvi.
Gore. (*See Gower.*)
Goring, 23; George Goring, *Earl of Norwich*, 230, 231, xxxiv, xxxv, xxxvi; Col. George Goring, 233, xl; Mary Goring, *Countess of Norwich*, xxxviii; Charles Goring, *Earl of Norwich*, 233, x; John Goring, lx.
Gray, H., xliv.
Grey, Lady Jane, 109, 171; Sir Henry, 126; Lady Jane, Queen, i, ii.
Grinstead, West, 23.
Guilford (*Guldeford, Gilford, or Gylford*), Sir John, 109; Sir Edward, 134; Sir Henry, 134; Lord Guildford Dudley, 134; George, 134; Sir Richard, Edward, and George, 169; Guldeford Pedigree, 171; Sir John, i, lxii; Sir Richard, lxii; Sir Henry, lxv.
Guilford, *the Earl of*, xlvii, xlviii,
Gundrada, *daughter of William the Conqueror*, 21.

HADLEIGH Castle, 64.
Haddock, Richard, Captain, 247, xlvi; Haddock Pedigree, 248; Admiral, xlvi; Miss Haddock, xlvii.
Hales, Sir James, v, x, xxv, xxxii; John, lxiv, lxv; James, lxv.
Halsham, de, Elizabeth, Hugh, Joanna, John, lii, liii; Philippa, 33, lii; Richard, 23; John, Robert, Philippa (account of), 78,

79; Sir Hugh, 105; Joan, 141; "*Petigre of Hughe Allsham, knighte,*" 142, 144.
Hamon, Ralph, xiii; Sir Thomas, xxvii.
Hardres, Thomas, xxiii.
Harlokynden, William, lix, lx.
Harte, Sir George, v, x; Sir Percival, xxv.
Hastings, John De, 16, 72.
,, Henry De, 21.
Haute, or Hawte, Sir William, 134, 135, 139, lxii, lxiii; Anne, Sir William, Sir Richard, 153, lv, lxiii; William, lviii.
Hawkins, Sir John, xiv.
Hayes, Lord, xxix.
Hayward, Sir Rowland, Catherine, 223; John, xxvi.
Heatley, Thomas, xxiv.
Heart Shrine, *in Brabourne Church*, 40.
Helena (*daughter of last Prince of North Wales, wife of John le Scot*), 14.
Hell atte (*or Helles*), William, lxvi.
Heyman, Sir Peter, 185; Elizabeth, Ralph, Peter, 207, xxiv; Mary, lxvi; William, lxvii, lxix; Mary and Peter, *of Sellinge*, lxxi.
Hevenyngham, Anne, 126.
Hilles (Helles, or Atte Hell), George, Edward, Christopher, John, lxviii.
Hinde. (*See Hynde.*)
Hippesley, Sir John, xxv, xxvi.
Hoke, Thomas atte, liv.
Honywood. Katherine and John Honywood, *of Elmsted*, 212; Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Honywood, *of Sene*, 213; Priscilla. *daughter of Sir Thomas*, 223; Celebrated Mary Honywood, *of Charing*, 223; Sir Thomas, *of Elsmere*, 224; Mrs. Honywood, *of Mark's Hall*, 225; Sir John Honywood, 225; Priscilla, 225; Thomas, iii; John, *of Elmsted*, iii; William, xxiv.; Sir Thomas, xxiv; John, *of Elmsted*, xxii; Katherine, xxxiii; Thomas, lxviii, lxix, lxxii.
Horne, Thomas, *Alderman of London*, lxii.
Horseman's Place, Dartford, 208.
Howard, Anne, *daughter of Sir John Howard*, 60, 171.
Huntingdon, *Earl of*, John le Scot, *Earl of*, (see Le Scot); David, *Earl of*, 14, 19, 20.
Hynde, Richard, 193; Percival, xv, lxxi.
Hythe, *The Mayor, Jurats, and Commonalty of*, xxix.

IBERIA, IBERI, 7.
Iber Scot, 7.
Iden, *Mansion of Mote*, 120.
Isabel de Chilham, 23.
Isham, Henry, 187.
Isle (or Isley), Roger, lvi.

JERNYNGHAM, Sir John, of *Cossey*, 105; Isabella, 115; Elizabeth, 122.
Judde, Thomas, lxv.

KEMPE, Pedigree of, 106, 184; John, *Archbishop*, 106; Emeline, daughter of Sir William Kempe, *of Olantigh*, 184; Sir Thomas, xi; Peter, *of Brabourne*, xlix, l; John and Ralph, *of Brabourne*, liii.; William, lxiv.
Kentish, Royalist rising, 234.
Kentys, John, l.
Kevelioc, Hugh le, *Earl of Chester*, 15.
Keyes, Richard, 191.
Kinea-Scuit or Scots, 4.
King—Alexander II., King of Scots, 15, 16; Alexander III., 16, 20; David, King of Scots, 18, 20; Malcolm Kanmore, 18, 20; John Baliol, King of Scots, 20, 22; William the Lion, King of Scots, 20.
—— John of England, 16; Henry I. of England, 16; Henry III., 15, 16; Edward I., 15, 17; Edward V., 15.
Kingsmell, Richard, lxxi.
Konynbrok, Peter de, l.
Knatchbull, Sir Norton, 212, 237, xx, xxiii, xxviii, xxxviii; Mary and John, 213; John and Richard, 225; Richard, 227; Thomas, 227; *Pedigree and Issue of* Richard Knatchbull, 227; William, son of Reginald, xii; Lady, xxviii; Mrs. Knatchbull, xxxviii; William Knetchebole; John, lxvi.
Knatchbull-Hugessen, *the Right Hon. E., M.P.*, 81.
Kynet, William, *of Bonynton*, l.
Kyriel (or De Criol), Sir Thomas, lvii, lxiii; John, lxii, lxiii.

LAURENS, Thomas, lxi.
Leger, St. (*see letter S*).
Leicester, Robert Dudley, *Earl of*, i, ii, iii, iv, v.
Lenox, Lord, xxv.
Llewellyn, *Prince of North Wales*, 21; Helena, *daughter of*, 21.
Levison, Sir Walter, 173; Mary, 173; Sir John, viii, xii, xiv, xv, xvi, xix.
Lewknor, Sir John, 22; Sibella, 22, 139; Lewknors, account of, 79; Sir John, 116; Sir Thomas, 133, 140, etc.; Alexander, 217, lxviii; John, lvii, lix, lx, lxi; Sir Roger, lx, lxi; Thomas, lx, lxi; Jane (Joan), lx, lxi, lxiii.
Lincoln, John de, lii.
Lincoln College, 155, 158.
Line, Henry, xxxix.
Lovelace, William, lxix.

MACDOUGAL (*Lords of Galloway*), Alan, 12, 20, 21; Christiana, 21; Devorgilda, 21.
Mackeson, H. B., F.G.S., iv.
Maidstone, *Viscountess*, x.
Manwood, Peter, xvi; Roger, xix, xxiii; Sir Peter, xix, xxiii, xxiv; R. R., xxii.
Mareschal, William De (*Earl of Pembroke*), 16, 21, 66, 67, 68, 82; Joan, 16, 21, 82.
Mark and Oye, *Lordship of Calais*, 121.
Mayne, John, 112.
Mayney, or Mayne, Walter, 208; Antony, vii.
Medway, *rendering navigable*, 209, xxx.
Mendicant Friars, Canterbury, 103.
Mersham Hatch, 100, 102, 209.
Mitford, *Castle and Manor of*, lii.
Monchensie, Warrenne de, *and others*, 69, 82; Joan de, 82.
Montague, Elizabeth, 245; Edward, *M.P. for Huntingdon*, xlv.
Montfort, Simon de, *Earl of Leicester*, 20, 21; Hugh de, 64, 82.
Montgomery, *the Earl of*, xxix.
Monyn, Nicholas, liv.
Moyle, John and Mary, *of Buckwell*, 223; Sir Walter, lxii; John, lxii.
Mullins, Sir John, lxvii.

NETHERSOLE, William, xxii.
Nettlested Place or Court, 35; *Banqueting Hall, etc., account of*, 160-1; *Ancient Barn, account of*, 162; *Siege of*, xxxix; *Expenses at*, xli (1671).
Neville, Edward (*6th Baron of Abergavenny*), 231; Mary Neville, 231; Ursula, vii; George Neville, *Earl of Abergavenny*, vii.
Norman stained glass, 34.
Norman, William Fitz, 66; Gilbert le Norman, 66.
Northampton, Spencer Compton, *Earl of Northampton*, xlvi.
Northumberland, Henry, *Earl of*, 23.
Norton, Sir Albertus, xxvii; Margaret, lxiv; Sir John, lxv.
Norwich, *Earl and Countess of*, 231, 232.

OLD SWINFORD, *Manor of*, 108.
Olney, John, *Alderman of London*, lxii.
Orlastone, Joan de, Sir Richard de Orlastone, 103; Joan de, liv.
,, *Pedigree of family of* De Orlastone, 104; Richard de, lv; John de, lv.
Orlaston Manor, 103.
Ostenhanger Castle, 147, 206.
Oxburgh Hall, 151.
Oxenbridge, Sir Robert, of Brede, Sussex, 173, 174.

PALMER, Sir Henry, *Superintendent of Chatham Dockyard*, xvii.
Pardon *to William Scott, of Mote Iden*, lxiii.
Pashley, or Pashele, Sir Robert, and others, 60; John Passhele 117; Sir John, liv, lvi, lvii, lviii; Edmunde de Passeleys, 119; Elizabeth, daughter of John Pashley, 153, 164; Edward, lvi; William, lxii.
Paston Letters, 152, 153.
Paston, Sir John, 165, 166.
Pedigrees—Finche, 105; Kempe, 106, 184; Orlastone, 104; Beaufitz, 124; Lewknor, 141; Halsham, 144; Bedingfield, 152; Scott and Watts, *of Barnes Hall*, 157; Pympe and Pashley Pedigree, 171; Scotts *of Mote Iden, Sussex*, 173; Fogges *of Repton and Ashford*, 175; Sir Reginald, by 2nd wife, 185; Rooke *of Horton*, 185; Scotts *of Camberwell*, 186; Pedigree of Descent, Richard Scott and Mary Whetenal, 187; Baker, 207; Heyman *of Somerfield*, 207; Edward, Duke of Buckingham, 219; Scotts *of Longage, Lyminge, Kent*, 225; Papillon, 225; St. Leger, *of Ulcombe*, 228; Culpeper, 228; Sir William Scott, *Ambassador, Florence*, 229; Goring, Earl of Norwich, 235; Carteret, 238; William Scott, 243; Haddock, 248; Compton, *Earl of Northampton*, 248; George Scott (*Bombay*), 248; Best, of *Chilston and Wyerton*, 252; William Scott, 253; Scotts of *Scot's Hall and Brabourne*, 254, 255; Scotts of *Ballygannon* (*Hopton Scotts*), 256; of *Tong and Cossard*, 257; of *Shrewsbury*, 258; of *Betton*, 260; of *Ballingarry*, 261; of *York and Aldborough*, 262; of *Halden and Conghurst*, 263; of Schotte, *Zeeland*, 265.
Pemberton, *Right Hon. Sir Francis*, 240, xlii, xliii; Anne, 240, xlii.
Percy, Sir Thomas —; Thomas de Percy, Chivaler, lii, liii; Henry, *Earl of Northumberland*, and Sir Ralph, 23, 78; Eleanor, daughter of *Earl of Northumberland*, 47.
Peshall, Sir John, *of Horseley*, 173.
Pitt, William, *Prime Minister*, xlviii.
Plog, William, *of East Peckham*, l.
Pollard, Sir —, 193.
Polper (*Polperro*), John, lxii.
Poynings, Dame Elizabeth, 46; Sir Edward Poynings, 46, 52, 116, 122; Sir E., 123, 126, 146, i, lxii, lxiv; Lord Robert, lv.
Pound, John, lii, liii.
Priory of Monk's Horton, 64.
Princess Cecilia, 133.
Psalter of Cashel, 7.
Pympa, De, *Domesday Manor of*, 159, l.
Pympe, Reginald and John, 60, 165, 166, 168, lvii; Reginald, lvi, lvii; Thomas, lvii; Anne, 60, 159; Pedigree of, 171; William de Pympe, Margaret, Philip, Alice, Thomas, Richard, Rose, Joane, l, lii, William de Pympe, li, lii; John, liii, lxii, lxiii, lxiv, lxv; Elizabeth, lxiii, lxiv; Henry, lxv.
Pympe's Court, 159.

QUEEN OF SCOTS—Margaret, Infant Queen of Scots, 16; Mary, ii.

REYNESFORD, Sir John, lxv; Dame Winifred, lxv.
Riley, Henry Thomas, 108.
Rivers, Sir John and Sir George, xxxii.
Robartes, Sir Thomas, xii; Sir Walter, xxxii.
Robinson, Morris, 245, xlv; Mrs. Robinson, 245; Matthew (*Lord Rokeby*), xlv.
Robsart, Sir John, *of Shurland*, 171; Amye, 171.
Rokeby, Lord, 245, xlv.
Romescot, 5.
Romeland, 5.
Romney, 4.
Rooke—*Pedigree of Rookes, of Horton*, 185; Laurence. lxx.
Roos, William, 116.
Rosamund's, Fair, Tower, 147.
Rotherham, *family of*, 156.
Rotherham, *Bishop of Lincoln*, lxiii (*see* Thomas Scotte, *Archbishop of York*).
SACKVILLE, Thomas, *Earl of Dorset*, 84, 99, 207.
St. Leger, or *Sellinger*, Sir Thomas, 169; Sir Warham, 217, 228, vii; Antony, 217, 228, vii, xl, lxx, lxxi, lxxii; Ralph, lix; Pedigree of St. Leger, 228.
St. Nicholas, Thomas, lix.
St. Paul, Mary de, 82, 93.
St. Syriack, 70, 93, 184.
Salburga, *Domina de Breburne*, 64, 93.
Salisbury, *the Marquis of*, i, xviii.
Saltwood Castle, 65.
Sandes, Edwin, Sir, xxvii.
Sepvannes, Sir William, lvii.
Sceatta, or *Sceat*, 4, 5, 19.
Schoies, William de, De Scois, D'Eschoies, or Le Scot—see modes of spelling name of Scot, 25, 69.
Scone, 7.
Scot, 1, 4, 25; Clement, 3; Heber or Iber, 7; *of Buccleuch*, 12; *of Balweary*, 12; *of Branxholm*, 12; *of Ancrum*, 12; *of Harden*, 12, 264.
Scot, Sir David, 15; Sir Michael, 15; John, 23; William, 22; Sir William, 22, 23, 47, 90; Michael, 23; David Scot, 20.
"Scot and Lot," 5, 6.
Scot, Le, the surname of Royal Scoto-Saxon line of Scottish kings, 71.
Scot, Le, Ada, sister and co-heir of John le Scot, 20.
,, Isabel, sister and co-heir of John le Scot, 20.
,, Edgar de Scotie or Le Scot, 20.
,, John (*Earl of Huntingdon and Chester and Strathbolgie*), 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 26, 27, 29, 89.
,, John Comyn, 17.
,, John (*of Scotty's Hall, Potter Newton, Yorkshire*, 20, 69.
,, John (*of Brabourne*),
,, Margaret, 12, 18, 20, 27, 71, 89.
,, Matilda (*De Scotie or le Scot*), Queen of Henry I. of England, 16, 20, 69.
,, Thomas Baliol, 17.
,, William Baliol, 11, 15, 17, 18, 22, 42.
,, William, 28.
Scota, 3, 4; Scota or Scytha, 3; Scoti, 6.
Scotia, 6, 9, 19.
Scotland, 1, 3, 5, 6, 8, 19; William the Lion, *King of*, 9, 27; Alexander of Scotland, 9, 14, 15, 20; Malcolm, *King of United Scotland*, 9; John Baliol, *King of Scotland*, 11; David, *King of Scots*, 14, 21, 26, 28; Malcolm Kanmure, 20; Duncan, *King of Scots*, 21; Edgar le Scot, *King of Scots*, 21.
Scot-lands, 1, 5; Scot-land, l.
Scotland Yard, 9, 28.
Scot-Robertson, Rev. Canon W. A., 30, 61.
Scottisbury, 18, 20.
Scoto-Irish, 8.
Scoto-Saxon, 12, 18, 19, 20.
Scots, 3, 5 (*a tribute or tax*); Romescot, 5; Tolmenscot, 6; Rumescot, 6; Townsmenscot, 6; Kingscot, 6; Acrescot, 6.
Scots, Mary, Queen of, ii.
Scotbury, 29.
Scotgrove, 29.
Scot's-hall, 11, 45, 93, 94, 95; *Pedigree of*, 254.
Scot's-float, 5; Scot's Crouch or Cross, 29; Scot's Manor, 69.
Scot's-Scutten, 3; Scoti, 3; Scotici, 3.
Scotts of Beverley and York, of Lincolnshire, of Dublin and Limerick, of Glemsford and Ohio, of Halden and Conghurst, Kent, Shrewsbury, Detton, Tong, and Cossard, in Salop, of Barnes' Hall, Ecclesfield, York, of Great Barr and Wigan, of Chigwell and Stapleford Tany, of Potter Newton, York, 84, 91, 178, 186; of Buccleuch and Ancrum, etc., 264. See Pedigrees.
Scotty's Hall, *Canewdon*, 20, 25, 27; *Potter Newton*, 20, 25, 26, 69, 84; *Dunwich*, 25, 26; *of Knockholt*, 28, 29.
Scott. *For equivalents of ancient modes of spelling, see pp.* 25, 69.
Scott, Lady Agnes, 124; Arthur, 48; Alice, 192.
,, Anne, 193, 208, 227, 251.
,, Antony, 229.
,, Arthur, 246, 247, xliv.
,, Baliol, 248.

Scott, Benjamin, 229, 243 ; Benjamin Forrester, 243 ; Benjamin Whinnel, 243.
,, Brian, lxvii.
,, (Caroline), Lady ; Caroline, 243, 249, 252.
,, Catherine, 49, 191, 208, 246 ; Lady Catherine, 232, xxxiv, xxxv, xxxvi, xxxvii, xxxviii, xxxix, xl, xli ; *of Gower Street*, 251.
,, Cecilia, 246, 451, xliv, xlv, xlvi, xlvii, l.
,, Charles, 222, 246, lxviii ; Charles Tufton, Rev., 253.
,, Charlotte, 253.
,, Cholmeley, 48, 249.
,, Dalton, 243.
,, David Scot, Earl of Huntingdon, 20.
,, Edward, 49, 50 ; Edward, *of the Moat Iden*, 172 ; Pedigree of, 172 ; Edward, D.C.L., 229, 230, xxxiv, xxxv, xxxvi, xxxvii ; Sir Edward, K.B., 208, xxii, xxiii, xxv, xxvi, xxvii, xxviii, xxix, xxx, xxxi, xxxiii, xxxiv, xxxv, xxxvi, xxxvii, xxxviii, xl ; Edward, *of Scot's Hall*, 244 ; Edward *of Bodtalog*, 253 ; Edward Baliol, 253.
,, Elizabeth, 47, 193, 225, 243, 246, 249.
,, Emeline, 227.
,, Francis Talbot, 49, xlvi ; Francis, 246, 251.
,, George, *of Scot's Hall*, 193, 239 ; George, 244, 248, xlii, xliii, xliv, lxviii ; George Robert, 243.
,, George Gilbert, Sir, 32, 35, 52.
,, Henry Light, 242 ; Henry, Captain R.N., 253 ; *see his Pedigree*, 253.
,, Isabella, or Sybill, 192, 193.
,, James, 243, 246 ; James Renat, 243 ; James William, 243.
,, Joan, 127.
,, Johannes, 37.
,, John, 22, 23, 92, lviii ; Sir John, 22, 37, 38, 105, lix, lxiv ; Sir John, 158 ; Sir John, *of Nettlested*, 162, 163, 214, 215, vi, vii, xvi, xvii, xviii, xix, xx, xii, xiii ; Sir John, *of Camberwell*, 186 ; Pedigree of Scotts *of Camberwell*, 186 ; John Wray, 243 ; John, 243 ; John Simonet, 243 ; John, 246 ; John, of *Brabourne*, lvii.
,, Joseph, 229.
,, Louisa, 249.
,, Martin, 2.
,, Michael, 91, 130.
,, Mildred, 191.
,, Mary, 192, 228, 246, 251 ; Lady Mary, xlvii.
,, Margaret, 252, xlvi.
,, Pashley, 193.
,, Ralph, 29.
,, Reginald, Sir, 61 ; Sir Reginald, 177, lxvii ; *Pedigree of*, 185 ; Reginald, *Author*, 188 ; Sir Reignolde, ii ; Reginald, 228, lxvi.
,, Richard, *of Barnes Hall*, 84, 157 ; Richard, 187, 223, 229.
,, Robert, Sir, 105 ; Robert, *of Mersham*, 223 ; Pedigree of, 224 ; Robert, 243, xvii, xx.
,, Septimus Richard, 243.
,, Syms, 243.
,, Thomas, Archbishop of York (*alias Rotherham*), 85, 146, 151, 153, 154, 155, 156, 176 ; Thomas, ii, iii ; Sir Thomas (*Armada*), 99, 194 to 206 ; *Will of*, 203, iv, v, vii, viii, ix, x, xi, xii, xiii, xiv ; *Quartered Seal of*, lxix ; Thomas, 213, xviii ; Sir Thomas, 236, 237, xl, xli ; Thomas, *Commodore*, 242 ; Thomas, 246.
,, Walter, Sir, 2 ; Wilhelmus, 43, 44, 51 ; William Scot, *of Brabourne*, xlix, l, lii, liii, liv, lvi ; William Baliol (le Scot), (see Baliol), 87, 89 ; William, Sir, 23, 51, 61, 130 ; William, 22, 91, 92, 105 ; Sir William, 22 ; Sir William, K.B., 22, 31, 37, 45, 47, 103, 130, 135 ; William Scotte, *of Chigwell*, 130, xlv ; Sir William (*Ambassador*), 229 ; Pedigree of, 229 ; William, 243 ; William Winter, 243 ; William, 246, lv ; Sir William Scott (*Scottys*), i, ii, lxiv, lxv ; William Scott, *of Mote*, 173, iii, x ; William, *of Blendon Hall and Canterbury*, xlvi, xlvii, xlviii ; William, 253.
Scott-Waring (see Pedigree, Scotts of Shrewsbury).
Scotus—Duns—Johannes, 3.
Scythan, Scythæ, Sythici, 3.
Scythian, 1.
Semple, James, Sir, xxiv.
Sergieux, Philippa, 60, 171 ; Sir Richard, 171.
Shellis, or Shellys, *of Michelgrove, Sussex*, 30.
Shelley, William, *of Michelgrove*, lxviii.
Shurley, John, lxvi.
,, Sir Thomas, xiv.
Sidney, Sir Robert, *Earl of Leicester*, xviii, xxxiii.
Sissinghurst Castle, 206.
Skinner, Sir Augustine, xxxi, xxxiii ; Augustine, Jun., xxxii.
Skot, William, l.
Smethe, Robert de Halle de, xlix.
Smeeth Church, pulpit of, 98.
Smythe (*of Ostenhanger and Leeds Castles, of Bidborough and London*), Catherine, 47 ; Sir Thomas, 47, 215, 217 ; Thomas, Sir John, Sir Richard K., 215 ; Catherine, daughter of Sir Thomas, *of Ostenhanger Castle*, 221, xxviii, lxix, lxxii ; Sir Richard, 225, xxvi, lxxi, lxxii ; Sir John, *Leeds Castle*, xxix.
Snodesbury, *Manor of*, 106.
Somerfield, 207.
Sondes, Richard, *of Throwley*, 223 ; Sir Thomas, v, x ; Sir Richard Sondes, xxv.
Spanish Armada, 84.
Stafford, Sir William, *of Blatherwick*, 47, 215 ; Lord Henry, 47, 215, ix ; Stafford, *Duke of Buckingham*, 215 ; Elizabeth Stafford, and others, 218, 219, ix ; Hugh and Thomas, Earls of Stafford, lviii.
Staple, Richard atte, liv.
Stewart, Isabel, daughter of Sir John, of Bonkill, 23.
Stonlake in *Chiddingstone*, xliv.
Stoutinges, Thomas de, l.
Strabolgi (Earls of Athol), David I.e, 20, 23, 55, 71, 73, 75, 82 ; Joan de S. and Elizabeth de S., 73 ; Philippa Strabolgi, 78 ; Elizabeth Strabolgi, 78.
Stringer, Alice, 212, lxxi ; William, lxxi, lxxii.
Skoth-ai (*Scoths*), 2.
Skuthai (*Scythian*), 2.
Suckling, Sir John, xxviii.
Suene or Sweyn, 65.
Sutherland, John, 244 ; Margaret, 244.
Sword of Chester, 15.

TALBOT, Richard, *Earl of Shrewsbury*, 23.
Talson, Darcy, lxi.
Thanet, Tuftons, *Earls of*, 206, xlii, xliii.
Theryngod, William de, lii.
Thornhill, Sir Timothy, 217.
Trebarwith, Peter, lxii.
Tudenham, Sir Thomas, 150.
Tufton, John, x ; Sir Nicholas, xix, xxiii, xxv.
Tuke, Sir Bryan, lxvi, lxvii ; Mary, daughter of, 184.
Tyrrell, Mary, William, Edward, 185, lxv. ; William, of Beeches, Essex, 212 ; Jasper, lxvi ; George, lxvii.
Twysden, Sir William, xxxii ; Sir Roger, xxxix, lxviii, lxix.

UNDERHILLE, Thomas del, xlix ; Geoffrey, xlix ; Reginald, xlix.
Underdowne, Laurence, l.
Uvedale, Mad. Medeyte de, l.

VAGGE, Robert, liv ; John, of Smethe, liv.
Valence, William de (*Earl of Pembroke*), 16, 21, 69, 71, 82.
,, Aymer de (*Earl of Pembroke*), 16, 23, 69, 70, 71, 82.
,, Anne de, 16.
,, Isabel de, 16, 82.
,, Joan de, 16, 23, 69, 82.
,, Anne, or Agnes, 22, 70, 82.
Vaughan, Sir Thomas, 175.
Vere. Bernard de Vere, and others, 64, 65, 66.
Verrall, Tristram, xxiv.

WALLER, Sir Thomas, xix.
Walsingham, Thomas, xvi; Sir Thomas, xix, xxiv, xxv; Sir Edmund, lxvi.
Waad, Mr. (*Lieutenant of Tower of London*), 216.
Warden, Lord, and Constable of Dover Castle, 106, 130, 147, 153.
Warren, de (*Earls of Warren and Surrey*), Ada, 22; Adeline, 20 Gundrada, 171; William, 21, 171; John, 171.
Warren, Sir Peter, xliv.
Washington, Laurence, of *Maidstone*, 185.
Watton, Sir Thomas, xi.
Watts, Richard, 243; Elizabeth, 243; Richard, xlvi.
Wenlock, John, Lord, 84, 140, 150, 151, 152, 156, lx.
Westmoreland, *The Earl of*, xxvii, xxxix. xl.
Westrow, Thomas, 212; Mr., xxxviii.
Whetenhall, George, Mary, 187.
White, John, xxvii.
Whitfield, Stephen, 193.
William the Lion, *King of Scots*, 9, 20.
William, Duke of Clarence (*William IV.*), xlviii.
Willoughby, Lord, vi. vii.
Wilsford, Sir Thomas, xv, xvi, xvii.
Wills.—Sir William Scotte, 103; Sir John Scotte, 118; Dame (Agnes) Scotte, 125; Sir William Scott, 135; Dame (Sybill) Scott, 144; Sir Edward Poynings, K.G., 149; Dame (Isabel) Poynings, 150; Sir Thomas Tudenham, 152; Sir Edmund Bedingfield, of Oxburgh, 152; John Pympe, of Nettlested, 168; Sir Reginald Scott, 179; Reginald Scott (author), 190; Sir Thomas Scott (*Armada*), 203; Sir Edward Scott, K.B., 209; Sir John Scott, Nettlested, 216.
Winchelsea, *The Earl of*, xliii, xliv.
Windsor, Lord (*of Bradenham*), 173.
Wisbeach, John de (*Vicar of Brabourne*), l.
Woodville, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Richard, 60, 86, 108, 153, 171, lxi; Joan, 32; Elizabeth, Queen, 153, 171; Richard, lv, lviii; Elizabeth, lv; Edward, lv, lxi.
Woolavington, xxxviii.
Wotton, Sir Edward (*Lord Lieutenant*), xix, xxi.
Wyatt, Sir Thomas, 185.

YARDE, or De Earde, 127; Pedigree, 128.
Ysgwad, 6.
Ysgod, 2.

LONDON:
Printed by SIMMONS & BOTTEN, Shoe Lane, E.C.

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 06563 737 1

B.P.L. Bindery,
NOV 16 1896